A

Genealogical Hiſtory

OF THE

HOUSE of YVERY;

In its Different Branches of

YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL,

and GOURNAY.

VOL. II.



Hinc enim orti ſtirpe antiquiſſima: hic ſacra, hic genus, hic majorum multa Veſtigia.

CICERO de Legibus, 2. 1. 2.

LONDON:

Printed by H. WOODFALL, jun. M.DCC.XLII.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

TO THE

READER.

THE Reader having ſeen in the former Volume a Deduction of the firſt Branches of the Houſe of *Yvery*, traced with great Exactitude, Induſtry, and Application, through the Mazes of a vaſt Antiquity, cleared with the greateſt Certainty, from out of an immenſe Maſs of Public Records, under the Diſadvantages of covered Names, Accidents of Time, and Variety of Eſtabliſhments in different Parts of *Europe*; is now brought to view in this Volume the Hiſtory of the only remaining Branch of this great and extenſive Family.—

But before he enters into this Deſcent, to give a clear Idea of that Chain, which would require either a more regular Examination of the whole Work, or a more cloſe Attention to the Method obſerved in it, than the Generality of Men afford to Hiſtories of a private Nature, and in which they may happen not to be themſelves concerned, it will be proper to refer in ſuch a

manner to the precedent Parts, that he may readily trace the Deſcent of the preſent Line, without confounding this Branch with any collateral or different Family of the general Stock.

It muſt be obſerved, therefore, that the Deſcent of the preſent Earl of *Egmont* is to be taken up in the firſt Chapter of the Second Book of this Work fol. 169 of the Firſt Volume, beginning with *Robert* Lord of *Breherval* and *Yvery*, a younger Son, as it is ſtrongly preſumed, of *Eudes*, Sovereign Count of *Brittany* in *France*, the Founder of all the different Branches of this Family. —— From thence the common Account proceeds to the End of the Fourth Chapter of the ſaid Second Book, as far as folio 203. of the Firſt Volume, which ends with *Richard de Perceval.* —— After this, the Reader is deſired to turn to the Firſt Chapter of the Fifth Book, fol. 305, where the Line of the ſaid *Richard de Perceval* is taken up again.———From thence to the End of the Sixteenth Chapter of the ſame Book, fol. 397. the Earl's Deſcent is continued to *Ralph Perceval*, (the youngeſt Son of Sir *Richard Perceval*, the third of that Name) immediate Founder of this Line, whoſe Deſcent takes up the greateſt Part of this Second Volume, being followed, without Interruption, from the ſaid *Ralph*, (who lived in the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth) to the preſent Time.

This contains a Space of about three hundred Years, and being of later Date, and conſequently capable of more copious Information, abounds in Hiſtorical Facts, which will greatly tend not only to the Amuſement, but the Information of the Reader, with regard to the public Affairs both

both of *Ireland* and *England*, eſpecially within the two laſt Centuries.

The Seventh Book, which is at the End of this Volume, relates to the Line of *Gournay*, which being deſcended from a younger Son of the Houſe of *Yvery*, is marſhalled in its Place. It is curious to ſee how the Traces of a common Parentage are loſt, and how, after a Courſe of ſeveral Centuries, the ſame Families center, by Alliances, in themſelves again. This was the Caſe of this Houſe,—the Rights and Blood of the Line of *Gournay* being now transferred to the Line of the Earl of *Egmont*, by the Marriage of the Heireſs of *Gournay* to *Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, and by the Marriage of the Heireſs of *Bythemore* to *David Perceval*, the Earl's immediate Anceſtor.

Mr. *Anderſon*, who chiefly compoſed the firſt Volume, and had looſely thrown together this latter Volume alſo, within a few Pages, dying before it was well digeſted, it was reviſed by Mr. *William Whiſton*, (Son to the Reverend Dr. *Whiſton*) who being one of the principal Clerks of the Records in the Exchequer, and Chapter-Houſe of *Weſtminſter*, and a very diligent and knowing Officer, made no inconſiderable Additions to it; but he likewiſe dying before it was entirely compleated, the Work is not in Style ſo exact, nor perhaps ſo uniform in Language, as if it had wholly been the Work of a ſingle Pen, or that the Preſs had been corrected by either of theſe induſtrious Gentlemen; but the ſame Plan was purſued, and with equal Fidelity: ſo that even as it now ſtands, it may probably be allowed, with Juſtice, to

to be the beſt Performance of this Kind that ever appeared in this Kingdom.

Theſe two Volumes include the whole Hiſtory of the Houſe of *Yvery* to the preſent Time, but a third Volume will be ſhortly publiſhed, containing all the Records at length which are quoted in this Work, with many more, that may ſerve to illuſtrate the Deſcents here mentioned—This will be done for the Eaſe of the Curious, and to avoid all poſſibility of Cavil.—For though the References in the Body of the Work will ſufficiently direct the Reader to the Records themſelves, yet as Opportunities cannot offer for many to conſult the Originals, the Copies at length will afford great Satisfaction, and may preſerve theſe Authorities from the Accidents of Time, or Negligence of Office.

We have nothing to add, but that this extenſive Deſcent has undergone the critical Examination of the whole College of Heralds, has paſſed the Seal of that Office, and is there compleatly entered in a Book called D. 14 by order of a Chapter, in the moſt ſolemn and authentic manner. — So that there is nothing wanting to this, which can poſſibly confirm the Truth of any Work of ſuch a Nature.

A

Genealogical Hiſtory

OF THE

HOUSE of YVERY;

In its Different BRANCHES of

YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL, *and* GOURNAY.

BOOK VI.

CONTAINING

The Deſcents of the Lords of *Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, *Wely*, *Overwere*, *Nailſay*, *Batilborow*, *Burton*, *&c.* in *England*; Lords alſo of *Burton*, *Liſcarrol*, *Caſtlewarning*, *Oughterard*, *Kanturk*, *Temple-Houſe*, *&c.* in *Ireland:* Baronets, Barons *Perceval*, and Barons *Perceval* of *Burton*, Viſcounts *Perceval* of *Kanturk*, and Earls of *Egmont*.



Regia Progenies, &——Sanguis ab alto.

SILIUS ITALICUS.

TABLE to the Sixth Book, containing the Deſcent of th Lords o *Burton, Liſcarrol, Kanturk,* &c. now l

Look Back to ook the Fi

RICHARD PERCEVAL, third of that Name, Lord of *Bodecombe,* eſton-in-Gord

1 RALF PERCEVAL, ſecond of that Name, ſurnamed *Ralf de Weſton,* ſenior, Lord of *Bodecombe, Weſton,* &c. from whom the *Percevals* of *Weſton,* now extinct.

2 RALF PERCEVAL, ird of that N in Com. *Somſ.*—ſlain at

ALICE, Daughter of *William,* and Siſter and Heir of *John Cave,* Lord of *Sydenham,* &c. in *Com. Somſ.* = THOM

2 PERCEVAL,

ALICE, Daughter of *Thomas,* Siſter and Heir of *John Bithemore,* Lord of *Overwere, Nailſay,* &c. = DAVID PERCEVAL, Lo ob. 5 *Decemb.* 1

of *Tykenham,* 25 *Hen.* VI

3 CATHARINE, Daughter of - - - - - - - - = THOMAS PERCEVAL, third Son.

THOMAS PERCEVAL.

1 JAMES PE *George*—Lo eldeſt Son, 1548, born

VAL, a Twin of *Batilborow,* ſ. p. 29 *M Novemb.* 153

ELIZABETH PERCEVAL, Wife of *John Gilbert,* Eſq;

3 THOMAS PERCEVAL, third Son, *ob. ſ. p.*

JOAN, Daughter of *Henry Younge,* ſecond Brother to - - - - - - - - *Younge,* of *Buckhorn-Weſton,* in *Com. Dorſet,* firſt Wife. = RICHARD PERCEVA and Secretary Remem of the Court of Ward *land,* ob. 1620.

1 urth of that N cer, and firſt *England,* and

N. N. Daughter and Heir of *Potts* of *Devon.* = 1 JAMES PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son, *ob. ſ. p.*

RICHARD, *ob. ſ. p.*

FRANCIS, *ob. ſ. p.*

ELIZABETH, Wife of *John Butler,* of *Lilleſdon,* in *Com. Somſ.* ſ. p.

MARY, Wife of - - - - - *Derr,* ſ. p.

E, Wife of *Ri Fitzgerald,* *ld,* in *Irelan*

5 GEORGE PERCEVAL, third Son, from whom the Line of *Templehouſe.* Vide Book VI. Chap. 8.

4 ARTHUR, *ob. ſ. p.*

2 RICHARD, *ob. ſ. p.*

3 WILLIAM, *ob. ſ. p.*

JUDITH, Wife of *Randolf Clayton, Mallo,* in *Ireland.*

DORCAS, Wi *Wheeler,* Son the Biſhop of

CATHARINE, Wife of Sir *William Moore,* of *Roſs-Carbery,* in *Ireland,* Bart.

HELENA, Wife of Col. *Daniel Dering,* Son of Sir *Edward Dering,* Bart.

1 Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Bart. ſecond of that Name, eldeſt Son, *ob. ſ. p. Sept.* 11, 1680.

2 ROBERT P VAL, ſecon murthered 1677, *ob.*

4 CHAR PERC VAL, *Infans.*

MARTHA USHER, Widow of Lord Ch. Juſtice *Donnellan.* = 3 PHILIP PERCEVAL, third Son, now living 1741.

MARY PERCEVAL, *ob. Inf. Decemb.* 1686.

CATHARINE PERCEVAL, *ob. Infans.*

1 Sir EDWA VAL, Bart 1691 *Infa July* 30,

ERICE- 9 *Nov.* —Born

PHILIP PERCEVAL, only Son, *ob. Inf.*

CATHARINE, Wife of *Thomas Hanmer,* of the *Fenns,* Eſq; now a Widow—now living 1741.

PHILIP, *ob. inf.*

GEORGE, *ob. inf.*

HELENA, now living, 1741.

MA *ob.*

MARY, *ob. inf.*

1 JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL, eleventh of that Name, born *January* 29, 1737— at Eight at Night, at *London,* now living 1741.

CECIL-PA

Lords of *Tykenham*, *Sydenham*, *Overwere*, *Nailſay*, *Batilborow*, &c. now Earls of *Egmont*, &c.

ook the Fifth.

eſton-in-Gordano, &c. = AGNES, Daughter of Sir *Richard Arthur*, Knight.

ird of that Name, ſurnamed *Ralf de Weſton*, junior, Lord of *Tykenham*, = N. N. Daughter of *Richard Vincent*, Lord of *Rolleſton*.
ſ.—ſlain at the Battle of *Boſworth-field* 22 Aug. 1485.

2 PERCEVAL, Lord of *Tykenham* and *Rolleſton*. | 1 EDMUND PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son, *ob. ſ. p.*

f *Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, &c. 25 *Hen.* VIII. | ALICE PERCEVAL, living. | DOROTHY PERCEVAL, living.

1 VAL, a Twin with f *Batilborow*, &c. *ſ. p.* 29 *March*, *Novemb.* 1531. | 2 GEORGE PERCEVAL, Heir to his Brother *James*, Lord of *Tykenham*, *Sydenham*, *Overwere*, *Nailſay*, *Batilborow*, &c. *ob.* about 1600. = ELIZABETH, Daughter (and according to ſome, Coheir) of *Edward Bampfylde*, of *Poltymore*, in *Com. Devon*.

1 ourth of that Name, Lord of *Tykenham*, *Sydenham*, cer, and firſt Commiſſioner for Receiver General *England*, and Regiſter of the ſame Court in *Ire-* = ALICE, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottery St. Mary*, in *Com. Devon*. ſecond Wife. | 2 BAMPFYLDE PERCEVAL, ſecond Son, *ob. ſ. p.*

E, Wife of *Ri-* Fitzgerald, of bd, in *Ireland*, | NORRYS, Wife of - - - *Mulys*, of *Halyngton*, in *Com. Devon*. | 1 WALTER PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son, *ob. ſ. p.* 1624. | 2 Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Knt. Regiſter of the Court of Wards, *ob.* 10 *Nov.* 1647. = CATHARINE, Daughter of *Arthur*, Son and Heir of Sir *William Uſher*, Knt. *ob.* 2 *Jan.* 1681.

DORCAS, Wife of *Jonas Wheeler*, Son and Heir to the Biſhop of *Clonfert*. | ANNE, *ob. ſ. p.* | CATHARINE, *ob. ſ. p.* | 1 Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, ſeventh of that Name, Baronet, Ld of *Burton*, *Liſcarrol*, *Kanturk*, &c. *ob.* 1 *Nov.* 1665. = CATHARINE, only Daught. of *Robert*, and Siſter of Sir *Rob. Southwell*, of *Kingſweſton*, in *Com. Glouc.* Knight.

4 CHARLES PERCEVAL, *obiit Infans.* | 3 Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, eighth of that Name, Bart. Lord of *Burton*, *Liſcarrol*, and *Kanturk*, ob. ſ. p. 29 *April*, 1686. = CATHARINE, Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering*, of *Kent*, Bart. and of *Mary Harvey*.—Her ſecond Huſband was Col. *Butler*, ob. illa 2 Feb. 1690-1.

RICE- 9 *Nov.* —Born | 2 JOHN, Lord *Perceval*, ninth of that Name, Baron *Perceval*, of *Burton*, Viſcount *Perceval*, of *Kanturk*, Earl of *Egmont*, &c. now living 1741, born 12 *July*, 1683. = CATHARINE, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker*, of *Arwarton*, in *Suffolk*, Bart. now living 1741.

MARY, *ob. inf.* | JOHN, Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, tenth of that Name, now living, 1741. ——— Born 24 *Feb.* 1710-11, at *London*. = CATHARINE, ſecond Daughter of *James*, late Earl of *Saliſbury*, by Lady *Anne Tuſton*, ſecond Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, now living *Oct.* 1741.

2 CECIL-PARKER PERCEVAL, born *Octob.* 19, 1739——at half an Hour after Nine in the Morning, at *London*, now living 1741.

A

Genealogical Hiſtory

OF THE

HOUSE of YVERY, &c.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

RALPH PERCEVAL, *the Third of that Name, ſurnamed* Ralph de Weſton the younger, *Lord of* Tykenham, &c. *in Com.* Somerſet.

PERCEVAL,  VINCENT.

THERE are Conſequences attendant upon Ancient and Noble Birth, which ſeem to have an Air of ſomething preternatural.— It forces its way in every Age, and in every Country, in ſpite of Envy, Malice, and the Combination of the Majority of Men againſt it.——— It

advances through all the Hazards of its own Grandeur, and the Viciſſitude of all other ſublunary things. —— It reſiſts almoſt all Misfortunes, and riſes under the Weight of Evils, that ſhould naturally ſeem to cruſh it. ——— Thoſe Accidents which falling upon Families of no note, caſt them down among the Dregs and Refuſe of the People, and blend them together in one common and undiſtinguiſhed Maſs, become to theſe but Incidents to embelliſh and to adorn their Story ;——but Subjects to be diſcourſed on with greater Attention, and Periods to pauſe and reſt upon, in the Contemplation of their Dignity.

THEIR Poſſeſſions, their Dignities, and their Honours, muſt encreaſe by Age ; they accumulate, they grow in Credit, they are advanced by Marriages, they are placed at the head of great Enterprizes ;——nay, they often arrive, at length, by Revolutions, or Alliances, to Principalities, and Sovereign Power.——— This is a natural, and would be a more frequent Conſequence,—but that Fortune has, in particular, reſerved one Method to prevent this their aſpiring Growth, by putting a Period to the Male Iſſue of the leading Branches, at ſuch Intervals, that the remaining Lines may be too far removed in their Deſcents, to claim the Dignities, or the Inheritance of thoſe which fail.

THE Family of which we write, has ſuffered greatly by this Circumſtance. ——— We need not recapitulate the great Houſes of the ſame Lineage, each of which we have already traced to its reſpective Diſſolution.———For it is fully apparent, that if the Houſe of *Egmont*, now the only remaining Family of this Deſcent, were ſtrengthened with all the Weight of Dignity and Fortune, to which it might be by Conſanguinity entitled, it would equal the Luſtre of any private Houſe that has exiſted in theſe Kingdoms.—— But the long Separation of each of theſe Branches from the other, having denied them this Advantage, the preſent muſt content itſelf with that Degree of Veneration, which ſtill remains, upon a Family ſo anciently conſiderable, in ſo many different Lines, and with

with that degree of Conſideration, which the Circumſtances of the Fortune and the Rank they now enjoy, do ſtill afford them, in a high Proportion.

WE have already ſhewn, that *Ralph*, the ſecond of that Name, Lord of *Bodecombe*, *Weſton-Gordein*, *&c.* dying in the Year 1477, the ſeventeenth of *Edward* the fourth, left three Sons, *Richard*, *John*, and *Ralph*; of which the eldeſt, *Richard*, (the fourth of that Name) ſucceeded his Father, but not ſurviving above four Years, left likewiſe three Sons, who dying all in their Minority, the Eſtate then fell to *John*, the ſecond Son of the ſaid *Ralph* the ſecond, in whoſe Poſterity it ſtill continued, till the third of King *Wliilam* the Third, *A. D.* 1691, as we have already ſhewn at large, in the former Part of this Work.

NOTWITHSTANDING the numerous Progeny of *Edmund Perceval*, the Grandſon of the ſaid *John*, and the many Children which moſt of his Deſcendants left, there was ſo great a Mortality in that Line, that it does not appear that there is now remaining one ſingle Perſon iſſuing from that Houſe; ſo that the very Exiſtence of this Family entirely depended upon *Ralph*, the younger Brother of *Ralph* the ſecond, before-mentioned, and younger Son of *Richard*, the third of that Name, and of *Agnez* his Wife, from whom in a direct male Line of ten Deſcents, incluſive, proceeds the preſent Earl.

IN the thirty-fourth of King *Henry* the Sixth, *Anno Dom.* 1456*, a Fine was levied at *Weſtminſter*, between *Ralph* the elder, and his Wife *Joan*, and *Ralph* the younger, as they are ſtiled in the Record, bearing date upon the Morrow after the Purification of the bleſſed Virgin, before *John Pryſot*, *Thomas Fulthorp*, *Nicholas Ayſheton*, *Peter Ardern*, *Robert Danvers*, and *Walter Moille*, then Judges of the Realm, whereby *Ralph Perceval* the elder, and *Joan* his Wife, acknowledged *Tykenham*, with its Appurtenances, in the County of *Somerſet*, to be the Right

* Fin. Somerſ. 34 Hen. VI.

of *Ralph* the younger, as the Gift of *Ralph Perceval* the elder, and of his Wife *Joan*, who quitted Claim thereto, for themſelves, and the Heirs of *Joan*, (whereby it appears to have been of her Inheritance) to the ſaid *Ralph* the younger, and to his Heirs, with Warranty of the Premiſes, to him and his ſaid Heirs for ever.———Whereupon, the ſaid *Ralph* the younger, regranted the ſame Premiſſes to the ſaid *Ralph* the elder, and to *Joan* his Wife, before the ſame Court, to have and to hold, without Impeachment of Waſte, of the ſaid *Ralph Perceval* the younger, and his Heirs, during the natural Life of the ſaid *Ralph* the elder, and the ſaid *Joan*, upon the Acknowledgment of one Roſe, to be annually paid at the Feaſt of the Nativity of St. *John Baptiſt*, in lieu of all Services, Cuſtom and Exaction due to the ſaid *Ralph* the younger, and his Heirs, for the ſaid Eſtate, and upon Performance of all ſuch Services as might be due from the ſaid *Ralph* the younger, to the capital Lords of the Fee; on Condition, however, that after the Deceaſe of the ſaid *Ralph* the elder, and of the ſaid *Joan*, the ſaid Eſtate ſhould revert to the ſaid *Ralph* the younger, and his Heirs, to be held for ever, without Impediment from the Heirs of the ſaid *Ralph* the elder, and of *Joan* his Wife, of the capital Lord of the Fee, by the Services which were legally due thereupon.

TYKENHAM is a little Village in the County of *Somerſet*, not diſtant above a ſmall Mile from *Weſton-Gordein*. It lies at the Bottom of a Hill, upon the Edge of a kind of Moor, by which it is ſeparated from *Nailſay* (afterwards the Seat of this Line for ſome time, as we ſhall ſhew preſently) in direct Meaſure, about as far as it is from the Place laſt named; though by the Road, which the Nature of that Soil obliges Travellers to take, it is at leaſt five Miles. There were viſible, not long ſince, the Remains of an old Seat, which was ſaid to have been the Habitation of this *Ralph Perceval*. But they left it in the next Generation, the Situation being, in all probability, unhealthy,

healthy, and being tempted beſides, by an Inheritance of much greater Conſequence, devolved upon them.

ROLLESTON is another little Town, which came into this Line ſoon after, in the manner we ſhall ſhew hereafter, diſtant a few Miles from *Tykenham*, but a better Situation. Yet it does not appear that they ever reſided there, though both theſe Places belonged to them for above two hundred Years, coming firſt into this Houſe during the Time of this *Ralph*, about the Year 1456, and being ſold in 1656, by his immediate Deſcendant Sir *John Perceval*, of *Burton*, Baronet, Grandfather to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*, with whom are ſtill remaining the ancient Deeds and Writings of thoſe Eſtates.

IT appears by an old Rent-Roll yet preſerved, that theſe Lands produced five hundred and twenty Pounds *per Annum*, in the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, which was no contemptible Inheritance in thoſe Days, for a younger Son of any Family in *England*.

THIS *Ralph Perceval* aſſumed the *Croſſes* in his Arms, *Gold* *, to diſtinguiſh himſelf from the elder Houſes of his Name, as we have before obſerved; and ſo they continued to be borne by his Deſcendants, till, upon the Extinction of the Houſe of *Weſton-Gordein*, the preſent Earl of *Egmont* reſumed the ancient Colour, as being now the Chief of this noble Family.

ABOUT this Time, the Hiſtorians mention one of this Name, who was ſingularly inſtrumental in that bloody Revolution, by which, ſoon after, the Houſe of *York* became extinguiſhed, through the wicked Practices of *Richard* Duke of *Glouceſter*, who murdering his Nephews, the Sons of King *Edward* the Fourth, his Brother, advanced himſelf to the Throne. Some Accounts of this Family affirm this *Ralph Perceval* to have been that Perſon †; for in an ancient Pedigree of this Family, ſaid to be made by Sir *William*

* 3d D. 14. in Officio Armor.

† Genealog. de Perceval, per Le Neve, ex antiquâ Genealog. per Gul. Dethick, Milit.

liam Dethick, in the time of Queen *Elizabeth*, he is there ſaid to have been a Retainer to *Henry Stafford*, the great Duke of *Buckingham*; which agreeing with the Time and Circumſtances of a Story we ſhall preſently relate, will not permit us to paſs it over. But here we muſt obſerve, that though this Story ſhould be true, ſo far that he was inſtrumental to the raiſing that Monſter *Richard* to the Throne, it does not appear that he was in any degree privy to the wicked Deſign of the Murder of the young Princes; the contrary of which may be reaſonably concluded, ſince even the Duke of *Buckingham* himſelf was utterly ignorant of that barbarous Intention. —— We ſhall inſert this Point of Hiſtory, in the Words of the Hiſtorian.

" * Were it that the Duke of *Glouceſter* had of old " ſore practiced this Concluſion, or was before tyme " proved thereunto, or put in hope by the tender " Age of the young Princes his Nephews, as Op- " pertunity and likely of Spede putteth a Man in " Courage of that that he never intended; certain it " is, that he being in the North Parties for the good " Governance of the Country, being advertiſed of his " Brother's Death, contrived the Deſtruction of his " Nephews, with the Uſurpation of the Royal Dig- " nity and Crown; and foraſmuch as he well belafte " and had hope to maintain a long continued Grudge " and Harte-burning betwen the Quene's Kyndred " and the Kynge's Bloud, either Parte envying others " Autorite, he now thought, as it was indeed, a fur- " therly beginnynge to the Purſute of his Entente, " and a ſure Ground and Situation of hys unaturall " Buyldynge, that he might, under the Pretence of " revenggyng of olde Diſpleaſures, abuſe the Igno- " raunce and Anger of the one Partie, to the De- " ſtruction of the other, and then to wyn to his " Purpoſe as many as he coulde, and ſuche as " coulde not be wonne might be loſte, or they loked

* Hall's Chronicle.

" loked therefore. But of one thynge he was certain,
" that if his Entent were once perceived, he ſhould
" have made Peace betwene both Parties with his
" owne Bloud. But all his Entent he kept ſecrete,
" 'till he knew his Frendes, of the which *Henry*
" [*Stafford*] the Duke of *Buckyngham* was the firſte
" that ſente to him after hys Brother's Death a truſty
" Servante of his called *Perſivall*, to the Citie of
" *Yorke*, where the Duke of *Glouceſter* kepte the
" Kynge his Brother's Funeralles. This *Perſivall*
" came to *John Warde*, a ſecrete Chamberer to the
" Duke of *Glouceſter*, deſiring that he, in cloſe and
" coverte maner, mighte ſpeake with the Duke his
" Maſter; whereupon, in the Dede of the Nighte,
" the Duke ſente for *Perſivall*, (all other beeynge a-
" voyded) which ſhewed unto the Duke of *Glouce-*
" *ſter*, that the Duke of *Buckyngham*, his Neeve,
" woulde take ſuche Parte as he woulde, and woulde
" further wayte upon him with a thouſande godd fe-
" lowes, yf nede were. The Duke ſent backe the
" Meſſanger with greate Thankes, and diverſe privey
" Inſtructions by Mouthe, which *Perſivall* dyd ſo
" muche by his Travaille, that he came unto the
" Duke of *Buckyngham* his Maſter, into the Marches
" of *Wales*, and eftſoones with new Inſtructions, met
" with the Duke of *Glouceſter* at *Notyngham*, which
" was come out of the North Countree, with many
" Knightes and Gentlemen, of the number of five
" hundred Horſe, and more, in his Journey towarde
" *London*, and after ſecrete Metyng and Communica-
" cion had betwene him and the Duke of *Glouceſter*,
" he returned with ſuch Spede, that he brought the
" Duke of *Buckyngham* his Maſter to mete with the
" Duke of *Glouceſter* not far from *Nottingham*, with
" thre hundred Horſes, and ſo they twoo came to
" *Northampton*, where they firſt began their un-
" happy Enterprice; and ſo the Duke of *Buckyngham*
" contynued ſtill wyth the Duke of *Glouceſter*, 'til he
" was crouned King, as ye ſhall plainly perceive here-
" after."

It is not at all improbable, from the Circumſtances of the Fortune of which he was then poſſeſſed, though very conſiderable for that Time, that he ſhould have entered himſelf under the Patronage of that great Duke, who being then by many degrees the greateſt Subject of this Realm, had doubtleſs many Perſons of the greateſt Note dependant on him in the ſame way. For nothing was more common at this time than for Men, even of very eminent Rank and large Poſſeſſions, to adhere in this manner to ſome Perſon of more than ordinary Diſtinction, Pretenſions, and Ability, by promoting whoſe Advancement, they enſured their own.

Of this Cuſtom there are many Inſtances in ancient Times. In the eighteenth of *Henry* the Sixth, there is ſtill extant * the Record of an Indenture made at *Diveelyn*, (now *Dublyn*) on the eighteenth of *July* that Year, between *James* Earl of *Ormond*, and *Richard* Duke of *York*, wherein the ſaid Earl, though then one of the greateſt Subjects of theſe Realms, bound himſelf to the Duke for ever, both in War and in Peace, to be his Man, in all Things, and in all Places, ſaving only his Allegiance to the King and Queen. But for the Illuſtration of this Point, we will mention another Inſtance, which will fully prove ſufficient to our Purpoſe, and of the very ſame Period of which we now ſpeak, relating to a Subject no way ſo conſiderable as this great Duke. And this is that remarkable Indenture between *William* Lord *Haſtings* †, another cotemporary Favourite of that bloody Tyrant King *Richard* the Third, and divers Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen of Note, who as it is ſaid in the Record, by their own free Wills and meer Motions, covenanted Belafte, and faithfully promiſed to aid and aſſiſt the Right Honourable *William* Lord *Haſtings*, and his Part to take againſt all Perſons within this Realm of *England*, during their Lives, as well in Peace as Wars, (their Allegiance to the King's Majeſty, his

* In Bibliothecâ Cottonianâ.

† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Haſtings.

his Heirs and Succeſſors only reſerved and excepted) with ſo many able Perſons as every of them might well make, to be furniſhed and arrayed at the Coſts and Charges of the ſaid Lord; for which the ſaid Lord promiſed them to be their good and true Lord, in all things reaſonable, and them to aid and ſuccour in all their rightful Cauſes, ſo far forth as Law, Equity, and Conſcience required, *A° Edw.* IV. 14.

To this Indenture were Parties, *John Blount*, Lord *Mountjoye* *, and *Henry* Lord *Grey*, of *Codnor*, Sir *William Truſſel*, Sir *Bryan Stapleton*, Sir *Walter Gryfyth*, Sir *Robert Tailbois*, Sir *John Gryſelye*, Sir *Simon Mountford*, Sir *Thomas Statham*, Sir *Nicholas Longford*, and Sir *Robert Harecourt*, together with eight and fifty Eſquires, and twenty Gentlemen of the beſt Eſtates and Families in *England*.

AND in the next place, as to the Appellation of Servant †, which at this Time may appear to imply a Character of Inſignificance and mean Station, it muſt be known, that the beſt and moſt conſiderable Families of *England* diſdained not to be deſcribed, nor even to deſcribe themſelves by that Title, for which it was ſufficient that they held any Office, or even Lands, under the greater Nobility of the elder Ages; of which innumerable Inſtances may be given.——But among others, we ſhall only offer one, of a Family then as conſiderable and as ancient, as moſt others in this Kingdom, of the Degree of a Commoner, which may be the more pertinent, as it relates likewiſe to the ſame Duke of *Buckingham*, of whom we here treat.—— The Perſon was Sir *Ralph Shirley*, Knight, Anceſtor to the preſent Earl of *Ferrers*; and the Matter is evinced in his Petition to the ſaid Duke, in the Time of King *Edward* the Fourth, which is in theſe Words.

" Beſeacheth humbly *Ralfe Sherley*, Knight, your " *poore Servante*, that wheare he by many Years paſt " hath

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Haſtings.

† Ex Libro MSS. Ric. St. Georgii, notat. C. 11. penes Com. Egmont.

" hath peaceably been ſeized of the Manor of *Colſton-*
" *Baſſet*, in the Countie of *Nottingham*, and of the
" Mannor of *Sheldon*, in the Countie of *Warwick*,
" with their Appurtenances, in his Demeane, as in
" Fee-tail, till the Feaſt of St. *Michael* laſt paſt, he was
" of them put out and diſſeized, by the Right Wor-
" ſhipful Lord *Humfrey*, the Earle of *Stafford*, by the
" Procurement and Inſtance of *Thomas Chaworth*,
" Knighte, *&c.*"

AND in a like, or indeed a more particular Manner, *Caveñdiſh* (of the noble Family of *Gernon*) Anceſtor to the preſent Duke of *Devonſhire*, is recorded to have borne the ſame Appellation, with reſpect to Cardinal *Wolſey*, his Patron.

BUT we have ſaid enough to illuſtrate the Matter, which, to all Perſons acquainted with thoſe Ages, was ſufficiently clear before. We ſhall only add, that whatever Hopes this *Ralph* might have had, from his Dependance on this Duke, he was utterly diſappointed in them, the ſaid Duke being very ſoon after, *viz.* in the ſecond Year of the Reign of the Prince he had raiſed himſelf, 1483, beheaded at *Salisbury*, for having taken up Arms, with Endeavour to dethrone him, and to bring in the Earl of *Richmond*; who ſoon after, by a more ſucceſsful Inſurrection, obtained the Crown, which he wore by the Name of *Henry* the Seventh.

IN the third of *Edward* the Fourth, 1463, this *Ralph Perceval* was Witneſs to a Charter of *Leonard Tilly* *, made at *Cheddre*, in the County of *Somerſet*, upon the Feaſt of St. *Laurence* the Martyr, whereby the ſaid *Leonard* veſted in the Lady *Iſabella Cheddre*, *John Gyffard*, and *John Specote*, certain Lands in *Pederdeham* and *Wildemore*, in the Pariſh of *Canington*, and County of *Somerſet*, which came to him by the Death of *John Steyning*, in right of *Richard*, Son of the ſaid *John*, his Ward; which Lady *Iſabella*, *John Gyffard*, and *John Specote*, were thereby appointed Truſtees for the Application of the Profits of the ſaid Wardſhip, to the Uſe and Diſpoſal in Marriage of *Iſabel*

* Rot. Clauſ. A° 3 Edw. IV. m. 8. dorſo.

Iſabel and *Elizabeth*, Daughters of the ſaid *Leonard Tilly*.

AND again *, in the Year following, the ſame *Ralph Perceval*, was Witneſs likewiſe to another Charter of the ſame *Leonard Tilly*, dated alſo at *Cheddre* aforeſaid, upon the *Thurſday* next enſuing after the Feaſt of St. *Laurence* the Martyr, whereby he veſted a large Eſtate in *Canington*, *Orchard*, *Wemmedon*, *Thyneche*, *Salta*, *Stert*, *Pederdeham*, *Hunſpylle*, *Otterhampton*, *Stoke-Londe*, *Gaunte*, *Padevaller*, *Smallcombe*, *Perbyſtake*, *Weycombe*, *Wybbehill*, *Samfordbritt*, *Weſt-Copeland*, *Moreland*, *North-Pederton*, *and Le More*, together with the Advowſon of the Church of *Chedelynche*, in the ſame County of *Somerſet*, in *Joan*, the Wife of the Lord *Liſle*, the Lady *Iſabella Cheddre*, *John Speccote*, and *William Lyttercote*, for his own uſe, during his Life, and after his Deceaſe for a Jointure for his Wife *Joan*, and then for the finding of his Daughters *Iſabel* and *Elizabeth*, at the Diſcretion of his Truſtees, and by the Advice of the ſaid *Joan* their Mother, and then to the Iſſue Male of his Body, with Reverſion to *Thomas Blanchard*, his (half) Brother, and his lawful Iſſue, Remainder to *Catherine Cave*, (his Siſter) and *William Cave*, the Son of the ſaid *Catherine*, and their Iſſue; Remainder to *Avice Michell*, Siſter of the ſaid *William Cave*, and her Iſſue; Remainder to *Hugh Mallet*, and his Iſſue. And in caſe of Failure of the Iſſue of all theſe, with Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever. Furthermore, he ſettled by the ſaid Deed, all his Eſtates in *Hybeaunton*, *Stapleford*, and *Langtree*, in the County of *Devon*, together with the Advowſon of the Church of *Hybeaunton*, to which he had a Right to preſent every third Turn, upon his ſecond Son, who ſhould be living at the time of his Deceaſe, for the Term of his Life, with Remainder to his own Male Heir of his Body lawfully begotten, and to his Heirs for ever; Remainder to the Heirs of his Body, and thence to

* Rot. Clauſ. A° 4° Edw. IV. m. 13 dorſo.

the ſaid *Thomas Blanchard*, *Catherine Cave*, *&c.* in the Manner and Form aforeſaid. Which Records we have cited with more Particularity, as great part of the Eſtates therein mentioned fell, not long after, by virtue of this Settlement, through the Family of *Cave*, to that of which we here principally treat.

By the ſame Authority before-mentioned we learn *, that this *Ralf Perceval* was ſlain at the Battle of *Boſworth-Field*, upon the twenty-ſecond of *Auguſt*, 1485, in which the famous Quarrel of the two Houſes of *York* and *Lancaſter* was finally decided; but whether he was there concerned on the Side of *Richard* the Third, on which he firſt engaged, or whether he quitted that Party upon the Defection of the Duke of *Buckingham*, and from that Time adhered to the Intereſts of the Earl of *Richmond*, afterwards King of *England* by the Name of *Henry* the Seventh, we have no poſitive Grounds to aſſert.——Though it is moſt probable that he did the latter, becauſe his Eſtate does not appear to have ſuffered Confiſcation, or his Poſterity to have been involved in any Misfortune from the Tranſactions of that Time.

We are farther informed by the ſame Collection †, that he married the Daughter of that *Richard Vincent*, who, as we have before obſerved, made over to *Thomas Perceval*, in the thirty-fourth of *Henry* the Sixth, the Lands of *Rolleſton*, which afterwards became a Part of the Patrimony of this Line.

We have only to add, with relation to this Perſon, that he has been placed in ſome Pedigrees of this Houſe, as Son to *Ralph*, the Second of that Name, inſtead of Brother, which he truly was.—— And this Miſtake is natural enough from two Circumſtances, one, that he bore the ſame Name, which is not very common for two Brothers at the ſame Time to do.—The other, that the Lands ſettled upon him were of the Inheritance of his Brother's Wife, and therefore it

* Ex Genea'og. Perceval, per Gu'. Dethick.
† Ibid.

it appeared more likely that that Lady, his Siſter-in-law, was his Mother, and conſequently, her Huſband his Father.

BUT as to the firſt Objection, there is little in it; for we have already ſhewn that it was not very rare in ancient Time, to give the ſame Name in Baptiſm to two Children.———*Robert de Bruce*, Earl of *Carrick*, and after King of *Scotland*, had an elder Brother of the ſame Name, who lived at the ſame Time *: they were diſtinguiſhed by the ſame Appellation of *Robert de Bruce* ſenior, and *Robert* junior. ——Many Inſtances occur of the like nature, but among others, we have already mentioned two in the fourth Book of this Work, in treating upon that Line of this Houſe of *Yvery*, which was known under the Title and Name of *Luvel* of *Tichmerſh*; for not only *John* Lord *Luvel* of *Tichmerſh*, the ſixth of that Name, dying at the Age of twenty, was ſucceeded by *John* Lord *Luvel*, the ſeventh, his Brother, but the ſaid *John* the ſeventh, had alſo two Grandſons living together of the Name of *William*, of which the eldeſt enjoyed the Honour of the Family, and the other ſeated himſelf in the County of *Oxford*, where he married one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *Thomas St. Clere*, of *Barton St. John*.

As to the ſecond Objection, it is equally frivolous with the firſt, ſince it might well happen to be more convenient to make Proviſion by the means of this Eſtate, on account of Contiguity of Lands, or ſome ſuch Circumſtance, in which caſe it is not to be wondered, why this Settlement ſhould be made upon this *Ralph*, though the Lands were not of the Inheritance of his Father.——And this is a very frequent Practice at this Day.——However this might be, it is impoſſible that this *Ralph Perceval* the younger, could have been the Son of the ſaid *Ralph Perceval* the elder, becauſe it appears, that at the Time of this Settlement, which was made in 1455, he was then of Age, or otherwiſe

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Bruce.

therwiſe he could not have been a Party to this Fine, ſo as to have reſettled the Lands again upon *Ralph* the elder, and his Wife, which it appears he did. —— Now it is evident, by many Records which we have quoted in the former Part of this Work, that the eldeſt Son of *Ralph* the elder was but eight Years old in the ſame Year 1455, and that his ſecond Son *John* (who ſucceeded to the Eſtate) was but ſeven at the ſame Time. From all which it appears, that this *Ralph Perceval* the younger, if he had been the Son of *Ralph* the elder, muſt have been younger than theſe, and could have only been an Infant at the Time of the Settlement we have here mentioned, which the Courſe of the Laws of this Land, both at that Period and at this, forbid us to believe.—To which we may likewiſe add, that *Ralph Perceval* the younger had then living in the ſame Year 1455, a Son named *Thomas*, as we ſhall ſhew in the next Chapter; which proves him to have been at that Time a Man: and doubtleſs he had then been married a conſiderable time, for that *Thomas* of whom we have ſpoken, was his ſecond Son.

We have thought it neceſſary to ſay thus much, to refute an Error which has prevailed in the Pedigree of *Perceval*, by *Hawkins*, *Ulſter* King of Arms in *Ireland*; becauſe, in time, theſe Differences might otherwiſe bring in queſtion the Truth of a Deſcent. —— But having proved ſufficiently the Impoſſibility of what is there advanced, we ſhall only add, what will indiſputably ſettle this Matter, which is, that the original Viſitation by *St. George* and *Leonard* *, in 1603, poſitively affirms this *Ralph* the younger, to be Brother to *Ralph* the elder.

And the Viſitation of *Robert Coke*, in 1573, in the Earl of *Oxford*'s Library, confirms it farther, where the two *Ralphs* are likewiſe placed as Brothers, by the Names of *Ralph de Weſton*, junior, from the Lordſhip of *Weſton-in-Gordano*, which was at that Time the uſual Place of Reſidence of this Family.

CHIL-

* Penes Ducem de Kingſton.

CHILDREN of *RALPH PERCEVAL*, the fourth of that Name, Lord of *Tykenham*, and of ——— *Vincent*, his Wife.

I. * *EDMUND PERCEVAL*, who is mentioned in an Entry of this Family in the Herald's-Office in *Ireland*; but he died without Iſſue.

II. † *THOMAS PERCEVAL*, who continued the Deſcent; and of whom we ſhall treat in the next Chapter.

---

* In Officio Armor. Hiberniæ.

† In Viſitat. Dorſ. & Somſ. by Leonard & St. George, penes Ducem de Kingſton. apud Thoresby —Et in Viſitat. Roberti Coke, penes Com. Oxon.

CHAP. II.

THOMAS PERCEVAL, *Lord of* Tykenham, Rolleſton, Sydenham, &c.

PERCEVAL, CAVE.



*THOMAS PERCEVAL**, ſecond Son, (but by the Death of his elder Brother, *Edmund*, an Infant, without Iſſue) Heir of *Ralf Perceval*, ſurnamed *Ralph de Weſton*, junior, being then very young, and his Father ſtill living, obtained a Grant of Lands in *Rolleſton*, in the County of *Somerſet*, of *Richard Vincent*, who is ſaid to have been his Mother's Father.

FOR by a Deed † dated at *Rolleſton* aforeſaid, upon the eighth Day of *April*, in the thirty-fourth Year of the Reign of King *Henry* the Sixth, 1456, the ſaid *Richard*, (as he calls himſelf) the Son and Heir of *John Vincent*, gave, granted, and confirmed to *John Fitz-*

* Ex Viſitatione Dorſ. & Somerſ. penes Ducem de Kingſton, apud Thoreſby, per St George & Leonard; & in alia Viſitatione, per Robertum Coke, penes Com. Oxon. etiam in Officio Armor. Hiberniæ.

† Ex Autograph. penes Comitem de Egmont.

Fitzjames, this *Thomas Perceval*, *Richard Kyngſton*, and *Richard Peytevin*, all thoſe Lands and Tenements which *John Vincent* his Father lately had, of the Gift and Feoffment of *John Warre*, in *Rolleſton*, in the County of *Somerſet*, together with *Robert Walter*, deceaſed, to have and to hold the aforeſaid Lands and Tenements, to them and their Heirs for ever, performing all ſuch Services as are due thereon to the capital Lord of the Fee: in witneſs whereof he affixed his Seal thereto, in preſence of *Richard Andre*, *John Oldmyxon*, *John Bo---*, and many others.

AND upon the ſame Day*, he appointed *John Peytevin* and *Richard Bekan*, his Attorneys, to enter into, and to take Seiſin of the ſaid Premiſes, and thence to deliver them over to the ſaid *Thomas Perceval*, and the reſt. ——— In which Record there is a Miſtake in the Name of the Father of *Richard Vincent*, who is in one Part of the Deed called *John*, as he is in that firſt mentioned, and in another *Richard*.

ALL we have farther to add with reſpect to this Eſtate, which has been ſpoken of in the former Chapter, is, that not long after it became ſolely the Inheritance of this Houſe of *Perceval*, whether by the Death of the Coparceners, or otherwiſe, we cannot ſay. —— And in this Houſe (which is ſtill poſſeſſed of the Deeds relating to it) it remained till the Year 1656, when, by the Neceſſities of thoſe confuſed Times, Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, Grandfather to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*, was obliged to ſell it, with much more of his paternal Fortune.

THOMAS PERCEVAL being thus Lord of *Tykenham* and *Rolleſton*†, greatly in the End added to the Patrimony of his Line, by his Marriage with *Alice*, the only Daughter of *William*, and Siſter, and at length Heir of *John Cave*, of *Sydenham*, in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſquire.

BY

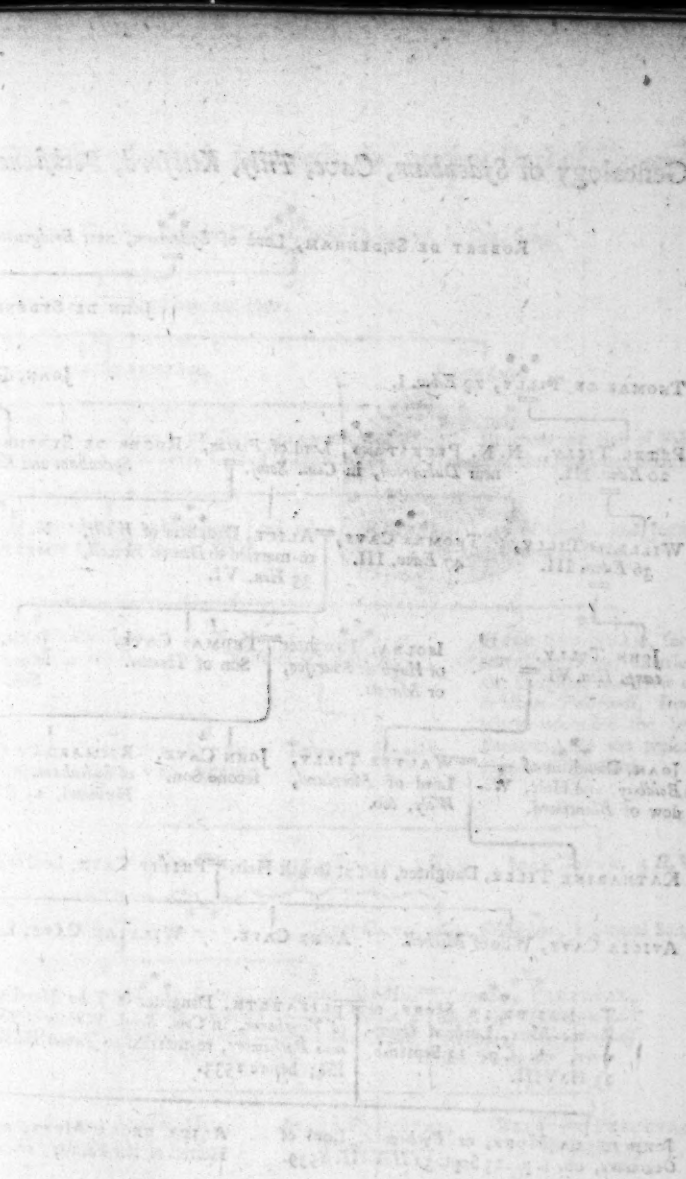
* Ex Autograph. penes Comitem de Egmont.
† Ex Viſitationibus prædictis.

By this Marriage, this Houſe acquired the Rights of the ſeveral Families of *Sydenham*, *Kitsford*, *Pixton*, *Redmore*, *Tilly*, and *Cave*; as appears by the Table annexed to this Chapter.



In the Time of King *John*, *Robert de Sydenham*, near *Bridgewater*, in the County of *Somerſet* *, dying, left a Son *John*, who is mentioned in certain authentic Evidences in the ninth of *Henry* the Third; which *John*, by the Daughter and Heir of *John de Kitsford*, near *Milverton*, in the ſaid County, had two Sons, *William* and *John*, of which *William* was the eldeſt, and was alſo Lord of *Sydenham* and *Kiddesford*, in the twentieth of *Edward* the Third; which *William*, by the Daughter of *William de Gothayte*, left three Sons, *Roger*, *Simon* and *William*; of which, *Simon* marrying *Marſilla*, Daughter and Heir of *John Hillary*, of *Badyalton*, was Founder of the *Badyalton* Branch.———*Roger*, the eldeſt Son, was Lord of *Sydenham* and *Kitsford*, in the fifteenth of *Edward* the Third, and left two Sons, *Richard* his ſecond, (who was a Judge, and Lord of *Combe*, now called *Combe-Sydenham*,) and *John* his eldeſt, who was Lord of *Sydenham*, and marrying *Mary*, Daughter and Heir of ——*Peekſtone*, Lord of *Pixton*, near *Dulverton*, in Com. *Somſ.* obtained that Lordſhip with her.——This *John de Sydenham* left two Sons, *John*, and *Hugh*, and a Daughter, who became the Wife of *John Carru*, and by him had Iſſue *Thomas Carru*, who is mentioned in his Grandfather's Will.———*Hugh de Sydenham*, the ſecond Son, marrying *Joan*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Polleſwell*, was Anceſtor to the late Baronets of this Family, and to all the Branches of this Houſe now

* This Pedigree of Sydenham, which differs ſomething from thoſe in the Office of Arms, is extracted by Mr. Sydenham of the Temple, now the Male Heir of that Family, from his own Deeds and Evidence.



Genealogy of *Sydenham*, *Cave*, *Tilly*, *Kitsford*, *Peckſtone*, and *Rob*

ROBERT DE SYDENHAM, Lord of *Sydenham*, near *Bridgwater*, in Com. Som

JOHN DE SYDENHAM, living

THOMAS DE TILLY, 29 *Edw.* I.

JOAN, Daughter of Wil

PETER TILLY, 20 *Edw.* III.

N. N. PECKSTONE, Lord of *Pixton*, near *Dulverton*, in *Com. Somſ.*

ROGER DE SYDENHAM, eldeſt Son, *Sydenham* and *Kitsford*, 15 Edw.

WILLIAM TILLY, 36 *Edw.* III.

THOMAS CAVE, 47 *Edw.* III.

ALICE, Daughter of *Wells*, re-married to *David Howell*, 33 *Hen.* VI.

N. N. REDMERE.

JOHN TILLY, *temp. Hen.* VI.

ISOLDA, Daughter of *Hugh de Mariſco*, or *Mareis.*

1 THOMAS CAVE, Son of *Thomas.*

2 JOHN, ſecond Son.

JOAN, Daughter of *Boldhay*, and Heir, Widow of *Blanchard.*

WALTER TILLY, Lord of *Moreland*, *Wely*, &c.

2 JOHN CAVE, ſecond Son.

1 RICHARD CAVE, Lord of *Sydenham*, ju. Ux. firſt Huſband, 15 *Rich.* II.

KATHARINE TILLY, Daughter, and at length Heir.

PHILIP CAVE, Lord of *Sydenham*, livi

AVICIA CAVE, Wife of *Michell.*

ANNE CAVE.

WILLIAM CAVE, Lord of *Sydenham*

THOMAS DE LA MORE, or *By-the-More*, Lord of *Overwere*, ob. ſ. p. 13 Septemb. 13 H. VIII.

ELIZABETH, Daughter of *John Marſhall*, of *Yvythorne*, in *Com. Somſ.* Widow of *Thomas Bythemore*, re-married to *James Hadley*, Eſq; before 1533.

JOHN CA ob. ſ. p. 21 *H.* VI *H.* VIII.

JOHN DE LA MORE, or *Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, ob. ſ. p. 13 Sept. 31 *H.* VIII. 1539.

ALICE DE LA MORE, or *Bythemore*, Heireſs of her Family, *ob.* 25 *Hen.* VIII.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, La

; from Heireſſes of which proceeds the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

N. N. *de Kitsford*, Lord of *Kitsford*, near *Dulverton*, in *Com. Somſ.*

II. = N. N. DE KITSFORD, Daughter and Heir.

1	2
tebayte. = WILLIAM DE SYDENHAM.	RICHARD.

3	2
of = WILLIAM DE SYDENHAM, junior.	SIMON DE SYDENHAM married *Marſilla*, Daughter and Heir of *John Hillary*, Lord of *Badyalton*, he was Founder of the *Badyalton* Branch.

1	2
ECK- = JOHN DE SYDENHAM, eldeſt Son, Lord of *Sydenham* and *Pixton*, ju. Uxor.	RICHARD, Lord of *Combe*, and Judge of the Common Pleas.

1		2
= JOHN DE SYDENHAM, Lord of *Sydenham*, died in his Father's Life-time.	N. N. DE SYDENHAM, Wife of *John Carru.*	HUGH SYDENHAM, ſurnamed *de Sturt*, married the Daughter and Heir of *William Polleswell*, from whom deſcended the late Baronets, and the preſent Houſe of *Sydenham.*

SYDENHAM, Daugh- Heir, her ſecond Huſ- *ebert Bozun.* = | JOHN DE SYDENHAM, died without Iſſue. | THOMAS CARRU.

V. he died the firſt of *Aug.* 11 *Edw.* IV. | RALPH BOZUN, 5 *H.* V. | JOHN BOZUN, 5 *H.* V.

ears old at his Father's Death. = ANNE - - - - | JOHN CAVE, alias *Broughton*, a natural Son.

rd of *Sydenham*, the Years 1529, 1533, the 25th

ALICE CAVE, Siſter and ſole Heir of *John*, married ——— *Jones*, a ſecond Huſband. — She was a ſecond time a Widow, 1533.

= THOMAS PERCEVAL, Lord of *Tykenham* and *Rolleſton*, Son of *Ralf* the Younger.

ſole = DAVID PERCEVAL, Son and Heir, died 5th of *Decemb.* 25 *H.* VIII. 533. | ALICE PERCEVAL, living 1533. | DOROTHY PERCEVAL, living 1533.

dham, Moreland, Wely, &c.

RD.

P.

.

.

l of *Egmont.*

now ſubſiſting in the Male Line.———But *John de Sydenham*, the eldeſt Brother of *Hugh*, married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir of *John Redmere*; and dying in his Father's Life-time, left a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Joan*; which *John* dying without Iſſue, *Joan* his Siſter became Heireſs to the Eſtate †.

THIS *Joan* married two Huſbands, *Richard Cave*, and *Robert Bozun*; but her Iſſue by the firſt inherited the Eſtate.———She had likewiſe Iſſue by her ſecond Huſband *Bozun*, *viz.* a Son named *Ralf*, and a Daughter *Joan*, upon whom, in the eighth of *Henry* the Sixth, by Fine levied in *Michaelmas* Term, ſhe ſettled thirteen Meſſuages, a Toft, five hundred thirteen Acres of Land, ſixteen of Meadow, three of Heath, and two hundred forty Heads of Garlick, in *Brumpton-Ralf*, *Otterhampton*, *Eaſt-Stoke*, *Cannington*, and *Stokeland-Gaunt*; limiting the ſaid Eſtates, after her own Death, and that of her then Huſband *Robert*, to her ſaid Son and Daughter, *Ralf* and *Joan Bozun*, ſucceſſively, in Tail-General; Remainder to *John Raule* for Life; Remainder to *Philip*, Son of *Richard Cave*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to the right Heirs of the ſaid *Joan*.



THE firſt (as it is ſaid) of this Family of *Cave* who was ſeated in the County of *Somerſet*, was this *Thomas Cave* *, who was living the forty-ſeventh of *Edward* the Third, being a younger Son of the Family of *Cave*, in the County of *Northampton*. This *Thomas* §, by *Alice*, Daughter of ——— *Wells*, (who afterwards became the Wife of *David Howell* ‖) had two Sons, *Thomas* and *John*;

† Fin. Somſ. Mich. & Hill. 8 Hen. VI.

* Ex Libro notat. 90 B. 10 (70.) —— Viſit. of Somerſet, by R. Cooke, penes Comitem Oxon.

§ Ibid.

‖ Fin. Somſ. Paſch. 22 Hen. VI.

Thomas ‡, the eldeſt, by *Iſold* ‖‖, the Daughter of *Hugh de Mariſco*, or *Marris*, had Iſſue alſo two Sons, *Richard* and *John* §§, who are likewiſe named in an Aſſize in Com. *Somſ.* as Sons of *Thomas Cave*, in the fifteenth of *Richard* the Second.——*Richard*, the eldeſt, in right of his Wife *Joan*, the Daughter and Heir of *John Sydenham* before-mentioned, became Lord of *Sydenham*; to which *Richard* ſucceeded his Son *Philip*, who, by Marriage with the Heireſs of the Family of *Tylly*, obtained at length the Manors of *Moreland* and *Wely*, in the County of *Somerſet*, which Manors afterwards deſcended into the Family of *Perceval*, through this of *Cave*, as will appear hereafter.

THIS *Philip Cave* dying upon the firſt of *Auguſt*, in the eleventh of *Edward* the Fourth, 1471 *, ſeiſed of the Manors of *Sydenham*, and other large Eſtates in *Wemedon*, *Bruggewalter*, *Baudripp*, *Northpederton*, *Moreland*, *Donewère*, *Northboure*, *Wolmerſton*, and *Netherhampne*; left a natural Son called *John Cave*, or *Broughton* †, Founder of a Family of that Name; but by his Wife (*Katherine*, Daughter, and at length Heir of *Walter Tilly*, Lord of *Moreland*, *Wely*, *&c.*) he left a Son *William* §, his Heir, then thirty-ſix Years old, and two Daughters, *Anne* and *Avicia*; of which the latter became the Wife of —— *Michell*, Eſquire, in Com. *Somſ.*

WHICH *William Cave*, being Lord of *Sydenham*, and divers other large Eſtates, in the ſaid County of *Somerſet* ‖, by *Anne* his Wife left a Son *John*, who was his Heir, (and married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Marſhall*, of *Ivythorne*, but had no Iſſue by her, as we ſhall ſhew preſently) and alſo a Daughter *Alice*, who

---

‡ Ex Libro notat. 90. B. 10. (70.). —— Viſit. Somerſet, by R. Cooke, penes Comitem Oxon.

‖‖ Ibid. ‡‡ Ibid.

* Eſch. poſt mort. Philippi Caff, ſive Cave, 11 Edw. IV. in Turri Londini, n° 43.

† Ex Viſitatione Dorſ. & Somſ. penes Com. de Oxford, ut ſupra.

§ Ex Genealogia de Perceval, per Le Neve.

‖ Ibid.

who married *Thomas Perceval* ‡, of whom we here treat; and who brought at length the Rights of Blood, and the Lands of the Houſes we have mentioned in this Chapter, to her Huſband's Family.

BUT before we conclude our Diſcourſe upon the Heireſſes who thus were centered in this Branch of the Houſe of *Perceval*, we muſt ſay ſomething of the Family of *Tilly*, from which one of them proceeded, and which is of very great Antiquity, though the Deſcent cannot be linked, in every Line, with that poſitive Proof which we deſire.



BUT it is certain, that this Houſe held great Poſeſſions, and is frequently mentioned in *Normandy* before the Conqueſt, and in the *Normanici Scriptores*, are ſhewn to have held ſeveral Knight's Fees in that Dutchy.— We find them afterwards in the Time of *Henry* the Firſt, in *Yorkſhire*, and other Counties, as well as in this of *Somerſet*.

IN the twenty-ninth of *Edward* the Firſt, *Thomas de Tilly** appears to be Lord of thoſe Eſtates in *Aſſcote*, *Walton*, and *Grenton*, which his Deſcendants ſtill enjoyed in the Reign of *Henry* the Seventh and Eighth.

UPON the Aid levied for making *Edward* the Black Prince a Knight, in the twentieth of *Edward* the Third †, *Peter Tilley*, and *Walter Capnoe*, were charged for Lands held by Knight-Service, in the County of *Somerſet*, which their Anceſtors held before them.

IN an Aſſiſe in the thirty-ſixth of *Edward* the Third §, *William Tilly* impleaded *Joan*, the Widow of *Thomas de Gournay*, for Lands in *Ferenton*.

IN

‡ Eſch poſt mort. David Perceval, 26 Hen. VIII. unica pars in Capella Rotulor.

* Trin. 29 Edw. I. rot. 83. de Banco, Somſ.

† Lib. Rationab. Auxil. in Scaccar. endorſed Fanſhaw, 20 Edw. III.

§ Rot. Aſſiz. Somſ. 36 Edw. III.

In the Book of Knights Fees made in the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth ‖, *John Tilly* is there charged for the ſame Lands, in the Hundred of *Portbury*, held by Knight-Service, which *Peter Tilly* had been charged for formerly, in the twentieth of *Edward* the Third.

In the ſeventeenth of *Henry* the Sixth ‡, *John de Liſle* granted to *William Doddeſham*, his Pretenſions to (the Superiority, as it ſeems, of) all thoſe Lands in *Weſtchilton*, in the Pariſh of *Cannington*, which *John Boldbey* formerly held there, and which *William Clive*, Clerk, lately held for the Term of his Life, of the Inheritance of *Joan*, formerly the Wife of *Walter Tilly*.

And in the twenty-firſt of *Henry* the Sixth, *Thomas Blanchard* *, Son and Heir of *Joan*, formerly the Wife of *Walter Tilly*, remitted to the ſaid *William Doddeſham*, all his Right in the ſaid Lands; from which two Records we judge, that the ſaid *Joan Tilley* was the Daughter and Heir of the ſaid *John Bolbey*.

This *Walter Tilly*, who died, as we ſee by theſe Records, before the ſeventeenth of *Henry* the Sixth, left a Son named *Leonard*, and two Daughters, *N.N.* the Wife of ——— *Mallet*, who had Iſſue *Hugh* and *Philippa Mallet*; and *Catherine Tilly*, who was the Wife of *Philip Cave*, of *Sydenham*, before-mentioned, from whom deſcends the preſent Earl of *Egmont*: which *Catherine Tilly*, after ſome Time, became the Heireſs of this Houſe. —— But the Male Deſcendants of this *Walter Tilly* continued for ſome Generations:

For *Leonard Tilly*, Son of the ſaid *Walter*, left by his Wife *Joan*, Daughter of ———, two Sons, *Thomas* and *John*, and two Daughters, *Iſabell* and *Elizabeth*.——He was Lord of *Moreland*, *Wely*, and *Salthay*, in *Com. Somſ.* beſides other very conſiderable Eſtates in the ſaid County, and in that of *Devon*, part of which, together with his perſonal Eſtate, he veſted in *Ralf Perceval*, of *Tykenham*, Eſquire, *Thomas Bythemore*, and others, as Truſtees, for the providing Por-

‖ In Officio Ducat. Lancaſter.
‡ Clauſ. 17 Hen. VI. Somſ. pars unica.
* Clauſ. 21 Hen. VI. pars unica.

Portions for *Iſabel* and *Elizabeth* his Daughters aforeſaid, which Deed ‡ bears Date at *Chedder*, in *Com. Somſ.* the third of *Edward* the Fourth, *A. D.* 1463, upon the Feaſt of St. *Laurence* the Martyr.

AGAIN, by another Deed §, made and dated at the ſame Place, upon that Day twelvemonths, in the fourth of the ſame Reign, he veſted in the Lady *Joan de Liſle*, the Lady *Iſabella Chedder*, and others, the Manors of *Wethelle*, or *Wele*, *Salthay*, and other Eſtates, in *Somſ.* and *Devon*, in Truſt for the Jointure of his Wife *Joan*, Remainder to the eldeſt Son of his Body for the Time being, and to the Heirs of the Body of the ſaid Son, and after, to the Heirs of his own Body for ever; Remainder to *Thomas Blanchard*, his (half) Brother, and the Heirs of his Body.—Remainder to *Katherine Cave* (his Siſter,) and *William Cave* her Son, and the Heirs of the Body of *William*; Remainder to *Avicia Michell*, Siſter of the ſaid *William Cave*, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to *Hugh Mallet*, (Son of another Siſter of *Cave*) and his Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Philippa Mallet*; Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever.

To this *Leonard* ſucceeded *Thomas Tilly*, in the Manors of *Wely* and *Moreland*, and the Advowſon of the Church of *Chartent*, in *Com. Somerſ.* *John Tilly* *, another Son, obtaining the Manor of *Salthay*. —— Which *Thomas* died ſeiſed of thoſe Manors, then held of the ſaid *John*, as of his Manor of *Salthay*, and alſo of divers other Lands, upon the twentieth of *November*, in the twenty-eighth of *Henry* the Eighth.

WILLIAM TILLY, eldeſt Son of the ſaid *Thomas* †, being deceaſed before his Father *Thomas*, upon the ſeventh of *December*, the twenty-ſixth of *Henry* the Eighth, left by his Wife *Joan*, a Son, *James Tilly*, then

‡ Rot. Clauſ. 3 Edw. IV. m 8. dorſo.
§ Rot. Clauſ. 4 Edw. IV. m. 13. dorſo.
* Book of Offices. C. of Wards, 29 Hen. VIII. fol. 579. dorſo Somerſ.
† Ibid. Anno 27 Hen. VIII. fol. 374. dorſo.

then eighteen Years of Age, who was found the next Heir to his Grandfather *Thomas*, laſt mentioned.

But here the Male Line of this Family without doubt failed; for very ſoon after, the Manors of *Moreland*, and *Wely*, and other Lands of this Family, became the Eſtate of the Houſe of *Perceval*; as will be ſeen in the enſuing Pages of this Work.

This *Thomas Perceval*, however, did not himſelf live to enjoy any conſiderable Part of this Inheritance, which being given by his Brother-in-law *John Cave*, upon his Death, to *Elizabeth (Marſhall)* his Wife, to be enjoyed by her during her Life, who out-lived both him and his Son, deſcended to his Grandſon *George Perceval*, as we ſhall come to ſhew preſently. However, it is manifeſt, (his Arms and his Wife's carved in Stone ſtill remaining, at the great Entrance of the Manor-Houſe of *Sydenham*) that he obtained Poſſeſſion of ſome Part thereof, and that he built the Manſion-Houſe at that Place, which ſtands to this Day, and was one of the Seats of his Poſterity for ſome Generations, till it was ſold by *Richard Perceval*, Regiſter of the Court of Wards in *Ireland*, upon his Tranſplantation into that Kingdom.

As to the Time of his Death, the Inquiſition being loſt, it is yet uncertain: but his Wife out-lived him many Years, being married afterwards to —— *Jones*, of ———, whom ſhe alſo ſurvived, being a Widow a ſecond Time†, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, *A. D.* 1534, as appears by a Deed of that Date, in which ſhe was then concerned, and of which we ſhall ſpeak hereafter.

CHIL-

---

* Unica pars Clauſ. 25 Hen. VIII. in Capel. Rotulor.

† Eſch. poſt mort. David Perceval, ut ſupra.



The Mannor of Sydenham in Com: Som.t the Antient Seat of the Family of Sydenham in the time of King John, from whence they derived their Name. The Heiress of the Eldest Branch of this House marrying Cave, in y.e Reign of Henry y.e 4.th 1403, it continued with them till y.e Reign of Henry y.e 8.th 1520 - The Heiress of Cave then marrying to Thomas Perceval, Son to Ralph, Brother to Sir. Ralf Perceval of Weston-Gordein, this Mannor continued in his Descendants, till 1613 y.e 10.th of James y.e 1.st when it was sold by Richard Perceval (Great-Grandson of y.e said Thomas) Secretary of y.e Court of Wards in England, and Regist.r of y.e same Court in Ireland.


BRITISH MUSEUM

CHILDREN of *THOMAS PERCEVAL*, Lord of *Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, *&c.* and of *Alice Cave*, his Wife.

I. **DAVID PERCEVAL*, Son and Heir; of whom we ſhall treat in the next Chapter.

II. *ALICE*, a Daughter, living in 1533, upon whom, in caſe of Failure of her Brother's Iſſue †, the Eſtates were ſettled.

III. *DOROTHY PERCEVAL*, a Daughter, upon whom §, in caſe of Failure of her Brother, and his Iſſue, and her Siſter *Alice*, and her Iſſue, the Eſtates before-mentioned were entailed.

---

* Viſit. Dorſ. & Somſ. per Leonard. & St. George, penes Ducem de Kingſton.

† Eſch. poſt mort. David Perceval, ut ſupra.

§ Eſch. ut ſupra.

CHAP. III.

DAVID PERCEVAL, *Lord of* Tykenham, Rolleſton, Sydenham, *&c.*

PERCEVAL, |  | DE LA MORE, or, BYTHEMORE*.

DAVID PERCEVAL†, the only Son and Heir of *Thomas* and of *Alice*, Daughter and Heireſs of *William Cave*, Lord of *Sydenham*, his Wife, obtained *Sydenham*, and other large Eſtate, in right of his Mother, and was alſo Lord of *Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, *&c.* by Inheritance from his Father.

HE married *Alice*, the Daughter of *Thomas Bythemore*, of *Nailſay*, in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſquire; and Siſter and Heir of *John Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, *Netherwere*, *Batilborow*, and *Nailſay*, and divers other large Eſtates, in *Dunſter*, *Hurcote*, *Littelton*, and *Kingſdowne*, all in the ſaid County, which became afterwards the Eſtate of this Houſe, by Virtue of that Marriage.

AMONG

* Note, that the Arms of Berkeley ought to be marſhalled before thoſe of Gant, immediately after thoſe of Gournay.

† Ex Viſitatione Dorſ. & Somſ. penes Ducem de Kingſton, & penes Comitem de Oxford, ut ſupra.

BITHEMORE, or, DE LA MORE.

AMONG thoſe few Baronies by Tenure omitted by that excellent Antiquarian Sir *William Dugdale*, that of *De la More*, or *Bithemore*, is one; which, though we cannot ſay how long it remained in that Rank, yet the Deſcendants of that Family having been of eminent Note, as long as they continued, we ſhall give ſome Deduction of them here.



THE firſt of this Family of whom we have found mention made, was *Ralph de Mora* *, who was Witneſs to a Charter of Truſt to *Painell*, Lord of *Bahantune*, or *Bampton*, and *William* his Son, in the Time of King *Henry* the Firſt.

To him ſucceeded *William de la More* †, who, together with *William Mallet*, in the ſecond of King *John*, having ſome way or other incurred the Diſpleaſure of the King, had Remiſſion of that Offence.

WHICH *William*, in the Year following §, being then a Baron, anſwered upon the Scutage then levied two Marks, his Barony being held by the Service of one Knight's Fee,

To him ſucceeded *Stephen de la More*, who being Lord of *Yatton*, ſettled the ſame upon *Bartholomew de la More*, his younger Son ‖, and *Alice* his Wife, and upon their Heirs, in Fee.

THIS *Stephen de la More* left three Sons, *Richard*, *James*, and *Bartholomew* before-mentioned.

SIR *Richard de la More* ſucceeded his Father ‡, and obtained a Grant of certain Eſtates in *Loxton*, of *Wil-*

* Ex Libro vocat. Chartæ Regum in Officio Ducatus Lancaſtriæ.
† Rot. Pipæ, 2 Johan.
§ Rot. Pipæ, 3 Johan. de Finibus, & Scutagiis Baronum.
‖ Aſſiz. in Com. Somſ. coram J. Bouſſer, 18, 19, & 20 Edw. II. rot. 7.
‡ Ibid. rot. 11.

liam de Cantelupe, and of *Hawiſia* his Wife, to be held by them and their Heirs, by certain pecuniary Services therein mentioned.

‖‖ Which *Richard de la More*, animated by a pious Zeal, undertaking a Voyage to the Holy Land, in the Time of King *Henry* the Third, left certain Lands which he had in *Stanture*, in Cuſtody with *James de la More*, his Brother.

And living long after, upon the Marriage of *Gilbert de Clare*, Earl of *Glouceſter* *, with *Joan* of *Acres*, Daughter to King *Edward* the Firſt, was returned to hold Lands by Knight-Service under the ſaid Earl, as of his Honours of *Uske* and *Caerleon*.

To him ſucceeded *Bartholomew de la More* before-mentioned, his Brother †; who, upon the ſame Marriage of *Gilbert de Clare* juſt mentioned, was likewiſe found to hold Lands by the like Services, of the ſame Honours.

We come next to another *Stephen*, Son and Heir of the ſaid Sir *Bartholomew de la More*, who in the fourth of *Edward* the Firſt §, being then called *Stephen Attemore*, performed his Service for half of one Knight's Fee, by the Perſon of *Adam de Brochole*, with one Horſe armed at all Points.

In the eleventh of *Edward* the Second, he levied a Fine ‖, and ſettled upon his Wife *Conſtantia*, and upon his own Heirs, certain Eſtates in *Yatton*, *Cungresbury*, and *Banwich*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

In the eighteenth of *Edward* the Second ‡, *William de Cantelupe*, or *Cauntelo*, Son to that *William* formerly ſpoken of, demanded that Eſtate of *Loxton*; whereupon the ſaid *Stephen* pleaded the Grant of the ſaid *William*'s Father to *Richard de la More*, his Uncle; and that the ſaid *Richard* having demiſed the Pre-

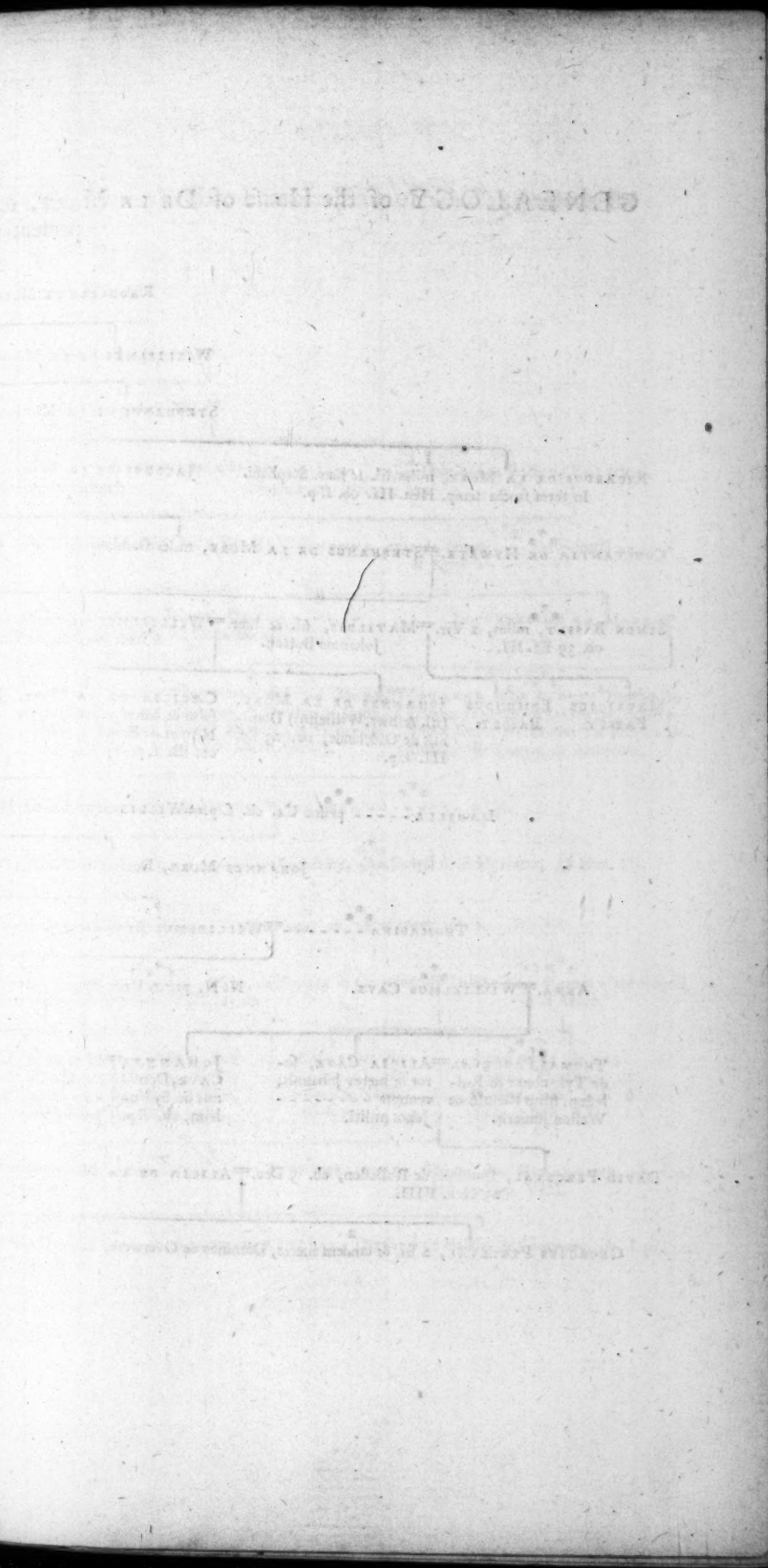
‖‖ Placit. in Com. Somſ. coram Ada de Greynville, A° 56 Hen. III. rot. 6. dorſ.

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Glouceſter. † Ibid.

§ Madox Baronia Angliæ.

‖ Fin. Somſ. 11 Edw. II.

‡ Aſſiz. in Com. Somſ. coram J. Bouſſer, &c. An. 18, 19 & 20 Edw. II. rot. 11.



GENEALOGY of the Houſe of De la More, or B… preſent E… of *Eg…*

Radulfus de Mora, i… m. Somſ.

Willielmus de la More, i… n. Somſ. …

Stephanus de la More, mi… …inus de …

1 — Ricardus de la More, miles fil. & hær. Stephani. In terra ſancta temp. Hen. III. ob. ſ. p.

3 — Jacobus de la More, cui … commiſit Cuſtodiam T… …ius frater … …uæ.

Constantia de Hyweye. = Stephanus de la More, miles Dominus de Yatton, Ol… &c. hæ…

Simon Basset, miles, 2 Vir. ob. 39 Ed. III. = Matildis, fil. & hær. Johannis Button. = Willielmus de la More, … & hær. Stephani, 1 Vir.

1 — Mauricius Basset.

2 — Edmundus Basset.

Johannes de la More, (fil. & hær. Willielmi) Dominus de Oldelonde, ob. 23 Ed. III. ſ. p.

Cæcilia de la More, ſoror & hæres Johannis, Uxor Nicolai de Berkeley, militis, ob. illa ſ. p. 17 Ric. II.

Jo… …es Botil… …D, in Co… …æres Cæc… …ley.

Isabella ----- prima Ux. ob. ſ. p. = Willielmus de la Mo… …inus de …

Johannes More, Dominus de Nailſay, Ov… &c. ob. …

Thomasina ------- = Willielmus Bythemore, ſive de … …ore, Do…

Anna. = Willielmus Cave.

N. N. prima Uxor Rogeri. = Roger… …la Mor… ob.

Thomas Perceval de Tykenham & Rolleſton, filius Radulfi de Weſton junioris. = Alicia Cave, ſoror & hæres Johannis, renupta -------- Jones militi.

Johannes Cave, Dominus de Sydenham, ob. ſ. p. = Elizabetha, … nis Marſhal, de … Com. Somſ. poſ… Jacobi Hadley.

… = Tho… … By… …erw… VII…

David Perceval, Dominus de Rolleſton, ob. 5 Dec. 25 Hen. VIII. = Alicia de la More, Domina … ob. 25 Hen…

… …were, Nail… A.D. 15…

2 — Georgius Perceval, 2 fil. & tandem hæres, Dominus de Overwere, de quo Comes de … …qui nunc.

HEMORE, from the ſole Female Heir of which proceeds the
of *Egmont*.

m. Somſ. tempt. Hen I.

n. Somſ. Baro temp. Hen. Johann.

minus de Yatton, temp. Hen. III.

2
BARTHOLOMÆUS DE LA MORE, miles Dominus de Yatton, = ALICIA.
Congreſbury, Wringe, &c.

ius frater ejus
æ.

&c. hæres & nepos Ricardi, ob. 2 Ed. III. = JOHANNA, filia & hæres ----- Roberti -----
& Agnetis -----

ALICIA DE LA MORE, Uxor -----
Botiller, de Com. Berks.

JOHANNES DE LA MORE. =

S BOTILLER DE SHEN-
LD, in Com. Berks, Con-
æres Cæciliæ de la More,
ley.

GEORGIUS DE LA MORE, = JOHANNA, filia & hæres Thomæ de
Dominus de Nailſay & Dominus de Alwarton & Overwere, in Com.
nus de Alwarton & Overwere, Somſ. hæres etiam Avi ſui Ricardi de
in Com. Somſ. ju. Ux. Counteville Domini de Alwarton.

minus de Nailſay, Overwere, & Alwarton. = JOHANNA ----- 2 Ux.

&c. ob. 20 Ed. IV. = ALICIA, filia Iſabellæ Toky, alias Pedyll de Bridgwater, 36 Hen. IV.

ORE, Dom. de Nailſay, Overwere & Alwarton, æt. 38 ad mort. patris.

LA MORE, ſive BYTHEMORE, Dom. de Nailſay & Overwere, = JOHANNA, ſecunda Uxor Rogeri
ob. 6 June, 16 Hen. VIII. 1524. de la More.

1 2

= THOMAS DE LA MORE, ſive BYTHEMORE, Dominus de Overwere, ob. 14 Aug. 16 Hen. VIII. ætat. 30, A. D. 1524.

RICARDUS BYTHEMORE, Dominus de Nailſay, ob. ſ. p.

JOHANNES BYTHEMORE, Dominus de Nailſay, ob. ſ. p. 8 Dec. 5 Edw. VI.

were, Nailſay, &c. hæres Johannis,

JOHANNES DE LA MORE, ſive BYTHEMORE, ob. ſ. p. 13 Sept. 31 Hen. VIII.

3 1

qui nunc. THOMAS. JACOBUS PERCEVAL, Dominus de Nailſay & Overwere, ob. ſ. p.

Premiſes to one *Agnez de Cheney*, for her Life, after the Death of the ſaid *Richard* and *Agnez*, he had entered upon the Premiſſes, as Couſin and next Heir of the ſaid *Richard*, *viz.* as Son and Heir of *Bartholomew*, the ſaid *Richard*'s Brother; which Plea being found good, Judgment was given for him accordingly.

IN *Hillary* Term, the eighteenth of *Edward* the Second *, by a Fine then levied, between this *Stephen de la More* and *Conſtantia* his Wife, Plaintiffs, and *William de Hyweye*, Defendant, the Manor of *Shawe*, in the County of *Wilts*, which *Ralph de Groſs* and *Iſabella* his Wife held, as the Dower of the ſaid *Iſabella*, is limited, after her Deceaſe, to the ſaid *Stephen de la More*, for the Term of his Life; and certain other Lands in *Horton*, in the ſame County, which the ſaid *Ralph* and *Iſabella* alſo held, as *Iſabella*'s Dower, were limited to the ſaid *Stephen* and *Conſtantia*, and the Heirs which *Stephen* ſhould beget upon the Body of *Conſtantia*; with Remainder of all the Premiſſes to the ſaid *William de Hyweye*, and his Heirs, in Fee. From whence it is probable, that the ſaid *Conſtantia* was the Daughter and Heir of the ſaid *William de Hyweye*.

BUT he departed this Life not long after, in the ſecond of *Edward* the Third †, ſeiſed of the Manors of *Oldelonde*, in *Com. Glouceſter*, and of *Yatton* and *Ywater*, in the County of *Somerſet*; leaving *William* his Son by his firſt Wife *Conſtantia*, his Heir, then fifteen Years old, at the Feaſt of *All-Saints* next enſuing after his Father's Death, and a Daughter *Alice*.

WHICH *William de la More* married *Maud* §, the Daughter and Heir of *John Button*, who became afterwards the Wife of *Simon Baſſet*, of *Ewley*.

BY

* Fin. Com. Wilts, 18 Edw. II. nº 82.

† Eſch. in Com. Somſ. & Com. Glouc. 2 Edw. III. poſt mort. Stephani de la More.

§ Ex Libro MSS. Richard. St. George, penes Comitem de Egmont, notat. A. fol. 56.

By which Lady he left a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Cæcilia*.

Which *John de la More*, being then a Minor *, died deceaſed upon the twenty-third of *Edward* the Third, leaving *Cæcilia*, his Siſter, then fourteen Years of Age, his Heir.

Which *Cæcilia de la More*, in the thirty-ninth of *Edward* III. †, being then the Wife of Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, together with her Huſband, made a Conveyance, in Truſt, to *Thomas Marmyon*, Chaplain, and *Nicholas de Wandeſtrée*, of the Manor of *Shawe juxta Melkeſham*, in Com. *Wilts*, and of the Manor of *Iwode* (*Ywater*), and other great Eſtates in *Lokleſton*, alias *Loxton*, *Jacton*, alias *Yatton*, and *Congresbury*, in the County of *Somerſet*, which Sir *Simon Baſſet*, Knight, and *Maud*, (the Mother of the ſaid *Cæcilia*) his Wife, held for Term of the Life of *Maud*.

Which Conveyance was made, in order to a Fine, levied in the following Year §, by *Maud* aforeſaid (her ſecond Huſband, Sir *Simon Baſſet*, having died in the intermediate Time) whereby the ſaid Manors were limited to Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, and the ſaid *Cæcilia de la More*, his Wife, for Life, and to the Heirs of their joint Bodies, with Remainder to *Maurice*, and *Edmund*, the Sons of the ſaid *Simon Baſſet*, and *Maud*, one after the other, for Life, Remainder to the Heirs of the ſaid *Cæcilia de la More*, of *Berkeley*, in Fee.

And in the firſt of *Richard* the Second ‖, another Fine was levied, though not recorded till the next Year, wherein Sir *John de Roches* being Plaintiff, and *Philippa*, Daughter of *Richard de Hyweye*, Defendant, the Manor of *Horton*, which Sir *Nicholas de Berkeley*, and *Cæcilia* his Wife, held for the Life of *Cæcilia*; and the Manor of *Shawe*, which *Maud*, formerly the Wife

---

* Eſch. 23 Edw. III. pars 2. n° 87. Glouc. poſt mort. Johannis de la More.

† Fin. diverſ. Comitat. 39 Edw. III. n° 3.

§ Fin. Paſch. 40 Edw. III. n° 19.

‖ Fin. 2 Ric. II. Com. Wilts, n° 12.

Wife of *William Attemore*, held for Term of her Life, with Remainder to the ſaid *Cæcilia*, for her Life, were conveyed to the ſaid Sir *John Roches*, and his Heirs, in Fee.

BUT more of the ſaid *Cæcilia* we have not ſeen, till the ſeventeenth of *Richard* the Second, when (her Huſband being dead before) ſhe died alſo *, leaving *John de Bottiler*, of *Shentingfield*, in Com. *Berks*, her Couſin and next Heir, *viz.* Son and Heir of *Alice*, Siſter of *William*, Father of the ſaid *Cæcilia*. Of which Families, or their Poſterity, if there were any after this Time, we can give no further Account.

WE come, in the next Place, to mention the Iſſue of Sir *Stephen de la More*, Grandfather of *Cæcilia* laſt mentioned, by *Joan* his ſecond Wife.

BY this Lady he left a Son *John de la More*, who in the fifth of *Edward* the Third †, brought a *Formedon* againſt *William*, and demanded thereby the Manor *F*———, which *Robert* had given to the ſaid *Stephen*, after the Death of *Agnez*, *Robert*'s Wife, with the ſaid *Joan* his Daughter, in Frank-Marriage.

GEORGE de la More §, the Son of this *John*, having married *Joan*, ſole Daughter and Heir of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, the laſt of that great and noble Family, was, in the fourteenth of *Richard* the Second, Party to a Fine in the *Trinity* Term of that Year ‖, together with the ſaid *Joan* his Wife, in which the Reverſion of the ſaid Manor of *Overwere*, alias *Upwere*, was limited to him, and to the Heirs of himſelf, and his ſaid Wife *Joan*, after the Death of *Alianor*, then the Wife of *Richard Power*, and Widow of the ſaid *Thomas de Gournay*, who held the ſame in Jointure.

THE great Deſcent which accrued by this Marriage, and the Noble Houſes to whoſe Rights the Family of *Perceval* became entitled thereby, ought regularly to be

* Eſch. 17 Ric. II. n° 5.
† Year Books, 5 Edw. III.
§ Ex Genealogia Perceval, per Le Neve, penes Com. Egmont.
‖ Fin. 14 Ric. II. Somerſ.

be deduced in their Place; but to obviate the Inconvenience of interrupting the Thread of this Family, we defer to treat of them till we have finiſhed our Account of this.

To proceed, therefore, with the Houſe of *Bythemore*. In the ſucceeding Reign, the ſeventh of *Henry* the Fourth *, by another Fine, in which *William Howys* (*Howeye*) and *Philip Cleffield*, were Plaintiffs, and *George de la More*, and *Joan* his Wife, Defendants, the Manor of *Alwarton* (containing eleven Hides and an half of Land, and held of the Barony of *Karry*, as appears by an original Indenture of *Richard* Lord *St. Maur*, dated upon the tenth of *May*, in the ninth of *Henry* the Fourth, now in the Cuſtody of *John Anſtis*, Gárter King at Arms) with other large Eſtates in *Wroxhall* and *Batelbergh*, in the County of *Somerſet*, with the Advowſon of the Church of *Alwarton*, part of that large Inheritance which came in by the Heireſs of *Counteville*, or *Camville*, the Mother to the ſaid *Joan*, together with the Reverſion of the Manor of *Upwere*, otherwiſe *Overwere*, (which *Richard Power*, and *Alianore* his Wife, ſtill held for the Life of *Alianore*) were limited to the ſaid *George de la More*, and *Joan*, for the Term of their Lives, Remainder to *William* (Son of *George*) and *Iſabel* his Wife, and the Heirs of their joint Bodies; Remainder, as to the Premiſſes in *Wroxhall*, to the Heirs of *George*, in Fee, and as to the Reſidue, to thoſe of *Joan* his Wife.

In which ſame Term and Year alſo †, the ſaid *George de la More*, and *Joan* his Wife, conveyed certain Lands in *Weſt-Chynnock*, *Bodecley*, and *Charlton-Adam*, to *John Hugyn* (*Juin*) and his Heirs, in Fee, and others in *Weſton*, *Kyngeſdon*, *Hurcot*, *Somerton*, and *Littleton*, to *Elizabeth*, Daughter of the ſaid *John*, and the Heirs of her Body, with Remainder to themſelves, the ſaid *George* and *Joan*, whoſe Daughter, as we preſume, the ſaid *John* had married formerly.

To

* Fin. Somerſ. 7 Hen. IV.

† Fin. Somerſ. Paſch & Trin. 7 Hen. IV.

To this *George* (in different Records) ſtiled *Delamore*, *Bythemore*, *Attemore*, and *More*, *William* * *Bythemore*, his Son and Heir, ſucceeded.

‖ UPON that remarkable Order iſſued from the Crown, in the ſeventh of *Henry* the Sixth, 1428, to the Sheriffs and Juſtices of the different Counties, whereby a certain Number of Men at Arms were required to be choſen out of the moſt ancient Knights and Gentlemen of the reſpective Counties, whoſe Anceſtors had borne Coats of Arms from Times of Antiquity, to appear before the King at *Weſtminſter*, upon *Tueſday* in the firſt Week of *Eaſter* next enſuing, to ſerve him in their own Perſons for the Defence of the Realm, this *William More*, or *Bythemore*, was one of thoſe twenty Men of ancient Birth and Arms, returned in Conſequence of that Summons, for the County of *Somerſet*.

WHICH *William Bythemore* †, five Years after, *viz.* in *Michaelmas* Term, the twelfth of the ſame Reign (*Iſabel* his firſt Wife being then dead, as it ſeems, without Iſſue, and he being then married a ſecond time to *Joan*, the Daughter of ——— ———, in whoſe Right he had obtained twenty-two Meſſuages, and a large Eſtate in *Nailſay*, *Worthеſton*, *Ratilbury*, and *Yadenwort*, alias *Edinworth*, in the County of *Somerſet*) veſted the ſaid Eſtates in the Hands of *Martin Jacob*, his Truſtee, together with Sir *Theobald Gorges*, Knight, Sir *Richard Newton*, Sir *John Warr*, and others, for his Manor of *Overwere*; but neither of the Uſes of this Truſt appear in this Record.

IN *Hillary Term* §, in the fourteenth of the ſaid Reign, the ſaid *William* was one of the Truſtees for an Eſtate in *Staunton-Drew* (part of the ancient Inheritance of this Houſe) then, as it appears, the Inheritance of Sir *John Juin* (or *Hujyn*) one of the Juſtices of the Common-

* Placit. coram Juſticiar. de Banco, Term. Mich. Anno 9 Hen. VII.

‖ Fol. MSS. St. George, penes Com. Egmont, Not. Aa.

† Fin. Somerſ. Mich. 12 Hen. VI. & Hill. 13.

§ Ibid. Hillary Term, 14 Hen. VI.

mon-Pleas, Son and Heir, as we preſume, of that *John Hujyn*, mentioned before, in the ſeventh of *Henry* the Fourth, and of the Siſter of this *William*, part of whoſe Portion we take it to have been.

Two Years after this, the ſaid *William*, and *John Bythemore* *, his Son and Heir, were Truſtees alſo to an Eſtate belonging to *William Stantor*, Eſquire, in *Byſhop-Worth* and *Fylton juxta Keynſham*, in the ſame County of *Somerſet*.

In which Year this *William*, as we preſume, deceaſed; for in the *Eaſter* following *Bartholomew de la More* (who was undoubtedly of this Houſe, and, as it ſeems, Brother to the laſt *William*) together with *Mary* his Wife †, ſettled the Manor of *Bridcombe*, and other Lands of conſiderable Value, in *Nailſay*, *Wroxhall*, and *Porteſherd*, upon *John More*, (Son and Heir of the laſt *William*) and *Alice* his Wife, and the Heirs of *John*; with Remainder to the Heirs of the ſaid *Bartholomew*.

This *John Bythemore* §, the Son of *William*, is again mentioned, in a Fine of the twenty-ſecond of *Henry* the Sixth, when the Reverſion of thirty-one Meſſuages, and other Rents in *Briſtol*, were conveyed by *Richard Janys*, Vicar of the Pariſh of the *Holy Croſs of the Temple*, to *Philip More* ‖, and other Truſtees, after the Death of *Alice*, the Wife of the ſaid *John*.—Which *Alice* ** was Daughter of *Iſabel Tokey*, alias *Pydyll*, of *Bridgwater*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

This *John More* (for ſo was the Name contracted towards the End of his Life ‡) died upon the *Friday* after the *Epiphany* of our Lord, in the twentieth of King *Edward* the Fourth, 1480, ſeiſed of the Manor of *Alwarton*, (held by the Service of one Knight's Fee, and a Rent of twenty Pence, of the Honour of *Caſtlecary*, then belonging to the Lord *Zouche*) and of the Advowſon

* Fin. Somſ. Hillary Term, 16 Hen. VI.
† Ibid. Paſch. 16 Hen. VI.
§ Placit. coram Juſticiar. de Banco, Term. Mich. 3 Hen. VII.
‖ Fine Briſtol. 22 Hen. VI.
** In the Treaſury of Records at Bridgwater, 36 Hen. VI.
‡ Eſch. poſt mort. Johan. More, 20 Edw. IV. in turri Londin.

vowſon of the Free-Chapel of *Alwarton*, as alſo of the Manor of *Overwere*, then held of the Heirs of *Richard Hampton*, by the Service of one Bird's Neſt, to be paid annually in lieu of all Services; and likewiſe of the Manors of *Batelbergh* and *Nailſay*, with their Appurtenances; together with ſeven Meſſuages, three hundred Acres of Land, forty Acres of Meadow, one hundred Acres of Paſture, with their Appurtenances, in *Edyngeworth*, *Burnham*, *Hurtcote*, and *Littleton*: which Manor of *Batelbergh*, with *Edynworth*, alias *Edinſton*, and *Burneham*, were held of the Abbot of *Glaſtonbury*; the Manor of *Nailſay* of Sir *John Denebawde*, Knight; *Hurtcote*, of the Prior of *Burnham*, by the Service of one pair of gilt Spurs; and *Littleton*, of the Heirs of *John Hill*: *William More*, his Son and Heir, being then thirty-eight Years old, and upwards.

Of which *William*, the firſt Mention that we find is *, upon the firſt of *November*, in the ſeventeenth of *Edward* the Fourth, three Years before his Father's Death; when, by his Deed, in which he calls himſelf *William Bythemore*, of *Alwerigton* [*Alwarton*] in the County of *Somerſet*, he confirmed, under certain Conditions, for their Lives, to *John* and *William Atterwode*, and their Wives, certain Lands in *Le Streme*, within his Lordſhip of *Overwere*; given at *Overwere*, the Day and Year before-mentioned.

He is again mentioned in a Deed, the Year his Father died †, by the Name of *William*, Son of *John Bithemore*, for Lands in *Oldeparte*, and the Manors of *Overwere* and *Le Streme*,

In the third of *Henry* the Seventh §, this *William Bythemore* in *Michaelmas* Term brought a *Formedon* (againſt his Truſtees for that Manor) in the Court of Common-Pleas, in a Form of Law at that Time neceſſary, to defeat the Settlement of the Manor of *Al-*

* Ex Autograph. penes Johan. Strachey, de Sutton-Court, in Com. Somerſ.

† Penes eundem.

§ Placit. coram Juſticiar. de Banco, 3 Hen. VII. Mich. ut ſupra, rot. 423.

warton, in order to his Sale thereof; in which *Formedon* he demands the Manor of *Alwarton*, and the Advowſon of the Church; and alſo twenty Meſſuages, ſix Tofts, a Dovecote, and a Mill, ſix hundred Acres of Arable Land, two hundred Acres of Meadow, two hundred more of Paſture, and a Rent of twenty-four Shillings in the ſaid Manor.———All which Premiſſes, as it is there recited, were granted by *John le Riche*, (a Truſtee) ſome Ages backward, to *Richard*, Son of *Baldwin de Counteville*, alias *Camville*, and to the Heirs of his Body; and which ought, therefore, after the Death of the ſaid *Richard de Counteville*, and of his Daughter and Heir *Elizabeth*, (Wife of *Thomas de Gournay*) and *Joan*, Daughter and Heir of *Elizabeth*, Wife of *George Bythemore*, and of *William Bythemore*, Son and Heir of the ſaid *Joan*, and of *John Bythemore*, Son and Heir of the ſaid *William*, to deſcend to this *William*, as Son and Heir of the ſaid *John*.

And the ſaid *William* having thus by this Proceſs, (which is very curious, both from the Number of the Deſcents therein ſet down, and from the Practice of the Law therein diſcovered) enabled himſelf ſo to do, in the ſame Term *, conveyed the ſame away from himſelf and his Heirs, to *Thomas Uſtewayte* and *Richard Iſham*, Eſquires; and thereupon, four Years after, in the ſeventh of that Reign, *Thomas Uſtewayte*, having obtained a Licence for the Sale, he levied a Fine thereon.

But between this ſeventh, and the eleventh of *Henry* the Seventh, he died; for then, in *Eaſter* Term, *Thomaſin Bithemore* †, his Widow, releaſed any Claim that ſhe might have, for Dower, or any other Account, thereto.

To this *William* ſucceeded his Son *Roger Bythemore* §; who marrying two Wives, by the firſt had *Thomas Bythemore*, his Son and Heir; and by his ſecond

* In eodem Term. Mich. 3 Hen. VII. rot 434.

† Paſch. 11 Hen. VII. de Banco, rot. Chartar. irrotulatarum dorſo.

§ Ex Genealogia de Perceval, per Le Neve.

cond, (*Joan*, Daughter of ———) two Sons more, named *Richard* and *John*; of whom we ſhall have Occaſion to ſpeak hereafter.

ROGER BYTHEMORE dying upon the ſixteenth of *June* *, the thirteenth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1523, to him ſucceeded *Thomas*, his Son and Heir by his firſt Wife; beſides whom he alſo left two Sons, named *Richard* and *John*, by a ſecond Wife named *Joan*.

WHICH *Thomas* having married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Marſhall*, of *Ivythorne*, in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſquire, by ——— his Wife, Daughter of Sir *John Fitzjames*, Knight, Lord Chief-Juſtice, died upon the fourteenth of *Auguſt* †, in the ſame Year with his Father, leaving a Son *John*, and a Daughter *Alice*.

JOHN BYTHEMORE ſucceeded his Father §, but dying upon the thirteenth of *September*, in the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Eighth, 1541 ‖, this Eſtate deſcended to *James*, the Son of *David Perceval*, of whom we treat in this Chapter, in right of *Alice Bithemore*, his Mother, here mentioned; who brought the whole Rights of that Noble and Ancient Family into this Houſe. What farther we have to ſay of it, will have Place in the enſuing Chapter, in that Order in which the Eſtates of the different Branches of that Family deſcended into this.

WE now come to fulfil our Promiſe, concerning the other Noble Families, whoſe Heireſſes, through this laſt mentioned, conveyed their Blood, and the Rights of their reſpective Houſes, into that of *Perceval*; all of which were the moſt illuſtrious of the Old Nobility of *England*, *viz.* *Gournay*, *Oreſcuilz*, *Fitzharding*, alias *Berkeley*, *Gant*, *Montford*, *Belloſago*, *Yvery*, *Paganell*, *Dowey*, *Meſchines*, Earls of *Cheſter*, *Normandy*, the Earls of *Mercia*, *Romelli*, and *Counteville*.

And

* Eſch. poſt mort. Rogeri & Thomæ Bythemore, A° 26 Hen. VIII. in Capell. Rot.

† Eſch. ut ſupra. § Ibid.

‖ Eſch. poſt mort. Johan. Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

GOURNAY.



§ And of theſe we ſhall treat in order, as their Coats are marſhalled by the Law of Arms, with thoſe of the Earl of *Egmont*; with this Exception only, that that of *Gourney* being a Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, we ſhall deliver our Accounts of it ſeparately, in the Seventh Book of this Work, which is wholly dedicated to it.

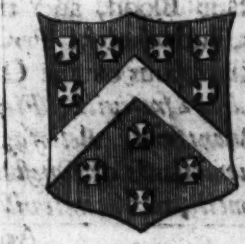
ORESCUILE.



Quare

‖ As to that of *Oreſcuilz*, we only know, that it was a *Norman* Family, whoſe Eminence is judged from that conſiderable Eſtate which *Maud*, the Coheireſs of it, brought in Marriage to *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*, the Anceſtor of the ſecond Houſe of *Gournay*; from whence, thro' that Line, the Deſcent is derived to the preſent Houſe of *Perceval*.

BERKELEY, or, FITZHARDING.

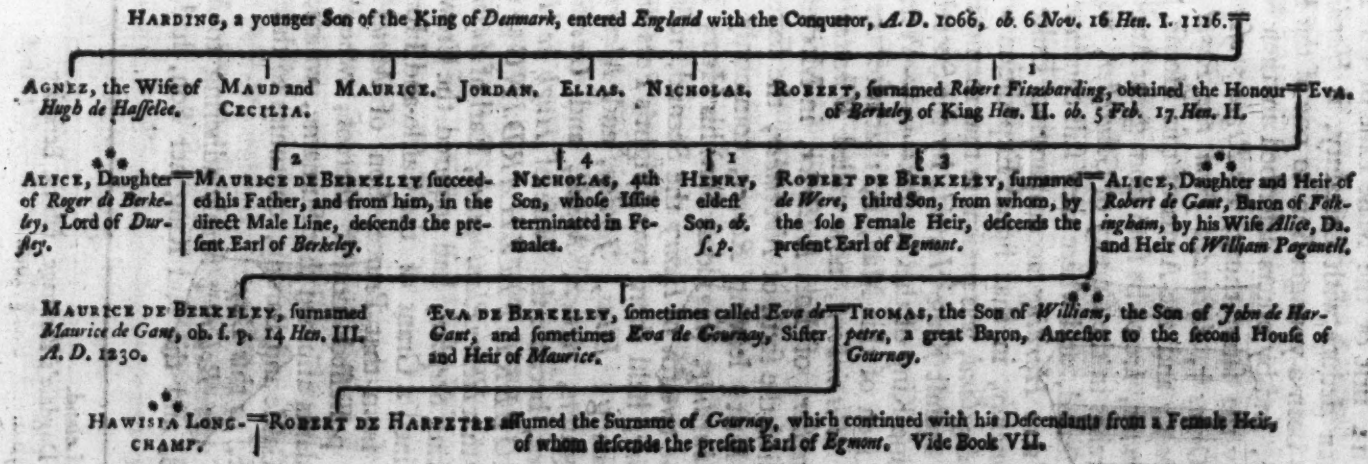


To come then to that of *Fitzharding*, which next occurs, This Houſe is that which afterwards aſſumed the Name of *Berkeley*, of which, one Branch is that which appertains particularly to our Enquiries here, whoſe ſole Heir the Earl of *Egmont* is; the other Branch is ſtill ſubſiſting in the Male Line, of which the preſent Earl of *Berkeley* is the Chief.

THE

§ Vide Book VII. ‖ Ibid.

The GENEALOGY of the House of BERKELEY from a Female Heir, of which descends the present Earl of *Egmont*.



THE firſt of the Male Line of this Houſe, which we can deduce with Certainty, is *Harding* *, ſaid to have been a younger Son to one of the Kings of *Denmark*, and by others deſcribed in theſe Words, which imply the ſame thing, *Ex Regia proſapia Regum Daniæ Ortus* †, *deſcended from the Royal Line of thoſe Princes*; and the Arms of this Houſe, with thoſe of *Denmark*, are to be ſeen from great Antiquity, in ſome Churches in the County of *Glouceſter*, where they were firſt ſeated, and where they ſtill continue.

THIS *Harding* accompanying Duke *William* † of *Normandy*, in that ſignal Expedition which he made into *England*, was preſent in that memorable Battle with him againſt King *Harold*, by the Succeſs of which he became King of this Realm.——What we have farther ſeen of this Man, is, that after the Conqueſt, he held *Wittinhorſt*, now called *Whettenhorſt*, in Com. *Glouceſter*, of Earl *Brictrick*, in Mortgage: and that he died the ſixth of *November*, the ſixteenth of *Henry* the Firſt; leaving *Robert*, commonly called *Robert Fitzharding*, (his eldeſt Son) his Heir; *Nicholas*, who in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, reſiding in *Somerſetſhire*, held there two Knight's Fees and an half, of the King; *Elias*, *Jordan*, and *Maurice*, and three Daughters, *Agnez*, *Maud*, and *Cæcilia*; of which, *Agnez*, became the Wife of *Hugh de Hazellee*.

ROBERT FITZHARDING ‖, the eldeſt Son, after that *Henry Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, by the Death of King *Stephen*, had acquired the Crown of *England*, obtained a Grant of the Caſtle and Honour of *Berkeley*, from that Prince, Son of *Maud* the Empreſs, and poſſeſſed himſelf thereof; whereupon his Deſcendants aſſumed that Surname, which, together with the Caſtle and Barony, continues to them, in the Male Line, to this Day.

THIS *Robert* ‡ firmly adhering to *Maud* the Empreſs, and the ſaid King her Son, had, in remuneration

---

* Leland.
† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Berkeley.
§ Ib.d. ‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

tion of his Fidelity and Services (done to them in their Conteſt with King *Stephen*) from the ſaid Duke, not yet King, firſt, a Grant of the Manor of *Bethone*, and one hundred Pounds Lands in *Berkeley*, and all that Territory thereabouts, called *Berkeley-Herneſs*, with the whole Lordſhip of *Berkeley*, of which Lordſhip and Territory *Roger de Berkeley*, Owner of *Durſley*, who held it of the Crown in Fee-Farm, was then diveſted, in regard that he had taken part with King *Stephen*; ſo likewiſe of *Durſley*, by reaſon of his Refuſal to pay the Fee-Farm of *Berkeley* before-mentioned, but through the Mediation of divers Lords of the Realm, *Roger* obtaining *Durſley* again, ceaſed not to vex this *Robert Fitzharding*, for *Berkeley* taken from him, as we have already obſerved; whereupon Complaint being made to Duke *Henry*, he wrought this following Agreement between them *, *viz.* That *Roger* ſhould give *Alice* his Daughter in Marriage to *Maurice*, the Son of this *Robert Fitzharding*, together with the Town of *Slimbrig* as a Portion. Which Accord being made at *Briſtol*, in the Houſe of him the ſaid *Robert Fitzharding*, in the Preſence of King *Stephen* and Duke *Henry*. It was then further covenanted, that ſhe the ſaid *Alice* ſhould have twenty Pounds Land of the Fee of *Berkeley*, for her Dowry; and in caſe the ſaid *Maurice* ſhould die before the Accompliſhment of that Agreement, the like Performance ſhould hold for the next Son of the ſaid *Robert Fitzharding*: ſo likewiſe, in caſe *Alice* ſhould depart this Life, the like Covenants to be obſerved for her next Siſter.———Moreover, it was then farther concluded, that the eldeſt Son of that *Roger*, ſhould take to Wife one of the Daughters of the ſaid *Robert Fitzharding*, and receiving ten Pounds ten Shillings Land in *Durſley*, by way of Portion, to make her a Dowry, of the Manor of *Siſton*, near *Briſtol*.

THIS

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Berkeley.
† Ibid.

THIS *Robert Fitzharding* †, in the Reign of the ſame King *Henry* obtained a Confirmation of his former Grant of *Berkeley* and *Berkeley-Herneſs*, to hold to himſelf and his Heirs, by the Services of five Knight's Fees.—And in the twelfth of that King's Reign, upon the Aſſeſſment of the Aid for marrying of *Maud*, the King's Daughter to *Henry* the Emperor, certified the Knight's Fees he then held to be five in number; but that *Roger de Berkeley* then held certain Lands belonging to the Honour of *Berkeley*, for which he performed to him no Service, *viz. Oſword*, and half *Nivetone*, with all the Fee of *Bernard* the Chaplain.———For theſe five Knights Fees, this *Robert* anſwered five Marks, in the fourteenth of *Henry* the Second.

THIS *Robert Fitzharding* died the fifth of *February*, 1170 *, (in the ſeventeenth of *Henry* the Second) and, with *Eva* his Wife, lies buried in the Choir of the Abby of *St. Auguſtine*, whereof he was the pious Founder.

BY the ſaid *Eva* his Wife §, Foundreſs alſo of a religious Houſe called the *Magdalens*, near *Briſtol*, and at length Prioreſs there, he had Iſſue four Sons, *Henry*, *Maurice*, *Robert*, and *Nicholas*.

HENRY, the eldeſt, dying without Iſſue ‖, *Maurice*, the ſecond, ſucceeded to the Eſtate; and, continuing the Line, is Anceſtor to the Earls of *Berkeley* at this Day. *Nicholas*, the youngeſt, had Iſſue, which ended in Females ſome Generations after. ——— But *Robert*, the next to *Maurice*, left a ſole Daughter, who became at length his Heir, from whom is deſcended the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

WHICH *Robert*, commonly called *Robert de Were* ‡, being Lord of that great Manor, lying near *Axbridge*, in the County of *Somerſet*; (which at length fell to the Houſe of *Perceval*, by means of this Deſcent;) had alſo divers other Lordſhips in the ſame County.

HE

† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Berkeley.
* Ibid. † Ibid. ‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

HE alſo obtained from his † Brother *Maurice de Berkeley*, a Ratification of thoſe Grants which his Father *Robert Fitzharding* had made to him, of the Manor of *Beverſtane* and *King's-Weſton* *: and having married *Alice*, the Daughter of *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham* §, by *Alice* his firſt Wife, (the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell* ‖ and *Avice de Romelli*, (the Widow of ——— *Curci*, Daughter and Coheireſs of *William Meſchines* ‡, his ſecond Wife) in the fourth of *Richard* the Firſt gave ſixty Marks for Livery of the Inheritance of the ſaid *Alice Paganell*; whereupon he obtained the ſaid Inheritance, in favour of the Children he had by her, which were, a Son named *Maurice*, and a Daughter *Eva*.

WHICH *Maurice de Berkeley*, ſurnamed *de Gant* from his Mother **, by reaſon of her great Inheritance, in the thirteenth of King *John*, upon levying the Scutage of *Scotland*, anſwered for twelve Knights Fees and an half; and in the fifteenth of King *John*, covenanted to ſerve the King at his own Charge, with twenty Knignts, himſelf accounted one, in Conſideration that he might marry the Daughter of *Henry de Oilly*; which Marriage, whether ever it was conſummated or not, we cannot ſay; but this is ſure, that at the Time of his Deceaſe he left another Lady, whoſe Name was *Margaret de Somerie*. But he had Iſſue by neither of theſe, his Siſter *Eva* being found by Record to be his next Heir.

THE next Mention we find made of him is in the ſeventeenth of King *John* ††, when he paid ſixty Marks to the Crown, on behalf of *Eva* his Siſter, for the Inheritance of *Thomas*, the Son of *William* her Huſband, at that Time, as we preſume, deceaſed.

† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Berkeley.
* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. de novis obtatis.
§ Placit. Term. Mich. Anno 2 Johan. rot. 4.
‖ Monaſt. Anglic. Vol. II. fol. 97.
‡ Certificat. Feod. Mil. in Com. Somſ. Willielmi de Curcy dapiferi.
** Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
†† Rot. Fin. 17 Johan.

THE ſame Year †, taking part with the rebellious Barons, his Lands were ſeized on, and given to *Philip de Albini*, excepting *Weſton* and *Beverton*, (in *Glouceſterſhire*;) whereupon he addreſſed himſelf to the King, to make his Peace.

IN the ſeventh of *Henry* the Third *, upon levying the Scutage for the *Welch* Expedition (commonly called the *Scutagium Montgomerie*) it appeareth, that this *Maurice de Gant* had Lands in the Counties of *York*, *Berks*, *Lincoln*, *Oxford*, *Surry*, *Glouceſter*, and *Leiceſter*.

IN the ninth of *Henry* the Third, he was ſent into *Wales*, with *William Marſhall*, Earl of *Pembroke*, for the building a Caſtle there. And in the eleventh of *Henry* the Third, fortified his Caſtle at *Beverſton* without Licence §; whereupon he went to the King, to make his Apology for ſo doing, and obtained a Confirmation thereof. But in the fourteenth of *Henry* the Third, having no Iſſue of his Body, by his Deed, bearing date at *Portſmouth*, he gave unto the King (then paſſing into *Brittany*) his Lordſhips of *Weſton*, *Beverſton*, and *Albricton*; and the ſame Year departed this Life.

UPON whoſe Death, *Andrew Lutterell* came to the King, and claimed, as his Inheritance, divers Lordſhips, whereof this *Maurice* died ſeiſed, *viz.* the Manors of *Cantokeſheved*, *Stockeland*, *Hywys*, *Poellet*, and *Wyre*, in the County of *Somerſet* **, as alſo *Irneham* in *Lincolnſhire*, and offered him an hundred Marks to have Inquiſition made of his Title thereto, and that he might have Livery of them, in caſe they ſhould appear to be his Right.

AFTER which, by ſucceeding Records it doth appear, that the ſaid *Lutterell* did obtain ſome of the ſaid Lands; though in what Degree of Relation he ſtood to this Houſe, has never yet been made appear.

BUT for the Bulk of that Inheritance, it came to the

† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
* Ibid. § Ibid. ** Ibid.

the Iſſue of *Eva*, (the Siſter of the ſaid *Maurice de Gaunt*) whoſe Son *Robert*, by her Huſband *Thomas*, the Son of *William* before-mentioned, ſome Time afterwards, in the ſame Year, *viz.* the fifteenth of *Henry* the Third, doing his Homage, had Livery of the Manor of *Poellet*, claimed by *Lutterell*, as we before have obſerved; as alſo divers other Lands, Part of the Poſſeſſions of *Maurice de Gaunt* *, his Uncle, whoſe Heir (as the Record affirms) he was; and likewiſe of all his Lands in *Glouceſterſhire*, excepting *Beverſton*, *Weſton*, *Radewic*, *Oure*, and *Albriction* †, which he, however, not long after obtained of the King.

EVA de Berkeley, (ſometimes called *Eva de Gaunt*, and *Eva de Gournay*) the Mother of this *Robert*, appears to have likewiſe been the Heireſs of *Hawiſia de Gurnay*; but the Deſcent from the ſaid *Hawiſia* cannot be regularly deduced.——— ‖ However, it is certain, that the Inheritance of *Hawiſia* was very great, and that the Manor of *Barew-Gurnay* was a Part thereof; and that the Son of the ſaid *Eva de Berkeley*, upon that Account, is ever mentioned by the Name of *Robert de Gournay*, and was the Founder of that great Family, by whoſe Iſſue great Part of this great Eſtate, in proceſs of Time, deſcended to the great Family of *Bythemore*, or *Delamore*; who married the Female Heir; and again, by the ſole Heireſs of that Houſe, to the Houſe of *Perceval*, who are now the Repreſentatives of this Illuſtrious Family. But for a farther Deduction of this Deſcent, we refer to the following Pages.

THE Illuſtrious Family of *Gant*, is equal, if not ſuperior in Dignity, to any that ſettled in *England* at the *Norman* Conqueſt; being immediately deſcended in a Male Line from the Sovereign Counts of *Flanders* §, and at the Time of their Entrance here, in ſo near a Degree of Relation, as that of Nephew, to the Conqueror.

THE

* Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. m. 8.
† Ibid. m. 9. & Clauſ. 15 Hen. III. m. 21.
‖ Madox Formulare Anglic.
§ Monaſticon Anglicanum, Vol. I. p. 833, 834, n° 40, & 50.

FLANDERS, or GAUNT.



THE firſt of this Family of whom we have any certain Account*, was *Lyderic*, Count of *Harlebeck*, upon whom the Government of that County was conferred by the *Carolinian* Emperors, with the Title of Forreſter, about the Year 792. He dying in 802, to him ſucceeded *Engelram*, his Son, who greatly improved that Province, before over-run with Woods and Marſhes; and dying in 824, was ſucceeded by his Son *Odoacer*, who enlarged his Dominions, and repulſed the *Normans*, who invaded his Coaſts.

To *Odoacer* ſucceeded *Baldwin* his Son †, the Firſt of that Name, ſurnamed *Iron-arm*, or the *Hardy*.—He was the firſt who obtained the Title of Count: for having married, in the Year 862, *Judith*, Daughter of *Charles* the Bald, King of *France*, (Widow of *Ethelwulph* the *Saxon* King of *England*) without his Conſent, though with her own, and that of *Lewis* the Stammerer, her Brother; and having at length pacified the Anger of that King, and the Marriage being confirmed at *Auxerre* in 863, *Flanders* was given to him, with the Title of a County; whereupon he built the Caſtles of *Bruges* and *Gaunt*, the Capital of that County, and died in 877.

To him ſucceeded *Baldwin* §, the ſecond Count of *Flanders*, his Son, ſurnamed the Bald §, who was alſo Count of *Bologna* and *St. Paul*.——He married *Alfrida*, youngeſt Daughter of *Alfred* the Great the famous *Saxon* King, and Law-giver of *England*, and died at *Gant* the ſecond of *January*, 918 or 919.

ARNULF, the Firſt of that Name ‖, Count of *Flanders*, ſurnamed the Great, or the Elder, ſucceeded his

---

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

his Father, and had long and cruel Wars with the Emperor *Otho* the Firſt, who had made himſelf Maſter of the Caſtle of *Gant*, which was at length reſtored to him in the Year 941.———Having alſo great Differences with *William*, the Firſt of that Name, ſurnamed *Longeſpèe*, Duke of *Normandy*, he treacherouſly cauſed him to be murthered, at a Conference in an Iſland of the *Somme*, near *Piquigny*, in 943.———He died on the twenty-ſecond of *March*, 965, eighty-one Years old; leaving by *Adela*, Daughter of *Herbert* the Second, Count of *Vermandois* (deſcended in the Male Line from *Charlemayne*) and of his Wife *Hildebrante*, Daughter of *Robert Fortis*, Duke of *France*, Anceſtor to the preſent Race of the *French* Kings, *Baldwin*, his Son and Heir.

BALDWIN, the Third of that Name *, Count of *Flanders*, ſurnamed the Young, governed *Flanders* in the Life-time of his Father, but died before him, of the Small-Pox, the firſt of *January*, 961, at *Berg St. Winox*. He married *Maud*, the Daughter of *Conrade* the Firſt, King of *Burgundy*, by his Wife *Maud*, the Daughter of *Lothaire*, King of *France*, of the *Carlovingian* Line; though others ſay, ſhe was the Daughter of *Herman* Duke of *Saxony*.

His Son *Arnulph*, the Second of that Name, ſurnamed alſo the Young †, was the next Count of *Flanders*, and alſo of *Bologne* and *Guienne*, being born ſome Days after his Father's Death. King *Lothaire*, his Uncle by the Mother's Side, taking Advantage of his Minority, took Poſſeſſion of ſome of his Cities, among the reſt of *Doway* and *Arras*, which were at length, however, reſtored to him again.——— He married *Roſala*, Daughter of *Beringer* the Second, King of *Italy*, and died in 988.

To him ſucceeded his Son, *Baldwin* the Fourth §, Count of *Flanders*, ſurnamed *Barbatus*, or, with the Beard; who ſubdued his rebellious Subjects of *Courtray*; and having ſeized upon the Town of *Valenciennes*, defended

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

defended it with great Bravery, againſt the united Forces of the Emperor, the King of *France*, and *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*; but afterwards he made his Peace, by his Submiſſion to the Emperor, who gave him, in the Year 1007, as a Fief, the Caſtle of *Gant*, the County of *Waes*, and the four Diſtricts or Meſtiers of the Towns of *Halſt*, *Axile*, *Bouchout*, and *Aſſenede*, ſituated in the Iſle of *Walcke*, in *Zealand*, which he united to his County of *Flanders*.——He was deprived of his Territories by *Baldwin* the Fifth, his Son, but was reſtored again by the Aid of *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*.——He married *Ogiva*, called alſo *Cunnigunda*, Daughter of *Ferdinand* the Firſt, Count of *Luxemburg*, of the Imperial Houſe of that Line, and died on the thirtieth of *May*, 1036.

BALDWIN, the Fifth of that Name*, ſurnamed of *Liſle*, or the *Pious*, or the *Debonaire*, Count and Marquis of *Flanders*, was a Prince of great Qualities, the Luſtre of which was tarniſhed by his rebellious Practices againſt his Father.——He ſubdued the *Friſons* 1045.——He aſſiſted *Geoffry Barbatus*, Duke of *Lorrain*, againſt the Emperor *Henry* the Third, and entering the County of *Hainault* by Force, obliged the Princeſs *Richildis*, Heireſs of that Province, after the Death of her firſt Huſband, to conſent to marry his Son, *Baldwin* the Sixth; by which Marriage, that County was afterwards added to the Dominions of this Houſe.——He afterwards did Homage to the Emperor *Henry* the Fourth, on the Day of his Coronation, at *Cologne*, for the Territories of *Valenciennes*, the Caſtle of *Gant*, *Aloſt*, and other Places, in 1057, which were then confirmed to him anew.——In 1060, upon the Death of *Henry* the Firſt, King of *France*, he was appointed Regent of that Kingdom, during the Minority of *Philip* the Firſt, who was Nephew to his Wife.——In 1066, he went over into *England*, to aſſiſt the Conqueror, his Son-in-law; for which Service he obtained a Penſion for himſelf and his Succeſſors, of

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.

Genealogy of the Earls of *Flanders*, and of the Houſe of G… deſcends th…

CHARLEMAGNE, Emperor, *ob.* 24 *Jan.* 814. = HILDEGARD, Daughter of *Childebrand*, D…

PEPIN, King of *Italy*, ob. A. D. 810. = | LEWIS I. ſurnamed the *pious Emperor*, …

BERNARD, King of *Italy*, ob. A. D. 818. = | CHARLES the Bald, King of *France*, … Emperor of the Weſt, *ob.* 877.

PEPIN, ſecond Lord of *Peronne* and *St. Quintin*. = | JUDITH, Daughter of *Charles* the Bald, … Widow of *Ethelwulph*, the *Saxon*, Ki…

HERBERT the Firſt, Lord of *Peronne* and *St. Quintin*, kill'd *A. D.* 902. =

HILDEBRANT, Daughter of *Robert Fortis*, Duke of *France*. = HERBERT, ſecond Count of *Vermandois*, of the Male Line of *Charlemagne*.

ADELA, Daughter of *Herbert* the ſecond, Count of *Vermandois*

BALDWIN, third Count of *Flanders*, ob. 961, before his Father. = MAUD, D…

ARNULF, ſecond Count of *Flanders*, *Bologne*, and *Guienne*, ob. …

BALDWIN, the Fourth, ſurnamed *Barbatus*, Count of *Flanders*, ob. 10…

BALDWIN V. ſurnamed of *Liſle*, Count of *Flanders*, ob. 1 Sept. 1067. = ADELA, Daughter …

MAUD, of *Flanders*, Wife of *William* the Conqueror, King of *England*.

2 ROBERT, of *Flanders*, ſurnamed *Friſo*, uſurped the Country of *Flanders*, upon his Nephews.

1 ARNULF, the third Count of *Flanders*, ob. ſ. p. 1071.

2 BALDWIN, ſecond Son, Count of *Hainault*.

GILBERT, …

MAUD, Daughter of *Stephen*, Earl of *Brittany* …

ROHESIA, Daughter and Heir of *William de Romara*, Earl of *Lincoln*. = GILBERT, of *Flanders*, ſecond of that Name, ſurnamed of *Gaunt*, Earl of *Lincoln*, jure Uxoris.

GUNNORA, Niece of … *Hugh de Gournay*, ſecond Wife of *Robert*.

2 GUNNORA, *ob. ſ. p.*

1 ALICE of *Flanders*, ſurnamed *Gaunt*, Counteſs of *Lincoln*, Wife of *Simon de St. Liz*, Earl of *Northampton*, ob. ſ. p.

ALICE …

MAURICE, *ob. ſ. p.*

EVA DE BERKELEY, ſurnamed de *Gournay* …

HAWISIA DE LONGCHAMP. = ROBERT DE HARPETRE, ſurnam…

(a younger Branch thereof) through a Female Heir of which
of *Egmont*.

wabia. LYDERICK, Count of *Harlebeck*, Forreſter of *Flanders*, ob. A. D. 824.=

of *France*, ob. A. D. 840.= ENGELRAM, Foreſter of *Flanders*, ob.= A. D. 824.

HILDIS, or JUDITH, Siſter of *Boſo*, King of *Burgundy*, ſecond Wife. ODOACER, Foreſter of *Flanders*.=

f *France*,= BALDWIN the Firſt, ſurnamed *Iron Arm*, land. Count of *Flanders*, *A. D.* 865, died 877.

ALFRED the Great, (of the *Saxon* Line) King of *England*, ob. A. D. 900.=

IN the Bald, Count of *Flanders*, *Bologna*,= ALFRIDA, youngeſt Daughter of *Alfred* the Great, and *St. Pol*, ob. A. D. 918. the *Saxon*, King of *England*.

LF the Great, Count of *Flanders*, ob. A. D. 965, æt. 81.

Herman, Duke of *Saxony*—or, according to ſome, of *Lothary*, King of *France*.

88.= ROSALA, Daughter of *Bernard*, ſecond King of *Italy*.

A, or CUNIGUNDA, Daughter of *Ferdinand*, firſt Count of *Luxembourg*.

King of *France*, by *Conſtance*, of *Provence*, his 2d Wife. RAYNER VI. Count of *Haynault*.=

1
he Sixth, ſurnamed of *Mons*,= RICHILDIS, Daughter and Heir of *Raynier* the Sixth, Count of anders, ob. 17 *July*, 1070. *Haynalt*. See the Deſcent of *Haynault*, Book VI. Chap. 3.

3
, ſurnamed *Gaunt*, third Son, came over to= ALICE, Daughter and Heir of *Hugh de Montfort*, land with the Conqueror. a great Baron.

=WALTER of *Flanders*, ſurnamed of *Gaunt*.

Flanders, ſurnamed of *Gaunt*, Baron= ALICE, the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell*, , Heir to his Niece *Alice*, Counteſs by his Wife *Avice*, ſurnamed *de Romelli*, Daughter and *Northampton*. Heir of *William Meſchines*.

, Daughter and Heir of *Robert* of *Flanders*, ſurnamed of= ROBERT DE BERKELEY, Son a firſt Wife *Alice*, the Daughter of *William Paganell*. of *Robert Fitzharding*.

d Heir.= THOMAS, the Son of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*.

, from a Female Heir of whom, deſcends the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

See the Continuation of this Deſcent, Book VII. through *Gournay*.

of three hundred Marks of Silver, out of the Revenues of the Crown of *England*; which was afterward the Cauſe of long and bloody Differences between the Poſterity of both Princes.———He died at *Liſle*, the firſt of *September*, 1067, leaving by *Adela*, Daughter of *Robert* King of *France*, and of *Conſtance* of *Provence*, his ſecond Wife, among other Children, *Baldwin*, the Sixth of that Name, his Succeſſor; *Robert*, ſurnamed *Friſo*, who uſurped the County of *Flanders*; and *Maud*, who was the Wife of *William* Duke of *Normandy*, and Conqueror of *England*.

BALDWIN the Sixth, Count of *Flanders* *, Son of *Baldwin* the Fifth, of *Mons*, acquired *Tournay* from the Emperor *Henry* the Fourth; in 1057, he likewiſe added to his Dominions the Lordſhip of *Grandmont*, beyond the *Scheld*.———And marrying *Richildis*, Daughter of *Raynier*, the Sixth of that Name, Count of *Hainault*, Heireſs of that County, died the ſeventeenth of *July*, 1070.

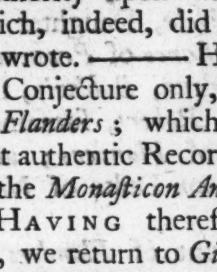
THIS *Baldwin*†, left three Sons, *Arnulf*, the Third of that Name, Count of *Flanders*, who was killed in the Battle of *Mont-Caſſel*, upon the twentieth of *February*, 1071, his Territories being uſurped by his Uncle *Robert Friſo*, whoſe Poſterity continued the Line of the Counts of *Flanders*, to the Prejudice of the true Heirs, *Baldwin* and *Gilbert*, the younger Sons of *Baldwin* the Sixth.———Of theſe, *Baldwin* obtained the County of *Hainault*, which his Poſterity long enjoyed.——And *Gilbert*, ſurnamed *de Gant*, was the Anceſtor of the Houſe of *Gant* and *Montford*, in *England*, of which we here particularly treat, whoſe Pretenſions are fallen, through Heireſſes, to that Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, of which the Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief.

BUT before we proceed farther with the Account of this great Houſe, we muſt obſerve, that the Truth of

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid.

of this Deſcent has been ſomewhat obſcured, by the Suppoſition of *Ducheſne*, in his Hiſtory of the Houſe of *Guiſnes* and *Gant*; for not having ſeen the poſitive Authority upon which we ground this Deduction, which, indeed, did not come to light till long after he wrote. ——— He has derived the Houſe of *Gant*, by Conjecture only, from an ancient Family ſo called in *Flanders*; which Surmiſe is entirely defeated, by that authentic Record which is cited in the firſt Volume of the *Monaſticon Anglicanum*, fol. 833.

HAVING therefore cleared up this important Error, we return to *Gilbert*, ſurnamed *de Gant*, the third Son of *Baldwin* the Sixth, ſurnamed of *Mons*, Count of *Flanders*, and *Richildis*, Counteſs of *Hainault*, his Wife.



THIS *Gilbert de Gant*, being Son to *Baldwin* the Sixth, Earl of *Flanders*, and *Richildis*, Heireſs of *Hainault*, his Wife, and alſo Nephew to *William* Duke of *Normandy*, (*Maud*, Wife to the ſame Duke, being Siſter to that *Baldwin*) came into *England* with him, and aſſiſting in that ſignal Conqueſt, had the Lands of one *Tour* a *Dane**, given to him, as alſo much more; for at the Time of the General Survey it appeareth, that he was poſſeſſed of one Lordſhip in *Berkſhire*, two in *Oxfordſhire*, three in *Yorkſhire*, ſix in *Cambridgeſhire*, two in *Buckinghamſhire*, one in *Huntingtonſhire*, five in *Northamptonſhire*, one in *Rutland*, one in *Leiceſterſhire*, one in *Warwickſhire*, eighteen in *Nottinghamſhire*, and an hundred and thirty in *Lincolnſhire*, of which *Folkingham* was one, where he ſeated himſelf, that being the Head of his Barony.

THIS

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant. and Monaſt. Angl. Vol. I. fol. 833, 834.

THIS *Gilbert de Gant* being at *York* †, in the Year 1069, (the third of *William* the Conqueror) when the *Danes* with a mighty Power having entered the Mouth of the *Humber*, advanced to that City (on the behalf of *Edgar Etheling*) and made a lamentable Deſtruction by Fire and Sword, (there being more than three thouſand of the *Normans* then ſlain) was one of thoſe few who eſcaped with Life.

HE was the pious Reſtorer of *Bardney-Abby* * in *Lincolnſhire*, (utterly deſtroyed by *Inguar* and *Hubba*, the Pagan *Danes* many Years before) which he rebuilt and amply endowed with Lands and Tythes. Moreover, he gave to the Abbey of *St. Maries* at *York*, ten Bovates of Land lying in *Ferriby*, five Bovates alſo in *Vincle* to the Knights-Templars, and nine in *Scamton*. And married *Alice*, Daughter and Heir to *Hugh de Montford* (a great Baron in that Age) by whom he left Iſſue three Sons ‖, *Walter*, *Hugh*, (who taking his Mother's Name, was Founder of that great Family, which long flouriſhed in this Realm, under the Title of Barons *Montfort* of *Beldeſert*;) and *Robert*, (who was Chancellor of *England*;) as alſo a Daughter named *Emma*, married to *Allan* Lord *Percie*, and departing this Life in the time of King *William Rufus*, was buried at *Bardney*.

TO him ſucceeded in that Barony *Walter* his Son and Heir §, a Perſon of great Humanity and Piety; who when he was an aged Man, and near his Death, commanded a brave Regiment of *Flemings* and *Normans* in that famous Battle againſt the *Scots* **, near *North-Alverton* in *Yorkſhire*, commonly called *Bellum-Standardi*; where, by his eloquent Speech and prudent Conduct, the whole Army received ſuch Encouragement, that the *Scots* were utterly vanquiſhed. ———

† Bugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
* Ibid.
‖ Vide Dugdale, ſub tit. de Montfort de Beldeſert; alſo Will. Gemeticenſis.
§ Dugdale, ſub tit. Montfort de Beldeſert.
** Ibid. ſub tit. Gant.

This *Walter* added more Buildings to the Abbey of *Bradney*, which his Father had reſtored, and farther endowed it with Lands and Tithes.

He likewiſe founded the Priory of *Bridlington* * in *Yorkſhire*, and gave unto it large Poſſeſſions; and taking to Wife *Maud*, Daughter of *Stephen* Earl of *Brittany* (and *Richmund*) had with her all *Swalledale* in Frank-marriage; and departing this Life in the fourth Year of King *Stephen*, left Iſſue *Gilbert*, *Robert*, and *Geffry*.

Which *Gilbert*, in his Youth †, being with King *Stephen* in that fatal Battle of *Lincoln*, *Anno* 1142, (the ſixth of King *Stephen*) was with him taken Priſoner; and therefore compelled by *Ranulf* Earl of *Cheſter*, to marry his Niece, *viz. Rohais*, or as ſome call her, *Hawiſe*, Daughter and Heir to *William de Romare*, Earl of *Lincoln*, whereby he had the Title of Earl of *Lincoln* in her Right.

After which he founded the Abbey of *Rufford* in *Nottinghamſhire* §, *Anno* 1148 (13 *Steph.*) and in Recompence of that Damage occaſioned to the Monks of *Pomfret* by reaſon of the War, which he had with *Henry de Lacy*, he gave unto them the Benefit of his Ferry at *South-Ferriby*, as alſo three Ox-gangs and an half of Land, with fourteen Houſes in that Town; whereupon he was received into their Fraternity, and made Partaker of all their Benefits.

He likewiſe, at the Requeſt of Pope *Eugenius* and *Bernard*, Abbot of *Clarevaulx* ‖, gave to the Monks of *Biham*, in *Lincolnſhire*, all his Land called *Braethuait*, lying in the Territory of *Edenham*, whereunto thoſe Monks tranſlating their Abbey, thenceforth calling it *Vallis-Dei*, or *Valdei*: as alſo divers other Lands and Woods near adjoining. Moreover, he gave thoſe three Carucates of Land, whereon the Priory of *Sempringham* in *Lincolnſhire* was founded by that devout Man Saint *Gilbert*, and was a liberal Benefactor to the Abby of *Bardney* before-mentioned.

Like-

* Dugdale, ſub tit. Gant.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

LIKEWISE *, conſidering with himſelf, that in his tender Years he had been educated in the Priory of *Bridlington*, (which was of his Father's Foundation) by a ſpecial Charter he gave his Body to be buried there. —— Expreſſing thereby, that whenever it ſhould pleaſe God to move his Heart ſo as to quit the Vanities of this World, and to retire to a religious Courſe of Life, his Purpoſe was to take the Habit of a Canon Regular in that Monaſtery, wherein he had been baptized, and brought up from his Infancy. He died in *Anno* 1156, (the ſecond of *Henry* the Second) leaving Iſſue two Daughters, *Alice*, the Wife of *Simon de St. Lize*, (the laſt of that Name) Earl of *Huntingdon* and *Northampton*; and *Gunnora*; but neither of them having any Iſſue, the Inheritance of this great Family returned to ‖ *Robert de Gant*, their Uncle.

WHICH *Robert*, in the fourteenth of *Henry* the Second †, paid Eleven Pounds, ſix Shillings and eightpence, unto the Aid then collected for Marriage of the King's Daughter. And in the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Second, acknowledged himſelf a Debtor in ſix hundred thirty-three Pounds, ſix Shillings and eight pence, as a Fine for his Lands, and that the Lands he ſhould recover, which Earl *Simon* gave, might be in the King's Hands, (if the King ſo pleaſed;) for the Payment of which Money, he aſſigned to the King an hundred Marks Land *per ann.* in *Folkingham*, *Edingham*, *Eckinton*, and *Barton*, in the County of *Lincoln*; to return to him again, when the before-ſpecified Sum ſhould be paid.

MOREOVER, in the third of *Richard* the Firſt §, he was charged as Debtor to the King in ſix hundred Marks, that he might have a Trial for thoſe Lands which Earl *Simon* had given him; but it was then conſidered by the Barons, that neither his Heir, nor any other, ſhould be ſummoned, until he ſhould be of Age to plead.

BUT

* Dugdale, ſub tit. Gant.

‖ Placit. 27 Hen. III. rot. 13. Lincoln de Serviliis Will^mi de Scremby.

† Ibid. § Ibid.

BUT in the ſame Year, or in the beginning of that which next enſued, he died *, leaving Iſſue by his firſt Wife *Alice*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Pagnell*, and of *Avice*, commonly called *de Romelli*, (Daughter and Coheir of *William Meſchines*, Lord of *Copeland*, and Brother to *Ranulph*, Earl of *Cheſter*,) one ſole Daughter, his Heir, named alſo *Alice*, who was the Wife of *Robert* the Firſt, Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, of the Houſe of *Berkeley*, before treated of, in the Article of that Houſe.

IN the ſecond of King *John*, a Suit at Law was commenced between *Nicholas de Stuteville*, and *Gunnora* his Wife §, (who was the Widow, and had been the ſecond Wife of the laſt-named *Robert de Gant*) on the one Part, and the Heir of the firſt Wife of the ſaid *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, on the other Part; to decide whether the ſaid *Nicholas* and *Gunnora* had any Right of Entry in the Town of *Sauteby*, with its Appurtenances, but through *Robert de Gant*, the former Huſband of the ſaid *Gunnora*; which *Robert de Gant* is there ſaid to have had no Right in the ſame, but in Title of *Alice Painell*, the Grandmother of *Maurice*, the Son of *Robert* the younger, *i. e.* the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*: which *Alice Painell*, the Record there ſays, had been the firſt Wife of the ſaid *Robert de Gant*, and had brought him her whole Inheritance. ———But, for what Cauſe doth not appear, this Suit was reſpited for that Time.

FOR the farther Account that may be given of *Robert* the younger, the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, or *Berkeley*, who married the ſaid Heireſs of *Gant*, and of his Poſterity, we ſhall refer to that part of this Work in which we have treated of the Noble Family of *Berkeley*, of which he was a younger Son. ——— From whom, as we have there obſerved, (through the Heireſſes of *Berkeley*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*) deſcends the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

AND

* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. Ebor. de Novo Oblatis. And Placit. Term. Mich. 2 Johan. Rot. 4. and Clauſ. 8 Johan. m. 4.

§ Ibid.

AND having now by this Deduction cleared up thoſe Miſtakes which have been made in the Deſcent of this Houſe*, with reſpect of the Iſſue of the aforeſaid *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham*, by his firſt Wife, the Daughter and Heir of *William Paganell*; we come next to treat of that which proceeded from his ſecond Marriage with *Gunnora*, the Niece of *Hugh de Gournay*, who afterwards became the Wife of *Nicholas de Stuteville*.——By this Lady he left two Sons, *Gilbert*, ſurnamed the Good; and *Stephen*, who, with his ſaid Brother, adhered to the rebellious Barons, about the latter End of King *John*'s Reign.—Which *Gilbert* being under Age in the ninth of *Richard* the Firſt, was in Ward to *William de Stuteville*: and in the thirteenth of King *John*, anſwered for ſixty-eight Knights Fees, a third and fifth Part, upon levying the Scutage of *Scotland*. But in the Year 1216, which was the laſt Year of King *John*, he was one of thoſe rebellious Barons that adhered to *Lewis* King of *France*, then called in, with purpoſe to be made King: and coming to *London* to him (upon his Return from *Eſſex*, *Suffolk*, and *Norfolk*, with much Plunder of thoſe Counties) was by him conſtituted Earl of *Lincoln*; and thereupon ſent into *Nottinghamſhire*, to reſtrain the Irruption of thoſe Soldiers of King *John*'s, then in the Caſtles of *Nottingham* and *Newark*, who did much Miſchief upon the rebellious Barons Houſes in thoſe Parts.——Shortly after which, by the Help of *Robert de Ropeſle*, he took the City of *Lincoln*, and ſubdued all thoſe Parts, excepting the Caſtle; ſo likewiſe all *Holland*; and then laid Siege to the Caſtle itſelf.

WHEREUPON †, the King made Seizure of all his Lands, lying in the Counties of *York*, *Lincoln*, *Cambridge*, *Eſſex*, and *Northampton*, and diſpoſed of them to *Gerard de Rodes*, and committed him Priſoner to *William* Earl of *Albemarle*. But upon the Peace made in the firſt of *Henry* the Third, he had his Liberty.

Not-

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
† Ibid.

Notwithſtanding which, he in no wiſe reſtrained his violent Courſes; ſo that the famous *William Marſhall* (then made Governor of the young King and Kingdom) was neceſſitated to haſten towards *Lincoln*, with what Force he could raiſe, where giving Battle to the Enemy, he obtained a glorious Victory, taking many of them Priſoners, among whom this *Gilbert de Gant* was one. But after that Time, we have ſeen nothing memorable of him till his Death, which happened in the twenty-ſixth of *Henry* the Third; and that he left Iſſue *Gilbert*. ——— Which *Gilbert* paying one hundred Pounds for his Relief, had Livery of the Lands which he held of the King *in Capite*; and at the ſame Time alſo paid a Fine of two hundred Marks (over and above his ordinary Eſcuage) to free him from Attendance of the King into *Gaſcoigne*.

In the twenty-ninth of *Henry* the Third *, he gave ſixty-eight Pounds, for ſixty Knights Fees, and a third Part, upon Collection of the Aid for Marriage of the King's Daughter. And in the thirty-eighth of *Henry* the Third, one hundred thirty-ſeven Pounds, one Shilling and four Pence, for ſixty-eight Knights Fees, an half a third and ſixth Part, upon Payment of the Aid, upon making the King's eldeſt Son a Knight.

Moreover, in the forty-ſecond of *Henry* the Third §, he was made Governor of *Scardeburgh-Caſtle*. So likewiſe, in the forty-third of *Henry* the Third, being one of the rebellious Barons then in Arms againſt the King, he was taken at *Kenelworth*, and gave no leſs than three thouſand Marks Fine for the Redemption of his Lands; whereupon, the fifty-ſecond of *Henry* the Third, the King received him into Favour again.

But not long after this †, he died at *Folkingham*, on the Nones of *January*, *Anno* 1274, (2 *Edw.* I.) and was buried in the Priory at *Bridlington*, leaving Iſſue *Gilbert*, (for another Son named *Robert* died in his Life-time,) and three Daughters, *viz.* *Margaret*, Wife

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
§ Ibid. † Ibid.

de Kerdeſton; *Nichola*, Wife of *Peter de Mauley*; and *Julian*, who died unmarried.

By the Inquiſition taken upon his Death *, it was found that he held the Lordſhip of *Hundemanby* in *Yorkſhire*, by Baronage; likewiſe, that upon the Marriage of *Gilbert* his Son with *Lora de Baliol*, he ſettled it upon her for her Dowry: and he died ſeiſed of the Manor of *Helagh* in *Swaledale*; ſo likewiſe of the Lordſhip of *Folkingham*, the Head of his Barony, and of *Hekynton*, *Haddenham*, *Skendelby*, and *Barton* upon *Humber*, in *Com. Lincoln*, and of the Ferry there.——To him ſucceeded *Gilbert* his Son and Heir, then twenty-four Years of Age, who, doing his Homage, had Livery of his Lands.——This *Gilbert*, commonly called *Gilbert* the Fifth, was in that Expedition made into *Wales*, in the tenth of *Edward* the Firſt. And in the twenty-ſecond of *Edward* the Firſt, had Summons perſonally to attend the King, with all Speed, for adviſing of the weighty Affairs of this Realm.—— Soon after which †, he received another Summons to repair to *Portſmouth* upon the firſt of *September*, well accoutred with Horſe and Arms, thence to go with him into *Gaſcoigne*.

In the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Firſt §, he attended that King into *Flanders*.

In the twenty-fourth and twenty-ſixth of *Edward* the Firſt ‖, he had Summons to Parliament, among other of the Barons.

He married *Lora* §, the Siſter of *Alexander de Baliol*; but having no Iſſue by her, conſtituted King *Edward* the Firſt his Heir, to the Lands of his Barony, *viz. Folkingham*, *Barton*, *Heckyngton*, and *Edenham*; retaining nothing but *Swaledale*, and his Portion of *Skendelby*. And in the twenty-ſixth of *Edward* the Firſt, departed this Life; whereupon *Roger*, the Son of *William de Kerdeſton*, then twenty-four Years of Age,

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gant.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

Age, and *Julian de Gant*, Siſter to the ſaid *Gilbert*, at that Time forty Years of Age, were found to be his next Heirs.

But of theſe Coheirs, it ſeems that *Peter*, the Son of *Peter de Mauley* *, died without Iſſue, in the ſame Year; for upon the Partition of that Inheritance, the ſaid *Roger*, the Son of *William de Kerdeſtan*, and *Julian*, doing their Homage, had alone Livery of thoſe Lands whereof he died ſeiſed, (the Lordſhips of *Barton upon Humber*, *Folkingham*, *Heckington*, and *Edenham*, excepted, which were in the King's Hands, by virtue of the Gift before ſpecified.)

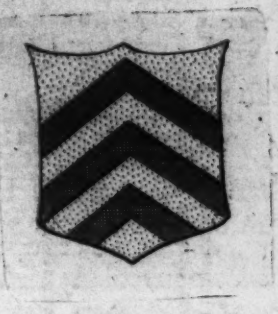
But *Lora*, his Widow †, out of theſe had aſſigned for her Dower, the Lordſhip of *Heckyngton*, and nine Pounds three Shillings and four-pence Farthing, as a yearly Seck-Rent out of *Edenham*, for her Life; which *Lora* died in the ſecond of *Edward* the Second, leaving *Julian*, her Siſter-in-law, ſurviving; who dying unmarried, gave all her Inheritance, *viz.* certain Lands in *Skendelby*, to the Nuns at *Nun-Coram*, in Pure Alms.

From whence it ſhould alſo ſeem, that the ſaid *Roger de Kederſton*, Son of *William*, and his Iſſue, had likewiſe by that Time failed, or otherwiſe, after the Death of the ſaid *Lora*, Part of her Jointure would have gone in Partition to the ſaid Family of *Kerdeſton*, as well as to *Julian de Gant*, his Aunt; which not appearing, we preſume from thence, that the Family of *Kerdeſton* was continued by another Branch: and that the Iſſue of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*, by his ſecond Wife, was intirely determined upon the Death of the ſaid *Julian* his Great-Grandaughter.

We

* Miſcellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor. Londini, per Glover, Somerſet.

† Ibid.



WE come in the next Place to treat of the Houſe of *Hainault*; the Heireſs of which having married into that of *Flanders*, or *Gant*, delivered down, through that Channel, its Blood and Arms to the Anceſtor of the preſent Earl of *Egmont*. A Sovereign Houſe of great Poſſeſſions, and of ſuch Antiquity, that if we may credit the major part of the Genealogiſts †, it may diſpute Preheminence, with any Sovereign Family in *Europe*.

As to the Territory of this Houſe, it was one of the ſeventeen Provinces of the Low-Countries, which probably derived its Name from the River *Hayne*, which paſſes through it, and empties itſelf into the *Scheld* at *Condè*. This Country is twenty Leagues long, and ſixteen broad, bounded on the North by *Brabant* and *Flanders*, on the South by *Picardy* and *Champagne*, on the Eaſt by a Part of *Brabant* and the County of *Namur*, and on the Weſt by the *Scheld* *, which divides it from *Artois*, and a Part of the *French Flanders*. ——— It conſiſts at preſent of the *Prevoès*, *Chatellany*, and Bailiwicks of *Mons*, *Valenciennes*, *Le Queſnoy*, *Maubeuge*, *Binch*, *Bouchain*, *Brain le Comte*, *Aſh*, the Peerage of *Aveſnes*, the Principality of *Chimay*, the Bailiwick of *Engheim*, and the Lands of *Leſſines*, with the Towns and Places of *Conde Landrecy*, *Phillippeville*, *Marienbourg*, *St. Guillain*, and *Hall*; moſt of which, excepting *Mons*, the Capital of this Country, and ſome others which belong to the *Dutch*, are now comprehended in the Government of *French Flanders*.

As to the Deſcent of this great Houſe, moſt Writers have concurred in Opinion, that it is derived in a direct Male Line from *Pharamond* §, King of the *Franks*,

† Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
* Ibid. § Ibid.

Genealogy of the Sovereign Counts of HAINAULT, from the Heir Female of which, through thoſe of *Flanders*, (or *Gant*) *Gournay*, and *Delamore*, deſcends the preſent Earl of EGMONT.

GILBERT, Count of *Brabant*, Anceſtor to the ancient Counts of *Hainault*, A. D. 840, deſcended from *Pharamond*, King of the *Franks*, in the Male Line. = ERMENGARDE, Daughter of the Emperor *Lothary* the Firſt, by his Wife *Ermengarde*.—He was Grandſon of *Charlemain*.

RAYNIER the Firſt, Count of *Hainault*, Duke of *Haſbain*, A. D. 876. = ERMENGARDE.

RAYNIER the Second, Count of *Hainault*, Duke and Governor of *Lorrain*, ob. 917. = ALBEREDA.

1 GILBERT, Duke and Adminiſtrator of Lorraine.

3 LAMBERT, firſt Count of *Louvaine*.

2 RAYNIER the Third, Count of *Hainault*. = ALICE, Daughter of *Richard le Juſticier*, Duke of *Burgundy*.

ALICE, Daughter of *Hugh* of *Alſace*, Count of *Egenbein*. = RAYNIER the Fourth, Count of *Hainalt*, ob. 977.

HADEWIGE, eldeſt Daughter of *Hugh Capet*, King of *France*. = RAYNIER the Fifth, Count of *Hainault*.

MAUD, Daughter of *Herman* of *Ardenne*, called alſo *Henſcelon*, Count of *Einham*. = RAYNIER the Sixth, Count of *Hainault*, ob. A. D. 1013.

HERMAN, a *German* Count, firſt Huſband. = RICHILDIS, Counteſs and Heireſs of *Hainault*. = BALDWIN the Sixth, Count of *Flanders*, ſecond Huſband.

ROGER, *ob. ſ. p.* GERTRUDE, *ob. ſ. p.* GILBERT, of *Flanders*, ſurnamed of *Gant*, third Son, from whom the preſent Earl of *Egmont* is deſcended.

See the Deſcent of *Gant* and *Flanders*, preceding.

who died in the Year 425 after Chriſt.——But as it has been our conſtant Rule to confine ourſelves to nothing but what is moſt fully proved, and inconteſtible, we ſhall take up our Account no higher than with *Gilbert* Count of *Brabant*, who lived about the Year 800; and is the firſt of this Houſe mentioned by Father *Anſelm*, in his Genealogical Hiſtory of *France*. An Author we ſhall ſolely follow, with reſpect to this Houſe, being the moſt faithful and judicious Writer that has appeared in this Way.

IT was this *Gilbert* *, who, as he pretends, was Anceſtor to the ancient Houſe of *Lorrain*, and to this of *Hainault*.——It is ſaid that he bore the Title of Count of the *Menſuarii*, which is in reality no Government, but a Charge ſimular to that of Grand-Marſhal of the Houſhold. He was very eminent in the Wars, which happened between the Children of the Emperor *Lewis le Debonnaire*, and at firſt adhered to the Emperor *Lothary*, but was afterwards engaged on the Side of King *Charles*, and was one of the greateſt Lords of his Court.——And he at length ſo far preſumed upon the Credit he was in, that he carried off, and married *Ermengarde*, the Daughter of the Emperor *Lothary*, and returned with her into *Aquitain*, in the Year 846.—— But this Marriage was very much reſented by King *Charles*, and thereupon enſued a War, which laſted two Years, till at length the Diſpute was amicably adjuſted at *Thionville*, in 848, by the Mediation of *Lewis* King of *Germany*, Brother of the ſaid *Charles*; and the ſaid *Gilbert* was reſtored to his Eſtate and Dignity.

TO him ſucceeded his Son, *Raynier* the Firſt, Count of *Hainault*, and Duke of *Haſbain*, ſurnamed With the Long-neck.—— He gallantly reſiſted the Attempts of *Rollo*, then General of the *Normans*, and afterwards firſt Duke of *Normandy*, who having invaded the Iſland of *Walkarie*, in *Zealand*, in the Year 876,

* Anſelm's Genealogies of Feance.
† Ibid.

876, endeavoured to fortify and eſtabliſh himſelf in thoſe Parts.—— But two Years after this, Count *Raynier* was taken Priſoner by the ſaid *Rollo* at *Condè*, in *Hainault*, upon the Confluence of the *Scarpe* and *Scheld*; who generouſly reſtored him to his Liberty, and very honourably ſuffered him to return home to his Wife.———It is not abſolutely certain, whether it was this *Raynier*, or his Son of the ſame Name, who followed the Cauſe of *Zuendebold*, King of *Lorrain*, in the Year 898, which he quitted afterwards, (being ill-treated by that Prince) and took the Part of *Charles* the Simple, King of *France*.———He left by *Ermengarde* his Wife, whoſe Family is not recorded, one Son, named alſo *Raynier*.

RAYNIER the Second *, Count of *Hainault*, followed all his Life the Fortunes of *Charles* the Simple, who having recovered *Lorrain* in 912, or 913, upon the Death of *Lewis* the Third, King of *Germany* and *Lorrain*, made him Duke of that Province.—— He died in the Year 917, much regretted by that Prince, who, to teſtify his Regard to him, continued his Son in the Poſts which he had conferred upon the Father.——— The Name of his Wife was *Albereda*, by whom he left three Sons, *Gilbert*, *Raynier*, and *Lambert*, and a Daughter named *Simphoriana*, who became the Wife of *Berenger*, Count of *Namur*.

GILBERT †, the eldeſt Son, was alſo Duke and Adminiſtrator of *Lorrain*, and was Founder of the ancient Dukes of *Lorrain*, whoſe Deſcent is not to our Purpoſe to follow here.——Nor that of *Lambert*, the third Son, who was Count of *Louvaine*.——— The Deſcent in which we are concerned in this Place, is from

RAYNIER §, the ſecond Son, the Third of that Name, who was Count of *Hainault*, having that Province for his Portion; but living uſually in the Town and Caſtle of *Mons*, is frequently known by the Title of Count of *Mons*.——— He quarrelled with *Gilbert* Duke

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

Duke of *Lorrain*, his Brother, who ſupported the Intereſts of *Boſo*, Count of *Burgundy*, engaged in Battle with him, and took him Priſoner, in the Year 924. But they were afterwards reconciled in 928, by the Interpoſition of *Henry* the Firſt, ſurnamed the Fowler, Emperor of *Germany*. ——— By his Wife *Alice*, the Daughter of *Richard*, ſurnamed *le Juſticier*, Duke of *Burgundy*, he left *Raynier* the Fourth, Count of *Hainault*; and another Son, *Rodolph*, Count of *Haſbain*.

RAYNIER *, Count of *Hainault*, the Fourth of that Name, ſurnamed alſo With the Long-neck, together with his Brother *Rodolph*, adhered to the Party of King *Lewis*, ſurnamed *Outremer*, in 944.——*Conrade*, Duke of *Lorrain*, who was engaged on the Side of the Emperor *Otho* the Firſt, took from him one of his Caſtles, in 951, and beſieged ſeveral others. But in 957, he defeated the Duke, who returned the next Year, and ravaged the County of *Hainault*. In 959, he was taken Priſoner at *Valenciennes*, by *Bruno*, Archbiſhop of *Cologne*, and Arch-Duke of *Lorrain*, Brother to the Emperor *Otho* the Firſt, and ſent into Baniſhment, not only for his Intrigues, and the Diſorders which his active Spirit occaſioned, but for having attempted to deprive Queen *Gerberga*, Widow of his Uncle *Gilbert*, Duke of *Lorrain*, of her Dower.—— He died in 977, leaving by his Wife *Alice*, Daughter of *Hugh* of *Alſace*, Count of *Egenhein*, *Raynier* the Fifth his Heir, and *Lambert*, from whom proceeded the ancient Dukes of *Brabant*.

RAYNIER, the Fifth of that Name §, upon the Misfortune of his Father, retired with his Brother *Lambert*, to *Lothary*, King of *France*, where they were received with great Humanity.——— Sometime after, by the Aſſiſtance of *French* Troops, this *Raynier* defeated the Counts *Garnier* and *Renald* in 973, at the Battle of *Perrone*, and afterwards attacked the Counts *Godfrey* and *Arnulf*, who had made themſelves Maſters

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

Maſters of the County of *Mons*, and forced the firſt of theſe to ſurrender, upon *Wedneſday* the nineteenth of *April*, 976. He died about the Year 1013, leaving by his Wife *Hadevige*, eldeſt Daughter of *Hugh Capet*, King of *France*, by *Adelaide* of *Guyenne*,

RAYNIER *, the Sixth of that Name, Count of *Hainault*, who ſucceeded his Father in the County of *Hainault*, the Town and County of *Mons*, and a good Part of *Brabant*; he eſpouſed the Intereſt of *Lambert*, Count of *Louvain*, in that Difference which he had with *Godfrey*, Duke of *Lorrain*, againſt whom they loſt the Battle of *Florines*, the twelfth of *September*, 1015.———At his Requeſt, the Emperor *Henry* took the Church of *St. Guillain* under his Protection, which afterwards cauſed a long Diſpute between him and the Biſhop of *Cambray*.——— It is believed that the Emperor *Conrade* the Second, gave him the County of *Valenciennes*, which he had formerly taken from *Baldwin* the Fourth, Count of *Flanders*; upon which followed a War between the Counts of *Hainault* and *Flanders*; and, in the Year 1033, the Ruin of his Caſtle of *Eingham*, which belonged to him in right of his Wife. He removed the Relics of *Verona* from *Lambert* to *Mons*, to preſerve them from the Enemy; and died about the Year 1037; leaving by *Maud* his Wife, Daughter of *Herman*, or *Henſeelom* of *Arden*, or *Lower Lorrain*, Count of *Eingham*, and of *N. N. Aſbourg*, a ſole Daughter, his Heireſs, named *Richildis*.

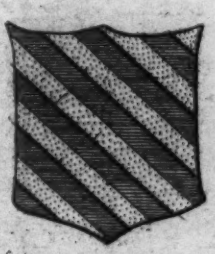
RICHILDIS, Counteſs of *Hainault*, *Mons*, *Brabant*, and *Valenciennes* §; was firſt married to *Herman*, Count of *Turingia* in *Germany*, with whom ſhe had great Differences in the Year 1046, and continued till the Year 1049, when they were adjuſted by the Mediation of Pope *Leo* the Ninth. This Count *Horman* died in the Year following 1050, leaving by this Lady a Son named *Roger*, and a Daughter *Gertrude*,

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

trude, both died without Iſſue.———Her ſecond Huſband was *Baldwin* the Sixth, Count of *Flanders*, to whom, and his Poſterity, ſhe brought this great Inheritance.

OF her Children we have already ſpoken in the laſt Article; we have therefore only to add, that *Gilbert* of *Flanders*, her third Son, ſurnamed *de Gant*, coming over into *England* with the Conqueror, was Founder of the great Family of that Name *; the Heireſs of which marrying *Robert de Berkeley*, ſecond Brother to *Maurice*, the firſt Lord *Berkeley*; and the Heireſs of the ſaid *Robert de Berkeley*, marrying *Thomas de Harpetre*, alias *Gournay*; and the Heireſs of *Gournay* marrying *Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, the Houſe of *Perceval*, by the laſt named Family, acquired a Right of Blood and Arms of this Illuſtrious Houſe.

MONTFORT.



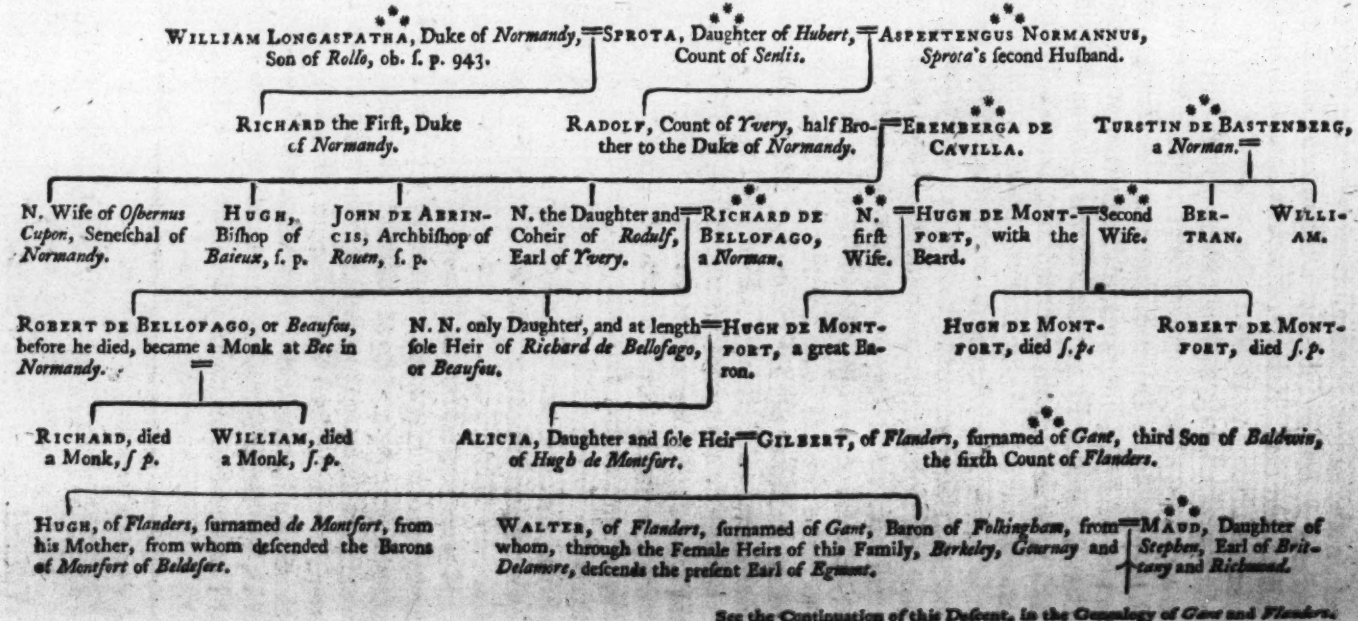
THE next Family to be deduced, according to the Order propoſed, is that of *Montfort*, great Barons of this Realm; of which Sir *William Dugdale* gives the following Account.

THE firſt of this Family of whom we find mention, is *Hugh de Montfort*, Son of *Thurſtan de Baſtenberg*, a *Norman* †; which *Hugh* was commonly called *Hugh with a Beard*, (the *Normans* at that Time being annually ſhaved;) and accompanying *William* Duke of *Normandy*, when he firſt landed in this Realm, was with him in that famous Battle againſt King *Harold*, where the Duke, then Conqueror, was advanced to the Regal Throne of this Realm; and ſhortly after, (being a valiant

* Anſelm's Genealogies of France.

† Note, that this Deſcent of Montfort, with that of Bellofago and Yvery, are all contained in the Hiſtory of Will. Gemeticenſis, publiſhed by Du Cheſne, fol. 288, & 289.

Genealogy of the ancient Counts of YVERY, and of the Great Houſes of BELLOFAGO and MONTFORT, from the Female Heirs of whom deſcends the preſent Earl of EGMONT.



See the Continuation of this Deſcent, in the Genealogy of Gant and Flanders.

valiant and expert Soldier) received expreſs Commands with ſome others, to be aſſiſtant to *William Fitz-Oſborn*, and *Odo*, Biſhop of *Baieux*, in the adminiſtring public Juſtice throughout the whole Kingdom; for which great Services he obtained divers fair Lordſhips, as appears by the general Survey, *viz.* twenty-eight in *Kent*, beſides a large Proportion of *Romney-Marſh*; ſixteen in *Eſſex*, fifty-one in *Suffolk*, and nineteen in *Norfolk*: but at length he loſt his Life in a Duel with *Walcheline de Ferrers*, leaving Iſſue *Hugh*, his only Son and Heir.

WHICH *Hugh* *, by —— his firſt Wife, had Iſſue two Sons, *Robert*, and *Hugh*. Which *Robert* was General of the Army to King *William Rufus*, in the twelfth of his Reign; but favouring the Title of *Robert Curthoſe*, in Oppoſition to King *Henry* the Firſt, was called in queſtion for his Infidelity; whereupon, being conſcious of his Guilt, he got Leave to go to *Jeruſalem*, and left all his Poſſeſſions to the King.

THIS *Robert* gave to the Monks of *Beck* in *Normandy* †, the Churches of *Montfort*, *Apevil*, and *Froulancurt*. But both he and his Brother *Hugh* died in a Pilgrimage, without Iſſue. *Hugh* the Father, by his ſecond Wife, the Daughter, and at length ſole Heir, of *Richard de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, a noble *Norman*, left only one Daughter, his Heir, married to *Gilbert de Gant*.

WHICH *Gilbert de Gant* §, as we have already ſhewn in our Account of that Family, left Iſſue by that Lady three Sons, *Hugh*, *Walter*, and *Robert*, and a Daughter *Emma*, married to *Alan* Lord *Perci*; of which Sons, *Hugh*, his Mother being ſo great an Heireſs, aſſumed her Surname, which he delivered to his Deſcendants, who were among the greateſt Barons of the Realm, and had their chief Seat at *Beldeſert*, in the County of *Warwick*.——And from *Walter* his Brother, to whom the Surname of *Gant* remained, deſcended that Houſe of *Gant*, ſo famous in this Kingdom: whoſe Repreſentative, through the Female Heir,

* Will. Gemet. † Ibid. § Ibid.

in the Manner we have already ſhewn, is the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

BELLOFAGO, or, BEAUFOU.



THE next Heireſs of whom we come to treat of, is *Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, a *Norman* Houſe, no doubt of the firſt Diſtinction, ſince *Richard de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou* §, married the Daughter and Coheir of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*, who was half Brother to *Richard* the Firſt, Duke of *Normandy*; the other Coheir being the Wife of *Oſbernus Crepon*, Seneſchal of *Normandy*, Anceſtor to the Earl of *Breteuil* in *Normandy*, and *Hereford* in *England*; of whoſe Dignity we have already ſpoken, in the Chapter of *Alliances of the Houſe of* Yvery, and from whom alſo the preſent Earl of *Egmont* is deſcended †.

‖ BUT the great Antiquity to which we are now carried, prevents our giving any farther Account of this Family of *Bellofago*, which flouriſhed above a hundred Years before the Conqueſt. All that we ſhall add therefore, with relation to it, is, that the ſaid *Richard* having married, as we have before obſerved, the Daughter and Coheir of *Ralph* Earl of *Yvery*, left by her a Son named *Robert de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, and one Daughter, married to *Hugh de Montfort*, called the ſecond, of whom we have lately ſpoken.

THIS *Robert de Bellofago*, or *Beaufou*, at length was ſhorn a Monk, in the Abby of *Beck* in *Normandy*; which was a frequent Practice with the greateſt Families

§ Will. Gemet. ut ſupra.

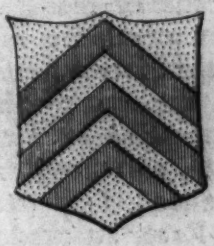
† Note, that this Coat is uſually blazoned thus, The Field Argent, without the Billets, and white Billets charged upon the red Lyon.

See theſe Arms in the Hiſtory of the Houſe of Harcourt, Vol. I.

‖ See ſome farther Account of this Family, in the Hiſtory of the Houſe of Harcourt, by La Roque, Vol. I.

lies in that ſuperſtitious Time. But having been married before, he left two Sons, *Richard* and *William*, who both purſuing the Example of their Father, became alſo Monks in the ſame Monaſtery; and dying without Iſſue, the whole Rights of this Houſe deſcended to the Houſe of *Montfort*, by Means of the Marriage before obſerved; and from thence to *Gant*; through which, by the Channel of other Heireſſes, as we have ſhewn already, they devolved upon that Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, of which the preſent Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief.

YVERY.



THE Family next in order, is that of the ancient Earls of *Yvery* in *Normandy*.

IT has been already obſerved in the firſt and ſecond Books of this Work, how the Earldom of *Yvery* came into the Houſe of *Perceval* *, ſoon after the Conqueſt, by reaſon partly of the Rebellion of *Euſtace* Earl of *Pacy*, natural Son of *William* Earl of *Breteuil*, and partly in Conſideration of the Alliance of *Aſcelin Gouel de Percheval* with the ſaid Earl of *Breteuil*; that Degree of Relation being doubtleſs the Reaſon why, upon the Offence and Forfeiture of the ſaid *Euſtace*, King *Henry* the Firſt conferred that Noble Territory on the ſaid *Aſcelin*. And we have alſo ſhewn how the ſaid Earldom came to the Houſe of *Breteuil*, by the Marriage of *Oſbern Crepon*, Anceſtor to that Family, with the eldeſt Daughter and Coheir of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*.—— It muſt be noted, therefore here, that the Houſe of *Yvery* of which we treat in this Place, is of a diſtinct Original in the Male Line, from that of *Perceval*, which derived their Surname of *Yvery* from a Female of the former.

THE

* Will. Gemet.—Vide etiam Vol. I. Book II. Chap. II.

THE Houſe of *Yvery* here mentioned, is deduced from *Aſperleng*, a *Norman*, of immenſe Riches, who marrying *Sprota*, the Widow of *William Longaſpatha*, Duke of *Normandy*, (the Son of *Rollo*) and Daughter, as it is ſaid, of *Hubert*, and Siſter of *Bernard*, Count of *Senlis*. ——— By her he had a Son named *Ralf*, who being of ſo noble an Extraction, and half Brother to *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*, and equally eminent for his Courage and great Qualities, was the firſt in the Degree of a Subject in that Province.

OF this *Ralf* it is related by *William Gemeticenſis*. that ancient *Norman* Writer, that being then a Youth, and hunting in the Foreſt of *Weura*, with others of the Train of the Duke his Brother, in the moſt obſcure Receſſes of that Place, on a ſudden broke out upon them a Boar of a monſtrous Size, with which the reſt of the Party were ſo terrified, that they all fled, leaving the young Man alone, who fearing more the Shame of a diſgraceful Flight, than the Fury of the Beaſt; and though not yet arrived to the Strength of Manhood, ſupported by the Magnanimity inherent to his Race, attacked the raging Monſter, and felled him at his Feet: in which State he was found by his Companions, who returned to learn the Iſſue of this fearful Combat.———Whereupon this valiant Action coming to the Ears of the Duke, he rejoicing greatly at it, granted immediately to the young Man the ſaid Foreſt of *Weura*, and its Appurtenances, impoſing upon that Valley, in which this Tranſaction happened, the Name of the *Vallis Urſonis*, or the *Boar's-Valley*, in Commemoration of this Event; which Name it then retained, at the Time when that Author wrote, as he himſelf aſſures us. Some Time after he added to this Grant the Caſtle of *Yvery*, from which the ſaid *Ralf* aſſumed the Title of Earl.

RALF†, Earl of *Yvery*, married *Embrega*, or, as ſome ſay, *Albreda*, born in the *Calcine* Territory, at

---

* Will. Gemet. † Ibid.

at a Town called *Cavilla*: a Lady of great Beauty, but of Qualities which diſgraced her Perſon; for being of a violent and furious a Temper, ſhe employed a famous Architect named *Lanfred*, who had lately built the Tower of *Pedvers*, to erect a Caſtle at *Yvery* before-mentioned, which was long eſteemed the ſtrongeſt Fortreſs of that Dutchy. And having finiſhed the Work with great Labour and vaſt Expence, ſhe beheaded the ſaid Architect, that he never might erect a Building of the like Nature again. But it was not long before ſhe met with the Puniſhment due to this barbarous Act; for having fortified herſelf in the ſame Caſtle, endeavouring to keep her own Huſband from the Poſſeſſion of it, his Reſentments being juſtly raiſed againſt her for this intolerable Conduct, ſhe was put to Death by him.

THIS *Ralf**, Earl of *Yvery*, bearing alſo the Title of Earl of *Baieux*, was Tutor to *Richard* the Second, Duke of *Normandy*, his Nephew, and dying in ——, left by the ſaid *Eremberga* his Wife, two Sons *Hugh*, and *John*, and two Daughters, *Albereda*, and ——. *Hugh*, the eldeſt Son was Biſhop of *Baieux*, ſucceeded his Father; who ſlighting that Duty to which he was bound, both by Allegiance and Blood, perceiving that *Robert*, the firſt Duke of *Normandy*, Brother and Heir to *Richard*, the Third of that Name, neglected his Counſels, preferring thoſe of wiſer and more diſcreet Men, urged by his Pride and Ambition, and relying on the Strength of his Caſtle of *Yvery*, privately furniſhed that Place with Arms and Proviſions of War, and having left a Garriſon therein, withdrew with all Expedition into *France*, to raiſe Forces there, to carry on the Rebellion he had thus begun. —— But the Duke of *Normandy*, conſidering of what Importance it was to check the Growth of ſuch Diſorders in their Infancy, raiſed an Army, and inveſted the Caſtle with ſo much Expedition, that he had Leiſure to ſtrengthen his Camp ſo well, that the ſaid *Hugh*

* Will. Gemet.

Hugh could never relieve the Place, whereupon he was conſtrained for the Preſervation of his Aſſociates thus beſieged, to enter into a Treaty with the Duke, upon which he ſurrendered the Place to that Prince, upon Condition that the Partners of his factious Undertaking might be diſmiſſed with Liberty; and together with theſe, he long lived diſpoſſeſſed of his Inheritance, and died at length without Iſſue.

*JOHN**, the ſecond Son of *Ralf* Earl of *Yvery*, and Brother of *Hugh*, (who being called *Johannes Abrincatenſis*, or *John* of *Averenches*, became Archbiſhop of *Rouen*) alſo died without Iſſue.

We therefore now † come to the Daughters of *Ralph* Earl of *Yvery*, who by the Death of both their Brothers, became Coheirs of this illuſtrious Family.

Of theſe *, *Albreda* the eldeſt, became the Wife of *Oſbernus Crepon*, (Son of *Herfaſtus* the *Dane*, as we have before, more than once obſerved) whoſe Son *William Fitz-Oſborn*, was Earl of *Breteuil*, *Pacy*, *Conſtantine*, and *Yvery*, and Earl of *Hereford* in *England*. And by *Adel*, Daughter of *Ralf de Toney*, left *William* his eldeſt Son, Heir to his great Eſtate, and to the Earldom of *Yvery*, whoſe natural Daughter *Iſabella*, being married to *Aſcelin Gouel de Percheval*, brought this Eſtate, and Deſcent in Blood, into the Houſe of which we principally treat.

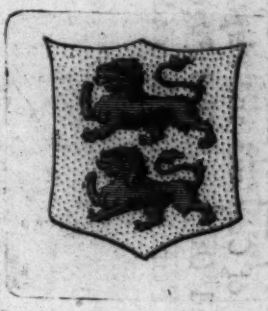
But the other Daughter §, becoming the Wife of *Richard de Bellofago*, (as we have already obſerved) a new Deſcent, and the Rights of Blood and Arms, deſcended to this Line of *Perceval*, of which the Earl of *Egmont* is the Chief, through the Heireſſes of *Montford*, *Gant*, *Fitzharding*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*, or *Bythemore*; as the diſtinct Account of theſe Houſes more particularly ſhew.

We

---

* Will. Gemet. † Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

PAGANELL.



WE come now to conſider the Deſcent of *Paganell*: a Family of great Eminence, and ancient Barons of the Realm, as all the others we have mentioned likewiſe were. ——— In tracing which, we ſhall almoſt literally follow Sir *William Dugdale*, as far as it relates to that Branch, whoſe Rights have fallen into the Houſe of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*.

BY the Conqueror's Survey it appears*, that *Ralf Paganell* held at that Time ten Lordſhips in the County of *Devon*, five in the County of *Somerſet*, fifteen in the County of *Lincoln*, and fifteen in the County of *York*, whereof *Nonnintune* was one, unto the Soke to which belonged four Hamlets.

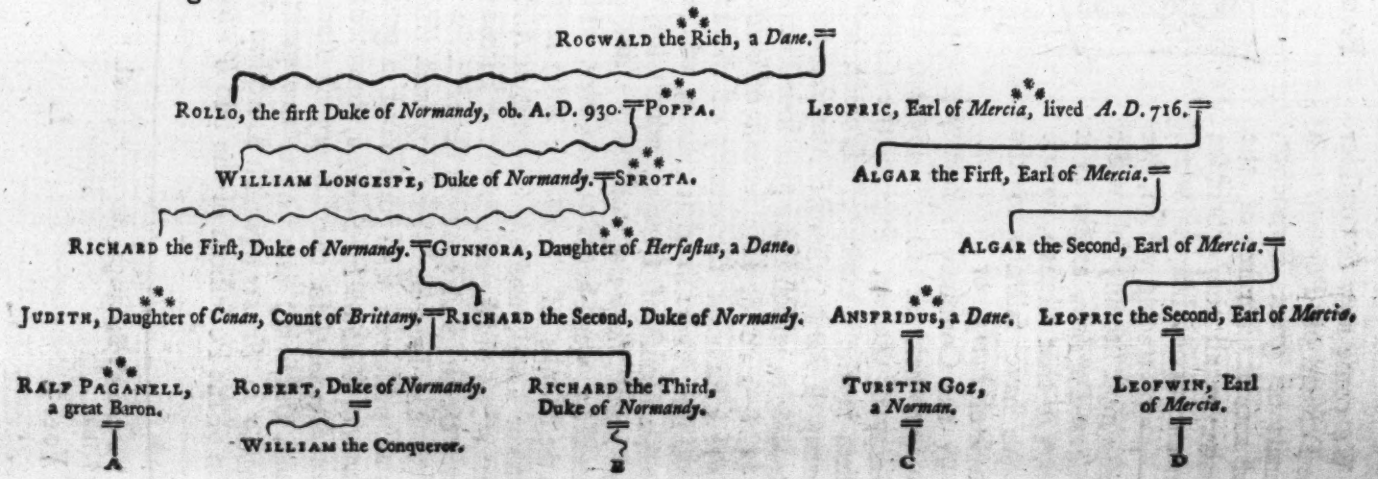
IN *Anno* 1089, (the ſecond of *William Rufus*) this *Ralph* † founded the Priory of the Holy Trinity at *York*, for *Nuns* in that Place, where formerly had ſtood a Houſe of Canons, which had been deſtroyed by King *William* the Conqueror: and in the Time of that King, was Sheriff of *Yorkſhire*. He likewiſe gave to the Monks of *St. Mary's Abby* in *York*, ſix Carucates of Land, and one Oxgang in *Millington*, as alſo the Church of *Hugeth*, with the Tithes and Glebe, and ſeven Oxgangs of Land in *Howald*.

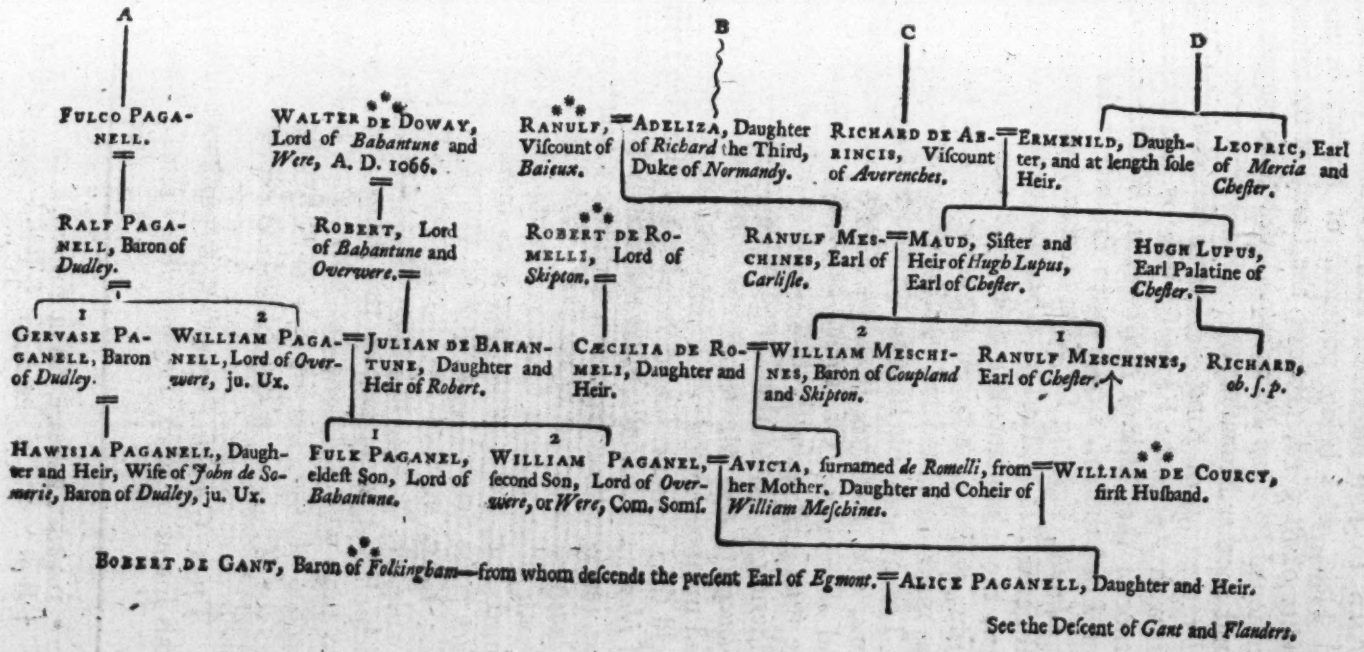
To him ſucceeded *Fulk Paganell*, (his Son and Heir, as we preſume) who poſſeſſing a great Part of the Lands of *William Fitzaſculph*, founded that Monaſtery near *Newport*, in the County of *Buckingham*, (ſince called *Tickford*,) as a Cell to that great Abby of *Marmonſtier* in *France*; which Lordſhip of *Newport* was Part of the Poſſeſſions of the ſaid *William Fitzaſculph*.

AND

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Paganell.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

Genealogy of the Dukes of *Normandy*; *Leofwin*, Earl of *Mercia* and *Cheſter*; *Lupus*, Earl of *Cheſter*; *Meſchines*, Viſcounts of *Averenches*; Earls of *Carliſle*, and Barons of *Coupland* and *Skipton* in *Craven*; *Romeli*, Baron of *Skipton*; *Doway*, Baron of *Bahantune* and *Overwere*; and *Paganell*, Barons of *Dudley*, *Bahantune* and *Overwere*; from all of whom, by Female Heirs, deſcends the Earl of *Egmont*.




A
B
C
D
Fulco Paganell.
Walter de Doway, Lord of Babantune and Were, A. D. 1066.
Ranulf, Viscount of Baieux.
Adeliza, Daughter of Richard the Third, Duke of Normandy.
Richard de Arrincis, Viscount of Averenches.
Ermenild, Daughter, and at length sole Heir.
Leofric, Earl of Mercia and Chester.
Ralf Paganell, Baron of Dudley.
Robert, Lord of Babantune and Overwere.
Robert de Romelli, Lord of Skipton.
Ranulf Meschines, Earl of Carlisle.
Maud, Sister and Heir of Hugh Lupus, Earl of Chester.
Hugh Lupus, Earl Palatine of Chester.
1
2
Gervase Paganell, Baron of Dudley.
William Paganell, Lord of Overwere, ju. Ux.
Julian de Babantune, Daughter and Heir of Robert.
Cæcilia de Romelli, Daughter and Heir.
2
1
William Meschines, Baron of Coupland and Skipton.
Ranulf Meschines, Earl of Chester.
Richard, ob. s. p.
Hawisia Paganell, Daughter and Heir, Wife of John de Somerie, Baron of Dudley, ju. Ux.
1
2
Fulk Paganel, eldest Son, Lord of Babantune.
William Paganel, second Son, Lord of Overwere, or Were, Com. Somf.
Avicia, surnamed de Romelli, from her Mother, Daughter and Coheir of William Meschines.
William de Courcy, first Husband.
Robert de Gant, Baron of Folkingham—from whom descends the present Earl of Egmont.
Alice Paganell, Daughter and Heir.
See the Descent of Gant and Flanders.

And to him ſucceeded *Ralf Paganell* *, his Son and Heir, who being poſſeſſed of *Dudley*, in the County of *Stafford*, (Part of the Lands of the before-mentioned *William Fitzaſculph*,) did there purpoſe to found another Monaſtery.

In the fifth of King *Stephen* †, this *Ralph*, taking part with *Maud* the Empreſs, was by her made Governor of the Caſtle of *Nottingham*, (*William Peverell*, then Lord thereof, being taken Priſoner in the Battle of *Lincoln*, fighting for King *Stephen*,) whereupon he inſtigated *Robert* Earl of *Glouceſter* to enter *Nottingham*, the Inhabitants being deſtitute of any defenſive Arms, which he accordingly did; ſo that the Town was miſerably plundered by the Soldiers.

Touching his Iſſue §, we find that he had divers Sons, *viz. Gervaſe*, *William*, *Hugh*, *Adam*, *Jordan*, and *Alexander*. Of theſe, beginning with *Gervaſe*, we ſhall firſt obſerve, that in *Anno* 1138, (3 *Steph.*) adhering to *Maud* the Empreſs, when *Robert* Earl of *Glouceſter*, and others, raiſed Forces on her behalf, and manned ſeveral Caſtles againſt King *Stephen*. He held the Caſtle of *Dudley* for her; and in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, upon the Aſſeſſment of the Aid for marrying the King's Daughter, reſiding then at *Dudley*, certified his Knight's Fees, *de Veteri Feoffamento*, to be in number ſix, and thoſe *de Novo* ſix, and a third Part. But after this, *viz.* in the twentieth of *Henry* the Second ‖, being with young *Henry*, Son to the King, in that Rebellion againſt his Father, his Caſtle of *Dudley*, in *Anno* 1175, (21 *Hen.* II.) was demoliſhed, as others at that Time were, belonging to thoſe who had done the like. And in the twenty-ſecond of *Henry* the Second, gave five hundred Marks to the King, as a Peace-Offering for that Tranſgreſſion.

This *Gervaſe Paganell* ‡, in purſuance of that pious Intent of *Ralf Paganell* his Father, whereof we have

---

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Paganell.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

have already made mention, founded the Priory of *Oudley*, in the County of *Wigorn'*, and gave to the Nuns of *Eaton*, in the County of *Warwick*, his Mill at *Ingepenne*, in the County of *Berks*, with the Meadow and Croft adjoining. But leaving no Male Iſſue ſurviving, *Hawiſa* his Daughter became his Heir: which *Hawiſa* was firſt married to *John de Somerie* *, by which Means *Dudley*, with other Lands of great Extent, came to *Ralf de Somerie*, her Son and Heir; afterwards to *Roger de Berkeley*, of *Berkeley* in the County of *Glouceſter*.

HAVING thus done with *Gervaſe*, we come next to *William* †, who in the twelfth of *Henry* the Second, upon that Aſſeſſment of the Aid for marrying the King's Daughter, certified his Knight's Fees, *de Veteri Feoffamento*, to be fifteen in number, and half a Knight's Fee *de Novo*,

THIS *William* founded the Priory of *Drax*, in the County of *Ebor.* for Canons Regular of Saint *Auguſtine*. Moreover, he confirmed to the Monks of *Selby*, that Grant which *Ralph* his Father made to them, of the Land, Meadow and Woods, lying oppoſite to *Rondcliffe*, on the other ſide of the River *Eyre*. And having married *Julian* §, the Daughter of *Robert de Bahantune* ‖, Baron of *Bahantune*, in the County of *Devon* ‡, (Son of *Walter de Doway*, left Iſſue *Fulk* **, his Son and Heir, and *William* ††, his ſecond Son; which *William* §§, by *Avice*, ſurnamed *de Romelli*, (Widow of *Robert* ‖‖ *de Courcy*,) the Daughter and Coheir of ‡‡ *William Meſchines*, Lord of *Coupland*, (Brother to *Ranulf Meſchines*, Earl of *Carliſle*, and Uncle to *Ranulf* Earl of *Cheſter*,) left one ſole Daughter

---

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Paganell.
† Ibid.
§ Monaſticon Anglican. fol. 373. fol. 911. Ibid. Vol. II. & fol. 475, 563, 564, 912.
‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid. ** Ibid. †† Ibid.
§§ Ibid. Vol. II. fol. 27.
‖‖ Ibid. Vol. I. fol. 691.
‡‡ Certificat. Feodor. Mil. in Com. Somſ.

ter and Heir named *Alice**, who became the Wife of *Robert de Gant* †, Lord of *Folkingham*, Brother, and at length Heir to *Gilbert de Gant*, Earl of *Lincoln*, as we have before obſerved. The Continuance of which Deſcent having been deduced already to the Houſe of *Perceval*, or *Yvery*, is needleſs to be repeated here.

DOWAY.



THAT the Family of *Doway* proceeded from *Flanders*, their Name ſufficiently demonſtrates; and that they were, as ſome Authorities affirm, of the Sovereign Houſe of that Province, is rendered more than probable, by the large Portion of the Spoils of *England* conferred upon them at the Conqueſt; but in this Conjecture, not being ſufficiently ſupported, we ſhall proceed no farther.

BE this as it will, it is certain that *Walter*, ſurnamed *de Doway* §, was a very eminent Adventurer in the *Norman* Expedition; and by that ancient Record called *Doomſday-Book*, it is evident that he received for his Services at that Time, the Barony of *Babantune*, or *Bampton*, in the County of *Devon*, the great Lordſhip of *Overwere*, and many other noble Manors in both the ſaid Counties, and elſewhere.

TO this *Walter* ſucceeded his Son *Robert*, who was ſurnamed *de Babantune* ‖, or *Bampton*, from the chief Seat of his Barony, whoſe ſole Daughter and Heir *Julian*, became the Wife of *William Paganell*, a great Baron, (of whoſe Deſcent we have lately treated) to whom this large Inheritance devolved. ——— *Fulco*, the eldeſt Son of this *William*, enjoyed the Barony of *Bampton*;

---

* Rot. Pip. 4 Ric. I. Ebor.
† Monaſticon. Anglican. fol. 97.
§ Doomſday-Book.
‖ Monaſt. Anglican. ut ſupra, ſub tit. Paganell.

Bampton; but *William*, the ſecond Son, obtaining the Lordſhip of *Were*, or *Overwere*, with other Parcels of that Eſtate, married *Avice*, ſurnamed *de Romelli*, the Daughter and Heir of *William Meſchines*, Lord of *Coupland*, Brother to *Ranulf Meſchines*, Earl of *Carliſle*, and leaving by her a ſole Daughter named *Alice* his Heir, ſhe became the firſt Wife of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*: through whom, in the Manner we have ſhewn before, the Eſtates and Rights of Blood, deſcended to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

MESCHINES.



THE Greatneſs of the Families whoſe Rights, by Heireſſes, have centered in this Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, which is the Subject of our Enquiries here, is ſuch, that it is difficult to decide which have been the moſt conſpicuous.———This of *Meſchines*, which is next in order to be deduced, is doubtleſs among the very firſt of the Old Nobility in *England*, as will appear by the following, though ſhort Account, which we ſhall give of it.———And as the Family of *Gant*, in Birth and Proximity of Blood to the Royal Family, appears to have been moſt eminent; ſo this of *Meſchines*, in Power and immenſe Poſſeſſions, undoubtedly exceeded all the reſt.

FOR by Alliances, or Grants from different Princes, this Houſe † obtained the County of *Cumberland*, and Earldom of *Carliſle*, the County Palatine of *Cheſter*, (which they held as freely as the King held the reſt of *England*,) and the whole County of *Stafford*, the County of *Richmond*, the Honour of the Earl *Roger* of *Pictou*, the Honour or Baronies of *Blithe*, and *Eye*, *Coupland*, and *Littleſlang*, with

† Dugdale, ſub tit. Cheſter.

with an immenſe, and almoſt incredible Eſtate beſides, in different Parts of this Realm. ——— And abroad, the whole Dutchy of *Brittany*, the Viſcounty of *Averenches*, and Earldom of *St. James*, beſides many other Caſtles, and Places of Importance, in the Provinces of *Normandy*; all which may be ſeen in Sir *William Dugdale's Baronage of England*, under the Head of the *Earl of Cheſter*; but this Deduction being too voluminous to be inſerted here, we ſhall content ourſelves with a ſhort Account of this Houſe, as far as it relates to that Branch of it, from the Heireſs of which the Houſe of *Perceval* is deſcended.

THE firſt Anceſtor of this Family that we are able with Certainty to mention, is *Ranulf de Mæcinis*, or *Meſchines*, Viſcount of *Baieux* in *Normandy*, who married *Adeliza*, Daughter of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*.—— § Notwithſtanding which Relation to that Ducal Houſe, he, together with *Guido*, the Son of *Rainald*, Count of *Burgundy*, and *Haman Dentatus*, Count of *Corboille*, took up Arms againſt *William* Duke of *Normandy*, afterwards the Conqueror of *England*, then a Youth; being moved thereto, by an immoderate Ambition, and the Deſire of preventing that Reformation of the State, which the young Prince effectually laboured; a Regulation very injurious to thoſe licentious Habits, in which they had been before indulged. But this Rebellion proved unfortunate to their whole Party, though the Authors of it eſcaped the Puniſhment they had deſerved, from the generous Clemency of Duke *William*.

To him ſucceeded *Ranulf Meſchines*, his Son, who coming over with the Conqueror, obtained the Earldom of *Cumberland*, commonly called of *Carliſle*, and marrying *Maud*, the Siſter, and at length Heir of *Hugh*, ſurnamed *Lupus*, Earl of *Cheſter*, left by her three Sons, *Ranulf*, *William*, and *Geffry*.

RA-

---

* Vide Dugdale, ſub tit. Cheſter.
† Ibid. § Will. Gemeticenſis.

RANULPH de Meſchines *, ſurnamed *Bricaſard*, having married *Lucia*, Daughter of *Algar*, the *Saxon* Earl of *Mercia*, Siſter, and at length Heir, of *Edwin* and *Morcar*, the *Saxon* Earls of *Northumberland*; and being Nephew and Heir of *Hugh Lupus* Earl of *Cheſter*, obtained that great Palatinate, as ſome pretend, in right of his Mother, and others, of his Wife; though doubtleſs not of the latter, who died without Iſſue; but for the wonderful Pre-eminence of his Poſterity, (from which alſo the Earl of *Egmont* is derived, as will appear in the Chapter of *the Alliances of the Houſe of* Yvery, and in other Parts of this Work) we refer the Reader to Sir *William Dugdale*. As to *Geoffry*, the youngeſt Son, he received the Lordſhip of *Gilleſland*, of his Brother *Ranulf*, from whom, through Females, the Barons *Dacres* of *Gilleſland*, derived their Deſcent.

BUT *William Meſchines*, the ſecond Son of *Ranulf* the Firſt †, Earl of *Cumberland* and *Carliſle*, is the Perſon from whom the Houſe of *Yvery* and *Perceval* through the Female Heir proceed.———Which *William* obtained of his Brother *Ranulf*, Earl of *Cheſter*, that Part of the vaſt mountainous Country of *Stanemore*, on the Borders of *Cumberland* and *Yorkſhire*, (which the ſaid *Ranulf*, according to ſome Opinions, had obtained of the Conqueror) called afterwards *Coupland*, containing all thoſe Lands which lie between the River *Dudene* and *Darwent*, which other Authorities ſay were given to him by *William* the Conqueror himſelf, and others, by King *Henry* the Firſt; but it appears rather to have been the Gift of the ſaid Earl of *Cheſter* his Brother, becauſe it is ſaid farther, that the ſaid Earl obtaining the County Palatine of *Cheſter*, gave up to the King the Earldom of *Cumberland*, making, however, theſe Conditions, that his Brothers, and others, whom he had enfeoffed with Lands in thoſe Parts,

* Vide Dugdale, ſub tit. Cheſter.
† Ibid. ſub tit. Meſchines.

Parts, ſhould retain their Eſtates for the future, holding them of the Crown.

THIS *William* *, having married *Cæcilia*, Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Romelli*, obtained by her the Lordſhip of *Skipton* in *Craven*, and founded the Monaſtery of *St. Bega*, commonly called *St. Bees*, which was a Cell to that of *St. Mary* at *York*, and gave to the Monks of *St. Warburg* at *Cheſter*, the Church of *Diſſard* in *North Wales*.

CŒCILIA de Romelli, his Wife †, gave alſo for the Health of the Soul of *William de Meſchines*, her Huſband, and alſo of thoſe of her two Sons, to the Canons of *Emeſey*, her whole Lordſhip of *Childwie*, with the Mill and Soke thereof, as alſo that of *Singleſdon*, and thoſe at *Harwood*, with the Suit that was due thereto.

THIS *William de Meſchines* left two Sons §, *Ranulph* and *Matthew*, who both died without Iſſue, and two Daughters, his Heirs, *Cicely*, the Wife of *Robert de Romelli*, Lord of *Skipton*, (from whom the *Lucies*, *Moultons*, and *Percies*, did deſcend;) and *Avicia* ‖, called *de Romelli*; who being firſt the Wife of *William de Courcy*, Server to *Henry* the Firſt, was afterwards married to *William de Paganel*, as we have before obſerved, whoſe Daughter and Heireſs became the Wife of *Robert de Gant*, Lord of *Folkingham*; from whom the Deſcent was continued, as we have already ſhewn, to that Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery* which bears the Name of *Perceval*.

WE are now come to that Houſe, the Arms of which are marſhalled next in order by the Houſe of *Perceval*; and this is no leſs than that of the Sovereign Dukes of *Normandy*, from whom the Kings of *England* do alſo deduce their Deſcent.——— But here we muſt obſerve, to avoid all Matter of Cavil or Diſpute, ſomewhat with reſpect to this Pretenſion. For as, according to the modern Rules of Heraldry, the Iſſue of a Man not married, is not entitled to bear the Arms of

* Vide Dugdale, ſub tit. Meſchines.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ut ſupra.

DUKES of NORMANDY.



of the Father, without a Mark of Baſtardy, as being counted illegitimate; yet in this Caſe, there is a Difference to be made, which will obviate all Objection.———For in theſe elder Ages, the Children of unmarried Parents were capable of ſucceeding to Inheritances of every Kind, as thoſe who are converſant in Matters of Antiquity well know; and Chriſtianity, with its Syſtem of regular Marriage, not having well obtained at that Time in that Country, it followed, that from the firſt Conqueſt of *Normandy* by *Rollo*, till the Conqueſt of *England* by his Deſcendant *William* the Conqueror, there was but one Succeſſion to that Dutchy, which we ſhould now allow to be legitimate *; yet was this Particular never an Objection to the Title of theſe Princes; and was not, therefore, then contrary to the Law of Inheritances in that Country: and as the Law of Inheritance is that by which the Quartering of Arms is wholly directed, there is no Doubt at all, but that the Heireſſes of that Family, though not born in Marriage, were entitled to the Arms of that Dutchy.———For the farther Juſtification of which, we find that all the Dukes carried the ſame Arms, *viz. Gules, two Lions*, or *Leopards, Gold*, (to which the Kings of *England* have afterwards added a third:) which Arms *William* Duke of *Normandy*, the Conqueror of *England*, likewiſe uſed, though the Son of *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*, not born in Wedlock: either therefore, the Conqueror himſelf, and the Kings of *England* deſcended from him, had no Right to that Coat, or *Adeliza*, the Daughter and Heir of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*, Brother to the ſaid Duke *Robert*, was entitled equally to bear it herſelf, and to deliver it down to her Heirs, according

* Vide Bacon upon Government.

to the uſual Courſe of Armory, of which number is the preſent Earl of *Egmont*. ——— This will be ſufficient to maintain the Pretenſions of the Houſe of *Perceval* to this Pre-eminence, which might otherwiſe meet with Objection, from thoſe, who either envy ſo great a Mark of Diſtinction, or may be ignorant of the Practice of Antiquity. ——— And ſufficient for us to join the Arms of *Normandy* to the Quarterings of this Family, without the *Bordure Gobonnèe, Argent and Azure*; with which Mark of Illegitimacy it has been borne by them commonly.———This Pretenſion proceeds (as will appear from the Pedigree annexed) thro' the Marriage of *Adeliza*, the Daughter of *Richard* the Third, Duke of *Normandy*, with the Houſe of *Meſchines* before-mentioned.

LUPUS, Earl of CHESTER.



THE next Family, according to our propoſed Order, from whence the Houſe of *Perceval*, is by a Female Heir derived, is that of *Hugh Lupus*, Earl of *Cheſter*.

THERE is no Genealogy of a *Norman* Family, which is carried with Certainty farther back, than that of which we treat in this Place; for it is derived from *Anſfridus*, who was a *Dane*, and was one of thoſe who ſettled with *Rollo* in *Normandy*.

To him ſucceeded *Turſtinus*, ſurnamed *Goz* *, his Son, who in the Reign of *William* the Second, Duke of *Normandy*, being Governor of the Province of *Oximi*, in that Dutchy, and perceiving the Power and Influence of the *French* to be ſuch, as to keep the young Duke in great Subjection, conceived that Opportunity favourable to render himſelf independant of his Prince.——And thereupon, corrupting the Troops under

* Dugdale. Orderic. Vital. Will. Gemeticenſis.

under his Command, he fortified his Caſtle of *Falaiſe*. But the Duke having gathered together the *Norman* Forces from all Parts, under the Command of *Ralf de Wacey*, he attacked the Caſtle, and ſoon made ſo great a Breach in the Wall thereof, that if the Night had not prevented, they had taken the Place.——This *Turſtin* therefore, well weighing the imminent Danger in which he was, capitulated, and obtaining Leave to march away, long wandered an Exile from his native Country.

To this *Turſtin Goz* ſucceeded *Richard*, his Son, who, by great Services, at length reconciled his Father to the Duke, and acquired far greater Poſſeſſions than his Father had loſt. This *Richard*, who was Viſcount of *Averenches* in *Normandy*, and called *Richard de Abrincis*, and ſurnamed alſo *Goz*, is by ſome ſaid to have married the half Siſter of *William* the Conqueror, but in Truth, (as appears from a Pleading *coram Rege*, *Hill.* 14 *Ric.* II. *Rot.* 50. *Warw.* between the King and the Prior of *Coventry* *) *Ermenilda*, Daughter of *Leofwin*, and Siſter and Heir of *Leofric*, the *Saxon* Earl of *Mercia* and *Cheſter*, by whom he left a Son named *Hugh*, and three Daughters, *Margaret*, of whom we ſhall treat hereafter; *Judith*, who became the Wife of *Richerus de Aquila*; and another, whoſe Name is not recorded, married to *William de Auco*.

HUGH de Abrincis †, the Son, ſo well known by the Surname of *Lupus*, was that glorious Subject, who being a Perſon of great Note among the *Norman* Nobility, and an expert Soldier, was for that reſpect, and partly, no doubt, for his great Deſcent from the Earls of *Mercia*, placed near the unconquered *Welch*, or *Britons*, the better to reſiſt their bold Incurſions.—He was advanced to the Earldom of *Cheſter*, by the Advice of the Council of *William* the Conqueror, with a very extraordinary Power, for he had Royal Juriſdiction in the Precincts of his Earldom, which was given him, *Tenere ita libere ad Gladium, ſicut ipſe Rex*

* Placit. coram Rege, 14 Ric. II. Hill. Rot. 50. Warw.
† Dugdale, ſub tit. Ceſtriæ.

Rex tenebat Angliam per Coronam, To hold as freely by the Sword, as the King himſelf held England *by the Crown.*——Which great Advancement happened to him four Years after the *Norman* Conqueſt, in 1070.

It is unneceſſary to ſay any thing farther of this *Hugh* *, but that he left Iſſue three Sons, *Richard*, Earl of *Cheſter*; *Robert*, and *Othellus*.——Of which, *Robert* was a Monk, and *Richard* and *Othellus* were both drowned, (leaving no Iſſue) in that unhappy Shipwreck, together with *Henry*, eldeſt Son of *Henry* King of *England*.

Whereupon, the Rights of this Family in the Male Line being thus extinct, fell to *Maud*, or *Margaret*, the Siſter of the ſaid *Hugh Lupus*, who having married *Ranulf Meſchines*, Earl of *Cumberland*, or *Carliſle*, as we have before obſerved, the ſaid *Ranulf* became Earl of *Cheſter*, and left a ſecond Son *William*, ſurnamed *Meſchines*, Lord of *Coupland*, who, as we have ſhewn already, had a Daughter and Coheir named *Avice de Romelli*, the Wife of *William Paganell*; from whom, by the Accounts already given, the Deſcent of this great Houſe is drawn to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

Earls of Mercia.



The next Heireſs of the Houſe of *Yvery*, or *Perceval*, to be mentioned in this Place, is that of the Family of the *Saxon* Earls of *Cheſter* and *Mercia*, which is abſolutely and inconteſtibly the eldeſt Houſe in thoſe Kingdoms, that can be deduced by the undoubted Evidence of Hiſtory and Record; and from this Houſe proceeds the Earl of *Egmont*, by a Deſcent remounting to the Year 700, above one thouſand Years ago.

The

* Dugdale, ſub tit. Ceſtriæ.

† Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Cheſter & Mercia.

THE firſt Anceſtor of this great Houſe †, is mentioned by *Ingulphus*, who tells us, that *Leofric*, or *Leuric*, was Earl of *Cheſter* in the Year 716, and Witneſs to the Charter of *Ethelbald* the *Saxon* King to the Monks of *Crowland*, of which Monaſtery that Prince was a Founder, in which he is ſtiled *Comes Liceſtriæ*; but the Reaſon is well known, becauſe the City of *Cheſter* was anciently called *Urbs Legeonium*; wherefore, by Corruption, in the Mention made of *Leofric* Earl of *Mercia*, in the Reign of King *Edward* the Confeſſor, where he takes Notice of his great Magnificence to ſeveral Religious Houſes, (and in particular to that of *St. Warburgh the Virgin*) he ſays, that the ſaid Houſe was *Legaceſtra ſita*, which is very well known to be intended for *Cheſter*, where the Abby of *St. Warberg* was, and not *Leiceſter*, as Sir *William Dugdale* ſhews.

To this *Leofric*, Earl of *Cheſter* *, ſucceeded *Algar*, Earl of *Cheſter*, the firſt of that Name.

WHICH *Algar* had a Son alſo *Algar*, the ſecond of that Name †, Earl of *Cheſter*, who left a Son, *Leofric*.

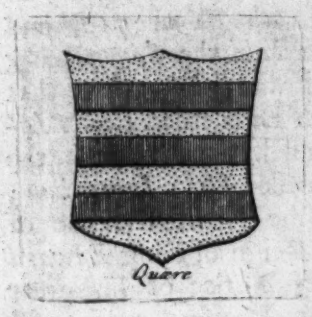
WHICH *Leofric* §, Earl of *Cheſter*, the ſecond of that Name, had a Son, *Leofwin*.

THIS *Leofwin* ‖ was Earl of the Province of *Mercia*, and left three Sons; *Leofric*, who was Earl of *Mercia* after his Father; *Norman*, and *Edwyn*; and one Daughter named *Ermenilda*, who was, at length, the ſole Heireſs of that Houſe, by the Death of her Brothers, and their Iſſue; which *Ermenilda* became the Wife of *Richard de Abrincis*, the Father of *Hugh Lupus*, in Right of his Mother, and by Favour of the Conqueror, Earl of *Cheſter*; whoſe Siſter and Heir having married *Ranulf Meſchines*, Earl of *Cumberland*, or *Carliſle*, the Deſcent is carried through the different Houſes we have mentioned, by Heireſſes, to that of the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

RO-

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Cheſter & Mercia.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

ROMELLI,



ROMELLI, is the next Family we ſhould conſider here; but as yet we have not been able to deduce a perfect Pedigree of that Houſe, before the Heireſs of it was married to *William Meſchines*, as we have obſerved above; but that it was of great Poſſeſſions is evident enough, from that eminent Lordſhip of *Skipton*, in *Craven*, which paſſed into that Houſe, by Means of this Marriage.——How this Line is deduced down to the preſent Houſe of *Perceval*, will be ſeen, by reverting to what we have ſaid of the other Heireſſes, through which its Pretenſions are derived to this. We ſhall therefore now ſet ourſelves to treat of the next we are to mention in this Place, which is that of *Counteville*.

COUNTEVILLE, or, CAUNDVILLE.

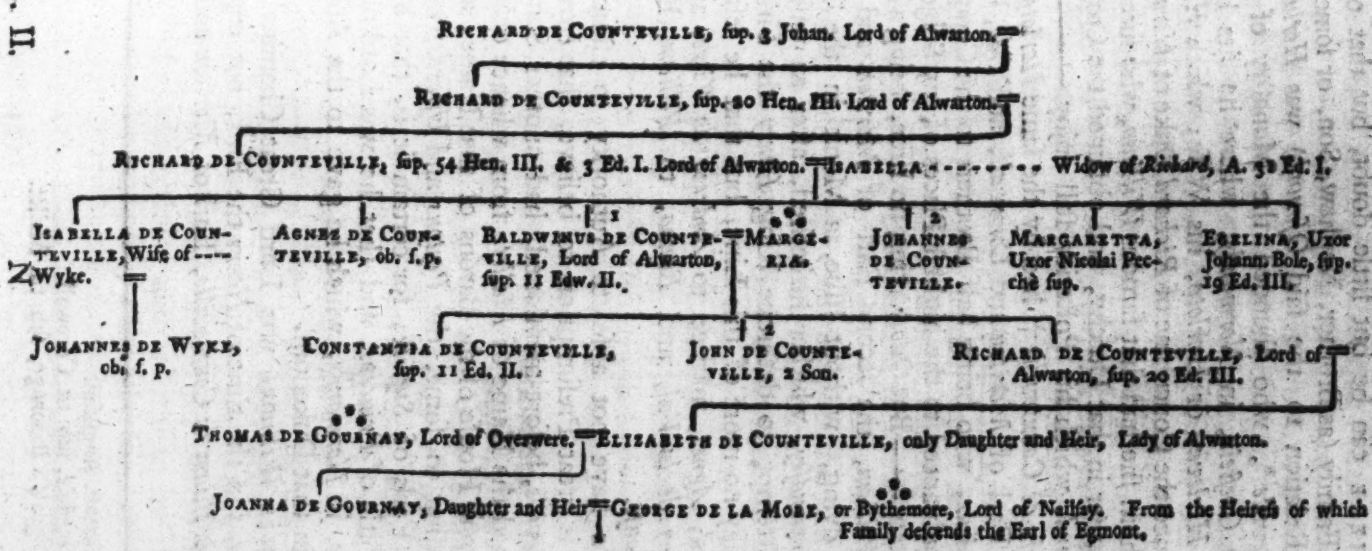


THE firſt and moſt ancient Mention of this Name, is long before the Conqueſt. *Oſmund de Comitiſvilla*, or *de Counteville* *, having married the Daughter of *Herfaſtus* the *Dane*, Brother to *Gunnora*, Wife to *Richard* the Firſt, Duke of *Normandy*, Great Grandfather to *William* the Conqueror; but what Iſſue he left is uncertain, more than that he had a Daughter, who became the Wife of *William de Redvers*, Anceſtor to the great Family † of that Name, who were Earls of *Devon*.

THERE

* Will. Gemet. † Ibid.

Genealogy of the House of *Counteville*, or *Camville*, from the Heiresses of which, through that of *Delamore*, descends the present Earl of *Egmont*.



THERE can be but little doubt, but that of the ſame Family (as Brother, Nephew, Son, or ſome very near Relation to the ſaid *Oſmund*) was *Herluin de Counteville* *, who founded the Monaſtry of *Saint Mary Greſtein*, in *Normandy*, where he lies buried with *Herleva*, or *Harlota*, his Wife; which *Harlota* was once the Concubine of *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*, by whom ſhe had that famous *William*, who ſucceeded his Father in that Dutchy, and obtained the Crown of *England*, which his Poſterity ſtill enjoy.——This *Herluin de Counteville* † had by the ſame *Harlota*, *Robert*, Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, and *Odo*, Biſhop of *Baieux*, who being half Brothers to the Conqueror, were advanced to the higheſt Places of any Subjects in the State.——But *Odo* having no Iſſue, being a Prieſt, and *William*, the ſecond Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, dying, without Iſſue, a Monk in the Priory of *Bermondſey*, whither he retired, after an unſucceſsful Attempt to dethrone King *Henry* the Firſt; we ſhall ſay no more of this Line, but that he left three Siſters; *Agnes*, married to *Andrew de Vitre*, another to *Guy de la Val*, and *Emma*, to *William*, Earl of *Thouloufe*.

WE have not abſolute Authority to affirm, but there is great Preſumption to believe, that *Herluin de Counteville*, before-mentioned, had another Son, who aſſumed the Name of *Mallet*, from whence deſcended the great Houſe of the Barons of that Name; as alſo, according to ſome, the *Peytons* and *Uffords*, who became Earls of *Suffolk*; for certain it is, that he bore the Title of *Princeps*, and that he was Lord of *Counteville*, in *Normandy*, which he gave to the Abbey of *Bec*, in that Dukedom.

THIS *William* ‖ was Lord Great Chamberlain of *England* in the time of *Henry* the Firſt, but engaging with *William de Counteville*, Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*,

* Monaſt. Anglican.
† Dugdale, ſub. tit. Cornwall.
‖ Dugdale's Baronage, ſub. tit. Mallet.

wall, in the ſame Attempt againſt that Prince, (which ſtrengthens the Probability of his Deſcent) he was a Partner with him in his ill Succeſſes, being diſinherited and baniſhed for this his imprudent Conduct.

AND for a further Confirmation thereof, there is extant Charter † of *Robert Mallet*, Son of the aforeſaid *William*, and *Heſilia* his Wife; which *Robert*, having founded the Convent of *Eye*, in *Suffolk*, granted, at the Requeſt of *Oſbert de Counteville*, thoſe Lands in *Accolte*, which the ſaid *Oſbert* held apparently of him therein.

IN a Charter ‖ of *Robert Fitzharding*, relating to the Foundation of the Priory of *Saint Auguſtin*, in *Briſtol*, *Adam de Counteville* was a Witneſs thereto, wherein *William*, the Son of *Gregory*, grants to the ſaid Priory ten Shillings of Land in *Alertone*, (or *Alwarton*) which Earl *William* had formerly confirmed to the ſaid *Gregory*, as I preſume.

IF this *Albertone* be the ſame with *Alwarton*, as we preſume it is, having been from very remote Time in the Line of this Houſe of *Counteville*, of whom we principally here treat, and that Earl *William*, here mentioned, being no other than *William de Counteville*, Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, before mentioned, this Suggeſtion is much enforced thereby.

FOR the regular Links of the Chain we are ſtill at a loſs, yet, in all probability, the Relation was very near between theſe two Families we have now ſpoken of; and *Gerrard de Camville*, or *Counteville*, or *Caundeville*, (the Name being thus differently written) who, in the Fifth of King *Stephen*, gave two Parts of the Tithes of *Cherleton*, *Camville*, in the County of *Somerſet*, to the Monks of *Bermondſey* in *Surrey*, (though his chief Seat was then at *Lilburne*, near *Creek* in *Northamptonſhire*;) which Priory of *Bermondſey* may be noted here to be the ſame to which *William de Counteville*, Earl of *Moreton* and *Cornwall*, retired, and in which he died; whence it may be reaſonably accounted for, that thoſe

† Monaſticon Anglic. ‖ Ibid.

of his Family ſhould pay their pious Contributions to that Place.

To this *Gerrard* ſucceeded * *Richard de Counteville*, who, in the Reign of King *Stephen*, founded the Abbey of *Cumbe*, and left many Sons, whoſe Poſterity were Barons of this Realm, both by Tenure and by Writ, of ſome of whoſe Deſcendants a regular Deſcent is drawn, by Sir *William Dugdale*, in his *Baronage of England*.

Of theſe, *Gerrard* † was the eldeſt Son, who by *Nichola*, Daughter and Heir of *Richard de Haya*, was Father of another *Richard*, who by *Euſtachia*, Daughter and Heir of *Gilbert Baſſet*, the Widow of *Thomas de Verdon*, had *Idonea*, his Daughter and Heir, who became the Wife of *William de Longeſpè*, Earl of *Saliſbury*.

That there was a Brother, or a ſecond Son, to the ſaid *Gerrard de Camville* firſt mentioned, who was named *Robert*, is probable enough; for *Robert de Gundeville*, (which is ſtill the ſame Name) held in the Reign of ‖ *Henry* the Firſt,) two Knights Fees of *Henry Luvel*, Baron of *Kary*, upon the Aid levied to marry *Maud*, the Daughter of that Prince, to the Emperor of the *Romans*; and this Family is found to hold under the ſame Houſe of *Luvel*, ſeveral Knights Fees, in the Reign of *Henry* the Third, and of *Edward* the Firſt; and we preſume that the *Richard de Counteville*, who limited certain Lands in *Alwarton* to *Robert Tortemain*, and *Maud* his Wife, with Remainder to himſelf and to his Heirs, was the Grandſon of the ſaid *Robert* ‡.

To this *Richard* ſucceeded his Son, (as it ſhould ſeem) another *Richard de Counteville*, who in the Third of King *Henry* the Third, 1219, upon the Aſſignment of *Richard Luvel*, Baron of *Kary*, to *Chriſtian*, Wife of *Richard Cotell*, and Widow of *Henry Luvel*, of Part of

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub. tit. Camville. † Ibid.
‖ Black Book, in the Exchequer.
‡ Fin. Somſ. 3 Johann.

of her Dower, appears to have been poſſeſſed of one Knight's Fee *, two Hides, and one Yard-land in *Alwarton*, then held of the Lords and Barons of *Kary*, whereof the Services, Eſcheats, Wards, Rights of Relief, Marriage, *&c.* were then granted to the ſaid *Chriſtiana*.

THIS *Richard de Counteville*, in the twentieth of *Henry* the Third, *A. D.* 1236, was Plaintiff in a Fine, in which *Thomas* †, Son of *Albert*, was Defendant, concerning Lands in *Batilberg*, or *Batilborow*, then aſſured to *Richard de Counteville*, and to his Heirs.

To him ſucceeded another *Richard de Counteville*, who obtained a ſpecial Licenſe from the Crown to hunt for ever through the whole Foreſt of *Mendip* ‖, the Hare, the Martin, and the Cat, at all Times and Seaſons, (the forbidden Month excepted) with his own Dogs, and without Moleſtation of any of the King's Juſticiaries, Miniſters, Foreſters, *&c.* dated at *Windſor* the Fifth of *May*, in the fifty-ſecond Year of the Reign of *Henry* the Third, *A. D.* 1268.

IN the Eighth of *Edward* the Firſt ‡, 1284, *John de Hampton* commenced a Suit againſt this *Richard Counteville*, for Liberty of a certain Road in *Albertone*, or *Alwarton*, which, however, was diſcontinued afterwards.

IN the Inquiſition § taken after the Death of *Hugh*, Lord *Luvel* of *Kary*, in the nineteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, 1291, the ſame *Richard de Counteville* is found to hold of him the ſame one Knight's Fee in *Alwarton*, before mentioned, alſo two Knights Fees in *Cricket*, and one in *Bagripp*, now *Bawdripp*. And here we cannot omit to obſerve, that the Barony of *Kary* chiefly conſiſted of Fees, which had belonged to *William (de Counteville)* Earl of *Moriton* and *Cornwall*, beforementioned,

* Fin. Somſ. 3 Hen. III.
† Ibid. 20 Hen. III.
‖ Placit. Forreſt. Com. Somſ. 54 Hen. III. Rot. 1. dorſo.
‡ Placit. coram Juſticiar. Hierer. Com. Somſ. 8 Ed. I. Rot. Reg. Rot. 39. dorſo.
§ Eſch. poſt Mort. Hugon. Luvel, 19 Ed. I.

mentioned, granted, as it is ſuppoſed, to the Houſe of *Luvel*, after the Forfeiture of that Earl; from whence a further Argument ariſes to corroborate the ſuppoſed Deſcent of this Family from that great Houſe of the ſame Name, this ſeeming to have been a younger Branch, upon which theſe Eſtates had been beſtowed for their Inheritance, with an Acknowledgment of Superiority to the elder Houſe, according to the conſtant Practice of thoſe elder Times.

THIS *Richard*, yet living in the thirtieth of *Edward* the Firſt, *A. D.* 1301, and ſtiled of *Alwarton*, was Deforciant in a Fine * with *John*, Son of *Iſabel de Wyke*, in which —— *de Bourne* was Plaintiff, concerning Lands in *Alwarton* and *Overwere*, which were ſettled on *John de Wyke*, and the Heirs of his Body, with Remainder to *Agnes*, Daughter to the ſaid *Richard de Counteville*, Remainder to *Egeline*, another of his Daughters, and his Heirs in Fee.—But it appears that this *John de Wyke*, and *Agnes de Counteville*, both died without Iſſue; for *Egeline*, having married *John Bole*, did, jointly with her Huſband, levy a Fine of this ſame Parcel of Lands, in the nineteenth of *Edward* † the Third, *A. D.* 1345, (being then poſſeſſed thereof) whereby they were conveyed to *Nicholas Fraunces* and *John Queynt*, and the Heirs of *Nicholas* in Fee.

THIS *Richard* ‖ had likewiſe ſeveral other Children, *viz.* two Sons, *Baldwin* and *John*, and a Daughter named *Margaret*, who became the Wife of *Nicholas Peche*.

BUT doubtleſs he did not long ſurvive that Settlement before mentioned, for in two ‡ Years after, *Iſabel*, his Widow, demanded her Dower in *Overwere*, in the County of *Somerſet*; and in *Littleton Pagnel*, in the County of *Wilts*; and *Taviſtock*, in the County of *Devon*.———And in the ſame Year *Baldwin*, his Son, is found poſſeſſed of his Eſtate.

IN

* Fin. Somſ. 30 Ed. I. n. 94.

† Ibid. 19 Ed. III.

‖ Placit. Mich. 32 Ed. I. Rot. 87 & 327 dorſo, & Hill. 33 Rot. 50 & 78 dorſo. ‡ Ibid.

IN which Year * *Nicholas de Peche*, and *Margaret de Counteville*, his Wife, brought an Aſſize of *Novel Diſſezin* againſt the ſaid *Baldwin de Counteville*, *John de Counteville*, his Brother, *Richard de Counteville*, of *Alveryngton*, or *Alwarton*, (his Son); *Robert de Burgoigne*, *Clement de Hamton*, *Hugh de Chapeleyn*, and *Andrew le Deveneys*, for thirteen Meſſuages, and ſix Plough-lands, in *Ken Toweſtocke*, and *Heſcote juxta Toweſtocke*.

WHEREUPON *Baldwin de Counteville* pleaded, that *John* and the reſt had nothing in the Premiſſes; but pleads, in regard to himſelf, as † Tenant thereof.——That *Richard*, his Father, whoſe Heir he is, died ſeized of the ſaid Premiſſes in Fee; after whoſe Deceaſe, he the ſaid *Baldwin* entered into the ſame as his Son and Heir: And ſays further, that indeed there was a Diſcourſe by the ſaid *Richard*, the ſaid *Margaret*'s Father, that he would grant the Premiſſes to her, to hold until ſhe ſhould be honourably married, either by her ſaid Father, or his Heirs: But in caſe ſhe ſhould marry herſelf without the Conſent of her ſaid Father, or his Heirs, or refuſed to accept of ſuch Match as they ſhould approve, or be actually beſtowed in Marriage by them, that then the Premiſſes ſhould revert to her Father *Richard* and his Heirs; but he avers, that in fact his Father *Richard* never did depart with his Eſtate therein, but died ſeized thereof in Fee.——Iſſue is joined, and the Jury find, that the ſaid *Richard*, *Margaret*'s Father, granted the Premiſſes to her and her Heirs in Fee when ſhe was but two Years old, and that ſhe took the Profits for two Years after the Feoffment, by *Walter Parſon*, of *Niveton*, her Guardian; and that then her Father *Richard* took the ſame into his Hands, as her Guardian, and afterwards married her to the ſaid *Nicholas Peech*: And the ſaid *Nicholas* and *Margaret* were ſeiſed thereof after the ſaid Marriage, until diſſeiſed by *Richard de Counteville*, *de Alverynton*, and *Hugh de Chapeleyn*; and Judgment is given,

* Aſſiz. diverſ. Comit. 32 Ed. I. Devon.
† Ibid.

given, that *Nicholas* and *Margaret* recover the ſaid Premiſſes, with one hundred Shillings Damages, *&c.*

NOT many Years after this, *Baldwin de Counteville*, *viz.* in the eleventh of King * *Edward* the Second, *A. D.* 1318, made a Settlement of divers Lands in *Alwarton*, and of the Advowſon of the Church of *Alwarton*, upon himſelf, and upon *Richard*, his eldeſt Son, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder, in like manner, to *John*, his ſecond Son; Remainder to *Conſtantia*, his Daughter, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to his own right Heirs for ever: By virtue of which Settlement, which was pleaded long after, in 1488, the third Year of the Reign of *Henry* the Seventh, (one hundred and ſeventy Years after) this Eſtate deſcended to the Family of *Delamore*; and a conſiderable Part of it from thence to the Houſe of *Perceval*. By the ſaid Settlement, *John le Riche*, of *Welmore*, being the Deforciant, certain Lands in *Batilbergh*, near *Southbrent*, are ſettled upon the ſaid *Baldwin* and *Margery* for their Lives; Remainder to *Richard*, Son of the ſaid *Baldwin*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *John*, Brother of the ſaid *Richard*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Conſtantia*, Siſter of the ſaid *John*, and the Heirs of her Body; Remainder to the right Heirs of the ſaid *Baldwin* in Fee.

BUT *Baldwin* deceaſed not long afterwards, leaving two Sons, here mentioned, and † *Conſtantia*, a Daughter, of whom we know nothing farther; but of the Sons, *John*, the Youngeſt, having raſhly concerned himſelf in that fatal Inſurrection with *Thomas*, Earl of *Lancaſter*, in the Reign of *Edward* the Second, was fined twenty Pounds for his Pardon of that Tranſaction, in the firſt Year of King *Edward* the Third, *A. D.* 1326.

RICHARD, the eldeſt Son of *Baldwin*, upon an Inquiſition taken in the County of *Somerſet*, in the fifth

* Fin. Somſ. Mich. 11 Ed. II. n° 101.
† Rot. Clauſ. 1 Ed. III.

fifth of * *Edward* the Third, *A. D.* 1331, with regard to the Rights of the Abbey of *Glaſtonbury*, was returned to have held certain Rights under the ſaid Abbey in *Therlemere*, *Southbrent*, *Berghes*, *Lympleſham*, and *Eaſtbrent*, for which he paid an annual Acknowledgment of four Buſhels of Oats.

IN the twentieth of the ſame † Reign, *A. D.* 1346, upon that Aid levied for making *Edward* the Black Prince a Knight, he was charged for half of one Knight's Fee in *Alwarton*, *Aſton*, and *La Lyde*.

WHO this ‖ *Richard* married we cannot ſay, but he left a ſole Daughter and Heir, *Elizabeth de Counteville*, who became the Wife of Sir *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, to whom ſhe carried the great Inheritance of this Houſe, whoſe Daughter and Heir, *Joan de Gournay*, marrying *George Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, Lord of *Nailſey*, in the County of *Somerſet*, it paſſed into that Family; and in proceſs of Time, by *Alice*, the ſole Heireſs alſo of *Delamore*, to *David Perceval*, Anceſtor to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*.

HAVING thus in purſuit of theſe great Inheritances and Deſcents, departed ſomewhat from our juſt Order, we muſt now return to the ſaid *David Perceval*, of whom we particularly treat in this Chapter.

WHO, upon the thirteenth of § *November*, 1533, the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, entered into ſeveral Obligations, in conjunction with *Alice* his Mother, then a ſecond time a Widow, by the Death of her ſecond Huſband ----- *Jones*, by which they both engaged themſelves not to interrupt *Elizabeth Hadley*, late Wife of *John Cave*, nor her then Huſband *James Hadley*, in the quiet Poſſeſſion of the Manors of *Moreland*, *Weley*, and *Sydenham*, and other large Poſſeſſions in

* Hearn's Chronicon. Glaſtonienſ.

† Lib. Auxil. in Scaccario, 20 Ed. III.

‖ Placit. coram Juſticiar. de Banco Term. Mich. an° 3 Hen. VII. Rot. 423.

§ Unica Pars Claus. 25 Hen. VIII. 1533, in cap. Rotulor.

in *Wolmerton*, *Wembdon*, *North Pederton*, *Petherinz*, *Merſh*, *Dunwere*, *Mulſay*, *Slapp*, *Baudripp*, *Bridgwater*, and *Bower*, all in the County of *Somerſet*; of which it appears, that *John Cave*, the Brother of *Alice Jones*, formerly the Widow of *Thomas Perceval*, Father of this *David*, had died ſeiſed, with Remainder, after her Death, to his ſaid Siſter *Alice*, and to the lawful Heirs of her Body.

By another Deed of the ſame Date *, enrolled alſo in Chancery, the ſaid † *David Perceval* grants the Marriage and Wardſhip of *James* and *George Perceval*, the Sons of the ſaid *David*, to *James Elizabeth Hadley*.

And again, there is a third Deed ‖, dated alſo the ſame Day, and enrolled with the former, between *David Perceval* alone, on the one part, and *Elizabeth* and *James Hadley* on the other; by which the ſaid *David*, in conſideration of the Sum of one thouſand Marks, paid by the ſaid *Elizabeth* and *James*, in conſequence of ſeveral Deeds of *John Cave*, Eſq; lately deceaſed, releaſed for ever, (as far as it related to himſelf,) all Pretenſions to the Manors and Lands lately belonging to the ſaid *Cave*, viz. *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, *Weley*, *North Pederton*, *Petherinz*, *Merſh*, *Mulley*, *Dunwere*, *Slapp*, *Baudripp*, *Bower*, &c.

That *Alice Bythemore*, or *de la More*, the Wife of this Man, was dead at this time, appears from the Records here mentioned. The Reaſon for his Grant of the Wardſhip, and Marriage of his Son being aſſigned, that he might have liberty to make a Jointure for another Wife, out of the Lands of *Cave*, then in poſſeſſion of the Wife of *James Hadley* aforeſaid.

And himſelf § did not long after ſurvive, for it is found that he died upon the fifth of *December* following, in the ſame Year, *viz.* the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1533.

The

* A. D. 1533.

† Unica Pars Clauſ. de eod. ann.

‖ Ibid.

§ Eſchat. poſt Mort. David Perceval, unica pars Bundelli in cap. Rotulor. 26 Hen. VIII.

THE Inquisition, which was taken after his Death at *Bruton* before *Thomas Rampfield*, Esq; Escheator, the last of *September*, and returned into the Court the twenty-third of *October* in the twenty-sixth of King *Henry* the Eighth, rehearses, "That one *John Cave*, "the Uncle of the said *David Perceval*, did by his "Deed made the last of *April*, in the nineteenth of "*Henry* the Eighth, *A. D.* 1527, give and grant to "Sir *John Fitz-James*, Knight, Chief-Justice of the "King's Bench, *John Fitz-James*, his Son and Heir, "*John Horsey*, Esq; since deceased, Sir *John Horsey*, "*John Marshall*, Esq; and *Richard Marshall*, Son and "Heir apparent of the said *John Marshall*, his Manors "of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, and *Weley*, with their Ap- "purtenances, in the Parish of *North Pederton*, with "the other Lands called *Ballis*, near *Sydenham* afore- "said; and also other Estate in *Bradnemede*, in the Pa- "rish of *Baudripp*, *Dunmere*, *Petherham*, *Marshe*, "*Wolverston*, *Hampnie*, near *Bridgwater*, and five "Messuages and Burgage Houses in *Bridgwater*, to- "gether with Lands in *Weley*, *Huckyn*, *Baunteſland*, "alias *Blantſland*, *Webhouse*, *Emesham*, *Starkesland*, "alias *Storkeslond*, *Rydon*, and *Culwere*, in the Parish "of *North Pederton* aforesaid, to hold all the said "Manors, Lands, and Tenements for ever, (paying "to the Lord of the Fee the usual Services) for the "use of the said *John Cave*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, "and the Heirs of the said *John Cave*, and after to "fulfill the last Will and Testament of the said *John* "*Cave*. And the Jurors say further upon Oath, that "the said *John Cave* did afterwards, upon the twenty- "fourth Day of *April*, in the twenty-first of *Henry* the "Eighth, that now is, *A. D.* 1529, by his last Will "and Testament, which these Jurors have seen, de- "vise and bequeath to the said *Elizabeth Cave*, then "his Wife, all the said Manors, *&c.* with their Ap- "purtenances, for the Term of her Life; and that af- "terwards the said *John Cave* died, and *Elizabeth* his "Wife out-lived, and thence became seised of the said "Manors, *&c.* the Reversion belonging to one *Alice*

" *Jones*, alias *Perceval*, Widow, as the Sister and Heir " of the said *John Cave*; which *Elizabeth* marrying " afterwards *James Hadley*, the said *James* and *Eliza-* " *beth* became jointly seized thereof.——That *Alice* " *Jones* aforesaid, Sister and Heir of *John Cave*, did, " upon the thirteenth of *December*, in the twenty-fifth " of *Henry* the Eighth, in Consideration of several " Deeds before made by the said *Alice*, and *David* " *Perceval* her Son, in favour of the said *James* and " *Elizabeth Hadley*, in Consideration of an annual " Payment of four Marks *per annum*, to be paid at " the four usual Feasts to the said *Alice*; and also, in " Consideration that the said *James* and *Elizabeth* " *Hadley* should enfeoff Sir *Richard Warr*, Knight, " *Edward Marshall*, *Nicholas Fitzjames*, *Christopher* " *Hadley*, and *Richard Gattcombe*, with the said Ma- " nors, *&c.* for the Use of the said *Elizabeth* and " *James Hadley*, for both their Lives, without Im- " peachment of Waste; and after their Decease to the " Use of *James Perceval*, Son of *David* aforesaid, " and the Heirs of his Body lawfully begotten; and " so on, under the like Conditions, to the Use of " *George Perceval*, Brother of the said *James*, and his " Heirs, and of *Alice* and *Dorothy*, Sisters of the said " *David Perceval*, in like Order and Manner: and on " Failure of Issue of these, to the Use of the said *Eli-* " *zabeth*, and her Heirs for ever. As also in Consider- " ration that they should fulfil the last Will and Te- " stament of *John Cave* aforesaid; release for ever, " for herself and her Heirs, to the said *James* and " *Elizabeth Hadley* his Wife, all her Right and Title " whatsoever to the said Manors, Lands and Tene- " ments: by virtue of which Deeds, the said *James* " and *Elizabeth Hadley*, were possessed of the same " at the Death of *David Perceval* aforesaid.

" As to the Tenure of the said Estates, that the " Manor of *Sydenham* was held of *Roger Blewit*, " Esquire, but by what Service the Jurors cannot tell. " ——— That the Lands in *Ballis* paid an annual " Fee of twenty-one Pounds *per annum*, in lieu of all

" Services,

" Services, and held of *Henry* Lord *Dawbeney*. —— " That the Lands in *Bradmede*, in the Pariſh of " *Bridgwater*, held of the Heirs of —— *Braughton*, " by the Service of one Pair of gilt Spurs. —— That " the Lands in *Dunwere* were held of *John Chicheſter*, " as of his Manor of *Dunwere*, by the annual Service " of a red Roſe, upon the Feaſt of St. *John* the Bap- " tiſt.——That the Lands in *Petherham-Merſh*, in " the Pariſh of *Cannington*, held of *Thomas Tibby*, by " the annual Fee of one Farthing, in lieu of all Ser- " vices.—That the Manor of *Wely* held of the Prioreſs " of *Buckland*, by an annual Fee of two Shillings in lieu " of all Services.—That the Meſſuages in *Bridgwater*, " held of the Lord of *Dawbeney*, as of his Manor of " *Haygrove*, but by what Services the Jurors cannot " tell.——That the Lands in *Wolverſton* are held of " *William Portman*, *Richard Uney*, *Richard Dodyng-* " *ton*, and *John Crokburn*, as of their Manor of *Wol-* " *veſton*, by the Service of one Pound of *Cummin*, to " be annually paid at the Feaſt of St. *Michael* the " Archangle.—— That the Lands in *Wely*, *Huchyn*, " *Baunteſland*, alias *Bluntſland*, *Webb-Houſe*, *Erneſham*, " *Starkeſland*, alias *Storkeſlond*, *Rydon*, and *Culwere*, " in the Pariſh of *North-Pederton*, are held of the a- " foreſaid Prioreſs of *Buckland*, but by what Services " the Jury cannot tell. —— Laſtly, that the Lands " in *Hampnie*, near *Bridgwater*, are held of the Ab- " bot of *Athelnay*, but the Jurors know not by what " Services.

" THE Jurors farther ſay, that *Alice Jones*, alias " *Perceval*, was of the Age of fifty Years, and more, " at the Death of her Brother *John Cave*; and that " *James Perceval*, is the Son and Heir of *David Per-* " *ceval* aforeſaid, and at the Time of his Father's " Death, which happened upon the fifth of *December*, " 1533, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, as " we have already ſhewn, two Years old, and up- " wards."

OF this *David* we ſhall add no more, but that he was a Man of great Extravagance, and did as much De-

Detriment to the Fortune of his Family, as it was in his Power to do; but happily for them, great Part of it being ſettled upon his Children *, and that which was in Reverſion being guarded by the careful Management of his Wife's Mother, who enjoyed it for her Life †; he was capable only of bringing himſelf and his Fortune into great Difficulty, during his own Time. *Alice* his Wife was Daughter of *Elizabeth Marſhall*, by her ſecond Huſband, *Thomas Bythemore*, who was firſt the Wife to *John Cave*, ſecondly to *Thomas Bythemore*, and laſtly, to *James Hadley*; and by her, who died but little before him, he left three Sons §, *James*, *George*, and *Thomas*; of which laſt ſhe is reaſonably conjectured to have died in Childbed, ſince it may be collected from the Records, that her Death happened at a very ſmall Diſtance of Time from the Birth of her youngeſt Child.

ISSUE of *DAVID PERCEVAL*, and of *Alice Delamore*, or *Bythemore*, his Wife.

I. *JAMES* **, eldeſt Son, a Twin with his Brother *George*; of him we ſhall treat in the next Chapter.

II. *GEORGE* ‖, a Twin with his Brother *James*, of whom in Chapter the Fifth of this Book.

III. *THOMAS* ‡, of whom we know nothing, but that his Wife's Name was *Catherine*, and that he left a Son alſo named *Thomas*. —— We have no farther Account of him, or his Deſcendants.

---

* Eſcheat. poſt mort. Johan. Bithemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

† Ex Viſitat. Dorſ. & Somſ. penes Ducem de Kingſton, ex altera penes Com. Oxon.

§ Ibid.

** Eſcaet. poſt mort. David Perceval, ut ſupra.

‖ Ibid.

‡ Ex Viſitation. penes Ducem de Kingſton, prædict.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

JAMES PERCEVAL, *Lord of* Tykenham, Rolleſton, Sydenham, Batilborough, Overwere, *&c.*

PERCEVAL,



JAMES*, the eldeſt Son and Heir of *David Perceval*, and *Alice*, the Daughter of *Thomas*, Siſter and Heir of *John Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, *Batilborough*, and *Nailſay*, was born upon St. *Andrew*'s Day, *viz.* the thirtieth of *November*, 1531, the twenty-third of *Henry* the Eighth, and was a Twin with his Brother *George*; which, though affirmed poſitively in no one Record, is proved by the Compariſon of ſeveral together, as we ſhall diſcover more particularly in the next Chapter.

BEING two Years and ſix Days old at the Time of his Father's Deceaſe †, he was, together with his Brother *George*, in Ward to *James Hadley*, Eſquire, and his

* Eſcaet. poſt mort. David Perceval, 26 Hen. VIII.
† Eſcaet. poſt mort. Johanni Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII.

his Wife *Elizabeth Marſhall*, which *Elizabeth* was his Grandmother *, as may be collected from what we have ſaid before, being the Widow of *Thomas Bythemore*, his Mother's Father; for which § Wardſhip the ſaid *Hadley* had paid no leſs than one thouſand Pounds; a Sum ſo large in that Age, that it is a mighty Evidence of the great Inheritance to which he was entitled.

AFTER his Succeſſion to the Eſtate, we hear nothing farther of him till the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Eighth, when *John Bythemore* †, his Uncle, dying without Iſſue, he inherited from him the Manors of *Overwere*, and *Batilborow*, and other conſiderable Eſtates in *Dunſter*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdowne*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

"THE Inquiſition taken after his Death at *Philip's-*
"*Norton*, in the County of *Somerſet*, the twenty-ninth
"of *November*, the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Eighth §,
"*A.D.* 1539, rehearſes, that a Settlement was made,
"upon the Marriage of *Thomas Bythemore* and *Eliza-*
"*beth*, Daughter of *John Marſhall*, Father and Mo-
"ther of the ſaid *John*, by *Roger Bythemore*, Father
"of the ſaid *Thomas*, of forty Meſſuages, and one
"thouſand Acres of Meadow and Paſture, and the
"Appurtenances, being Parcel of his Manor of *Over-*
"*were*, and other his Eſtates in *Hurcote*, *Littleton*,
"and *Kingſdown*, with Remainder to their Iſſue Male,
"and in Failure thereof, to the Male Heirs of the
"ſaid *Roger Bythemore*, for ever.

"THAT the ſaid *Thomas* dying, *Elizabeth* his Wi-
"dow became ſeiſed of theſe Eſtates, in Right of her
"Dower, but gave them up afterwards to her Son
"*John Bythemore*, the Perſon upon whoſe Death the
"Inquiſition was taken.

"BUT the ſaid *John* dying upon the thirteenth of
"*September*, in the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Eighth,

1539,

* Clauſ. 25 Hen. VIII. ut ſupra.
‡ Eſcaet. poſt mort. Johan. Bythemore, 31 Hen. VIII. ut ſupra.
† Ibid.
‖ Unica pars Clauſ. 1533, in Capell. Rotulor.

" 1539, the Lands before recited in the Settlement, " by virtue thereof reverted to *Richard Bythemore*, " Uncle to the ſaid *John*, and ſecond Son to *Roger* " before-mentioned.

" BUT farther, the Jurors ſay, that this *John By-* " *themore* died likewiſe ſeiſed of the Remainder of the " Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands, in *Dunſter*, " *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*, and alſo of the " Manor of *Batilborow*; all which, being not ſubject " to the ſaid Settlement, deſcended to the next Heir " at Law, *viz.* to *James Perceval*, his Couſin, as Son " to *Alice*, Siſter of the ſaid *John Bythemore* (at the " Time of taking that Inquiſition, more than ſeven, " in reality wanting but one Day of eight) Years " old.

" AND as to the Tenure of theſe Eſtates, That " the Manor of *Batilborow* is held of the King, as of " his Manor of *Southbrent*, Parcel of his Monaſtery of " *Glaſtonbury*, ; but by what Service they know not. " ———That the Lands in *Overwere* are held of the " Dean and Chapter of *Wells*, as of their Manor of " *Wedmore*, but by what Service they know not. That " the Lands in *Dunſter* are held of *John Lutterell*, " Eſquire, as of his Caſtle of *Dunſter*, but by what " Services they know not. ——— And that thoſe in " *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*, are held of " *William Popley*, Eſquire, as of his Manor of *Somer-* " *ton*, but by what Service they are likewiſe ignorant."

BUT after this*, the ſaid *James Perceval* ſurvived not many Years, for being ſtill in his Minority, he died upon the twenty-fourth of *March*, One thouſand five hundred and forty-eight, the ſecond of King *Edward* the Sixth, being then ſixteen Years three Months and twenty-four Days old.

THE Inquiſition after the Death of the ſaid *James Perceval*, was taken at *Bridgwater*, in the County of

* Eſcheat. poſt mort. Jacobi Perceval, de Sydenham, 6 Edw. VI. ſecunda pars.

of *Somerſet*, upon the tenth of *November* following, before *Alexander Popham*, then Eſcheator of that County.

" It is there obſerved, that *Roger Bythemore*, Great " Grandfather of this *James Perceval*, ſettled the " Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Overwere*, " and *Netherwere*, before obſerved, upon *Thomas By-* " *themore*, his Son, and *Elizabeth Marſhall* his Wife, " and their Iſſue, as above; and of theſe the ſaid " *James Perceval* died ſeiſed, as alſo of the Manor of " *Batilborow*, being Son of *Alice*, Siſter and Heir of " *John*, and Daughter and Heir of the ſaid *Thomas* " *Bythemore*, as alſo of other Lands, to a great Value " in *Dunſter*, *Carhampton*, *Withicombe*, and *Hurcote*, " *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*, in the County of *Somer-* " *ſet*. ——— That he was alſo intitled in Reverſion, " after the Death of *Elizabeth Marſhall*, (alias *Cave*, " alias *Bithemore*, alias *Hadley*, to the Manor of *Sy-* " *denham*, and other Eſtates in *Bridgewater*, *Wembdon*, " *Chilton*, *North-Pederton*, and *Pederhinz-Merſh*.

" Of the Tenure of theſe Lands: ——— That the " Manor of *Overwere*, and the Premiſſes in *Over-* " *were* and *Netherwere*, were then held of *William* " Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*, but by what Service they " could not ſay. ——— That *Batilborow* was held by " the Service of a Sixth Part of one Knight's Fee, of " the King, as of his Manor of *Southbrent*, Parcel of " the Lands of the Abby of *Glaſtonbury*. ——— The " Lands in *Dunſter*, of *Mary Lutterell*, Widow, as " of the Honour of *Dunſter*, by Homage, in lieu of " all Service. ——— Thoſe in *Withicombe* of *Arthur* " *Hadley*, as of his Manor of *Withicombe*, by the ſix- " teenth Part of one Knight's Fee; the Lands in " *Hurcott*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*, of Sir *Ægidius* " *Strangwicke*, Knight, as of his Manor of *Compton-* " *Dando*.

The Manor of *Sydenham*, and the Lands in *Bridg-* " *water*, *Wembdon*, and *Chilton*, of Sir *Roger Bluet*, " Knight, as of his Manor of *North-Pederton*, The " Lands in *North-Pederton*, of *Alexander Popham*, " Eſquire,

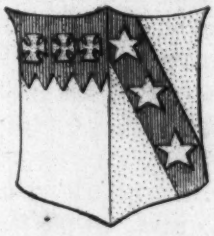
" Eſquire, as of his Manor of *Buckland*. And laſt-
" ly, thoſe in *Perderhinz-Merſh*, of *James Tilley*,
" Eſquire, as of his Manor of *Salthay*, by Knight-
" Service.

" THE Jurors likewiſe ſay, that he departed this
" Life upon the twenty-fourth of *March*, in the ſe-
" cond Year of the then King *Edward* the Sixth,
" 1548. That his Brother *George Perceval* is his
" next Heir, and that he was ſeventeen Years of Age,
" upon the Feaſt of St. *Andrew* the Apoſtle, *viz.* the
" thirtieth of *November* next after his Brother's
" Death.

" THEY ſay farther, that the ſaid *Elizabeth Had-*
" *ley*, formerly the Wife of *Thomas Bythemore*, by
" Virtue of a Feoffment from *Roger Bythemore*, Fa-
" ther to her ſaid Huſband *Thomas*, made in favour
" of her and her Huſband *Thomas Bythemore*, had hi-
" therto enjoyed all the Profits of the ſaid Manors of
" *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, ever ſince the Death of
" the ſaid *James Perceval*, as likewiſe of the Pre-
" miſſes in *Dunſter*, and *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Lit-*
" *tleton*, and *Kingſdown*, as neareſt Relation, to the
" Uſe of the ſaid *George Perceval*. And that Sir
" *John Sydenham*, Knight, in whoſe Guardianſhip and
" Cuſtody the ſaid *George* has remained ſince the
" Death of his Brother, received the Profits of the
" Manor of *Batilborough*, for the Maintenance and
" Education of the ſaid *George*."

CHAP. V.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, *Lord of* Tykenham, Rolleſton, Sydenham, Moreland, Wely, Overwere, Netherwere, Batilborow, Nailſay, &c. &c.

PERCEVAL,  BAMPFYLDE.

GEORGE*, ſecond Son of *David Perceval*, and *Alice*, Daughter of *Thomas*, Siſter and Heir of *John Bythemore*, at length Heir to the Eſtate of this Houſe, by the Death of his elder Brother *James*, a Twin with his ſaid Brother, being alſo born upon the Feaſt of St. *Andrew* the Apoſtle, upon the thirtieth of *November* 1531, which anſwers to the twenty-third Year of the Reign of King *Henry* the Eighth.

FOR as it is ſaid in the Record after the Death of *James Perceval*, that *George* his Brother attained to the Age of ſeventeen Years upon the Feaſt of St. *Andrew* the Apoſtle, *viz.* the thirtieth of *November*, next enſuing

* Eſcheat. poſt mort. Jacobi Perceval, ut ſupra.

enſuing after the Deceaſe of *James*, which fell in the Year 1548; the Birth of the ſaid *George* is thereby fixed to the thirtieth of *November* 1531, and it is conſequently proved, that he was eight Years old upon the thirtieth of *November* 1539. ——— But in the Inquiſition mentioned in the laſt Chapter, to be taken after the Death of *John Bythemore*, at *Philip's-Norton*, upon the twenty-ninth of *November*, 1539, *James Perceval*, the Brother of *George*, is there ſaid to be not yet eight Years old. As it is evident, therefore, by the firſt of theſe Records, that *George Perceval* was eight Years old the next Day after that Inquiſition was taken, *viz.* upon the thirtieth of *November*, 1539; and by the ſecond Record, that *James* was not yet eight Years old, upon the Day immediately preceding, it muſt inevitably follow, that *James*, who was the elder Brother of *George*, muſt have been born alſo upon the next Day, *viz.* the thirtieth of *November*, 1531, and conſequently, that *James* and *George* were Twins, as before aſſerted.

In order to follow which Deduction without Error, it muſt be noted, that King *Henry* the Eighth came to the Crown upon the twenty-ſecond of *April*, 1509, and that his Son King *Edward* the Sixth began his Reign upon the twenty-eighth of *January*, 1546.

It is proper in this Place to obſerve farther, that there is a Difference made in the Computation of Records and others Matters, the legal Way of beginning the Account of the Year being from the twenty-fifth of *March*, whereas the vulgar Account is from the firſt of *January*. And this is extremely neceſſary to be conſidered and known, by thoſe who concern themſelves in Hiſtories of this Nature.———It muſt be remembered alſo, that the Times are uſually noted in Record only by the Years of the King's Reign, which muſt be computed from the firſt Day of the Acceſſion of the Prince; which, however near it may fall to the twenty-fifth of *March*, the ſecond Year of his Reign is computed from the ſaid twenty-fifth of *March* next enſuing: and this creates a great Confuſion in the Dates,

Dates, unleſs it be carefully attended to, and often cauſes Miſtakes, that obſcure the Deſcent of Families in a high Degree.——But we have ſaid enough to give a proper Caution in this Particular.

We find by the ſame Inquiſition * after the Death of *James Perceval* mentioned in the laſt Chapter, that this *George* his Brother was then in the Guardianſhip of Sir *John Sydenham*, Knight, who received the Profits of the Manor of *Batilborow*, for the Maintenance and Support of his Ward.

It appears farther †, that the Profits of the Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Netherwere*, were enjoyed ſtill by *Elizabeth* the Wife of *James Hadley*, Widow of *Thomas Bythemore*, ſo often mentioned before, for her own Life; and the Profits of all the other Eſtates, in *Dunſter*, *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*, were received likewiſe by the ſaid *Elizabeth*, as neareſt Relation to the ſaid *George Perceval*, to be accounted for by her to his Uſe.

Sometime in the following Year, being then but eighteen Years of Age §, he was married to *Elizabeth* Daughter of Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, of *Poltymore*, in the County of *Devon*, Knight, by *Elizabeth* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *Nicholas Wadham*, of *Merrifield*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

By this Marriage a very great Deſcent in Blood accrued to this Family, from ſo many Sovereign Houſes in *Europe*, and great Families, that we may be well excuſed in giving a ſhort Account of them; and eſpecially, as not only the Dignity of this Family will appear the more conſpicuous from it, but becauſe there are many Baronies in Fee concerned in it, which being often, after long Time, recovered, by a due Deduction of the different Deſcents, none of them ought ever to be neglected.

First

---

* Eſcheat. poſt mort. Jacobi Perceval, ut ſupra.

† Ibid.

§ Viſit. Dorſ. & Somſ. & Devon. in Offic. Armor. & in Viſit. prædict.

FIRST then, with reſpect to *Elizabeth Wadham*, the Mother of the Wife of this *George Perceval*, ſhe was deſcended, through a number of very ancient Families, from *Longeſpe*, Earl of *Saliſbury*, the Barons of *Nevil*, *Martin*, *Lorty*, and *Walrond*.

AND on the other Side of *Bampfylde*, the Deſcents from the Old Nobility are very great.———For, by *Margaret*, Daughter and Coheir of Sir *Thomas St. Maur*, of *Rode*, Son of Sir *John*, Son of *John*, Son of *Richard* Lord *St. Maur*, Son of *Nicholas* Lord *St. Maur*, by *Muriel Luvel*, Grandaughter and Heir to *Richard* Lord *Luvel* of *Caſtle-Kari*, in the County of *Somerſet*. The Derivation of this illuſtrious Family is ſo often repeated, both from the *Saxon* and *Norman* Kings of *England*, the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, and other Sovereign Houſes, that there is no Poſſibility of entering into the Enumeration of them here, without wholly disjointing the Thread of our Narration; we are therefore obliged to refer the Reader to the Chapter of the Alliances of this Houſe, to avoid this Inconvenience.———It will be ſufficient therefore to obſerve farther in this Place, that a Deſcent was acquired by this Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, from the Heireſs of the Barons *Luvel* of *Kari* *, the ſecond Branch of the ſame Family.——And a Deſcent through the Heireſs of *David* the Ninth, King of *Scotland*, Earl of *Huntingdon*, Son of *Henry*, Son of *David* King of *Scotland*, Son of *Malcolm Canmore*, Son of *Duncan* King of *Scotland*, murthered by *Macbeth*.———Alſo from *Margaret*, the ſole Heireſs of the *Saxon* Line of the Kings of *England*, Siſter of *Edgar Atheling*, Daughter of *Edmund*, Son of *Edmund Ironſide*, King of *England*; which *Margaret* was the Wife of *Malcolm Canmore*.———Alſo from the Kings of *Hungary*, the Daughter of *Solomon* King of *Hungary*, who was Mother to the ſaid *Margaret*. And again, from the *Franconian* Emperors, by *Sophia*, Daughter of the Emperor

* See the Deſcent at the End of the third Book of the firſt Volume.

Emperor *Henry Niger*, who was Wife to the ſaid *Solomon* King of *Hungary*. And from the Dukes of *Aquitain*, by *Agnez*, Daughter of *William* Duke of *Aquitain*, Wife of the ſaid Empreſs, from the Heireſs of the Barons *Moreville*, *Engaine*, *Galloway*, *Kevelioke* Earl of *Cheſter*, the Earls of *Mercia*, *St. Liz* Earl of *Northampton*, *Waltheof* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Lambert* Count of *Lentz*, Uncle to *Godfrey* of *Boloyne*, King of *Jeruſalem*, *Quincy* Earl of *Wincheſter*, *Bellomonte* Earl of *Leiceſter*, and *Mellent*, *Guader* Earl of *Norfolk*, the Barons *Grentmeſnil*, the Counts of *Vermandois* of the Houſe of *Charlemaign*. From *Henry* the Firſt, King of *France*, and from the Kings of *Ruſſia*, by *Anne*, Daughter of *George* King of *Ruſſia*, his Wife. From the Emperors of *Conſtantinople*. From the Barons *Zouch* of *Aſhby*, (paternally deſcended from the Sovereign Houſe of *Brittany*) from *Roſmar* Earl of *Saliſbury*. From *Riddlesford* Barons of *Bray* in *Ireland* †. And from a Multitude of other great and noble Families, as *Brian*, *Erlegh*, *Chevroyl*, *Paveley*, *De Brook*, *St. Lando*, *Hungerford*, *Cobham*, *Chokke*, *Beauchamp* of *Hacche*, *&c.*

AND here we muſt obſerve, before we proceed any farther, a very remarkable Incident, with relation to this Marriage.

ELIZABETH BAMPFYLDE *, the Wife of *George Perceval*, of whom we here treat, had at firſt a Portion only of two thouſand Marks, which was left her by her Father, together with the Increaſe that might be made during her Minority.———This Fortune, (though a Proviſion ſuited to the Quality of either of the Parties, in an Age when Money was yet ex-

† Note, That it is needleſs to encumber this Work with the Proofs of all theſe Royal Deſcents,—either here, or in any other Part of the Work,— as we name the Families through which the Deſcent accrues.—All the Accounts of the Books of the Baronage, and of the Office of Arms, will ſhew the reſpective Deſcents, with their Proofs, which the Curious may readily follow from one to the other, without much Trouble.

* Ex Chart. Famil.

extremely ſcarce in *England*, and the Faſhion of giving Portions very ſlightly introduced) was ſtill not a ſufficient Inducement to the Relations of this *George* to diſpoſe of him in Marriage to that Lady, he being then looked upon as Maſter, in Poſſeſſion or Reverſion, of one of the greateſt Eſtates in the *Weſtern* Parts of *England*, in the whole amounting to two thouſand Pounds *per annum*.

BUT this *Elizabeth Bampfylde* was at that Time conſidered as one of the greateſt Heireſſes in thoſe Parts, both for Family and Fortune.———As to the firſt, we have already hinted at it.———But as to her Fortune, her elder Brother *Edward* dying without Iſſue, and another named *Richard* being reputed alſo dead for many Years, ſhe was thought to be a Coheir to the great Eſtate of *St. Maur* and *Bampfylde*.

THE Belief of this was ſo ſtrong, that it prevailed every where; inſomuch that in many cotemporary Pedigrees *, drawn by the greateſt Heralds of thoſe Times, this *Elizabeth* is inſiſted on as Coheir of that Family.——And this of *Perceval* did then, and ſince continue to quarter all the Arms of thoſe great Houſes, from the Heireſſes of which they are derived in Blood, through this of *Bampfylde*; among which, thoſe of the Crown of *Scotland*, and of *England* before the Conqueſt, are not the leaſt conſiderable.

IT was conſequently expected, that upon the full Age of this *George Perceval*, he ſhould have been admitted into the Purparty of theſe great Eſtates, in Right of his Wife.——— When, on a ſudden appeared a Man, who ſtiled himſelf *Richard Bampfylde*, the ſecond Son of the late Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, by *Elizabeth Wadham*. This Man gaining a Woman, who pretended to have been his Nurſe, ſhe ſwore poſitively that ſhe knew him to be the Perſon he affirmed himſelf

* Lilly's Pedigrees of the Engliſh Nobility, penes Comit. de Egmont.

ſelf to be †, by certain Marks upon his Body, which tallied exactly with thoſe of that *Richard Bampfylde* ſhe had formerly nurſed.

And ſuch was the Weight of this Evidence §, that however ſuſpicious it might ſeem, the ſaid *Richard Bampfylde*, who had been employed in the loweſt Offices in Life, in the Family of a private Gentleman, and was at the Time of this Claim, no better than a Huntſman in the ſame Houſe, obtained Poſſeſſion of the Eſtate; and from him deſcended the Family of *Bampfylde*, which ſtill flouriſh very worthily in the ſame County of *Devon*.———The Family of *Perceval* in vain then, and leſs efficaciouſly now, inſiſting on their Rights, of which they have maintained no other than Quartering the Arms to which they were entitled by that Marriage, and in which they are warranted by ſo many Authorities of Time itſelf. —— But the Modeſty of this Houſe at preſent diſcontinue this Demonſtration of a Right which is but imperfectly acknowledged, declining to add any Luſtre which they derive from a conteſted Title, to the other great and indiſputed Rights which they enjoy.

The next Year (*viz.* 1550) after this Marriage, this Lady brought him a Son named *Richard*, who was his Heir, and of whom we ſhall give a particular Account in his proper Place.

We have recovered nothing farther material of this *George Perceval* *, till the thirteenth of *November*, 1553, the firſt of *Philip* and *Mary*, when he had Livery of the Manors of *Overwere* and *Batilborow*, with the Lands in *Dunſter*, *Carhampton*, *Hurcote*, *Littleton*, and *Kingſdown*; in which Act of Livery is recited, almoſt *verbatim*, the Inquiſition after the Death of *James Perceval*, Brother of this *George*; ſo that it is needleſs to

† Lilly's Pedigrees of the Engliſh Nobility, penes Comit. de Egmont.

§ Prince's Worthies of Devon. Baronettage.

* Ex Libro Libration. Cur. Wardor. Edwardo VI. Philippo & Maria, & Elizabetha Regnantibus, fol. 115.

to be more particular in our Mention of it.——We ſhall only add, that the ſaid *George* had attained to the Age of twenty-one Years on the thirtieth of *November* precedent, *A. D.* 1552, in the ſixth Year of the Reign of King *Edward* the Sixth.

IT appears farther by this Livery, that the Eſtate of *Cave*, *viz.* the Manors of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, *Wely*, *&c.* were ſtill in the Poſſeſſion of *Elizabeth Hadley*, ſo often before-mentioned, who was yet living, and after whoſe Death they came to this *George Perceval*, but in what Year is not exactly known.

BUT it was not long before another great Eſtate deſcended to him *; for by the Death of *John Bythemore* his Great Uncle, ſecond Son of *Roger Bythemore*, by his ſecond Wife, and then only Male Heir of the Houſe of *Bythemore*, he obtained the great Manor of *Nailſay*, and the other large Poſſeſſions of that Family in the County of *Somerſet*.

THIS *John Bythemore* died the eighth of *December*, in the fifth of *Edward* the Sixth, 1552. But the Inquiſition after his Death was not taken till the ſeventh of *July* following, which was the Day after the Death of King *Edward*; ſo that being tranſacted at *Taunton*, before *Alexander Popham*, then Eſcheator of the County of *Somerſet*, the remote Diſtance of that Place from *London*, where the King lay, created an unavoidable Miſtake; and the Record obſerves it to have paſſed in the Reign of King *Edward* the Sixth, when it was in reality upon the firſt Day of the Reign of that *Mary*, who has been noted by the unhappy Appellation of the bloody Queen of *England*.

BUT to proceed farther with this Inquiſition: we learn from it, that *Roger Bythemore*, (of whom we have already ſpoken frequently, with regard to his Settlements of the Manors of *Overwere*, *&c.* upon his eldeſt Son *Thomas*) Father of this *John*, " did by " Deed, upon the Feaſt of St. *Edward*, in the tenth

* Eſcaet. poſt mort. Johannis Bythemore de Nailſay, ſecunda pars Bundel. An° 6 Edw. VI.

" Year of King *Henry* the Eighth, 1519, enfeoff " *James Fitzjames* the elder, *Richard Ayſhe*, *James* " *Perceval* (of *Weſton*,) and *John Raynton*, and their " Heirs, in the Manor of *Nailſay*, with its Appurtenan- " ces; as alſo in three Meſſuages, one Cottage, one " Windmill, ſixty Acres of Land, Twenty Acres of " Meadow, ſixty Acres of Paſture, twelve Acres of " Wood, one hundred Acres of Ruſhland and Moor, " and the Rent of four Acres and two Shillings, with " the Appurtenances, in *Nailſay* and *Tykenham*, in the " County of *Somerſet*, to hold for ever, to the Uſe of " him the ſaid *Roger Bythemore*, and his Heirs, and to " fulfil his laſt Will and Teſtament.—— And more- " ver, that the ſaid *Roger Bythemore* did, upon the " ſeventh of *June*, in the ſixteenth of *Henry* the Eighth, " *A. D.* 1525, (upon which Day he died) by his laſt " Will declare, that the ſaid Feoffees ſhould hold the " ſaid Manor and Lands, to the Uſe of *Joan* his laſt " Wife for her Life, and afterwards for the Uſe of " the Male Heirs of the Bodies of the ſaid *Roger* and " *Joan*, lawfully begotten; and in Failure of ſuch " Iſſue, to the right Heirs of the ſaid *Roger Bythe-* " *more* for ever.

" THAT by Virtue of the ſaid Will, (after the " ſaid *Roger*'s Death) *Joan* his Wife became ſeiſed of " the ſaid Lands, and ſhe dying, they deſcended to " *Richard Bythemore*, the eldeſt Son of *Roger*, by the " ſaid *Joan*. ——— Who dying after the fourth of " *February*, in the twenty-ſeventh of *Henry* the Eighth, " 1535, the ſaid Manor and Lands then came to this " *John Bythemore*, the other Son of *Roger* and *Joan* " before-mentioned;—who dying upon the eighth of " *December*, in the ſixth of *Edward* the Sixth, 1551, " as we have ſhewn before, without Iſſue, the ſaid " Eſtates are now devolved upon *George Perceval* his " Couſin and next Heir, *viz.* Son of *Alice*, Daughter " of *Thomas*, eldeſt Brother of the ſaid *John Bythe-* " *more*.

" AND as to the Tenure of the Lands, that the " Manor of *Nailſay*, with all the other Eſtates in *Ty-*

" *kenham*

" *kenham* and *Nailſay*, were held of Sir *Hugh Pawlet*, " Knight, but by what Services they cannot tell."

HAVING now fairly fixed him in the Poſſeſſion of this great Inheritance,———Our next Remarks tend to this Diſſolution of it; for ſuch was his inordinate Profuſion, that even the very next Year, he, together with *Elizabeth* his Wife, levied a Fine of the Manor of *Overwere*, and other Lands in *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, in order to be enabled to borrow Money on them.

AND his Neceſſities encreaſing with his Expences*, in the ninth of *Elizabeth*, 1567, he mortgaged the whole Manor of *Overwere*, to *John Smith* of *Ubley*, Eſquire.———In the next Year, 1568, he redeemed it again. and then ſold it, with the Manor of *Streme*, which was dependant on it, to *Thomas Hodges*, of *Wedmore*, Eſquire.——— And thus that rich and noble Lordſhip, then entire, and of vaſt Value, and obtained by a lineal Deſcent from the Conqueſt, through the Heireſſes of the Nobleſt Families in *England*, *viz.* *Doway*, *Paganell*, *Gant*, *Berkeley*, *Gournay*, and *Delamore*, was for ever alienated from this Houſe; and is ſince divided into Parcels, in a Multitude of Hands.

IN this Diſpoſition of Expence, he was farther aggravated by the imprudent Behaviour of his Son, of which we ſhall have Occaſion to ſpeak hereafter; and at which he was ſo offended, that he was reſolved to leave him nothing more of his Eſtate, than he was by Settlement obliged to do.

AND accordingly †, in the twenty-fourth of *Elizabeth*, 1582, having before raiſed by Fines a great Sum of Money upon it, he ſold the Manor of *Nailſay* in the County of *Somerſet*, to *Richard Cole* of *Briſtol*, who afterwards reſerving a Part of it, ſold the reſt of it in Parcels to a vaſt Advantage.

YET not long after, becoming reconciled to his Son, in the Manner we ſhall ſhew in the next Chapter, he

* Fin. Somſ. 9 Eliz. & Strachey's Collections.
† Ex Chartis ipſius Ricardi Cole.

he from that Time ſo far regarded his Affairs, that putting a Stop to his profuſe Expences, he left a noble Eſtate behind him, notwithſtanding the prodigious Injury he had done it in the beginning of his Life.

All we know of Certainty relating to him, after his Sale of the Manor of *Nailſay*, was, that he retired to his Houſe at *Sydenham*, where he lived in a frugal and retired Manner.——There goes an idle Story of him whilſt he lived there, ſtill credited in that Country, that he was tranſported in the Night out of his Bed-Chamber, through the iron Windows of that old Seat, and by the marvellous Power of ſome inviſible Spirit, carried through the Air, and placed in the upper Branches of a great Oak, whoſe venerable Head ſtill rears itſelf, not yet remarkably decayed, at ſome Diſtance from that Seat.

But to leave this ſuperſtitious Tale.——We muſt obſerve, that ſome Accounts of this Family have aſſerted, that he went over into *Ireland* with his Son *Richard*, whom, as they pretend, he out-lived; that he was preſent at the Chriſtening of *Judith*, the firſt Child of his Grandſon Sir *Philip Perceval*; and that he died in *Dublin*.——But all this took its Riſe from a Note, in the Hand-writing of Sir *Philip Perceval*, That at the Chriſtening, the two Great Grandfathers of the Child were preſent; the one of whom was taken to be this *George Perceval:* whereas it appears by other Notes, that it was Sir *William Uſher*, and Sir *Robert Newcomen*, Baronet, the Grandfathers of the Lady *Perceval*, the Wife of Sir *Philip*, who were preſent upon that Occaſion; and this we mention, to prevent the ill Conſequence of differing from other Accounts, without explaining the Particulars in which they erred.

So far from his living that Time, there is reaſon to believe that he was dead in the Year 1601; though the exact Time of his Deceaſe is not known: for his Son was then poſſeſſed of a large Part of the Eſtate. Nor is there any Probability that he was ever in *Ireland* at all, his Death having happened, as we have ſaid,

ſaid, in all Appearance, at leaſt ſeventeen Years before *Richard Perceval* his Son was ſettled in the great Employments which he held in that Kingdom.

ISSUE of *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, by *Elizabeth Bampfylde* his Wife.

I. *RICHARD PERCEVAL**, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *BAMPFYLDE PERCEVAL*†, who died without Iſſue.

III. *THOMAS PERCEVAL*§, who alſo died without Iſſue.

IV. *ELIZABETH*‖, who became the Wife of *John Gilbert*, of ———, Eſquire.

---

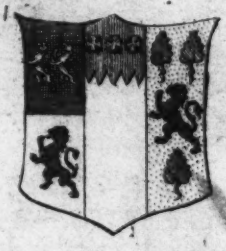
* Ex Viſitationibus Dorſ. & Somſ. penes Ducem de Kingſton, & Com. Oxon.

† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

CHAP. VI.

RICHARD PERCEVAL, *the fourth of that Name, Lord of* Tykenham, Rolleſton, Sydenham, &c. *Secretary, Remembrancer, and one of the Commiſſioners for the Office of Receiver-General of the Court of Wards in* England, *Regiſter of the ſame Court in* Ireland; *and Member of the* Engliſh Parliament *for the Borough of* Richmond, *in the County of* York.

YOUNGE, PERCEVAL, SHERMAN,



RICHARD *, the fourth of that Name, eldeſt, and at length only Son of *George Perceval*, by *Elizabeth*, Daughter of Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, of *Poltymore*,

* Ex Teſtamento Philippi Perceval, Militis, filii dict. Ricardi, penes Com. Egmont, & Viſitation. prædictis.



J. Faber fec. 1743.

Rich.d Perceval Esq.r
One of y.e Commiss.rs
Gen.l of y.e Co.t of Wards
of the same Court in
Parliam.t for y.e Borough
of York. Born A.1550 —

Secret.y Remembrancer,
for y.e Office of Receiver
in England & Register
Ireland & Member of
of Richmond in y.e County
— died A.1620 Ætat 69


BRITISH MUSEUM

Poltymore, his Wife, was born, as we have before obſerved, in the Year 1550, the third of *Edward* the Sixth, and was educated at *St. Paul's School*, then the moſt famous Nurſery of Learning in *England*; from thence he was ſent to *Lincoln's-Inn*, according to the Mode of thoſe Times, to acquire ſome general Idea of the Laws, which was then reckoned an Accompliſhment of high Conſequence, for the moſt conſiderable Men. In both theſe Stations he made an admirable Progreſs; yet at the ſame Time, he fell into ſuch a Courſe of Extravagance and diſorderly Living, that he became the Averſion of his Father, who was utterly unable to reſtrain him within any Bounds, either as to his Conduct or Expences.——— The old Man endeavoured if he could to ſettle him by Marriage, and accordingly propoſed to him ſeveral Matches of great Advantage; partly with a View to draw him from his Irregularities, and partly to reſtore his own Fortune by the Portion of his Son's Wife, which he had greatly encumbered by his profuſe Expences, as we have before obſerved.———But in this he was likewiſe diſappointed, the Son raſhly plunging into Marriage with *Joan* ‡, one of the Daughters of *Henry Younge*, of *Buckhorn-Weſton*, in the County of *Dorſet*, Eſquire, a ſecond Brother of that Family, with whom he had no Fortune.

THE Father *, irritated beyond Meaſure with this Aggravation of his former Imprudence, immediately abandoned him after this Step, and would ſee him no more, nor contribute in any Degree to his Support; reſolving, as he ſaid, to leave his Son, *who had ruined himſelf by his Riots, to recover himſelf by his Wits.*

THIS *Richard*, however, found Means by the Credit of his reverſionary Eſtate §, and the Aſſiſtance of his Friends,

‡ Viſitation. Dorſ. & Somſ. by Sir George Leonard, 1623, penes Ducem de Kingſton, apud Thoreſby.

* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

§ Ibid.

Friends, to maintain himſelf without any Help from his Father, ſeveral Years; during which Time he had three Sons and two Daughters, of whom we ſhall ſpeak farther in their Place.

But the Expences of his Family increaſing §, and the Fountain of his Supply being pretty near exhauſted, his Friends alſo growing leſs kind than before, as finding the Charge likely to continue long upon them, and himſelf not yet ſo prudent as the ſame Difficulties would have rendered any other Man; he became at laſt obliged to quit this Kingdom, and accordingly travelled into *Spain*, where he lived four Years, leaving his Wife and Children behind him, who were taken Care of with much Friendſhip, by the Families of Sir *Richard Bampfylde*, and *Roger Cave* of *Stamford*, Eſquire, the latter of which was only a very diſtant Relation, and the other one with whom his Father had had great Conteſts, concerning the Legality of his Pretenſions to the Eſtate of that Houſe.

It is not known, nor have we been ever aſſiſted by any Tradition of the Family, to diſcover how he paſſed theſe four Years of voluntary Exile, or how he came to chuſe that Country, then no ways hoſpitable to *Engliſh* Gueſts, for his Retreat. But it is certain, that at the End of that Time, being informed of his Wife's Death, he returned into *England*, expecting, or at leaſt hoping, that as ſhe had been one principal Cauſe of his Diſagreement with his Father, he might now recover Favour with him again. But his Hopes were vain, his Father ſtill continuing inexorable, and totally unmoved by his Diſtreſs.

In this unhappy Situation*, he laboured under the greateſt Difficulties, till at length, by his Relation to Mr. *Cave* of *Stamford*, with whom he paſſed a good deal of his Time, he became acquainted with the Lord Treaſurer *Burleigh*, whoſe Siſter Mr. *Cave* had married.———This Lord being pleaſed with his Talents, and

§ Ex Chartis Familiæ.
* Ibid.

and moved at his Misfortunes, took his Intereſts into his ſerious Care; and thinking that his Interpoſition with his Father, with whom he was well acquainted, might be of weight with him, endeavoured to procure a Reconciliation between him and his Son; to which End he wrote ſeveral Letters of Expoſtulation upon that Head to him: but theſe having no Effect, he determined to ſerve him in another Manner, employing him in the private Management of thoſe Affairs of State, which required the greateſt Truſt and Secrecy.

In § this Employment he paſſed a conſiderable Time, during which there is nothing memorable recorded of him; till at length, in the Year 1586, the *Spaniards* engaging in thoſe vaſt Preparations which ended in that famous *Armada*, ſo providentially deſtroyed two Years after, all *Europe* became alarmed thereat, and this Kingdom in particular, being much concerned, (as it was even then ſuſpected) in the Conſequences of it, an *Engliſh* Ship was ordered to chace a *Spaniſh* Veſſel, in which were carried Letters from the Low-Countries, which (by Intimation from abroad) were underſtood to contain the Secret, the Veſſel being accordingly chaced, and finding herſelf in Danger, threw her Pacquets over-board, which being recovered by the *Engliſh*, were brought to the Lord *Burleigh*, and by him laid before the Queen in Council.

But the Matter contained therein being wrote in Cypher *, no Man there preſent was able either to read or underſtand it; upon which the Lord *Burleigh* propoſed, that the Papers ſhould be entruſted with this *Richard Perceval*, whom he recommended as well qualified for ſuch a Confidence, not only on account of his Fidelity, already much experienced in the public Buſineſs, but alſo as he was well ſkilled in the *Spaniſh* Language, in which the ſaid Letters were ſuppoſed to be written.

To this the Queen aſſenting †, and he being immediately ſent for to the Council, ſhe committed the

§ Chartis Familiæ.

* Ibid. † Ibid.

Pacquets to his Charge with her own Hand, in a very gracious Manner; and he ſo well anſwered the Expectation conceived of him, that he returned them to the Queen herſelf, the next Day at the ſame Hour, decyphered, tranſlated, and fairly tranſcribed, in *Spaniſh*, *Latin*, and *Engliſh*.

THIS was the firſt certain Intelligence of the *Spaniſh* Deſign *, (which was afterwards more fully explained in a Letter written by the Pope to the King of *Spain*, of which Sir *Francis Walſingham* obtained a Copy out of the Pope's Cloſet, by Means of a Prieſt his Spy) and the Importance of this Diſcovery was ſuch, and the Expedition of the Perſon employed in it, ſo grateful to the Queen, that ſhe immediately ordered him a Penſion of eight hundred Marks *per annum*, which he enjoyed all his Life after. To this ſhe added ſoon after a Place in the Dutchy-Court of *Lancaſter*, worth four hundred Pounds *per annum* more; ſhe ſaid farther, that ſhe would take him herſelf under her own peculiar Care.———But the Lord *Burleigh* ſaid, he was too uſeful to be taken from him, and promiſed that he ſhould be no Sufferer in his Fortunes by it.

SOON after this †, Sir *Robert Cecil*, afterwards Earl of *Saliſbury*, being appointed Secretary of State, the Lord *Burleigh*, partly out of a Regard to his Son, and partly from a View of Advantage to this *Richard*, whom he held in extraordinary Eſteem, and who was ſtill utterly neglected by his Father, recommended him to be employed in the Buſineſs of that Office; and from that Lord he met with great Friendſhip.—For he being afterwards made Maſter of the Court of Wards, appointed him Secretary of that Court, a Place of great Credit, and worth two thouſand Pounds *per annum*.

NOT long after this Event §, continuing in great Intereſt, and obtaining great Advantages, his Father *George* was at length moved by his Proſperity, when he

* Ex Chartis Familiæ.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

he could not be made to relent at his Adverſity, and was reconciled to him; leaving him at his Death what remained of his Eſtate, *viz.* the Manors of *Sydenham*, *Moreland*, and *Weley*, with *Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, and divers other Lands in the County of *Somerſet*, which amounted to ſeventeen hundred Pounds *per annum*, beſides a conſiderable Sum of Money, ſaved out of the Fines of his Eſtate, which he had managed in his later Years with good Œconomy.

SOMETIME during the latter End of this Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, (though we cannot exactly fix the Date) he was ſent over into *Ireland*, to inform himſelf whether the Court of Wards could be extended there, with any Profit to the Crown. ——— This was the firſt Viſit made thither by any of this Family, from the Extinction of that Branch who were Barons of that Kingdom, which happened near three hundred Years before. ——— But that Country being then in great Diſorder, from the Rebellion of *Tyrone*, he diſliked the Situation of Affairs ſo much, that he made a Report which diſcouraged any Attempt towards a Settlement of that Branch of the Revenue for that Time. ———It was then, as we preſume, that he obtained his firſt Employment there; for we find by the Papers of the Family *, that he was Commiſſary of the Proviſions to the *Engliſh* Army in the Province of *Leinſter*, at one Period of that Rebellion; but he diſcharged this Office by his Deputy, for he appears conſtantly employed in *England*, for many Years after.

IN the forty-ſecond of *Elizabeth*, (*A. D.* 1599) he obtained a Grant † of the Wardſhip and Marriage of *Henry Criſpe*, Son and Heir of *Henry Criſpe*, in the County of *Kent*; and entered into Bonds with the Crown for the Payment of the Fine which was due thereon.

IN

* Family Letters, Vol. IV. N° 328.

† Ex Libro Decretorum in Curia Wardor. 1 Jacob. fol. 112. dorſo.

In the Year following §, (*A. D.* 1600,) he had a Grant of the Wardſhip of *John Perceval*, of *Cannington* and *Bridgwater*, in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſq;

This Family was diſowned as Relations, by the Houſes both of *Sydenham* and *Weſton*, both affirming, That it proceeded from a Servant in the Family of *Weſton*, in old Time, who had gained a conſiderable Fortune in his Service, and in Gratitude had changed his Name to that of his Patron. ——— We have this Account of the Viſitation of *Somerſet* and *Dorſet*, in the Earl of *Oxford*'s Library, by *Robert Coke*.——But they extinguiſhed, as we preſume, in the Perſon of this *John Perceval* here mentioned. —— For we have been able to diſcover nothing farther of him, or any Deſcendant that he had.

Not long after *, *viz.* upon the tenth Day of *February*, in the forty-ſecond of that Reign, he obtained the Cuſtody of the Manor of *Eaſtbury*, and other Lands, Meſſuages, *&c.* in *Carhampton*, all in the County of *Somerſet*, Parcel of the Lands of *James Perceval*, of *Weſton-Gordein*, Eſquire, then in Ward to the Queen; which Lands were fallen into her Majeſty's Hands, during the Minority of the ſaid *James Perceval*, by the Death of *Elizabeth* his Grandmother, which happened the eighth of *September* preceding, having been the Jointure of that Lady, who had enjoyed the ſame, as in our former Diſcourſe of the Line of *Weſton-Gordein* we have ſhewn, for the Space of fifty Years and fifteen Days, *viz.* from the Death of her Huſband *Edmund Perceval*, on the ſixteenth Day of *Auguſt*, *A. D.* 1550, till the eighth of *September*, 1600. In this Year it ſeems that the Father *George Perceval* being deceaſed, for this *Richard* his Son being then in Poſſeſſion of the Manor-Houſe of *Sydenham*, he ſet a Leaſe thereof to one *Francis Galhampton*.

Upon

§ Ibid. P. 4ta, fol. 395, dorſo.

* Ex Libro Indentura Cur. Wardor. p. 5ta, fol. 44. dorſo, 43 Eliz.

UPON the twenty-second of *October* next ensuing ‡, *viz.* 1601, he received likewise a Grant of the Custody of the Manors of *Weston-in-Gordano*, *Thrubwell* in *Weston-in-Gordano*, *Thrubwell*, *Buttcombe*, and *Stoke-Episcopi*; being another Parcel of the Estates of the said *James Perceval* before-mentioned, to hold during the Minority of the said Ward, under the Conditions expressed in the former Grant. It appears by the Original in the Court of Wards, that the said Grant had been made first to *Thomas Bulbeck*, Gentleman, and by him passed over to Sir *George Rodney*, Knight, who having lately killed himself, and left his Payments to the Queen not perfected, the Disposal of the said Lands did then return into the Power of the Crown again. The Fine paid upon this Grant was no more than thirty Pounds, in Consideration (as another Record of the same Court observes) of the great Diligence and Services of the said *Richard Perceval* in the Business of that Court, and Prosecution of her Majesty's Rights and Titles.

IN the following Year *, *viz.* in the forty-fourth of *Elizabeth*, upon the twentieth of *May*, having obtained the *Custodium* of the Manors of *Whittington* and *Middleton*, the Estate of *Francis Albany*, Esquire, in the County of *Salop*, he entered into Bonds for the Performance of the Covenants expressed therein.

UPON the seventeenth of *November* following †, upon a like Occasion, he entered into Obligations of the same Nature, for the Custody of the Lands of *Elizabeth Basset*, Daughter and Heir of *William Basset*, Esquire, deceased.

THE next Record in which he is mentioned §, is in the first of King *James* the First, *A. D.* 1603, when being then of the City of *Westminster*, a Decree was made

‡ Ibid. p. 4. fol. 395, dorso.
* Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 15 Jacob. fol. 93.
† Ibid. 17 Nov. 45 Eliz.
§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 1 Jacob. fol. 412. dorso.

made for cancelling the Bonds into which he had entered in the forty-ſecond of *Elizabeth*, for the Fine due on the Grant of the Wardſhip and Marriage of *Henry Criſpe*, Son and Heir of *Henry Criſpe*, in the County of *Kent*; the Office having been traverſed, and the Wardſhip diſcharged, ſo that he could receive no Benefit thereby.

THE Plague raging in and about *London*, ſoon after the Acceſſion of King *James* the Firſt ‖, it was not thought prudent to call a Parliament ſo ſoon as it ſhould have otherwiſe been held; but the Sickneſs being abated, the King iſſued his Writs for that Purpoſe, upon the thirty-firſt of *January*, 1603.——— Sir *Edward Philips*, Knight of the Shire for *Somerſet* was Speaker of this Parliament, which met upon the nineteenth of *March* following, and continued till the ſeventh of *July* following, 1604; after which it was prorogued to the ſeventh of *February*.—— § This *Richard Perceval* ſerved in the ſaid Parliament for the Borough of *Richmond* in *Yorkſhire*, and was a very active Member, particularly in the Affairs relating to the Court of Wards, and other Matters of the Revenue.———He was likewiſe ſo ſerviceable in aſſiſting the Town of *Berwick*, with regard to their Charter, that he received Letters of Acknowledgment from ſeveral of the principal Inhabitants thereof, on Account of his Endeavours in their Behalf.

THERE does not (as we have yet diſcovered) occur any farther Grants of Offices or Wardſhips to this Gentlemen, till the third of *James* the Firſt, *A. D.* 1606 *, when having obtained a Grant of the Wardſhip and Marriage of *Margaret Gawber*, he then entered into Bonds, upon the twenty-third of *November*, for Payment of the Fine agreed to be paid the Crown on that Occaſion.

UPON

‖ Journal of the Houſe of Commons in England, 1 Jacob. I.
§ Ibid.
* Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. 16 Jac. I. fol. 282.

UPON the fifth of *July*, 1609 §, having then acquired the Wardſhip of *Samuel Sewſter*, Son of *Giles Sewſter*, of ———, Eſquire; he, according to the ancient Form, entered into Bonds for the ſame.

HE received likewiſe at *Michaelmas* the ſame Year the *Cuſtodium* of Part of the Lands of *John Stowell*, Eſquire, Son and Heir of Sir *John Stowell*, Knight, (Anceſtor to the preſent Lord *Stawell*) in the Counties of *Somerſet*, *Devon*, and *Dorſet*, in Conjunction with Sir *James Mervin*, Sir *Thomas Thynne*, and Sir *Richard Grotham*. This *Cuſtodium* having been formerly granted to the Lady *Elizabeth Stowell*, Widow, and afterwards (upon her ſurrendering thereof) to her, and Sir *Thomas Griffin*, her then Huſband, jointly, became forfeited to the Crown, on Failure of the Performance of the Conditions therein mentioned. In this Grant the Crown ſhewed ſo much Favour as to remit the Fine that was due thereon.

IN *Trinity* Term *, the next Year, we find a new Decree concerning the Lands of *John*, the Son of Sir *John Stowell*, Knight; and the *Cuſtodium* was ordered to be made out in favour of this *Richard Perceval*, Eſq; and the other Parties joined with him in the former Grant, excepting Sir *Thomas Thynne*, whoſe Name was then omitted.

NOT long after, there was a † Reference of the Petition of Dame *Dorothy Jennings*, Wife of Sir *John Jennings*, Knight, a Lunatick, and Daughter of *Thomas Bulbeck*, Eſq; (praying leave to accept Surrenders and Fines, and to grant out Copyhold Eſtates towards Payment of her Huſband's Debts,) to *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Saliſbury*, Maſter of the Court of Wards, to his Majeſty's Attorney of the ſaid Court, to Sir *Walter Cope*, and *Richard Perceval*, Eſq; and in purſuance of their Report upon this Reference, a Decree of that Court was made.

IN

§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 16 Jacob. I. fol. 93.
* Ibid. 7 Jacobi I. fol. 430.
† Ibid. fol. 449.

In this ‖ Year Sir *William Fleetwode*, Knight, Receiver General of the Court of Wards, having, notwithſtanding the great Profit of that Employment, ſo negligently and unfaithfully demeaned himſelf therein, that there was ariſen a Deficiency of vaſt Sums of Money in his Accounts with the Crown; upon his Diſgrace, that Office being taken from him, was veſted in Commiſſioners, of which this *Richard* was appointed one, with a ſole Grant of all the Profits of that Place, paying yearly to the other Commiſſioners a Salary of one hundred Marks, ſo long as that Office ſhould remain in Commiſſion.

A Decree § of that Court was likewiſe then made, exhibiting new Regulations to prevent the like Diſorders for the Time to come, bearing Date the twenty-firſt of *September*, in the ſame Year.

About the ſame Time, an Order was iſſued for the ſetting over and delivering of all Bonds for Money due to his Majeſty, to this *Richard Perceval*, and one other of the Commiſſioners before mentioned.

And as *, after ſo great a Loſs ſuſtained by the Crown, no Precautions were thought too great to ſecure this Branch of the Revenue, it was determined to create a new Officer, as a Check upon that of the Receiver General, by the Name of Remembrancer of the Court of Wards, a Place of much Credit, as requiring a Perſon of the greateſt Ability and Sufficiency. ——Which Place, being by the Intereſt of the Earl of *Saliſbury* reſerved to the Diſpoſal of the Maſter of that Court, (the Poſt then held by that Lord) was by him conferred upon this *Richard Perceval* in *Hillary* Term of the ſame Year.

In the *Trinity* Term †, the Year next enſuing, *viz.* upon the eighth of *James* the Firſt, *A.D.* 1611, he had

‖ Ex Libro Decretor Cur. Wardor. Trin. 7 Jacobi I. fol. 454.

§ Ex Libro Literar. Patent. Cur. Wardor. 7 Jacob. p. 10. fol. 376. dorſo.

* Ex Libro Literar. Patent. & Decret. Cur. Wardor. p. 13. fol. 111. dorſo.

† Ex Libro Decretor. Trin. 8 Jacobi I. Cur. Wardor. fol. 637.



I Faber fec. 1743.

Alice Daughter of Ottery St. Marys Devon. Wife to Secretary &c. of the Living



of Jn.o Sheeman Esq.r in the County of Rich.d Perceval Esq.r Court of Wards A.D. 1599.


BRITISH MUSEUM

had Licence to aſſign over to the Crown a Bond of ſixteen hundred Pounds, (forfeited to him by *John Buller*, Eſq;) as a Security for the Money then due by him on account of the *Cuſtodium* of the Lands of *Elizabeth Baſſet*, Daughter and Heir of *William Baſſet*, Eſq; before mentioned.

In the *Michaelmas* ‖ Term following, one *Robert Oliver* (who had married a near Relation of this *Richard Perceval*,) having procured the ſaid *Richard* to be bound for him in ſeveral conſiderable Sums of Money, and having afterwards drawn in *James Perceval*, his eldeſt Son, to do the like, without his Father's Knowledge, (as the Record recites;) and the ſaid *Oliver* having withdrawn himſelf into *Ireland*, leaving nothing that he could ſeize for the Satisfaction of thoſe Debts, excepting only the Wardſhip of *Richard Chaffe*, of the County of *Devon*, he obtained a Decree of the Court to transfer the ſaid Wardſhip to himſelf, and his Aſſigns, together with the *Cuſtodium* of the Lands of the ſaid *Chaffe*. During the ninth of the Reign of *James* the Firſt, it does not appear by the Records of the Court of Wards, that he received any further Favour; but in the tenth of the ſame Reign, *A. D.* 1612, he obtained a *Cuſtodium* of the Lands of ----- *Hardwicke*, Eſq; then in Ward to the Crown, in which Year the ſaid *Richard Perceval*, and *Alice* his Wife, joined in the Sale of the Manor of *Sydenham* to Mr. *Bull*, from whom it deſcended to *George Bubb Doddington*, Eſq; late one of the Lords of the Treaſury, the preſent Poſſeſſor.

Sometime after, he had a remarkable Trial at Law for the Reverſion of the Place of Auditor General of the Court of Wards, which he had obtained of the Crown by Patent for his Life, a Charge of great Importance, Profit, and Honour, being the fourth Office in Rank in that Court.——This * Caſe, which is contained at large in *Coke*'s Reports, is one of great note, it being then determined that the Grant was not

‖ Ex Libro Decretor. Mich. 8 Jacobi I. Cur. Wardor. fol 643.
* Auditor Curle's Caſe in Coke's Rep. Part II. Vol. VI. p. 2, 3, 4.

valid, becauſe it was the Reverſion of a Judicial Office, which Deciſion has ever ſince directed the Courſe of the Law in this Particular.

About this Time ‡ alſo, he obtained a Grant of the Eſtate of *Richard Benyon*, who was likewiſe then in Ward.

And at *Michaelmas* ‖, the ſame Year, a Decree was made in his Favour, by the Name of *Richard Perceval*, of *Cheſhunt*, in *Hertfordſhire*, Eſq; (where he then reſided,) permitting him to make over a Bond for four hundred Pounds, forfeited for Non-performance of the Condition thereon endorſed, by *John Langford*, of *Ayworth*, in the County of *Devon*, Eſq; in order to anſwer the Security to be given for two Grants of the Eſtates of *Hardwicke* and *Benyon*, before recited.

After this, in *Michaelmas* § Term, the twelfth of *James* the Firſt, we find a Decree concerning the Sale of the Eſtate of the ſaid *Langford*, in the County of *Devon*, to make good the Sums due to the Crown in manner aforeſaid, Mr. *Perceval* having only received Part of the Money due.

In *Hillary* * Term following, a Decree was made for the ſaid *Richard* to make over the Cuſtody of the Body, the Effect of the Marriage, and his Claim to the Leaſe of the Lands of *Richard Chaffe*, of the County of *Devon*, to *Edward Wyott* and *Richard Smith*, for the Uſe of *Jeremy Hilliard*, of the City of *Exeter*, Matters having been agreed between the ſaid *Perceval* and *Hilliard*, with the Conſent of the Court, the former having received Satisfaction by the Appointment of the latter, for the Value of the ſaid Wardſhip, Marriage, and Leaſe.

Upon the nineteenth of *November* †, a few Days after, another Decree occurs, confirming the Sale of the Eſtate of *John Langford*, Eſquire, to ——— *Humfry*, Eſquire; by which the Bonds given by Mr. *Langford*

‡ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Ward. 10 Jac. fol. 100, dorſ. Mich.
‖ Ibid. fol. 100, dorſo.
§ Ibid. Mich. 12 Jacob. fol. 495, dorſo.
* Ibid. Hill. 12 Jacob. fol 503, dorſo.
† Ibid. fol. 521.

Langford to Mr. *Perceval*, with Mr. *Perceval*'s Aſſignment thereof to his Majeſty, were ordered to be cancelled, and a Vacate to be entered thereon: and that the Eſtallment of the Debt of the ſaid *Richard Perceval*, Eſquire, to his Majeſty, ſhould ſtand according to former Orders.

BUT now his Intereſt having viſibly declined, ever ſince the Death of the Lord Treaſurer *Saliſbury* ‖, who had always been his ſincere Friend. In this very Term he was diſmiſſed his Employment as Remembrancer of the Court of Wards, by *William* Lord *Knollys*, who had ſucceeded the ſaid Lord *Saliſbury* in his Office of that Court. This was done in an arbitrary Manner, without any Reaſon aſſigned, after many Years of Service, with the greateſt Teſtimonies of Ability and Integrity, that had ever been experienced in any Servant of the Crown.

AND not long after he was removed from all his other Employments †, both in that Court, and in the Dutchy Court of *Lancaſter*; nothing being left him but the Penſion of eight hundred Marks *per annum*, which having been granted upon ſo memorable a Service in the late Reign, was yet reſerved to him.

HAVING thus quitted all public Buſineſs, in the Year 1614, he little thought to be taken into the Service of the Crown again; but he was found too uſeful to be wholly laid aſide, as appeared in a little Time.

FOR about three Years after *, King *James* the Firſt being made acquainted with the bad Management of the Wards in *Ireland*, which, though conducted with great Oppreſſion to the Subject, was of little or no Advantage to himſelf. He determined to take ſome Courſe therein; but wanting ſome Officer of Experience to employ in that Buſineſs, no other could be found, from whom ſo much Service was expected, as from this *Richard Perceval*, who in the different Poſts of

‖ Ibid. ex Libro Literar. Patent. & Decretor. Wardor. p. 13. a. fol. 111. dorſo, 12 Jacob.

† Ex Vet. Cart. Familiæ.

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

of Secretary, Receiver-General, and Remembrancer of that Court in *England* for above twenty Years, had improved that Branch of the Revenue from Sixty to Ninety Thouſand Pounds *per annum*.

THE Proſpect of a proportional Encreaſe in the other Kingdom, was the only Intereſt that brought him into Buſineſs again.———For though in that long Courſe of lucrative Employment, and notwithſtanding the numerous Grants he had from Time to Time received, he had been imprudent enough to have made but little Addition to his paternal Fortune, yet that being then very conſiderable, he was little inclined to give himſelf any farther Trouble, having ſufficiently experienced the anxious and precarious State of a public Life. However, after ſome Difficulty, he was prevailed upon to accept the Office of Regiſter of the Court of Wards, upon the new Eſtabliſhment in *Ireland*, a Place then eſtimated to be worth in Fees and Perquiſites one thouſand Pounds *per annum*, to which was added an annual * Penſion of one thouſand Marks, to make it worthy his Acceptance.

THE Wards and Profits of them, which had been till then in the abſolute Diſpoſal of the Deputy-Governor of that Kingdom; being now taken out of that Hand, a Commiſſion was iſſued for the Conduct of them there, directed to the Lord Chief-Juſtice of the King's-Bench, the Maſter of the Rolls, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and the Muſter-Maſter-General, or any three of them. The Commiſſioners, who were eight or ten in number, though they made great Profit by their Places, had only a Sallary of forty Pounds *per annum* each of them, out of the *Concordatum*.

THE Commiſſion was dated on the fourteenth of *July* †, the fourteenth of *James* the Firſt, *A. D.* 1617, and the Warrant for the Appointment of this *Richard Perceval*, as Regiſter to the ſaid Commiſſion, bears date the fourteenth of *October* following. ——— On the

* Family Letters, Vol. VII. fol. 309.
† Ex Officio Rotulor. in Hibernia.

the ſixteenth of the ſame Month he paſſed Patent, and the next Day was ſworn into his Office.

AND ſuch was the immediate Conſequence of his Labours, that though the Powers were executed with the utmoſt Moderation, and without any Diſcontentment of the People, this Part of the Revenue was very ſuddenly improved, from one to three thouſand Pounds a Year.

BEING thus introduced into that Kingdom *, and finding the Advantage with which he might diſpoſe of Money there, he ſold twelve hundred Pounds *per annum* of his Eſtate in the County of *Somerſet* in *England*, the Amount of which Sale he laid out in Mortgages upon Eſtates in the County of *Corke* in *Ireland*. And thus began the firſt Eſtabliſhment of that great Fortune ſince enjoyed by his Deſcendants in thoſe Parts.

IN 1618, the very next Year †, he was obliged to come over again to *England*, to oppoſe the Endeavours of a great *Scotch* Favourite, to diveſt him of his new Employment, which was ſoon diſcovered to be far greater Profit than it was at firſt conceived to have been. But this he could not do upon eaſier Terms than that of ſurrendering his Penſion, which was immediately given to the Favourite, together with the Diſpoſal of the Reverſion of his Office, which he had much laboured to obtain for his Sons.

HOWEVER, upon the ſeventeenth of *March* of the ſame Year §, he received a Grant of the ſame Fee of forty Pounds, which the reſt of the Commiſſioners for the Wards enjoyed, but under a ſpecial Proviſo, that it ſhould not go to the Perſon who had obtained the Reverſion of his Patent; and this was done to place him on a level with the reſt of the Board.

IN *Trinity* Term the ſame Year, a Decree was made ‡ out for cancelling the Bonds due by this *Richard*

* Ex Chart. Famil.

† Ibid.

§ Out of the Council Books at Whitehall, 17 March, 1613, & 16°.

‡ Ex Lib. Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Trin. 15 Jacob. fol. 03.

chard Perceval, then reſiding at *Kenſington*, in the County of *Middleſex*, for Payment of the Fine due upon the Leaſe of the Lands of *Elizabeth Baſſet*, *Francis Albany*, and *Samuel Sewſter*, Eſquires, of whom we have before ſpoken; *William* Earl of *Saliſbury*, Son to the late Treaſurer, and Sir *Anthony Forreſt*, engaging themſelves for the reſpective Sums.

THE next Year afterwards, in 1619†, being called over by Summons of the Council in *England*, on account of ſome new Regulations intended to be made in *Ireland*, he obtained a Privy-Seal for a full Diſcharge of all his Debts due to the Crown, in Conſideration of his great Services.

AND in *Michaelmas* Term the ſame Year, Proceſs having been iſſued againſt him and others, for Payment of the Fines due for the Wardſhip and Marriage of *Margaret Gawber*, and for the *Cuſtodium* of the Lands of *Richard Benyon* before-mentioned. And whereas it appeared §, that by Decree in *Michaelmas* Term, the twelfth of *James* the Firſt, the Marriage of the ſaid *Margaret Gawber* had been diſcharged, at the Suit of *Richard* Earl of *Dorſet*; and that the *Cuſtodium* of the Lands of *Benyon* was never enjoyed, nor any Profit taken thereby, a new Office having been found, and a new *Cuſtodium* granted of the ſaid Ward's Lands to one *Henry Bell*, he met with ſo much Juſtice, that a Decree was made for delivering up the ſaid Bonds to him to be cancelled, and for diſcharging all the Proceſs thereupon.

BUT now, in the Year following, 1620, being advanced into the ſixty-ninth Year of his Age, his Health having for ſome Time gradually declined, he died upon the fourth of *September*, in *Ireland*, as it is preſumed, and was buried in the Church of St. *Audeon* in *Dublin*, as it ſhould ſeem, from the following Inſcription, which was lately *, and is probably now ſubſiſting there.

D. O. M.

† Out of the Council Books at Whitehall.
§ Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. 16 Jacob. I. Mich.
* Ex Vet. Cart. Familiæ.

D. O. M.

‖- - - - - - the Earthye Remaines of Richarde Percivall, late of Sydenham in the Countye of Somerſett Eſquire; Son of George, Son of David, Son of Thomas, Son of Ralf, ſecond Son of Sr Richarde, and Brother of Ralf Percivall, Lord of Weſton in Gordano in the Countye of Somerſette aforeſaide, Eſqr, deſcendyd of an auntient Familye, whiche have Flouriſhed in thoſe Partes for more than five hundrede Yeres.

Which Richarde having paſſed thro various Fortunes good and evile did exerciſe diverſe memorable Employments in the Courte of Wardes and Lyveries under that renouned Lord Robert Sicill Earl of Saliſburye, Maſter of the ſaid Courte in England, in the Raigne of her late Majeſtye of Bleſſyd Remembraunce, as alſo of his Sacred Majeſtye that now is, whereine having approved hymſelf of ample and lucrative Utilitie unto the Crowne, he was tranſmytted from that Kyngdom in the Yere of our Lord God Sixteen Hundred and Seventeene, to perform the like Services in this, upon the Eſtabliſhmente of a Commiſſion then appointed for the Wardes therein, and havinge in the Office of Regiſter under the ſaid Commiſſion travailed with equal Paine to himſelfe and Profyte to his Majeſtye for the Space of three Yeres, he was called away to pay an other Service before the Throne of the Almightie Kynge of Kynges upon the fourth of September in the Year of our Redemption One Thouſand Six Hundred and Twentye, and of his own Age the Sixty and Ninthe. His

‖ The firſt Words are not legible.

His firſt Wyfe was Jone the Daughter of Henry Younge of Buckhorn-Weſton in the County of Dorſet Eſquire, by whom he had divers Children, all long ſince deceaſed. By his ſeconde, Alice Daughter of John Sherman of Ottry St Maries in Com. Devon Eſq^r^ he left two Daughters, Norrys and Alice, and two Sons, Walter & Phillipe, who in Pious Memorye of ſo good a Frende and Father, have Cauſed this Inſcription to be written upon his Grave.

AFTER the Death of his firſt Lady, he lived a Widower for ſeveral Years *; but at length, being taken more with her Qualifications, than tempted either by her Beauty or Fortune, he married *Alice*, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottry St. Marys* in the County of *Devon*, Eſquire, who enjoyed likewiſe a good Eſtate in the County of *Hertford*. The Time of this Marriage is not exactly known, but that it was before the forty-firſt of *Elizabeth*, 1599, is evident from certain Dates upon her Pictures in that Year.

THIS Lady †, by the Side of her Father, proceeded from a very ancient Family in the County of *Suffolk*, tranſplanted ſome Generations before into the County of *Devon*: and by the Side of her Mother, who was the Daughter of Sir *Bernard Drake*, of *Aſhe*, Knight, in the ſame County, deſcended from moſt of the eminent Families of that Province. The Wife of *John Drake*, Eſquire, Father of the ſaid Sir *Bernard*, being the Daughter of *Roger Greenville*, of *Stowe*, in that County, Anceſtor to the late Earls of *Bath*, Baron of *Lanſdown*, and preſent Counteſs of *Granville*; and *Gertrude*, Wife to the ſaid *Bernard Drake*, was Daughter of *Bartholomew Forteſcue*, of *Philly*, Eſquire. of the Family of the preſent Lord *Clinton*, by *Joan* his Wife, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Ralph St. Leger*, Knt.

—But

* Ex Chart. Famil.

† Viſit. Devon. in Officio Armor.

—But not to wander farther into the Deduction of Alliances ſo remote, we refer to the Genealogies of theſe Families we have mentioned, for the many other ancient Weſtern Houſes, whoſe Blood was by this Marriage brought into that of which we principally treat in this Place; it being by this Lady only, that the Line of this *Richard Perceval* was continued, the Children by his firſt Wife having all extinguiſhed without Iſſue, during his own Life.

ISSUE of *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, Eſquire, Lord of *Sydenham*, *&c.* in the County of *Somerſet*, and *Joan*, (Daughter of *Henry Younge*, of *Buckhorn-Weſton*, in the County of *Dorſet*, Eſquire,) his firſt Wife.

I. *JAMES*, the eldeſt Son, married ——, the Daughter and Heir of —— *Potts*, in the County of *Devon**, with whom he had obtained a large Inheritance for his Family, but that he died without Iſſue ſometime after the Year 1611; the laſt Mention † that we find made of him being in that Year, which was the eighth of *James* the Firſt, in relation to certain Bonds inadvertently entered into, on behalf of *Robert Oliver*, a Relation to him, who deſerting this Country. *Richard*, the Father of this *James*, obtained a Wardſhip, which had been formerly granted the ſaid *Oliver*, in Satisfaction for the Debts due to him, and his ſaid Son *James*, by the ſaid *Oliver*.

II. *FRANCIS* §, who being employed in the *Eaſt-Indies* in Traffic, was there unfortunately killed, by the Treachery of the *Indians* of *Mallabar*, or ſome other neighbouring Province there.

* Viſit. Dorſ. & Somſ. penes Ducem de Kingſton, per Leonard & St. George.

† Ex Libro Decretor. Cur. Wardor. Mich. 8 Jacob. I. fol 643.

§ In Viſitatione prædict.

III. *RICHARD* *, being very young, deſerted his School, and falling into ſcandalous Debauches, for Love of an Actreſs aſſociated himſelf with a Company of Strollers, with whom he went down to *Canterbury*, and was there murdered in a drunken Scuffle with them, about the Age of eighteen Years.

IV. *MARY* †, the eldeſt Daughter, was married to ——— *Dorr*.

V. § *PHILIPPA*, married *John Buller*, of *Lilleſdon*, in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſquire; but neither of them had Iſſue that long ſurvived.

ISSUE of *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, Eſquire, *&c.* by his ſecond Wife *Alice*, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottry St. Marys*, Eſq;

I. ‖ *WALTER PERCEVAL*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. ‡ SIR *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, who continued the Deſcent; of whom in Chapter the Eighth.

III. ** *NORRYS*, married to *John Mulys*, of *Hallington*, in the County of *Devon*, Eſquire.

IV. ‖‖ *ALICE*, married to *Richard Fitzgerald*, of *Caſtle-dodd*, in the County of *Corke*, Eſquire, the Heireſs of which Family is now Wife to *William Steward*, Lord Viſcount *Mountjoy*.

---

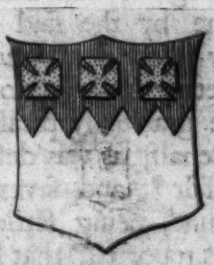
* In Viſitatione prædict.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.
** Ibid. ‖‖ Ibid.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

WALTER PERCEVAL, *the second of that Name, Lord of* Tykenham *and* Rollestón, *in the County of* Somerset.

PERCEVAL,



WALTER PERCEVAL*, the eldest Son of *Richard* by the second Wife, inherited the Estate, and was Lord of *Tykenham*, *Rollestón*, *&c.* in the County of *Somerset*, together with all those Mortgages his Father left upon Estates in *Ireland*, which produced him a very large Income.

As soon as might conveniently be after his Father's Death†, he joined with his Brother *Philip* in a Petition to the King, setting forth, "That they had both "been educated under their Father in the Court of "Wards,

* Visit. Dors. & Somf. per Leonard & St. George, penes Ducem de Kingston.

† Council Books at Whitehall, March 12, 1621.

" Wards, and made intire Maſters of the Buſineſs " there, with a View to ſucceed him in his Employ- " ments in that Court.—But that upon his Death, they " found another had obtained the Reverſion of it. " They therefore humbly prayed, that they might re- " ceive a Grant of the ſame Reverſion after the Death " or Demiſe of the Perſon then in Poſſeſſion; or in " Caſe of a new Settlement of the Wards in *Ireland*, " (then expected) in which Caſe the old Commiſſion " would determine, a Grant of the ſame Employ- " ment."

THE Matter of this Petition being referred to the Privy-Council in *England*, they took it under Conſideration, upon the twelfth of *March*, 1620, and after giving an ample and honourable Teſtimony of the general Knowledge of that Board, relating to the great Services done by the ſaid *Richard Perceval* to the Crown, they reſolved to make it their joint Requeſt to Mr. Secretary *Calvert*, to move his Majeſty, that he would be graciouſly pleaſed to give Order on the Petitioners Behalf, as was deſired by their Petition.

THIS Affair *, and ſeveral others relating to his private Fortune, being ſettled very advantageouſly to him,——it is reported, that he inſenſibly fell into ſuch a notorious Indulgence of his Vanities and Pleaſures, that in leſs than four Years, he greatly incumbered his Eſtate in *England*, which his younger Brother *Philip* obſerving, and being unwilling that the Remains of that ancient Inheritance ſhould be alienated wholly from his Family, purchaſed it from him.——But very ſoon after, this *Walter* having ſuffered, as it is reported, no leſs in his Health than in his Fortune, by the Irregularities of his Life, died; and having never married, his whole Fortune deſcended to his Brother, of whom we ſhall treat in the next Chapter.—— The Time of his Death is not exactly known, but it happened ſometime in the Year 1624.

THIS

* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

THIS young Man †, not yet twenty-three Years old, was a remarkable Inſtance of the Facility with which the Mind of Youth may be perverted; for during his Father's Life, he was remarkably eminent for a Degree of Sobriety and Virtue, very uncommon in a Perſon of his Age.———At the ſame Time that his younger Brother was equally cenſured for his early Diſorders.———But, whether from the Difference of their Capacities, or the Company and Acquaintance into which they fell, when they became Maſters of themſelves, a total Alteration fell out in the Manners of both. —— The eldeſt, as we have here ſhewn, engaging in very unhappy Courſes, whilſt the youngeſt, quitting his former Habits, ſoon became the Admiration of all his Acquaintance, for the Prudence and Sagacity of his Conduct, and the ſteady Application which he afterwards ſhewed, to every thing that was virtuous and praiſe-worthy, advantageous or honourable, to himſelf, or to the Public.

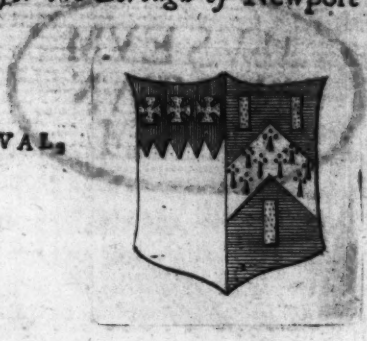
† Ex Chartis Familiæ.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The Right Honourable Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, *Knight, (the first of that Name,) Register of the Court of Wards in* Ireland, *Commissary-General of the Army, Providore-General of the Horse, Clerk of the Crown, Chief Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas, Keeper of the Records, Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper House of Parliament, Keeper of the Public Accounts, Customer of* Dublin, *Escheator of* Munster, *General Feodary of* Ireland, &c. *one of the most Honourable Privy-Council to King* CHARLES *the First*, &c. &c. *and Member of the* English *Parliament for the Borough of* Newport *in* Cornwall.



PERCEVAL, USHER.

WE come now to * Sir *Philip Perceval*, Knight, second Son, and at length Heir of *Richard Perceval*, Lord of *Sydenham*, &c. and of *Alice Sherman*, his second Wife, who was born, as we are informed

* Visitation. Dorset. & Somerset. by Leonard and St. George, penes Ducem de Kingston, apud Thoresby.

formed in the Viſitation before-mentioned *, in the Year 1603.

IT is evident that he was a young Man of very early and notable Activity, for ſo ſoon as the twentieth of *December*, 1620, not many Weeks after the Death of his Father, being then but ſeventeen Years of Age, there is extant a Bond of that Date from *William Rouſe*, granting to him the ſaid *Philip* the Moiety of the Profits of the Lands of *Barnaby Sherlock*, of *Tryne*, in the County of *Meath*, Eſquire, in Conſideration of his Expences, in procuring a Compoſition for the Intruſion of thoſe Lands.

DURING his Father's Life, his Diſorders and Irregularities had been very exceſſive †, and ſuch as much hazarded the intire Loſs of his Favour; but immediately after his Deceaſe, though not of an Age to have that kind of Reformation expected from him, he totally changed the Courſe of his Behaviour, giving equal Admiration with his eldeſt Brother to the World, though in a Manner much more advantageous than the other had done, applying himſelf, with a Zeal and Diligence almoſt incredible, to every thing which tended to increaſe his Fortune, and to advance his Reputation. In the firſt of which he made ſo good and quick a Progreſs, before his Brother's Death, that he had already purchaſed of him the greateſt Part of his Eſtate in *England*, *viz. Tykenham*, *Rolleſton*, *&c.* before-mentioned.

UPON the firſt of *March*, 1621 §, he obtained the Wardſhip of the Body, and Care of the Lands of *William Mac Eirly* of *Carrowkillin*, in the County of *Mayo*, granted to one *William Reynold*, in his Name, to the Uſe of the ſaid Sir *Philip Perceval*.

AND

---

* Viſitation of Dorſet and Somerſet, by St. George and Leonard, A. D. 1623.——Original Book of Leonard's, penes Ducem de Kingſton, apud Thoreſby.

† Ex Vet. Cart. Famil. penes Comitem de Egmont.

§ Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

THOMAS PERCEVAL, Lord of *Sydenham*, Son of *Ralf* the Younger.
ALICE, Daughter and at length Heir to *William Cave*, Lord of *Sydenham*, in *Com. Somſ.*

DAVID PERCEVAL, Lord of *Sydenham*, *ob.* 5 *Decemb.* 25 *Hen.* VIII.

THOMAS DE LA MORE, or *Bythemore*, Ld of *Overwere*, *Nailſay*, and Son of *Roger*.
ELIZABETH, Daughter of *John Marſhal*, Lord of *Ethorne*, or *Ywythorne*, in *Com. Somſ.*

ALICE, Daug^r and at length Heir of *Thomas de la More*, or *Bythemore*, Lord of *Overwere*, &c.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, Lord of *Sydenham*, *Overwere*, *Nailſay*, &c. in *Com. Somſ.*

WILLIAM BAMPFYLDE, Lord of *Poltymore*, in *Com. Devon.* married
MARY, Daughter and Coheir of *John St. Maur*, Lord of *Rode*, in *Com. Somſ.* Male Heir to the ancient Barons *St. Maur*, of *Caſtle-Kary*.

Sir EDWARD BAMPFYLDE, of *Poltymore*, in *Com. Devon.* Knight.

ELIZABETH, Dauger of Sir *Edward Bampfylde*, of *Poltymore*, in *Com. Devon.*

Sir NICHOLAS WADHAM, of *Merryfield*, Knt. in *Com. Somſ.*
JOANE, Daughter of *Robert Hill*, of *Halſway*.

ELIZABETH, Daughter of Sir *Nicholas Wadham*, of *Merryfield*, in *Com. Somſ.* Knight.

RICHARD PERCEVAL, Lord of *Sydenham*, Secretary Remembrancer, and Receiver General of the Court of Wards in *England*, and Regiſter of the ſame Court in *Ireland*.

Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Knt. Regiſter of the Court of Wards, Commiſſary General of the Army, &c. &c. &c. one of the Privy Council to King *Charles* the Firſt, Ancſtor to the preſent Earl of *Egmont*, died 10 *Nov.* 1647, at *London*.

JOHN SHERMAN, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, in *Com. Devon.* Son of *Thomas Sherman*, of *Suffolk*, Eſq; who married the eldeſt Daughter of *William Sherman*, of *Ottery St. Mary's*.

WILLIAM SHERMAN, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, Eſq;

TRENT, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, in *Com. Devon.*

Daughter of *Trent*, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, in *Com. Devon.*

JOHN SHERMAN, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, in *Com. Devon.*

ALICE, Daughter of *John Sherman*, of *Ottery St. Mary's*, in *Com. Devon.* Eſq;

JOHN DRAKE, of *Aſhe*, in *Com. Devon.* Eſq; married
AMY, Daughter of *Roger Greenville*, of *Stow*, in *Com. Devon.* from whom deſcend the Earls of *Bath*, Counteſs of *Greenville*, and Lord *Lanſdown*.

Sir BERNARD DRAKE, of *Aſhe*, in *Com. Devon.* Knt.

MARGARET, Daug^r of Sir *Bernard Drake*, of *Aſhe*, Knt.

BARTHOLOMEW FORTESCUE, of *Philly*, Eſq; of the Family of the preſent Lord *Clinton*.

GERTRUDE, Daughter of *Bartholomew Forteſcue*.

AND not long after ‖‖, *viz.* upon the twenty-fifth of *May*, he obtained the Wardship, Marriage, and *Custodium* of the Estate of *Elizabeth Roe*, of the County of *Kerry*, which was granted likewise in Trust for his Use, to one *Richard Morgan*.

THE Day after *, *viz.* on the sixteenth of the same Month, he entered into Articles with Sir *James Ware* and *Robert Davenport*, being jointly concerned with them in the Profits to be made of the Grant of the Benefit of the Wardships, Intrusion, and Alienation of the pretended Freeholders.

IN 1622 †, he obtained a third Part of the *Custodium* of the Lands of *Richard Stephenson*, Esquire, as appears from the Acknowledgment of *John Ascoughe*, in whose Name that *Custodium* had been granted.——Which Acknowledgment bears Date the thirteenth of *March* that Year.

UPON the twenty-second of *April* following §, *Edmund Forrester* entered into Bonds with the said Sir *Philip Perceval*, and *Edward Branan*, and *Conor Clancy*, Esquires, concerning the Intrusions in *Clan William*, each to bear a Third of the Charge, and to receive a Third of the Profit arising thereupon.

IN the beginning of the Year 1624 ‖ the last of King *James* the First, he was appointed a Commissioner under the great Seal, for finding the Offices *post mortem*, of divers of those who held *in Capite* of the Crown.

SHORTLY after which ‡, great Envy arising against him, divers Accusations were laid to his Charge, with regard to his Conduct in the Commission last mentioned.———And in particular, by a certain Gentleman in the County of *Limeric*, who complained to the Council of *England* of great Oppression, in the Exercise of his Offices of Register of the Court of Wards, and Feodary of that County. This Complaint was at first referred to the King's Commissioners

‖‖ Ex Vet. Cart. Famil. penes Comitem de Egmont.
* Ibid. † Ibid. § Ibid.
‖ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

for *Iriſh* Cauſes in *England*, who judging that it would be more proper to be examined on the other Side, the Council tranſmitted the Complaint to the then Lord Deputy*, requiring of him that the Matter ſhould be heard before the Lord Chancellor, and other great Officers of that Kingdom; whereupon a Trial was appointed, and the whole Affair enquired into with great Solemnity, the Iſſue of which was, that Sir *Philip Perceval* was diſmiſſed with great Honour, and the other Parties were ſeverely cenſured for their unjuſt and malicious Complaint†.——But not long after, the Paſſions of theſe Gentlemen being in no wiſe cooled by their ill Succeſs, he was concerned in an Affair of a different Nature with two others in the ſame County of *Lymerick*, *viz.* one *David Conyn* and *David Rice*, Eſquires.—— Such was their Animoſity againſt him, that not being able to attain their Ends in a legal Way, they, by a high and unruly Power, which Men with too much Licence exerciſed in thoſe Parts, made an Attempt upon his Perſon; in which hazardous Conjuncture he behaved himſelf with admirable Courage and Dexterity, obtaining afterwards a full, publick and ample Satisfaction for this Injury§, and a mean Acknowledgment for their baſe Carriage to him, under their Hands and Seals: The Original of which Inſtrument is ſtill extant.

And certain it is, that the Spirit he ſhewed upon this and other Occaſions in the Beginning of his Life was no ſmall Advantage to him; for though a Gentleman of a very fair Fortune and noble Extraction, yet was he in a manner a new Man in thoſe Parts: And theſe Circumſtances were more likely to draw down further Odium on him, as they were a great ſtrengthening to his Intereſt, than to reconcile Mens Affections to him in a Country where Envy, as well as

---

* Council Books, Whitehall, 13 June 1624, & poſtea.
† Ex. Vet. Cartis Familiæ.
§ Ibid.

as Jealouſy, of the Advantage of Strangers (for as ſuch they looked upon the *Engliſh* of every Degree) ſo much prevailed; and, indeed, that Sharpneſs of Reſolution, and ready encountering of all Oppoſition, was more than ordinarily neceſſary to check the overbearing Inſolence of a People, at that Time, little tractable to their Government, or amenable to their Laws, and therefore more eaſily kept under by Authority and Power, than by fair and reaſonable Dealings: Nor did he, as we find, after ſome few of theſe extraordinary Attempts, meet afterwards for a long Time with any Oppoſition in any thing he undertook or engaged in.

UPON the 27th of *June**, in the ſame Year, he obtained, under the Name of one *Thomas Gay*, the Intruſion of the Eſtates of *Lacy*, as appears from the Aſſignment thereof to him, dated upon that Day. ‖ And upon the 13th of *July* following he had a like Aſſignment on the ſame Account from *Patrick Cormuck*, Eſquire, of the Compoſition for the *Cuſtodium* of the Eſtate of *Geoffry Power*, of the County of *Waterford*, Eſquire. Of which *Cuſtodium*, we find further, that it was obtained by the Intereſt of Sir *Philip Perceval*, for one *Edward Beavan*, on Condition of paying half the Profit to the ſaid Sir *Philip*, who was to pay half the Charge for the Paſſage of that Grant, an Agreement teſtifying as much being made between them upon the 16th of *July*, 1624.

UPON the 24th of the ſaid Month he obtained†, in Conjunction with———*Kennye*, Eſquire, the Profits of the *Cuſtodium* of———*Dally* of *Ballioroom*, in the County of *Corke*, and of *Richard Keating* of *Clogharding*, in the County of *Croſs-Tipperary*, Eſquires.

UPON the 13th of *November*§, the ſame Year, 1624, he entered into Articles with *John O Hea* concerning the Diſcovery of the King's Title to ſeveral large Eſtates in the County of *Cork* in *Ireland*; as alſo

---

* Ex. Vet. Cartis Familiæ. ‖ Ibid.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

alſo concerning the Profits of the Wardſhips, Intruſions and Alienations thereof, when recovered and obtained.

Upon the 23d of *July**, the Firſt of *Charles* the Firſt, *A. D.* 1625, he obtained a Grant of the Office of Keeper of the Records of *Birmingham Tower*; as alſo another Grant of Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper Houſe of Parliament, dated likewiſe upon the ſame Day, both which Places were of eminent Advantage to him; the one giving him a frequent Admiſſion to the Houſe of Lords, and a natural Acquaintance with all the Nobility of the Kingdom, which he well knew how to improve; and the other making him Maſter of almoſt all the Titles of Eſtates in the whole Kingdom: So that by the Knowledge which that Place gave him, together with that of his Place in the Court of Wards, he became more capable to judge of his Purchaſes and Grants, and more generally uſeful to all Men than any other Perſon in the Kingdom.

Upon the 13th of *September* following it appears†, that he had then obtained the Reverſion of the Caſtles, Towns and Lands of *Killmuckillogh*, *Rowrane* and *Cranah*, after the Death of *Thomas Roche*, Eſquire, who then held them.

Not long after, *viz.* upon the 16th of *December*, the ſame Year §, he obtained a Grant of the Wardſhip of *Owen Mac Carty*, Son and Heir of *Daniel Macfinen Carty* of *Kilvary*, Eſquire; as alſo another Grant of the 17th of *March* following, of a ſpecial Ouſteremaigne and Pardon of Alienation for purchaſing divers Lands in the County of———in *Ireland*: And on the 4th of *March* he obtained likewiſe the Wardſhips of *George Thorneton* and *Daniel Sullivane*, Eſquires.

The next Year, *A. D.* 1626, upon the 21ſt of *Auguſt* ‖ (having before executed during Pleaſure) the Office

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N°. 941.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

Office of Regiſter of the Court of Wards and Liveries: He received a Grant of the ſame for Life. About which Time he alſo paſſed Patent for the Lands of *Cleantefin*, in the County of *Wexford*, bought of *John Cuſack* in *Dublin*.

AND now*, being twenty-three Years old, he thought it Time to ſettle himſelf in Marriage; and accordingly fixed his Choice upon *Catherine* the Daughter of *Arthur*, Son and Heir of Sir *William Uſher* of *Dublin*, Knight, who had been Clerk of the Council in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James* the Firſt, and ſtill continued ſo under King *Charles* the Firſt; a Family of great Antiquity in that County, being originally (as it is ſaid) of the Stock of *Nevil* in *England*, who, upon the going over of King *John*, were Uſhers to him, and ſo aſſumed the Name of their Office; and having received conſiderable Grants from that Prince, remained behind, and continued in Poſſeſſion of Part of them even to our Times.——In this Marriage, as he was determined to puſh his growing Fortunes in that Kingdom, he acted no imprudent Part; for though he received but a ſmall Portion with her, not exceeding (as it is ſaid) Three thouſand Pounds, yet was ſhe of good Birth, a Circumſtance which he eminently valued; and beſides, allied very nearly to almoſt all of thoſe Perſons who were then the governing Party of that Kingdom.

BY this Lady, whom he married on the 16th of *October*†, in that Year, he had a numerous Progeny, as we ſhall ſhew in its proper Place, though it was near four Years before he had any Iſſue by her.

ON the 31ſt of *January*, 1628*, he obtained a Grant by Letters Patent of the Offices of Clerk of the Crown, and of the *King's Bench* and *Common Pleas*.

UPON the 9th of *February* following‖, he had a Grant likewiſe of the Eſtate of *Ulick Roch*, Eſquire.

SOON

---

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N°. 941.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

Soon after he obtained a Letter from the King*, dated at *Weſtminſter* the 23d of *May*, the Third of *Charles* the Firſt, by which he paſſed to him all thoſe Eſtates which Queen *Elizabeth*, in the 24th of her Reign, had granted to Sir *Henry Harrington*, and the Heirs Male of his Body †. And upon the 26th of *July* following he had a Grant of the Wardſhip and Marriage of *Thomas Butler*, Son and Heir of *James Butler*, late of *Grellagh*, in the County of *Tipperary*, Eſquire.

In the Fourth of King *Charles* the Firſt §, upon the 18th of *July*, he enfeoffed *William Archbold* with Power to paſs Patent in his Name for the Hoſpital of *St. John* of *Caſtledermot*, with divers Lands of great Value therein mentioned.

And being then a Man of great Intereſt ‖, he received Letters Patent from the Crown upon the fifteenth Day of *February* of the ſaid Year 1629 (the Lord *Falkland* being then Deputy) by which he was enabled, without any farther Licence, to paſs and repaſs the Seas from *Ireland* to *England*, *&c.* as often as it ſhould ſo pleaſe him during the Term of his natural Life: Alſo to carry over with him, or to remit, in ſuch manner as ſhould beſt pleaſe himſelf, the Profits of all his Offices then enjoyed, or to be hereafter enjoyed, either by himſelf or his Deputies, or in Partnerſhip with others, or in Truſt for his Uſe, or in any other manner whatſoever held or to be held. And in particular with regard to the Offices of Clerk of the *Crown*, Clerk of the *Common-Pleas*, and Keeper of the Records of the *King's Bench*, all which he then enjoyed; with Clauſes of *Non Obſtante*, in particular to the Statute of Abſentees of the 28th of *Henry* the Eighth, or any other Acts that might be conſtrued to impede this Licence; as alſo to excuſe him from any explicit

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N°. 941.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

explicit Declaration of the Value of his Employments, or the Money he ſhould export in Conſequence thereof.

AN *Engliſh* Reader at this Time would hardly, upon the firſt Mention of this Patent, diſcover any great Favour in the Grant, or any great Advantage to be obtained from it: But whoever is a little acquainted with the Hiſtory of *Ireland* a few Years after, when the Earl of *Strafford* carried the Prerogative of the Crown with ſo high a Hand in this Particular of Licences to go abroad, as may be ſeen at large in the Account of his Trial, and in many hiſtorical Relations of thoſe Times, will diſcover the Prudence of his deſiring that Privilege, as well as the Intereſt he then had to obtain it. For, however illegal this Prohibition really was, and inconſiſtent with the Liberty of the Subject, being directly contrary to an expreſs Clauſe in the *Magna Charta*, the Deputies or chief Governors had long pretended, out of Reaſon of State, though in reality, out of Security to their own Power, by preventing the Complaints of thoſe whom they oppreſſed, to exert this hard Prerogative of confining the Subjects of that Kingdom: To which End, they wreſted certain old Precedents; as alſo that Act of Parliament before-mentioned, though it related quite to other Purpoſes——Nor was this the only Inſtance in which then or now that Country has been unwarrantably oppreſſed by thoſe who chiefly have directed their Affairs; an Evil, which few ſubordinate Governments, eſpecially in mixed Monarchies, eſcape: Which laſt Obſervation being drawn from us by the Thread of this Diſcourſe, for its Explanation will juſtify a further Aſſertion, That all Provinces are happier under abſolute Princes than under limited Monarchies, the Power of the latter being always ſhared with the Senate or Council of the Mother Country, who in this Copartnerſhip exert a Sovereignty always partial to the Intereſt of their own Nation; whereas in the other Caſe, a Prince ruling independently, diſpenſes all his Favours as well as his Severities with a

more equal Hand, being not induced by the ſame Motives to make any ſuch particular Indulgence; of which, without wandering any farther into this politic Queſtion, we have at preſent Inſtances enough in *Europe*.

In the Year 1630, the Fifth of *Charles* the Firſt, upon the twenty-ſecond of *March*, he had another Grant of the Manor of *Corbally*, in the County of *Wexford*.

Upon the fifth of *September* following, he paſſed Patent for the Place of Cuſtomer of *Dublin*, which was then of great Value: But in this Employment he met with great Oppoſition from the *Dutch* Factors there, who, under the looſe and diſſolute Management of that Office, had found Means greatly to enrich themſelves, defrauding the Crown of great Part of its Duties, which they put into their own Pockets; and yet charged their Principals as paid: But at length he maſtered this Difficulty, and eſtabliſhed himſelf in that Poſt, which he enjoyed for many Years.

In the Sixth of the ſaid Reign*, *viz.* 1630, he obtained of the Crown the Manor of *Haſſard's Town*, *Herton*, *Herfaſton*, and *Black Rath*, in the County of *Tipperary*, and a quarter Part of *Kilmoyleran*, in the County of *Cork*; under the yearly Acknowledgment of twenty-ſeven Shillings and five Pence for all Services, *with ſpecial Exemption of all Taxes or Charges whatſoever to be laid by Parliament, or any other Authority.*

And again†, in 1634, being General Feodary of *Ireland*, and Eſcheator of *Munſter*, he had a further Grant of Lands in the County of *Tipperary*.

In the Twelfth §, which was two Years after, he had another Letter from the King, granting divers other Lands in different Counties of that Kingdom.

As

* In Officio Rotulor. Hiberniæ.
† Family Collections, Vol. VI. fol. 941.
§ Ibid.

As alſo a Grant of the Cuſtody, Wardſhip and Marriage of *Connor O' Dwyer* *, Grandchild and Heir to *Connor O'Dwyer* of *Dallagh*, Eſq; deceaſed.

In the Thirteenth †, being appointed a Commiſſioner of Survey, to diſtinguiſh Poſſeſſions and Titles of Land in the Counties of *Cork* and *Tipperary*, he obtained likewiſe divers large Eſtates from the Crown; as alſo the Wardſhip of another *Thomas Butler*. And upon the twentieth of *May*, 1638, he, together with Sir *James Ware*, obtained a Grant for the ſole Licenſing of Ale and *Aqua Vitæ*.

Upon the ſixteenth of *October*, in the ſame Year §, the King, out of ſpecial Grace, erected for him the Caſtle, Town and Lands of *Annagh*, with divers large Tracts of Country, and divers Villages, together with the two ancient Lordſhips of *Annagh* and *Church-Town*, into one great Manor, under the Name of the Manor of *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, ſubject to an Acknowledgment of five Pounds ten Shillings *per Annum*, with all the moſt extenſive Privileges, as Free Warren, Powers to impark ſixteen hundred Acres of Land, *&c.* which Manor is ſtill in the Poſſeſſion of this Family, and is one of the nobleſt Royalties in the three Kingdoms.

Not long after this ‖, he received a Grant from the Crown of the Wardſhips of *Ann* and *Suſanna Wiſeman*, *viz.* upon the ſecond of *September*, the fifteenth of *Charles* the Firſt.

Upon the fourth of *October* following ‖‖, he obtained a Grant alſo of Lands in the County of *Wicklow*, in Conjunction with Sir *Adam Loftus* and Sir *Robert Meredith*.

Over and above all which important Acquiſitions, he obtained **, either in his own Name, or in Truſt

* Family Collections, Vol. 6. fol. 941.

† Ibid.

§ Ibid. Vol. VIII. N°. 942. and in the Auditor General's Office in Ireland.

‖ Ibid. ‖‖ Ibid. ** Ibid.

to his Uſe, within a ſmall Diſtance of the Time laſt mentioned, though the Dates are not exactly recovered,——the Intruſion of the Eſtates of *Loghlin*, of *Muckinene* and *O Loghlin*, of *Gregane*, in the County of *Clare*;—the Wardſhip of *James Fitzgerald*, Eſquire of *Ballyogherty*, and a Rent of twenty Marks *per Annum* out of *Ardogena*, in the County of *Waterford*; the Wardſhip of *Dudley Colley*, Eſquire; the Wardſhip of *Edmund O' Dwyer* and of *Edward O' Dwyer* of *Moreſtown*, in the County of *Tipperary*; the Wardſhip of *Francis Fleetwood*, Son and Heir of *Thomas Fleetwood* of *Ballyderaowen*, in the County of *Cork*, Eſquire; the Wardſhip of *Callaghan More*; *Teigue Carty* of *Tullagh* in *Muſkerry*, and twenty-four Pounds *per Annum* in the ſame County; and in the County of *Limerick* the Intruſion of the Lands of *Daniel O Brian* of *Carrigognil*, Eſquire; the Wardſhip of the Heir of *Edmund Herbert* of *Caher Meighel*, Eſquire, deceaſed; and the Wardſhip of *Ann Caſey*, Daughter and Heir of *Thomas Caſey* of *Rathcanon*, Eſquire, deceaſed, with one hundred and ninety-three Pounds ſixteen Shillings and eight Pence *per Annum*.—The laſt Grant was paſſed about *Eaſter**, in the Year One thouſand ſix hundred and forty.

THUS, having followed him in ſome meaſure through the Courſe of his great Succeſſes, and marked out ſome of thoſe Steps by which he improved that large Fortune which his Poſterity in different Branches yet enjoy; and which had been ſtill infinitely greater, had his Affairs remained as they then ſtood, we muſt now trace him in another Sphere, labouring to preſerve what he had thus acquired; in which we ſhall find him ſtruggling with the general Difficulty of thoſe enſuing Times, like what he truly was, a Man of Senſe, true Courage, and unbiaſſed Patriotiſm. And here we may well remark the Change and Inconſtancy of Fortune; for, from the Moment ſhe ſhewed her different

* Ibid. Vol. VII. fol. 62.

different Face, ſhe never altered to him, and perſecuted him with the ſame Steadineſs to the End, with which ſhe had favoured him in the Beginning. Yet ſhould not we repine at this Check to the extravagant Growth of this Family, ſince there is a Reſerve of Accidents in the Store of Providence, and in the Womb of Time, not only to render the greateſt Advancements abortive, but often to render the Enormity of their own Weight the Cauſe of their own intire Ruin.

IT is certain, that the Eyes of all Men were upon him, inſomuch that the great Lord *Strafford*, who was long Governor of *Ireland*, (and a ſhrewd Obſerver, though much his Friend) was wont to uſe this Expreſſion, with a ſtrange Earneſtneſs, in ſpeaking of him, *I bear the Horſe's Heels of Sir* Philip Perceval *trampling hard behind me* *; implying an extraordinary Opinion, not only of his growing Eſtate, but of his Abilities, which he held in great Veneration, and did expect would have brought him forward into the higheſt Offices of the State.

IT is more than probable, that this kind of prophetic Spirit about him, and which had (as the Event did ſhew) no other Ground for it, than his Knowledge of his Parts, and Obſervations of his Succeſſes, would have been in an extraordinary manner anſwered, by his Advancement in the World, if that unhappy Rebellion, which confounded all Things, and during which he died, had not happened.

SIR *Philip Perceval* had long maintained a faſt and ſteady Friendſhip with that Earl, which was firſt begun in *England*, but was then no more than a ſlight Acquaintance, and improved afterwards by the mutual Commerce they had together in *Ireland*; for during that Adminiſtration, he was continually conſulted by the Earl: as indeed, it muſt have inevitably happened, (had he been a leſs able Man,) on account of his Employments, for the chief Buſineſs, during that Adminiſtration, was the Improvement of the Revenue;

* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

nue; and one of the chief Means of doing that, was to find out, by Inquiſitions, the King's Title to Lands, and by proving many Eſtates to be held *in Capite*, or by Knight-Service of the Crown, which the Natives had, by many Arts, pretended Feoffments, and other Contrivances, in which they were very dextrous, withdrawn from that Tenure, to the great Diminution of the Revenue, which conſiſted very much in the Profit of Wardſhip, Relief, Marriage, and other Charges, incident to that Manner of holding Eſtates: and in carrying on this Work, Sir *Philip Perceval*, as Regiſter of the Court of Wards, was abſolutely neceſſary.

DURING this Time he received many Inſtances of Friendſhip from the Earl, obtaining ſeveral Grants of great Conſequence, by his Interpoſition with the Crown. And though he was not backwards in returning theſe many Obligations, by many very uſeful and profitable Services, in which the Earl repoſed an entire Confidence in him, and which afterwards gave both him and his Son a great Opportunity for the Manifeſtation of their Juſtice and Honour, in returning Eſtates of great Value, which had been paſſed to him in Truſt, and could never have appeared to have been ſo paſſed, if he, or his Family after him, had been willing to conceal the Fact. Yet he thought himſelf farther bound to ſhew his Regard for him, which he did in a very particular Manner, upon the Impeachment of that Earl, which was entered upon in the Year 1640.

THIS Friendſhip may, perhaps, by ſome be thought a Blemiſh to his Character, ſince very ſevere Prejudices have ariſen againſt that great Man, and not, indeed, without ſome Reaſon, for he held, in truth, a violent and boiſterous Conduct in his Government, both acting and adviſing ſome Things in Oppoſition to the Laws of the Land, and the Liberty of the Subject, as may be inſtanced in the Caſe of the Earl of *Corke*, the Lord *Mountnorris*, Sir *Pierce Croſby*, and many others, but we muſt beg Leave to ſay ſomething a little

tle in his Juſtification, ſo far as it may tend to alleviate this Aſperſion on Sir *Philip Perceval*, who will be found, upon due Conſideration, to have acted no Part upon this Occaſion, but what was ſtrictly honourable, and juſt to the Public Intereſt.

To enter therefore a little into the Character and Conduct of this unfortunate Earl, it is neceſſary to conſider the Perſon of the Prince under whom he acted, the Conjuncture of the Times, and the Condition of the Country which he governed. As to the firſt, without falling into thoſe Party Violences which, on either Side, obſcure the Truth of the Proceedings of that unhappy Reign, it is not to be denied, that King *Charles* the Firſt had unfortunately imbibed, under the Education of his weak and arbitrary Father, too ſtrong a Tincture of his Principles, with reſpect to Government, and that he had fatally diſcountenanced all thoſe who were of a more tender and more legal Way of thinking in thoſe Matters, and never willingly employed ſuch as did not concur in Meaſures conſonant to that raſh Spirit. The Earl of *Strafford* had therefore, in this Reſpect, ſome little Matter of Excuſe to plead, ſince in the Place of debauching his Prince into the acting in illegal Ways, he found his Prince already but too much bent upon theſe Courſes; ſo that it was impoſſible for him to maintain any Degree of Intereſt in him, but by yielding ſomewhat to his Humour; a thing in no kind ſtrictly juſtifiable, yet to meet with ſome ſort of Extenuation from Men, who are themſelves but Men, in the Conſideration of human Paſſions and Infirmities. As to our next Conſideration, of the Conjuncture of the Time, there was certainly an unruly Spirit gone forth among the People, which however, perhaps at firſt, created by many unwarrantable Acts of Power, was now doubtleſs, by all wiſe Men to be ſuppreſſed at any Rate, leſt it ſhould produce thoſe great Diſorders, which, by a leſs politic Ceſſion to them, did follow, not long after. And truly, a Man in any high Station at that Time, muſt have had a very difficult Part to act, between the Neceſſity

ceſſity of curbing that Inſolence of the People, and the Dilemma of doing it at the Expence of the ordinary Courſe of Law; from which the factious Party had learned well enough, in moſt Caſes, to ſcreen themſelves, and yet to go on in this Work of Inflamation; and in others, had found Means to interpret, cunningly enough, for their own Security.——The laſt Particular to be enquired into here, is the Condition of the Country which he governed; and this will more than any other Particular diminiſh his Reproach.

For at the Time of his going over into *Ireland*, in 1633, it was, without Diſpute, one of the worſt governed Countries in the World, through a Licentiouſneſs in all Reſpects, Civil, Military, and Religious, aggravated to a high Degree, beyond even what it had ever been notorious for; and ſuch a Confuſion of Intereſts, and ſo little Control upon any, that it was then evident to every diſcerning Eye, that however the outward Form of Peace and regular Government, might then appear better ſettled than at any Time before, there was yet nothing that reſtrained that People from the old, and a Variety of new Diſorders, but the Quiet of *England*, which gave it Leiſure to throw in at any Time a ſuperior Force, upon the leaſt Diſturbance on that Side.

In this Circumſtance, which concurred with the dubious Proſpect of Affairs in *England*, where the Pulſe beat much too high, to give any Certainty of the Continuance of that quiet State, and on which alone, as we have already ſaid, depended the Peace of that Kingdom, it was highly neceſſary for the Earl of *Strafford* to apply, not only a ſtrong, but a ſpeedy Remedy: nor had he any other Means to effect this, than by increaſing the Revenue, which was far too low to ſupport him in any proper Undertaking.——But this he could not do without many unpopular Acts, and ſome that might be conſtrued too ſevere, ſo artfully, had the Perſons then in Poſſeſſion of all the Flowers and Profits of the Crown, intrenched themſelves againſt it; nor had he any other Way to overcome the Oppoſi-

tion

tion which he found from the Grandees there, than by making a fierce Impreſſion of his Authority: And thus he was a Sufferer by the ill Government of his Predeceſſors, who had, by a weak and unſteady Adminiſtration, almoſt from the Acquiſition of that Country till that Time, alternately exerted, one while an unwarrantable Authority, and again diſcovered a ſupine Negligence and Weakneſs, in the Suppreſſion of the riotous Behaviour of the People there. So that as on the one hand, the great Men in that Kingdom had been long indulged, in all Oppreſſion and lawleſs Violence; ſo on the other, he was invited by too many Precedents to practiſe there thoſe Powers, which his Predeceſſors having uſed before him, he thought he might be juſtified in uſing likewiſe, by their Example. —— Theſe were the fatal Grounds of his Miſconduct there. And doubtleſs, as ſtrict as it was then neceſſary to hold the Reins of Government, he proceeded with too much Rigour, yet did the main of his Carriage moſt evidently and ſenſibly tend to the Good of that People, who to this Hour owe the flouriſhing Condition of their great Staple, the Linnen Manufacture, and many other valuable Branches of their Trade, to thoſe Meaſures which he purſued, in theſe Reſpects the beſt that ever were purſued by any Miniſter, for the real and common Benefit of both theſe Kingdoms.

THAT all his Deſigns thus ultimately tended to render that Country a great and glorious Nation, was well known to Sir *Philip Perceval*, who held ſo great an Intimacy with him; and the large and briſk Advances which he made to a general Improvement, far beyond all paſt Experience there, was enough to reconcile a large Share of Regard to him, from all Men who had the Intereſt of that Country much at Heart, of which Number we may well conclude Sir *Philip* to be one, having drawn over the greateſt Part of his Fortune thither, being then poſſeſſed of above ſixty-two thouſand Acres of Land, of the Meaſure of that Country, above four thouſand Pounds *per annum* of the beſt Rents, and a Stock in Woods, Houſes, *&c.* worth

above Sixty Thouſand Pounds; all which he afterwards loſt in the Rebellion, together with Places which he enjoyed for Life, of a known Value of above Two Thouſand Pounds a-year, beſides many others of equal Profit, which he held upon a more uncertain Tenure. This great Eſtabliſhment may well be ſuppoſed, as we have ſaid, to intereſt him in the Succeſs and Welfare of that Kingdom, which being, in the moſt eſſential Points, ſo eminently conſidered by the Earl of *Strafford*, it may be no longer any Wonder or Reproach upon him, that he was tender to his Infirmities and Failings, and ſtill retained a Veneration for him.

It was this that engaged Sir *Philip Perceval* to overlook ſeveral of thoſe violent Meaſures, of which he as little approved as any Man; and it was this which induced him, more than any Acts of perſonal Friendſhip which had paſſed between them, (though doubtleſs, Men of generous Minds may be in a Degree excuſed, if they ſuffer ſome Influence from ſuch Motives,) to paſs over into *England* at the Time of his Trial, in order to aſſiſt him in it; where, during the Examination into the Conduct of the Earl, the Parliament of *England* diſcovering ſome Tranſactions between Sir *Philip* and that unhappy Nobleman, and knowing well his Endeavours to ſerve and aſſiſt him, upon the latter Account, rather than for any thing criminal in the Nature of that Correſpondence, he was accuſed in Parliament; but was ſo well defended * by the Earl of *Corke*, then a Member of the Houſe of Commons, (who particularly undertook his Juſtification,) and it was found then that he had ſo many Friends, even among the leading Members of that Houſe, that he eſcaped, though very narrowly, out of that dangerous Affair. Yet notwithſtanding this, he had Reſolution enough to perſevere to the laſt in his good Offices to the Earl, when almoſt all his other Friends deſerted him. Nor did the Generoſity of this Conduct

* Family Letters, Vol. III. N° 230.

Conduct do him any Prejudice with the Heads of that Party, who ſoon loſt their Reſentment at it, when the great Object of their Fear and Hate was removed, which happened by the Execution of the Earl, in *May* 1641.

IT † is not exactly known at what Time he returned into *Ireland*, but we find him in that Kingdom before the Death of that Lord, having doubtleſs ſeen the Impoſſibility of doing him farther Service after his Trial was over, during the whole of which Time he attended, and took Notes of every remarkable Occurrence, a Manuſcript of which, in his own Hand-writing, is ſtill extant, containing ſome very curious Accounts of political Tranſactions at that Time; and doubtleſs the Buſineſs of his Offices required his Attendance, that in the Court of Wards alone exceeding almoſt all Belief.

IN * the beginning of this Year he obtained a Grant of the Reverſion of the Office of King's-Bench in *Ireland*.

AND during the Remainder of this Summer, being not without a ſtrong Preſage of thoſe Evils which were then impending over both Kingdoms, he laboured with great Earneſtneſs, to make as ſpeedy and ſecure a Settlement of all his Affairs, as the Greatneſs of his Fortune, and the Shortneſs of the Time, would permit, repairing ſeveral of his Caſtles, and providing a great number of Arms and Horſes; which Precautions were very ſhortly after of great Importance to him: that bloody Rebellion of the *Iriſh*, for its cloſe Contrivance, great Extent, ſudden and cruel Execution, hardly parallelled in the Stories of any Time, breaking out in a Torrent of Deſtruction in the Night of the twenty-third of *October* following, 1641.

AN Event of ſo extraordinary a kind as this, in which not only the general Hiſtory of that Age is ſo much concerned, but in which this Family were ſo

† Family Letters, Vol. III. N° 230.
* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

great Sufferers, and during which, the Perſon of whom we now in particular treat, was ſo actively employed, as he will appear to have been, deſerves to be conſidered with ſome Attention.

But the Cauſes of it were ancient and remote, and have hardly ever been laid open as they ought to have been; what through the Ignorance of Writers, of which there have been very few who have treated of that Kingdom, or through the Partiality both of the *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* Intereſts, and the mutual Bigotry of the Profeſſors of the two Religions which divide that Nation.

To underſtand the Truth of this important Affair, it will be neceſſary to go back as far as the Acquiſition of that Kingdom by the Crown of *England*; for to the ill Meaſures taken by the *Engliſh* at that Time, or at leaſt purſued afterwards by them, are chiefly to be aſcribed all the Calamities that have befallen that Country, and all that Blood and Slaughter, in which the Story of that Nation abounds above thoſe of any other People.

This Iſland has been bleſſed by Nature with all the Advantages that ever any other Country boaſted: her Climate, never in Extremes, affords a number of Plants, which no other under the ſame Latitude produces, and has an Influence ſo favourable alſo on the Bodies of Men, that they generally exceed both in Age and Stature the reſt of *Europe*. A very great, and almoſt general Fertility of Soil, joined to the moſt advantageous Situation, and to a bold and wide-extended Coaſt, abounding in good Harbours, and environed by a Sea, ſtored beyond Credit, with the beſt and moſt profitable Fiſh, adapt her, in a peculiar Manner, for the Commerce of the whole World. But as if Providence had determined to render imperfect all ſublunary Happineſs, this Land has ever been as miſerable in the Events that have happened in it, as otherwiſe bleſſed in the Circumſtances we have mentioned.

THE ancient Hiſtory of this Kingdom is like thoſe of all others, obſcured by a Load of Fiction and Romance. The firſt Circumſtance with Certainty known of it, is what would hardly obtain Credit in theſe Ages of the World, if it were not recorded by ſo great an Author.——But we are told by *Tacitus**, that *it was* in his Time *much more known and eminent in the Commercial World than* England——*Solum Cælumq; & Ingenia cultuſq; Hominum haud multum a Britanniâ differunt, meliùs aditus portuſq; per Commercia & Negotiatores cogniti.* The *Romans*, however, having never ſettled *England* ſo well, as to have Leiſure to attempt *Ireland*, we find very little Mention of it in any ſubſequent *Roman* Author.———That Empire falling to Ruin, *Britain* was one of the firſt Provinces it was obliged to deſert, and conſequently one of the firſt that fell a Sacrifice to *Gothic* Barbariſm, which deſtroyed all Learning, and confounded Hiſtory for ſeveral Centuries in all *Europe*.—Thus *England*, by its Situation the People likely to have known moſt of the Affairs of *Ireland*, for a long Time recorded nothing of it. Our Accounts of that Country in thoſe Times, are therefore chiefly to be taken from themſelves.— But their Writers, though much credited by the Vulgar there, have as yet obtained very little Authority with the reſt of the World; and indeed ſo little, as to occaſion the Character of that People to be drawn with ſome Contempt in this *Latin* Sentence, which is often quoted upon them in foreign Countries;

Gens ratione furens, & mentem paſta chimæris.

HOWEVER, this is certain †, that they received the Chriſtian Religion early, and were eminent for Learning, for their Academies were much frequented by the Youth, both of the *Britons*, *Gauls*, and *Saxons*. —— From whence we may rationally conclude, that the State was then well-ſettled, and that they were

* Tacitus, in Vita Agricolæ.

† Vide Sir James Ware's Antiq. of Ireland, Chap. XV.

were freed from thoſe Tumults, which much diſtracted the neighbouring Nations in thoſe Ages. — Lying detached from all the reſt of *Europe*, they were probably the laſt who ſuffered by the Incurſions of the Northern Nations.———We have the Teſtimony of the Venerable *Bede* *, a *Saxon* Author of great Antiquity, that towards the End of the ſeventh Century *they were a People of great Religion, and Purity of Life and Manners, and then remarkably diſtinguiſhed for their Attachment and Affection to the Iſland of* Great-Britain. ——— If contrary Principles are now found to prevail among them, it is therefore evident, that they have taken their Original, not from the Nature of that People, but from the Conduct of their Neighbours, by whoſe reſtleſs Ambition they began to be diſturbed, about the Time laſt mentioned.—— The *Saxons* being firmly eſtabliſhed in *England*, upon the Ruins of the ancient *Britons*, had then ſome Leiſure to look farther. ——— And firſt invaded *Ireland* in the Year 684, when *Ecfrid*, King of the *Northumbrians*, ſent an Army thither †, which committed fearful Devaſtations, upon a Country enervated by long Peace and Superſtition.——— But the *Iriſh* exerting themſelves, at length repelled the Enemy, who obtained much Booty, though not a permanent Eſtabliſhment in that Iſland.——Other *Saxon* Princes, encouraged by this Example, occaſionally from Time to Time infeſted that Nation, in the ſame predatory Manner.——And if we may credit a Charter of King *Edgar* §, ſaid to be made for depriving married Prieſts, and introducing Monks, which was dated at *Glouceſter*, in the ſixth of his Reign, 966, a great Part of *Ireland*, together with the City of *Dublin*, was ſubdued by that Prince.—— But allowing this Evidence to be genuine, it carries nothing with it more than an oſtentatious Encomium upon ſome Expedition of the ſame Nature with thoſe before-

* Book IV. Cap. 26. Bede's Eccleſ. Hiſt.
† Ibid.
§ Sir James Ware.

before-mentioned; ſince it is very clear, that the *Engliſh*, neither then or afterwards, till the Reign of King *Henry* the Second, obtained any Settlement on that Side the Sea.

IT was not from the *Saxons* that the *Iriſh* were reduced to the low Condition which they fell into about that Time, and from which they have never recovered ſince.———The ancient Inhabitants of the Countries bordering upon the *Baltic*, growing too numerous to be maintained at home, under the different Names of *Normans*, *Danes*, and *Eaſterlings*, in different Expeditions invaded the Coaſts of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, about the beginning of the eighth Century.———In proceſs of Time, they made themſelves Maſters of all *England*, and wreſted *Normandy* from *France*; but their greateſt Succeſs was in *Ireland*, which they entirely ſubdued, under their Leader *Turgeſius*, about the Year 815. Their Dominion was more abſolute here, than in any other of their conquered Countries.——The whole Kingdom yet abounds in every Part with Monuments of their Power, and the Forts which they erected within ſight of each other through the whole Iſland, ſtill teſtify the miſerable Subjection to which the Natives were reduced. This Tyranny was ſo ſavage and intolerable, that it deſtroyed itſelf; for the *Iriſh*, after having ſuffered under it above thirty Years, in *A. D.* 845, with one Accord took Arms againſt their Maſters, whom they expelled with a juſt and horrible Slaughter.

* THEY had no ſooner freed themſelves from this deteſted Yoke, by a generous and general Reſolution, but forgetting that the ſame Union by which they had been freed, was equally neceſſary to preſerve them free, they fell into civil Contentions, which produced a Diviſion of the Kingdom into ſeven petty States †, *Connaught*, *Corke*, *Leinſter*, *Oſſory*, *Meath*, *Limerick*, and *Ulſter*.

THESE

* Rapin's Hiſtory of England, in the Reign of King Henry II.
† Ibid.

THESE Kingdoms were, however, ſtill in ſome Degree dependant on each other, much in the ſame Manner as the Heptarchy in *England*, all ſent Deputies to the General Aſſembly, in which the King of *Connaught* was the Preſident, and to whom was committed the Execution of their Decrees, which either related to the quieting Diſorders that continually proceeded from the Ambition of the different Princes. — Or to reſiſt the Invaſions of the *Danes* and *Eaſterlings*, who ſtill infeſted their Sea-Coaſts, where they had again recovered ſome Eſtabliſhment, and built ſome Cities, from whence they carried on a conſtant War upon the Inland Country, fomenting the domeſtic Differences of that People, which they continued to do till the coming of the *Engliſh*, who were much aſſiſted by theſe Diviſions, in the eaſy Acquiſition of that Dominion.

THE Majority of this auguſt Body frequently joined their Forces together, to bring to Reaſon any particular Prince, more turbulent, or more powerful than his Neighbour. And thus, though with much Blood, and perpetual Diſorder, the general State of the Government continued a long Time upon the ſame Model, till at laſt, in the Reign of *Henry* the Second, King of *England*, *Dermot Mac Morrogh*, King of *Leinſter*, having raſhly involved himſelf in Quarrels with the whole Nation, and finding himſelf deſerted by his Subjects, to whom he had rendered himſelf odious by a brutal Government, he took the Reſolution of demanding Succour from the King of *England*. ——— *Henry* the Second then reigned, whoſe Ambition was carried to the utmoſt Exceſs, and who uſed to ſay vainly, *That the whole World was hardly a ſufficient Empire for one Prince.*———He was infinitely pleaſed at ſo favourable an Opportunity to concern himſelf with the Affairs of that Kingdom; but was then employed in a War with *France*, which gave him no Leiſure to turn himſelf to any other Quarter; he was beſides uncertain what might be the Succeſs of any Enterprize in that Kingdom, and conſequently un-

unwilling to hazard his Reputation upon ſo ſlight a Ground. In theſe Circumſtances, he acted a very politic Part, for avoiding both the Charge, and Hazard of the Succeſs, he ſtill forwarded the Attempt, obtaining a Licence from the Pope to invade *Ireland*, for the Improvement of their Religion and Manners. And having thus animated his Subjects, by a Notion of Piety in the Undertaking, he then granted Licences by his Letters-Patent, to ſuch of his Subjects as would, at their own Expence, become Adventurers in that Enterprize.

RICHARD DE CLARE, Earl of *Striguil* and *Pembroke*, one of the great Family of *Clare*, Earls of *Glouceſter*, (who married into the Royal Family, and were themſelves deſcended in a Male Line from a natural Son of *Richard* the Firſt, Duke of *Normandy*) was the firſt Undertaker in this Affair, in 1169, having firſt ſtipulated with the King of *Leinſter*, to obtain his only Daughter in Marriage, and with her the Reverſion of his Kingdom, after his Deceaſe. From *Iſabella*, the Daughter of this Princeſs by the ſaid *Richard*, who married *William Marſhall*, afterwards Earl of *Pembroke* in her Right, the Houſe of *Perceval* do now proceed, with a very extraordinary Particularity of Circumſtances, being lineally deſcended in Blood through many of the greateſt Families in *England*, from every one of the five Daughters and Coheirs of the ſaid *William Marſhall*, Earl of *Pembroke*, and *Iſabel* his Wife; as may be more particularly ſeen in the ſeventh Chapter of the firſt Book of this Work.

THE King of *Leinſter* dying ſoon after, the Earl of *Striguil*, in Right of his Wife, and by the Power of his Sword, became poſſeſſed of a vaſt Portion of this Country *; which being envied by King *Henry*, he recalled the Earl, and obliged him to reſign moſt of his Rights in that Kingdom. After which, he went over in

* Giraldus Cambrenſis.

in Perſon, with a great Army, to take Poſſeſſion of that Eſtate, and to endeavour an abſolute Conqueſt of that Country. But the petty Princes being united in a formidable Manner againſt him, it was agreed between both Parties, each being induced into that Accord by fear of the other, that *Henry* ſhould be acknowledged Sovereign of the whole Iſland, and that the *Iriſh* Lords ſhould enjoy their Eſtates and Principalities, in the ſame free manner in which they before held them, ſaving an annual Acknowledgment to be paid to the King of *England:* whereupon †, King *Henry* held a Council at *Liſmore* before his Return, in which the Laws of *England* were promulged to the whole Nation, and joyfully received by that People, who bound themſelves by Oath to the Obſervance of them.

THIS Submiſſion, which was indeed conditional, and obtained without the ſhedding of one Drop of Blood, is what the *Engliſh* Hiſtorians do all in general ſtile a Conqueſt; the Circumſtances of which, however, were ſuch, as to admit a different Conſtruction to be made, by thoſe whoſe Intereſt it is, not to allow ſo harſh an Epithet. ——— And this is of great Conſequence to be obſerved, in order to the clear underſtanding of the *Iriſh* Revolutions, which have all happended from the Uſage conſonant to this Opinion in the *Engliſh*, and the Reſentments ariſing in the *Iriſh*, upon a Concluſion in that People, which they think ſo falſe.

IT is certain, that the Right acquired by *Henry* the Second of *England*, was not a rigid Right of Conqueſt; for with reſpect to the Province of *Leinſter*, he obtained that by the Ceſſion of the Earl of *Striguil*, who had himſelf acquired it by Marriage; and as to the reſt of the Kingdom, it was likewiſe a Ceſſion from the other Princes of the Iſland, upon Conditions which gave no poſitive Grounds for this Pretenſion.

To

† Matt. Paris, 1172.

To *Henry* ſucceeded *John*, his ſecond Son; and there is no doubt but that the ſaid *John*, afterwards King of *England*, had a legal Title to it, for his Father might freely give to him, what had been before given to himſelf: but the *Iriſh* pretend, that he could not give more than what he was himſelf entitled to before, and that he conſequently gave him that Kingdom, ſubject to thoſe limited Conditions, under which it had been yielded to himſelf.

THE *Engliſh* Lords, who had already obtained great Poſſeſſions there, ſoon aſſuming intolerable Powers upon their own Lands, and daily invading thoſe of their neighbouring *Iriſh*, entirely broke the Condition of quiet Poſſeſſion, and the Advantage of the *Engliſh* Laws before-mentioned, which neceſſitated the *Iriſh* to riſe in their Defence. —— Beſides which, the King violated his Agreement with them: *Fabian* and *Grafton* both aſſigning the chief Cauſes of the *Iriſh* Inſurrections at that Time, to the grievous Taxes which he attempted to lay upon them on account of his Wars with *France*.———And thus the Advocates of *Ireland* aſſert, that the firſt Diſorder in that Kingdom aroſe from the Breach of Articles on the *Engliſh* Side.

To remedy theſe great Abuſes, and the Diſturbances proceeding from them, King *John* himſelf went over thither, with a great Force, in the twelfth Year of his Reign, 1211. But this Expedition was rather undertaken againſt the *Engliſh* there, than againſt the *Iriſh*, which appears from hence, that his Reſentments wholly fell upon the Families of *Braoſe* and *Lacy*, whoſe Exactions and Oppreſſions were become intolerable. Theſe Lords not being able to clear themſelves of thoſe Crimes then laid to their Charge, fled the Kingdom, the latter particularly fearing to anſwer for the Murder of Sir *John de Courcy*, the Greatneſs of whoſe rival Family the *Lacys* could not endure.——— As to the native *Iriſh*, his Reſentments were in no ſort ſhewn againſt them, for on the contrary, he divided the Countries into twelve Shires, appointed Sheriffs; and ordained again, That the Laws of *England* ſhould

be the Rule of Government in that Kingdom, agreeable to the former Stipulations with his Father, endeavouring, as much as he could, by this Means to make them one People.

HENRY the Third ſucceeded his Father *John* in the Lordſhip of *Ireland*, in the Year 1216; and in the firſt of his Reign granted and tranſmitted the like Charter of Liberties, (that is, the *Magna Charta*) to the People of *Ireland*, as himſelf and his Father had granted to the Subjects of *England*. And again, in the twelfth of his Reign, he iſſued a ſpecial Writ, requiring the Lord Juſtice of *Ireland*, to ſummon all the great Men of the Land, and to read before them the *Magna Charta* of King *John*, which the ſaid *John* had himſelf cauſed to be read before the great Men of that Kingdom, when they had ſworn to the ſame, and to a ſtrict Obſervance of the *Engliſh* Laws and Conſtitutions, in order that the ſaid Laws might for the future be kept and obſerved by them. ——— The like juſt and politic Dealing with reſpect to that Kingdom, was purſued to the latter End of that Reign; for in the thirtieth Year of that Prince, he again confirmed, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal, the Eſtabliſhment of thoſe Laws of King *John*, which had been the firſt Grounds of their Submiſſion.

DURING this long Reign, the Commotions in *Ireland* were very great; but whoever will read the beſt Accounts of thoſe Times, will ſee that all thoſe Diſorders happened among the *Engliſh* there, between the *Marſhals*, Earls of *Pembroke*, and the *Lacys*, and other powerful Families of that Extraction.——— Whatever Diſorders the *Iriſh* committed, were owing to the Encroachment of thoſe *Engliſh* Lords, as may be plainly collected from the beſt Writers of thoſe Times, and particularly from *Matthew Paris*, who ſhews theſe Commotions chiefly to have fallen out between the *Burks* and the King of *Connaught*; the Ground of which was only this, that the Agreement which *Roderick o' Connor*, his Predeceſſor, had made with King *John*, was violated by that aſpiring *Engliſh*

Family. * And ſo far was the *Iriſh* Prince from ſhaking off his Allegiance to the King of *England*, notwithſtanding the Breach of his Conditions, that he went over into *England* himſelf, to complain of this Injuſtice; which he would have never ventured to have done, if this Defence of his Eſtate had then been looked upon in the Light of Rebellion, under which Name all theſe Diſorders of late Years are characteriſed.

† THE Truth of this is ſtill evinced farther, by the Reception that *Iriſh* Prince met with from the King, who, notwithſtanding a Grant of *Connaught*, which § *Hubert de Burgh*, that great Favourite, had obtained in the third of his Reign, during the King's Minority, for which he had paid a thouſand Pounds, a great Sum in thoſe Days; ‖ the King reflecting upon the Injuſtice of that Grant, and knowing that it was obtained by the unlimited Power of *Hubert* at that Juncture, and that his Name had been abuſed in it, did readily countenance the Cauſe of the Prince of *Connaught*, and that in ſo high a manner, that he commanded the Lord *Maurice Fitzgerald*, then Lord Juſtice, to extirpate the unjuſt Plantation that Family had made in thoſe Parts, to baniſh *John de Burgo*, Son of the ſaid *Hubert*, who had been guilty of this Invaſion, and to eſtabliſh the King of *Connaught* in the peaceable Poſſeſſion of his Province.

YET ſuch was the Influence of the *Engliſh* Nobility there, that theſe Orders of that Prince were never put in Execution, the *Burghs* ſtill continuing their Eſtabliſhment in that Province, which deſcended afterwards to the Crown itſelf; theſe Abuſes became no longer their Deſire to redreſs.———The greateſt Diſturbances which aroſe in the *Iriſh* Quarters in the following Reign of King *Edward* the Firſt, proceeded from the like Invaſions of the *Engliſh* upon that Coun-

try

* Matt. Paris, in Vita Hen. III.
† Ibid.
§ Clauſ. 3 Hen. III. N° 2.
‖ Matt. Paris. ut ſupra.

try of *Connaught*, and other Diſtricts, which were denied the Privileges they had ſtipulated for, and the Benefit of the *Engliſh* Laws.

For he being much buſied in the Proſecution of his Wars in other Parts, took little Care, and had but little Leiſure, to ſupport the *Iriſh* againſt the Oppreſſion of the *Engliſh*, being the better contented to connive at the Proceedings of the great Men there, and repining leſs at the Extravagance of their Power, as he was very conſiderably aſſiſted by them in his foreign Expeditions. This Neglect of that wretched People had produced, in a few Years, ſo bad an Effect, that the *Engliſh*, in whoſe Hands the Government, Civil, as well as Military, principally lay, had, in little more than fifty Years, (*viz.* between the thirtieth of *Henry* the Third, *A. D.* 1246, when the *Engliſh* Laws and Privileges had been in the moſt formal Manner confirmed to them, and the Year 1300), totally diveſted them of the ſmalleſt Degree of Liberty, their Miſery being brought to ſuch a Point, that they could obtain no Redreſs in any Cauſe of Property, being excluded all Benefit of the Law, as appears from a * Pleading before the Juſtices in Eyre at *Drogheda*, between *Thomas de Boteler* and *Robert de Alman*, in the twenty-ninth of *Edward* the Firſt, in the ſame Year 1300.

† To evince farther the ſaid Condition to which that Nation was reduced, there is extant a Record of the ſame Date, and before the ſame Juſtices, wherein it appears, that one *John Lawrens* being indicted for the Murder of one *Geoffry Douedall*, did not not deny the Fact, but pleaded only the ſaid *Geoffry* was an *Iriſhman:* which Plea, as it appears from the Record, would have been ſufficient, but that the Jury found it to be falſe, and that the Deceaſed was of *Engliſh* Blood; in Conſequence of which the ſaid *Lawrens* was found guilty.

A Multitude of Records may be produced both of this and the ſucceeding Reign, to ſhew that at

* Archiv. in Caſtro Dublin.

† Ibid.

at this Time the *Iriſh* were very cruelly treated, and wholly denied thoſe Rights to which they were entitled, not only by the Law of Nature, but by formal Stipulation with the Crown. The *Iriſh* therefore affirm, that they cannot be juſtly reputed culpable of that Blood which, for four hundred Years, was ſhed in their Quarrels with the *Engliſh*; and that the Meaſures they took were only ſuch as, in the Law of Nature and Reaſon, any People muſt have taken in ſuch Extremities; and that they fought in Defence of their own Lands, which were ſecured to them by Charter from the Crown itſelf, in Oppoſition to Men who acted in a conſtant Courſe of Violence and Diſobedience to the Law, and even contrary both to the Senſe of the Crown, and of the *Engliſh* Nation in general.

THESE Abuſes of Power being grown at length very notorious, the *Engliſh* Parliament, in the Fourteenth of *Edward* the Second, out of a mere Motive of Humanity, addreſſed the King to give Orders that the *Iriſh* Natives of *Ireland* might enjoy the Laws of *England* concerning Life and Member in as large and ample Manner as the *Engliſh* in *Ireland* enjoyed the ſame; in Purſuance of which Requeſt, the King, by his Letters Patent, commanded that equal Juſtice ſhould be done; yet ſuch was the lawleſs Violence of the *Engliſh* then in *Ireland*, that they ſlighted the Orders of their Sovereign, and ſtill continued the ſame oppreſſive Courſes; during which, it was evidently the ſole Aim and Labour of the *Iriſh* to recover theſe their juſt Privileges of *Engliſh* Subjects. To which Purport, it appears by the Clauſe Rolls of the Second of *Edward* the Third, that they exhibited not long after a Petition to the King. —— * That Prince, in a Writ to *John D'Arcy*, Lord Juſtice of *Ireland* then, taking Notice of this Petition of the *Iriſh*, deſiring to be informed whether what they demanded might be granted without Prejudice, and requiring the Senſe of the

* Rot. Clauſ. N° 17. in Turri Londini, A. 2 Edw. III.

the great Men in the enſuing Parliament of that Kingdom.

*THAT this was their conſtant Endeavour, appears from the Beginning of their Hiſtory to very late Times, not only in theſe Inſtances we have already mentioned, but in their Submiſſions to King *Richard* the Second, and to the Lord *Thomas* of *Lancaſter* before the Wars of the two Houſes, and afterwards to the Lord *Leonard Gray* and Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, in the Time of King *Henry* the Eighth. The *Birns*, a powerful Sect in the Thirty-fourth of that Reign, deſiring to be incorporated into a County under the *Engliſh* Laws, and the great *O Donnell* deſiring no other Terms for his Submiſſion than to be governed by the ſame Laws.

IT does not appear what Anſwer was returned by the *Engliſh* Lords in *Ireland* to this Writ of Enquiry from King *Edward* the Third, which we have juſt now mentioned; but what it muſt have been, may be well judged from the Calamities that followed after. The Truth is, that they found too great a Benefit from this Breach of Faith with that Nation, ever to deſire that they ſhould be reſtored to thoſe Privileges which they ought to have enjoyed in common with themſelves. It was by this Rejection of that People from theſe Advantages, that they acquired all their Power; for, having provoked them to the Reſiſtance of their Oppreſſions, they termed that Reſiſtance Rebellion againſt the Crown; and, under Pretence of that Rebellion, laid a ſure Foundation for rebelling with Impunity themſelves.—No other Meaſures could have enabled them to increaſe their Territories as they did, all Judgments being given againſt the Natives as ſoon as they were ſtripped of their firſt Privileges; and the Kings of *England* receiving Information wholly from thoſe *Engliſh* Lords, the *Iriſh* had no Means of Protection but by yielding themſelves up to thoſe Lords in a moſt ſervile Subjection (each protecting his own Followers:)

* Hiſtorical Relations concerning Ireland, by Sir John Davies, Attorney-General to James I.

lowers:) Thus rendering their Condition ſomething better than if they had remained at the general Mercy of theſe Plunderers. —— All which was at length perceived by the Kings of *England*; but they were not in a Condition or at Leiſure to remedy the Evil, being conſtantly occupied in foreign Wars or domeſtick Troubles.

THE frequent Diſorders which followed after this Period, were all in general occaſioned by the ſame Greatneſs of the *Engliſh* Lords, in which they were no ſooner well eſtabliſhed, than they became themſelves the moſt formidable Enemies of the *Engliſh* Crown; for, excepting the Rebellion of *Tyrone* in *Ulſter*, in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, it does not appear that the State was ever likely to be loſt to *England* by the Attempts of any of the pure *Iriſh*.

HAVING now ſhewn the remote Cauſes of that great Event, which was the continued and manifeſt Oppreſſion of the Natives, and their Reſentments ariſing from that Uſage, we muſt add ſome others of a later Growth, which likewiſe contributed very much to effect the Diſorders of which we are coming to ſpeak. And theſe were principally two; one of them, the Effect of an Alteration in the Religion of theſe Kingdoms; the other, a new Error in the Conduct of *England*, with reſpect to that People.

As to the firſt of theſe, King *Henry* the Eighth having been much diſguſted with the Pope for Difficulties raiſed by him in the Diſſolution of his Marriage with his firſt Wife *Catherine* of *Arragon*, reſolved to gratify his Reſentment againſt that See; and finding that Inclination well ſuited alſo to the Increaſe of the regal Authority, a Portion of which the Eccleſiaſtical Power had ſcandalouſly uſurped over almoſt every State in Chriſtendom; and being in this ſupported by the general Odium which the Clergy had contracted by their Avarice and Pride, and many other enormous Vices, he undertook to deſtroy the great Exuberance of Church Power, converting large Parcels of

their Eſtates to other Uſes, and fixing other Regulations in theſe Matters, which have produced what we now call the Proteſtant Religion.——This Change was effected with Eaſe in *England*, his boiſterous Temper, Spirit and Power being immediately preſent to check any Diſorder that might have ariſen upon it. The Obſervation of the Vices of the Clergy, and the Advantages reaped by the great Men in the Diviſion of the Spoil (of which great Part was artfully with that View diſtributed among them) concurring powerfully to aſſiſt him it.——But the Caſe was different in the other Kingdom: For, in the firſt Place, Bigotry being the Effect of Ignorance, and Ignorance of Poverty, and of a remote Situation, the *Iriſh* in general, both remote and poor, had a greater Horror at Innovations of this kind.——The Proviſion for the Clergy *there*, was likewiſe leſs magnificent than it had been *here*; and their Luxury had conſequently given leſs Offence.——To all which muſt be added another Reaſon, that the Great Men were not equally induced to favour the Change by Grants of the Church Lands, which were leſs conſiderable there; and finally, the Influence, Example, and Terror of the Crown, had much leſs Weight at that Diſtance. From all which Circumſtances together, it has happened that the Reformation was never well eſtabliſhed in that Country.

As the Oppreſſion of a Party had formerly been the only Motive for the Diſorders in that Kingdom, this Motive being ſingle, theſe Diſorders were leſs violent; but this of Religion, after that Period, concurring with the other, greatly added to the Diſcontents of that People.——The Popiſh Religion being that of the *Iriſh*, and the Proteſtant that of the State, Rebellion began to carry a ſeverer Face than it had ever done before: The Remedy of their Civil Abuſes might have been provided for in former Times by a Change of Miniſters and Meaſures, but they then ſaw plainly that the total Subverſion of the *Engliſh* Government was the only Means to ſecure their religious Rights. ——Thus the Rebellion of *Tyrone* was longer and more obſti-

obſtinately carried on with deeper Contrivance, and other Views than any which had before happened. This was, however, with much Expence of Blood and Treaſure, concluded happily by the *Engliſh* Crown in the firſt Year of the Reign of King *James* the Firſt, and *Ireland* was then pacified by the univerſal Comprehenſion of the whole People, under the common Benefit of the *Engliſh* Laws; a Point which they had long inſiſted on before, and which, as we have already ſhewn, was very much their Due.

HAD this been done when it ought to have been done, Millions of Treaſure and Streams of the beſt Blood of both Kingdoms had been ſpared, (but as it frequently in other Caſes happens) this Remedy was applied too late; for the Evil of Religious Difference was now grown ſo ſtrong, that this Step, which had been alone before for many Ages ſufficient to reduce and civilize the State to one equal Degree with that of *England*; and to the ſame peaceable Condition was now only ſufficient to palliate theſe Diſorders for a Time.——A Rancour having ariſen reciprocally from the Inveteracy of theſe bloody Quarrels which is not yet eradicated.

THE Benefits of this new Conſtitution in that Country were however quickly manifeſted; and might have probably continued to this Hour, in Deſpight of the lurking Remains of old Reſentments in the *Iriſh*, and the Prejudices of religious Opinions, if the *Engliſh* had not anew unhappily adminiſtred another Matter for Diſcontent, which added to the reſt, raiſed the Diſtreſſes of that Nation higher than they had ever been known before.

THE Government of *England* had, till the Reign of *James* the Firſt, principally confided the Management of Affairs in *Ireland* to the old *Engliſh* Families eſtabliſhed there; and they had, as we have already ſhewn, even committed a great Error in truſting them with that Power in ſo unlimited a Manner, and in not ſupporting the *Iriſh* againſt their Abuſes of it. But it is ſtrange, that as ſoon as they had adapted a Remedy

to this great Miſchief, by reſtoring the *Iriſh* to the common Condition of Subjects, which they did in that Reign, they ſhould fall ſo ſuddenly into the contrary Extreme. It might be a juſt Judgment upon that Race of Men for their former Injuſtice; but it was extreme bad Policy in the *Engliſh* to diveſt them of all Degree of Power. The Government of that State was about this Time in a manner wholly taken out of the Hands of thoſe who had any Intereſt in that Kingdom, in which both thoſe of *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* Blood were equally concerned; ſo that the Equality on which all the Natives there were put, was not ſo much the Reſtoration of the *Iriſh* to the Privileges of *Engliſh* Subjects, as the Reduction of *both* into the Circumſtances of a conquered People:—Both being thus involved in one Common Cauſe of Diſcontent, a like Suſpicion grew quickly to be entertained of both, and no Repreſentation from either Party carried any Weight on the other Side, where no Informations were received but from a new ſet of *Engliſh* Miniſters, who, being generally Men of needy and deſperate Fortunes, daily ſwarmed into that Country after the general Quiet began to be eſtabliſhed; and where, by the Improvements hourly made in Conſequence of that Quiet, they were enſured a mighty Advance of Circumſtances. The Rapaciouſneſs of theſe new Men created a general Diſguſt, which further reconciled all Parties; and this Union was not to be reſiſted by thoſe who cauſed it, any other Way than by the falſeſt Repreſentations of that People in general; and the Lords of the Pale and the old eſtabliſhed *Engliſh*, who had ever, till then, eſcaped Suſpicion, were involved and calumniated among the reſt with better Credit and Succeſs, their Religion, which was generally Popiſh, being the ſame with that of the ancient *Iriſh*, and as it was pretended that it would conſequently engage them all in the ſame Intereſt.——Thus, by ſuch Repreſentations as theſe they at length united two Parties which had ever entertained the moſt riveted Antipathy to each other, and could never have embarked

barked together in the ſame Meaſures, if they had not been driven to it by the ſame Common Cauſe of Diſcontent.

THERE is a certain Pride in all Nations (and, upon Enquiry, it may perhaps appear to have a very rational Ground) that creates an Abhorrence to be governed by a Race of Upſtarts. That Men of Figure, Family and Fortune ſhould tranſplant themſelves into any Country, and there, by Means noble and worthy of themſelves, advance that Fortune, is advantageous to any State. But this is rarely the Caſe, and was ſo at that Time only with Sir *Philip Perceval*, and a very ſmall Number more. The Country ſo well knew and adjudged this Difference, that the Greatneſs of his Acquiſitions there created him no Enemies among that People, though in an Age ſo jealous upon theſe Accounts. And it is to be mentioned, much to his Honour, that in all the Invectives of that Time his Power and Figure were never repined at; and his Letters and Papers ſhew that the principal People, both of the *Iriſh* and *Engliſh* Extraction, had the higheſt Veneration for him. But it was very different, as we plainly ſee, with other Men in Power there about that Period. They were in general Perſons of wretched Extractions, of mean Circumſtances, and who practiſed meaner Arts to make them better, by the Effect of which many of their Deſcendants are ſince arrived to Titles, and are advanced in ſuch a manner, as renders it improper for us to be more particular in our Deſcription of them. We ſhall therefore ſay no more of that Matter than this, *that the general and indiſcriminate Diſregard of that Nation, and the Engroſſment of Power in a low* Engliſh *Faction there, was a grand and active Motive to that fatal Conjunction of all the* Iriſh *Intereſts in the Execution of that great Rebellion.*

IT is to be wiſhed that this Neglect, which was even carried to an Affectation of Contempt for that People, had never taken its Beginning then. And, indeed, that it were more diſcountenanced in our own Times;

Times; for, from the ſame Cauſes at certain Conjunctures, the ſame Effect may ſpring hereafter.

But, beſides the general Excluſion of all the beſt and moſt ancient Families from all Places of Power and Truſt, to the Exception of a very few, theſe Diſtempers were further enflamed to a prodigious Heighth, by the Pretenſions of the *Engliſh* Parliament to ſhare with the Crown in the Government of that Kingdom; which the People there conſidered as a Violation of that Independency to which they thought themſelves entitled by the Charters of *Henry* the Second and King *John*, and many ſucceeding Princes, by the Nature of their Acquiſition, the Confirmation of *Magna Charta*, ſo often obſerved, and the conſtant Practice of all precedent Ages. But the Parliament of *England*, having at this Time reduced the Crown ſo low, that it could not maintain any of its Prerogatives, took to itſelf ſuch Part of that Prerogative as beſt ſuited with the ſuppoſed Intereſt of *England*; and, among other Branches of it, this of a Superiority over that People.

The Notion of being oppreſſed, contrary to ancient Privileges, being conſidered more than any particular Inſtance of Oppreſſion, we ſhall therefore lay open here, and, in as few Words as poſſible, ſum up all that we have occaſionally hinted at before upon this Subject, together with ſome of thoſe Arguments which were at that Time thought moſt material to be urged in Defence of the Privileges of that Kingdom: And theſe were to this Effect,

"That the natural Rights of Mankind entitled "every People to be the ſovereign Root of all Power "exerciſed upon their own Community,——that the "*Iriſh* Nation had ſubmitted firſt to *Henry* the Second, "upon the Terms of enjoying ſuch Freedom;—— "that they were independent of every other Power "but that of the King; which appeared from hence, "that *Henry* the Second gave his Dominion of *Ireland* "to *John* his ſecond Son, whoſe Iſſue (had he never "inherited the Crown of *England*) would have been ſo "ever independent Lords of that Country;—— that

" the accidental Union of the two Countries under " King *John* could never create a Dependence which " had no Exiſtence before, and that both * that Prince, " and his Son †, King *Henry* the Third, *had confirmed* " *that ſeparate State of Liberty*, by their different " Charters,—that in the Reign of *Edward* the Firſt ‡, " this Truth was ſo fully allowed, and the *Engliſh* " had ſo true a Senſe of the Eſſence of Liberty, " which is to be bound by no Laws to which we do " not conſent; that the *Iriſh* Repreſentatives *had Sum-* " *mons to the* Engliſh *Parliament* whenever it was ne- " ceſſary to enact Laws for *Ireland*; and that the Di- " ſturbances there could not permit a Parliament to " be held in that Country. Again §, in the Reign of " *Edward* the Third, *That they ſat alſo in the* Engliſh " *Parliament for the ſame Reaſons*; ——— that in " the Reign of *Richard* the Second ‖, *the Independency* " *was by Charter from that Prince again confirmed*; — " that in the Second of *Richard* the Third ‖‖, all the " Judges in *England* agreed in Opinion, that the " *Engliſh* Laws were of no *Force* in *Ireland*, *becauſe* " *they ſent no Members to Parliament in* England, *and* " *had a Parliament of their own*; that not long af- " ter it was reſolved by Acts of Parliament in *Ireland*, " *viz.* in the Tenth of *Henry* the Fourth **, and in the " Twenty-ninth of *Henry* the Sixth ††, *That no* Engliſh " *Statute ſhould be of Force in* Ireland, *unleſs promulged* " *by the Parliament of that Kingdom*;——— that this " aroſe from the Multitude of *Engliſh* Laws which " had been from Time to Time adopted by the *Iriſh* " Parliament, by which ſo many foreign Statutes " having

---

* Red Book in the Exchequer at Dublin, Pat. 1. H. III.

† Ibid.

‡ White Book of the Exchequer at Dublin, 9 Edw. I. in 1 Parliament both of Lincoln and York.

§ Rot. Clauſ 50 Edw. III. m. 23. ibid. m. 19.

‖ Clauſ. 17 Ric. II. m. 12.

‖‖ Year Book 2 Ric. III. fol. 12.

** In Lib. Scaccar. Dublin.

†† Exemplication in the Treaſury of Waterford. Vid. Sir Richard Bolton's Edition of the Iriſh Statutes. Stat. 10. H. VII. cap. 22.

" having Force in *Ireland*, it was judged a proper " Precaution to make this declaratory Law, leſt the " Privileges of the *Iriſh* Legiſlature ſhould be con- " founded by it; that for the ſame Reaſon *Poynyng's* " Law, in the Tenth of *Henry* the Seventh, having " incorporated the whole Body of the Common and " Statute Law of *England*, antecedent to that Time, " leſt under this Circumſtance all ſubſequent Statutes " might be included likewiſe, and that by this Pre- " tence their Freedom ſhould be loſt; * an Act was " paſſed the Twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, in " the Preamble of which it is declared, *That* Ireland " *is free from all Laws but only ſuch as have been de-* " *viſed within that Realm, or ſuch as the People of the* " *Realm had taken at their free Liberty by their own* " *Conſent.*

" Again, that the Judges†, at different Times, in " the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth* in *England*, had de- " clared, that the Privileges of the People of *Ireland* " were the ſame with thoſe of *England*, as appears " by their Opinions, *That an* Iriſh Peer could not be " triable in England *for that Reaſon.*

" THAT ſo late as the latter End of the Reign of " King *James* the Firſt‡, the Lord Chancellor *Bacon* " had acknowledged their Independency, and de- " clared poſitively, *That no Laws of* England *could* " *bind* Ireland, *excepting only thoſe which their own* " *Parliament had received by* Poynyng's *Law before-* " *mentioned.*

" THAT even at this very Time **, of which we " write the Sollicitor General of *England*, Mr. " *St. John*, in his Argument before the Lords, upon " the Bill of Attainder of the Earl of *Strafford*, did " urge the Validity of thoſe Liberties in Favour of " that People; and that their Independency was at

" that

---

* Vide Statutes of Ireland.

† Vide Dyer and Crompton, Juriſdiction of Courts.

‡ Vide Preface to the Hiſtory of Henry VII. by the Lord Chancellor Bacon.

** Vide Ruſhworth's Collections.

" that very Time ſo little controverted, and the un-
" dermining it and its Conſequences were looked up-
" on to be ſo heinous †, that it was one of the Ar-
" ticles of the Impeachment of the ſaid Earl that he
" had made an Attempt to do it; and one of thoſe
" Points for which he was adjudged worthy of Death,
" was the Diſguſt which he gave to the People of that
" Kingdom, by declaring publickly that they were a
" conquered People."

YET after this Period, whether from Envy of the rival Greatneſs of the improving Fortunes of that Kingdom, or an Apprehenſion of its Advantages in Trade, or an Odium ariſing from the known Inveteracy of the Popiſh Faction there to the *Engliſh* Intereſt, the ſame Parliament were induced to aſſert a Superiority over that Nation, which it is certain they had never before affected; and the Prince himſelf did, through Weakneſs or Diſregard of that People, or through the Neceſſity of his Affairs, in a good Meaſure, yield to what they aſpired after.

WE have thus truly ſet forth the Riſe and Progreſs of the Diſtempers of that State, and ſhewn, by an hiſtorical Deduction, the principal Cauſes of them, to have been the continued Injuſtice done them by the *Engliſh* Colonies, and a Reſentment gradually riveted in the *Iriſh*, by the Denial of the Benefit of the Laws of *England*, for which they at firſt had covenanted.—— Secondly, the Buſineſs of Religion, which (the other Subject of Diſpute being now removed) prepared the different Intereſts in *Ireland* to unite.——— Thirdly, the new Practice of the Government of *England* to throw all the Natives, of every Denomination, into a State of Neglect, Oblivion, and Contempt, leaving them to the Mercy of a Set of new Men, who plundered them in every Branch of the Adminiſtration. And laſtly, that their Privileges and Independency were

† Vide Ruſhworth's Collections.

were now queſtioned, from whence Men of all Denominations foreſaw great Inconvenience both to their publick and private Intereſts. It is no Wonder, that all theſe Particulars were ſufficient to unite all of the ſame Religion. They were likewiſe found ſufficient at leaſt to diſguſt and deſtroy all active Affection to the *Engliſh* Government in the very Proteſtants themſelves, who were not diſpleaſed to forward that Spirit of Redreſs which the Popiſh Party and their Lawyers, of whom they had many in the Houſe, promoted violently with great Popularity, and for a long Time, without any Suſpicion of thoſe Views which they afterwards ſo fatally diſcovered.

THE Temper of the People being thus inflamed to the higheſt Degree, the Rebellion broke out in that impetuous Manner we have already obſerved upon the twenty-third of *October* 1641. Sir *Philip Perceval** was then in *Dublin*, and contributed in no ſmall Degree to confirm the weak and timorous Spirits of the then Lords Juſtices, Sir *William Parſons* and Sir *John Borlacy*, who wholly wanted Courage and Skill to act a proper Part on this Occaſion: The latter of theſe was little more than a Cypher in his Poſt; and the other had rendered himſelf ſo obnoxious to all Intereſts there, by his violent Meaſures and known Inveteracy to the *Iriſh*, that both his Character and Conduct contributed much to the Fury and Extenſion of that Flame. He was Maſter of the Court of Wards, of which Sir *Philip Perceval* was Regiſter. And theſe two being the chief Officers of that Branch of the Adminiſtration, out of a kind of Emulation, as it uſually happens, the Correſpondence between them had ſtood for ſome time upon a very bad Foundation. This Coolneſs had its Riſe in part from the Envy of Sir *William Parſons* at the Splendor of the Fortune and Reputation of Sir *Philip Perceval*, of which (whatever Pains he took for the former) he could acquire neither; but it had alſo another Cauſe, which

* Family Collections, ut ſupra.

which was, the Violence of the Proceedings of Sir *William Parſons** in the Execution of his Office in the Wards, which was ſuch, that it touched the Property of almoſt every Man in the whole Nation, his Aim being to vacate as many Titles as he could, without Diſtinction or Reſerve, in order afterwards to make a Profit, by the re-granting them again: In which he carried himſelf, for the moſt part, without the leaſt Regard to Honour or Juſtice. Sir *Philip Perceval* was a ſevere Check upon him in theſe Courſes, and, being a Man incapable of acting upon ſuch inglorious Motives, or concurring in ſo baſe a Part, naturally grew very obnoxious to his Collegue.———The Collections of Papers at that Time in this Family plainly ſhew the Difference of the Men, nothing occurring more frequently than the Application of the greateſt Men of thoſe Times to Sir *Philip Perceval*, to defend tthem againſt the Violence and Rapine of Sir *William Parſons*.

AND yet, as it often happens that Perſons, who in eaſy and ſafe Stations, inſult and quarrel with all the World, upon the leaſt Reverſe of Fortune, court thoſe in the moſt ſervile Manner whom they have injured moſt; ſo Sir *William Parſons*, now conſcious of his Danger, and his Need of better Council than his own Genius could afford him, was forward enough to conſult Sir *Philip*, whoſe generous Spirit inclined rather to Contempt than Reſentment againſt Men of that Stamp, readily contributed his Advice and Aſſiſtance with a Chearfulneſs that never betrayed the leaſt Remembrance of the former Differences which had paſſed between them.

BUT it was ſtill more owing to the Intereſt of Sir *Philip* with the Council, where the Majority were tied to him by Blood, as well as by Reſpect and Inclination, that he was able to influence to any good Purpoſe. And ſtill the Lord Juſtices, by virtue of their Station, would ſometimes confound the beſt Reſolu-

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

tions; eſpecially when they had ſecured *Dublin*, and began to be leſs apprehenſive for themſelves: So that he was, in reality, little conſulted by them after the firſt two Months, all his Labours, in Concert with thoſe Sir *William St. Leger*, then Preſident of *Munſter*, being inſufficient to overcome the Obſtinacy of theſe Miniſters; who, having a little recovered their Fright, and expecting Succours from the Parliament of *England* timely and powerful enough, as they imagined, to conclude the Rebellion* whenever they pleaſed, now only laboured to increaſe and diffuſe the Deſolation, by driving ſuch as were in Rebellion to Deſpair, and by dealing with thoſe who were yet quiet with ſuch Severities and Threats, as muſt neceſſarily provoke them to engage in the ſame Diſtraction, purſuing thoſe Meaſures out of a barbarous Policy to cauſe as many Forfeitures as they could, of which they expected afterwards to reap the Profit themſelves upon the Reſtoration of the Publick Peace.

Sir *Philip Perceval*, bleſſed with a better Head and a better Heart, obſerved this Conduct with Horror and Deteſtation: Beſides the ſhocking Villany of this Proceeding, he plainly ſaw that they manifeſtly hazarded the Loſs of the whole Realm, to acquire the Chance only of recovering a Part in future Times to their own Profit.

In this, and all other Meaſures of Violence, he gave his utmoſt Oppoſition to them. Several Letters are ſtill extant in the Collection we have ſo often quoted between Sir *William St. Leger* and Sir *Philip*, expreſſing in both of them their Anxiety at this monſtrous Behaviour, which was ſuch, that notwithſtanding all the Remonſtrances from the Province of *Munſter*, made by theſe two Gentlemen in the moſt preſſing Manner, that Country was wholly neglected, when the ſmalleſt Aſſiſtance had effectually preſerved it, if it had been afforded in any reaſonable Time, no Diſpoſition to rebel at all appearing in that Province, though

* Vide Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

though left in this defenceleſs State till above two Months after the utmoſt Violences had been committed in the North, to which indeed it had been confined for a conſiderable Time; nor does it appear, with any Certainty, that there was any Participation of Councils between the *Iriſh* of *Ulſter* and the other three Provinces upon the firſt Commotions, which had never ſpread ſo far, or become ſo general, but for this abominable Conduct in the Lords Juſtices, of which we have ſo fully ſpoken.

THE diſaffected and diſcontented Party, invited by the Impunities thus offered to them, did at length, as theſe Gentlemen ſo often foretold (and as every common Judgment muſt have concluded they would do) take up Arms the firſt or ſecond of *December*; at the Beginning, in ſmall Parties, and without any Leaders of Diſtinction, plundering and pilfering where they met with no Reſiſtance. The firſt Body formed there, was under the Command of Mr. *Philip O Dwyer* of *Dundrom**, whoſe Men, to the Number of one hundred, in a licentious Manner ravaging the Baronies of *Eliogurty*, *Killemana*, *Middlethyrde* and *Clanwilliam*, in the County of *Tipperary*, did infinite Damage to the Eſtate of Sir *Philip Perceval* in thoſe Parts; beſides which, they carried off a Stock of Cattle, which the Captain of his Caſtle there, in his Letter the Day after, *viz.* the ſeventeenth Day of *December*, 1641, valued at Three thouſand Pounds. The Garriſon alſo run great Riſk of being taken by Aſſault; but it was bravely defended by the Commander, Mr. *Richard Stokes*, who had been lately entruſted with it; for, not long before the ſaid Mr. *Philip O Dwyer* had been poſſeſſed of it, the Care and Management of that Eſtate having been long confided to him by Sir *Philip Perceval*; nay, the very Building and Reparation of the Caſtle had been carried on under the Direction of that Gentleman, whoſe Troops had committed this Outrage. Yet, upon this Occaſion, this Juſtice is due to

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormoud.

to the Memory of that Gentleman, that he was no wiſe to blame in that Action; it is wholly to be aſcribed to the lawleſs Violence of that undiſciplined Mob over which he preſided, rather than commanded. ——The Letters of Sir *Philip Perceval** are full of Gratitude to Mr. *O Dwyer* on this Occaſion, he having acted with the utmoſt Friendſhip and Zeal for him, exerting himſelf to his own manifeſt Hazard in the Redreſs of this Injury, of which he knew nothing till it was paſt: He even came Time enough with another Party to puniſh the mutinous Proceedings of the former; and, by his Authority, and ſome Force, preſerved eleven hundred Head of Cattle, which this ungovernable Band had not Time to ſhare among them. Theſe he conveyed to his own Lands, to ſecure them better for Sir *Philip*. He likewiſe directed many other valuable Goods and Things of Conſequence to be removed into the Cuſtody of ſome neighbouring Gentlemen, on whom he could rely; of all which he gave an honourable and faithful Account.——Nor did he reſt here, but undertook to procure a Reſtitution of what had been imbezzled, though his Endeavours in this Particular proved ineffectual, notwithſtanding the Trouble he took in it, and the Diſpleaſure he incurred from his own Dependants.———Acts of this ſort are rare in any Times of Diſturbance. And we think it would therefore be unpardonable to omit this Teſtimony, which may probably induce ſome Deſcendant of this Family of which we write, to return the like good Service to the Poſterity of that Gentleman, (if there ſhould any remain) at ſome Conjuncture, when they may ſtand in need of friendly Offices in their turn.

Sir *Philip Perceval* finding the Government ſo remiſs in their Care of *Munſter*, in which Province much of his Fortune lay, was reſolved to apply the greateſt Part of his Revenues in that Country to defend the State †, wiſely judging, that to expend the Produce

* Family Collections ut ſupra, Vol. 9. N°. 291.
† Ibid.

Produce of his Eſtates in their own Protection, would be not only a public Service, but the moſt likely way to preſerve his Lands, which, if once in the Poſſeſſion of the Enemy, might be with Difficulty, if ever, recovered from them. —— He was wiſe enough to perceive likewiſe, that without this Step, they could not long continue to ſupport him, and would inevitably add to the Power of the other Party, in a high Degree, not only from their Extent, which was very great, but, as a very large Part of them lay upon the Frontiers of the County of *Corke*, in a rich and fertile Country, and naturally ſo ſtrong as to form a very defenſive Barrier for ſeveral Miles, the River *Obeg* running on the Northern Border, and cauſing a Moraſs the whole Way of its Courſe.——— On the left of this Line roſe the wild and mountainous Country of *Slewlogher*, through which the Enemy could not paſs, without a great Detour, and where they muſt meet with many Difficulties in their March, beſides the little Invitation or Accommodation to be found in that wild, and almoſt deſert Country.——— On the right, the Line was bounded by the great Mountains of *Ballaghowra*, under which the ſame River making a great Bend, continued the ſame Obſtructions.

In thoſe Paſſages which were moſt likely to be attempted, ſtood, in the following Order, firſt, the Caſtle of *Liſcarrol*, on the weſtern Side; then the Caſtle of *Annagh*; and next to theſe, thoſe of *Welcheſtown*, *Templeconila*, and *Ballincurry*, all ſtanding in or upon the Borders of this Moraſs. The Caſtle of *Ballincurry* was without the Line, upon the very Mountains of *Ballahowra* before-mentioned, and was at firſt thought proper to be maintained; but this, with the new Works raiſed about it, being found afterwards to require a greater Garriſon than could well be ſpared, after having been taken by the *Iriſh*, and recovered by the *Engliſh*, was demoliſhed, by order of Sir *Philip* himſelf.——— The Places forming thus, as we have ſaid, a very ſtrong Barrier, were all garriſoned and

maintained by Sir *Philip Perceval*, being firſt repaired and fortified, by Intrenchments and others Works, in the beſt manner that was poſſible, and they encloſed a large Tract of a very beautiful and rich Country, which they defended the greateſt Part of the whole War*, and which, in Gratitude, repaid abundance of Proviſion, for the Uſe both of the Horſe and Foot, maintained under the Command of Sir *Philip*'s Stewards, *Raymond* and *Fiſher*, of which the former commanded in *Liſcarrol*, the latter in *Annagh*, as the two moſt important Stations, from whence they iſſued out their Orders to the reſt, for the Government of their Wards, and the Œconomy of their Proviſions produced from the Eſtate.

BESIDES the Garriſons here mentioned, Sir *Philip* had placed a Body of Men in *Loghert-Caſtle*, in the ſame County†, which was afterwards ſurprized by the *Iriſh*; and another at *Caſtle-Warden* in the County of *Kildare*, which was taken from him, and totally deſtroyed, though within a few Miles of *Dublin*, in 1646.———He likewiſe placed a conſiderable Force in that Caſtle in the County of *Tipperary*, under the Command of *Richard Stokes* before-mentioned; to which we muſt alſo add another, ſituated upon the Sea-Coaſt, in the weſtern Parts of the County of *Corke*, called *Dundeady*.———This latter § Place was of very extraordinary Strength, being a Peninſula, ſituated in the Sea, and joined to the main Land only by a little Point, wholly occupied by a ſtrong Caſtle, and cut down to a prodigious Depth, in ſuch a manner, that the Sea at every Tide had a Paſſage round it. But none of theſe being of equal Importance to the two firſt, and the laſt, though ſo ſtrong by Nature and Situation, being of little Conſequence to ſuccour any thing but itſelf, we ſhall ſay nothing farther of them in this Place.

THE

* Family Collections, ut ſupra.
† Ibid. N° 685, Vol. V.
§ Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 685.

THE generous Spirit which animated Sir *Philip Perceval* in this manner, ſhewed very early in the War its Importance to the State; we know not whether we may be thought to arrogate too much to it, when we affirm it to have been a principal Means of the Preſervation of that Kingdom.

FOR about this Time, the Catholics of the County of *Tipperary* and *Kilkenny*, invited by the little Oppoſition they were likely to meet, confederated together, under the Command of the Lords *Montgarett*, *Ikerin*, and *Dunboyne*, and advanced into the County of *Corke*, where, joined by the Lords of *Brittas* and *Caſtle-Connell* †, and the Followers of *Macdonnogh*, they made up a very formidable Army: they advanced to the very Mountains of *Ballahowra* before-mentioned, part of which are the Eſtate of this Family; but here they ſtopped, obſtructed by the Difficulties they met with there. Diviſions afterwards aroſe between the Leaders laſt mentioned, and the Lord *Roche*, who pretended to the Command of the Forces of the County of *Corke*, which there united with the reſt; theſe Diſſenſions grew at length to ſuch a Height, that they utterly broke the Meaſures of that Body; and the Army diſperſed, without making any conſiderable Attempt at that Time in that County.

THE Check ſo early given to that Body on this Side, (at a Time when the *Engliſh* Forces in the Province of *Munſter* were in no Condition to take the Field) was of the utmoſt Importance, as it gained Time, and produced that Diſſention which broke up this Army of the *Iriſh*.———Without this, the Province of *Munſter*, in all Probability, had been loſt.——And *Munſter* being loſt, there is no Ground to imagine that the Kingdom could have failed falling intirely into the Hands of the *Iriſh*, who were already ſo far Maſters of the reſt.

DURING

---

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.
† Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 685.

DURING theſe Tranſactions in *Munſter*, Sir *Philip Perceval* ſtill remained at *Dublin*, where he commenced Proſecutions againſt three thouſand of the Gentlemen and Freeholders concerned in the Rebellion; and by Virtue of his Office of Clerk of the Crown, carried the Proceſs to an Outlawry againſt two thouſand of that number. The Violence of the Lords Juſtices forced him to purſue this Work farther than he, and moſt of the rational and moderate Proteſtants, thought juſt or neceſſary; but he was a miniſterial Officer, and his Share in it was no more than Matter of Form and Expence, the Charge of the whole Affair falling intirely upon him, together with much Odium. His Reſentments were very great, to be thus made the Tool of the Barbarity of Men whom he deſpiſed, and to find himſelf loaded with a great Expence, in the Execution of Orders, which being given without any juſt Diſtinction, he followed with great Reluctance.——But it was too dangerous at that Juncture to diſobey, and ſurely fatal to have it done in ſuch an Inſtance, when it had certainly been urged as a Mark of Diſaffection in him, and had proved, in all Probability, the Loſs both of his Life and Fortune. ——How much Reaſon he had to act with Caution in this Particular, will ſufficiently appear hereafter, when, notwithſtanding all his Circumſpection, all his real Services againſt the Rebels, and his great Loſſes by them, he was more than once accuſed before the Parliament of *England*, the then Sovereign Tribunal of all theſe Nations, as having been an Abettor of that Cauſe, though nothing could be alledged to prove it, but the Humanity and the Honour of his Actions, in which, indeed, he widely differed from many of his own Party.

BUT at the ſame Time*, he had an Opportunity of ſhewing his Humanity of Temper, in a ſingular Manner;

* Sir Philip Perceval's Repreſentation to the Engliſh Houſe of Commons, 1645, penes Com. Egmont. Vide Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

ner; for the City of *Dublin* ſwarming with Multitudes of unhappy Wretches, who flocked thither for Shelter, after having been ſtripped of every thing, and were utterly void of all Means of Subſiſtence, he generouſly took three hundred of them under his own Protection, and maintained them at his own Expence; which he continued to do for one whole Year; taking Care to provide for them during his Abſence, when the public Affairs called him over into *England*, which was in the Month of *December*, or beginning of *January*, the ſame Year.

THE Occaſion of his going thither, was to haſten the Supplies, which came from that Side in very ſmall Proportions, to any Part of the Kingdom, and hitherto, in no Degree at all to *Munſter*, where, notwithſtanding the providential Diſſipation of the Forces under the Lord *Montgarret*, of which we lately ſpoke, there ſtill appeared a general Tendency to revolt, the leading Men being all upon the point to declare, and the Rabble every where out in ſmall Parties, plundering and thieving, and ready to gather into a formidable Body upon the firſt Notice from their Chiefs, which was hourly expected.

THOUGH his Buſineſs chiefly lay with the Parliament of *England*, who had taken the Proſecution of the War upon themſelves, yet the War not being commenced between them and the King, he had a Recommendation from the Council, to which the Lords Juſtices alſo ſigned, with a Direction to the then Secretary of State, Sir *Henry Vane*, to introduce him to his Majeſty; which being a handſome Teſtimony of his Services, and coming from ſome who had no Affection for him, may be properly inſerted here.

* *To the Right Honourable Sir* Henry Vane, *Knight, his Majeſty's Principal Secretary of State.*

SIR,

" THIS Gentleman, Sir *Philip Percevalle*, Knt. " being to repair to *England*, We hold it fit to " make him known to You, as a Perſon ſerving his " Majeſty in this Kingdom, for many Years hath done " his Majeſty many good and acceptable Services, and " hath travailled with ſo much Induſtry in the Public " Services of the Crown, as well in his particular Em- " ployments as otherwiſe, with forward Affections to " his Majeſty, and good Satisfaction to the State, as " renders him worthy of extraordinary Favour and " Encouragement; and therefore We crave Leave, " by You, humbly to recommend him to his Majeſty, " as one of his very well deſerving Servants here. " And ſo we remain, from his Majeſty's Caſtle of " *Dublin*, 15 ———, 1641,

Your very aſſured loving Friends,

Ormond Oſſory. Wm Parſons,
Jo: Borlaſe.
Dillon, Adam Loftus, John Temple,
Charles Lambart, Francis Willoughby,
Robert Meredith.

SIR

* Ex Chartis Familiæ.

SIR *Philip Perceval* was no ſooner landed at *Cheſter* *, than he found Occaſion to exert in a particular Manner, his Talent of Friendſhip, which he always carried to a ſcrupulous Nicety of Honour. There could not ſubſiſt a greater mutual Regard between two Men, than there did between the Earl (ſoon after Marquiſs) of *Ormond*, and Sir *Philip Perceval*; the beginning of their Acquaintance was upon occaſion of thoſe Hardſhips which were inflicted upon that Earl's Father and himſelf, by the avaricious Endeavours of the Court Favourites of that Age, who both in the Reign of King *James*, and the beginning of that of King *Charles*, graſped at the great Poſſeſſions of that Houſe. It was by Management in the Court of Wards, and by the active Oppreſſion of Sir *William Parſons*, then Maſter of that Court, that they propoſed to ſucceed in theſe Attempts: and ſuch Succeſs they had, that they put the Earl to great Difficulties, and drove him into ſuch Expences to ſecure his Fortune, as long lay heavy on him. Upon this Occaſion, Sir *Philip* made uſe of all his Authority and Skill, to ſerve that injured Nobleman; he exerted himſelf in a Manner even dangerous to himſelf, and acted ſuch a Part as ſecured the Affections of the Earl to him, and to his Family, for ever after.———Of which there are extant many Monuments in his Letters, long after his own Advancement, and Sir *Philip Perceval*'s Deceaſe: and on the other hand, there paſſed no Occaſion in which the Perſon, Advice, and Fortune of Sir *Philip* were not at the Service of the Earl.

THE Earl of *Ormond*, however provoked at the ill Uſage which his Family and himſelf had received, was ſo entirely gained by the Earl of *Strafford*, during his Adminiſtration in *Ireland*, (who had thought it a worthy Service to the King to ſecure, in thoſe unſettled Times, a young Nobleman of ſo large a Fortune, and of a Spirit ſo proportionable to his Quality) that forgetting all his former Reſentments, from that Time forward he

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 281.

he embarked heartily in the Cauſe of the Crown, from which he never afterwards departed.———He came at length, as it is well known, to be entruſted with the ſole Government of that Kingdom, during the Heat of the Rebellion, and long after the Reſtroration, when he was advanced to the higheſt Honours, and obtained the higheſt Rewards that could be beſtowed upon a Subject. But at this Time, which was in the Commencement of his public Employment, he was entruſted only with the Command of that ſmall Army which the State there was then able to raiſe; he had then only the Title of Lieutenant-General, and laboured as well under the Diſadvantage of never having ſerved before in a military Capacity, as under the Odium of an *Iriſh* Birth and Extraction, which, though originally *Engliſh*, was ſtill a Matter of Objection to him, with thoſe who were merely ſo, and who have at all Times, with a ſtrange and abſurd Inveteracy, ſought to undervalue their Countrymen in that Kingdom; a Practice, which has doubtleſs firſt obtained from the Avarice of the mean *Engliſh*, who laboured by theſe Means to engroſs the whole Profits of that Kingdom, to the entire Excluſion of the Natives, which Evil has ſince been blown up into the fierceſt Heat, from the mutual Reproaches and Injuries that have proceeded from theſe Meaſures.——— But this was not the only Objection to that Lord, his Family having almoſt ever been of the Popiſh Religion, and moſt of his Relations being ſo at that Time, and in actual Rebellion, as were even his ſecond Brother, and his Brother-in-law the Lord *Muſkerry*, who was General of the Rebel Forces. Both his Religion and Fidelity were ſomewhat ſuſpected, and by many it was thought, that he ſhewed too much Tenderneſs in the Proſecution of the War; which, though the Reſult of his Humanity, and poſſibly agreeable to his Compaſſion for many of his former Friends, was yet the Method moſt wiſe and politic, and to which may be aſcribed the Preſervation of that Kingdom, when the violent Exaſperations of a leſs moderate, or worſe deſigning Set of Men, had driven

driven thoſe already engaged into more deſperate Meaſures, and ſtrengthened their Party, by a vaſt Acceſſion, not only of revengeful Spirit, but of effective Numbers, who, though not ſufficiently animated by their Religion, were thus hurried by their Paſſions to embark in that pernicious Cauſe.

WHILST many crude and unjuſt Suſpicions of the Truth and Integrity of that great Nobleman thus paſſed abroad in ſecret, a more public and daring Attack was made upon his Honour*, by one Mr. *Wiſhart*, a Son of Sir *John Wiſhart*, a *Scotch* Gentleman ſettled in the North of *Ireland*; who having been a Priſoner with the *Iriſh* Army, was at length releaſed from them, and was at *Cheſter* when Sir *Philip Perceval* paſſed that City in his Way to *London*. This Man affirmed there, with the greateſt Confidence, to Perſons of the firſt Diſtinction, and indeed to all who happened in Diſcourſe with him, that the Lord *Gormanſtown*, and other Lords of the Pale then in open Rebellion, had aſſured him, that they held a Correſpondence with the Earl of *Ormond*.

HE went ſo far as to declare, that he had ſeen Proofs of this Correſpondence with the Earl of *Ormond*'s own Hand.——Sir *Philip Perceval* warmed with the utmoſt Reſentment, at ſo baſe an Injury done to his Friend, endeavoured to the utmoſt of his Power to find the Wretch, that he might obtain an adequate Satisfaction from him; but the Man abſconded for ſome Time, till Sir *Philip*, purſuing his Point with the ſame Ardour, diſcovered him at laſt, and brought him before the Houſe of Lords at *Weſtminſter*, where he was obliged, in the meaneſt manner, to give himſelf the Lie, and to recant all that he had thus baſely forged, againſt one of the moſt noble and moſt uſeful Subjects that any Age has produced.——The Conſequence of this well-judged Service was, that the Lords and Commons both found themſelves neceſſitated to vindicate the Reputation of the Earl in a public manner, which many of them had a much better Diſpo-

* Carte's Hiſtory, ut ſupra.

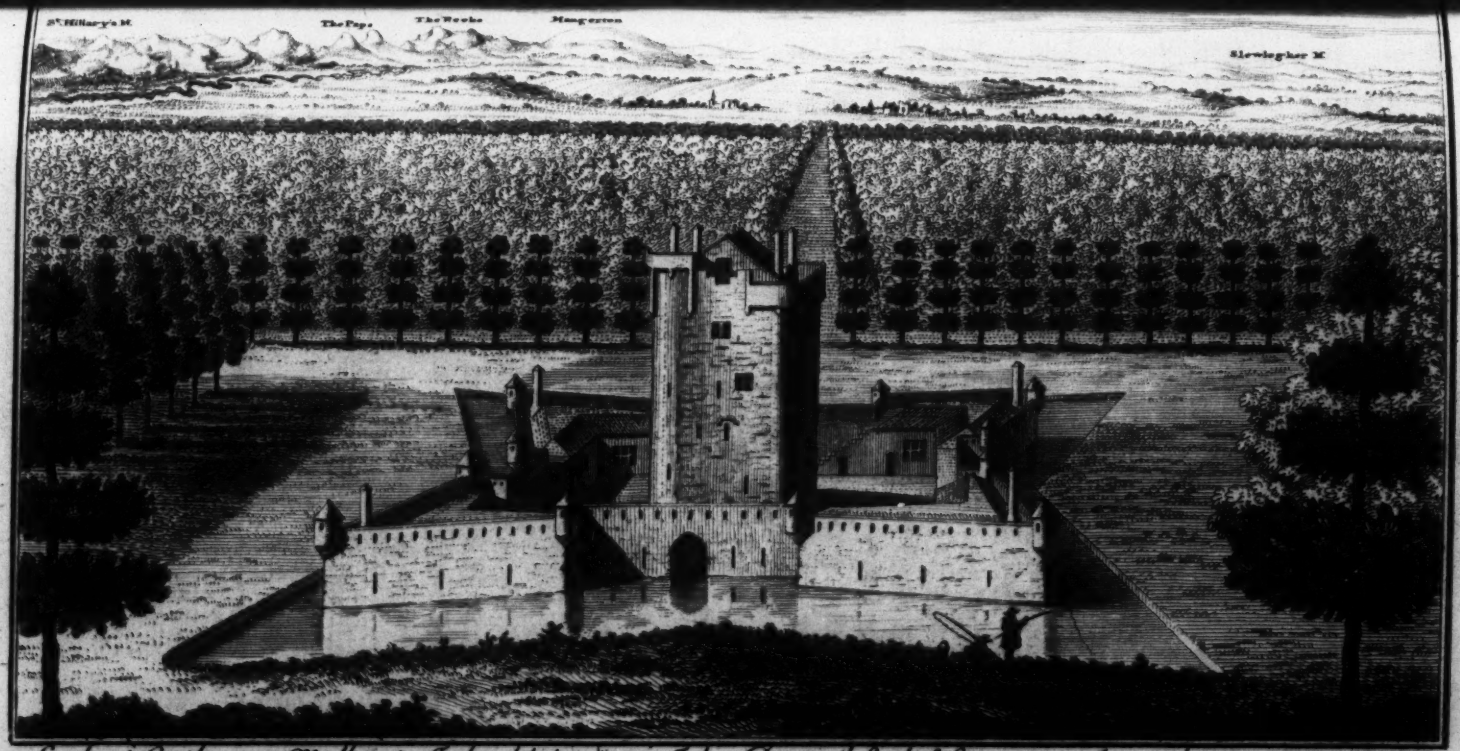
Diſpoſition to ſee more blackened, if they could have ſuffered it with any Decency. For this great Act of Friendſhip, he received the ſtrongeſt Acknowledgments from that Lord; but he had ſtill a greater Satisfaction, which was, that he preſerved to that Kingdom, by this Step, the Service of that able Man; and fruſtrated the Attempts of a Party in *England*, who ſought eagerly to remove him from a Command of that Importance, where they wiſhed to have placed ſome Creature of their own, in whom they could have aſſured themſeves of that explicit Obedience in all Events, which they neither then promiſed themſelves, nor afterwards found in the Earl of *Ormond*.

At this Time he waited upon the King †, with his Letters of Recommendation from the Government of *Ireland*, and was received in a very favourable Manner; the King being ſo well pleaſed with him, that he kept him long in his Remembrance, inſomuch, that upon a public Occaſion afterwards, he ſummoned him over in particular, to conſult him upon a Matter of great Importance, as we ſhall ſhew hereafter in its Place.

But he found evidently, that notwithſtanding this honourable Reception, nothing could be expected from that Quarter, for the Service on account of which he came.

For the King having left the Management of the *Iriſh* War to the *Engliſh* Parliament, had by that Step much diſabled himſelf from interfering in it. Beſides this, the prevailing Party having much loaded him with the Imputation of being privy to it, it certainly wrought in him ſuch an Effect, that he was ever after more favourable than he would otherwiſe have been, to the Rebels there; to which, the Influence of a Popiſh Queen, and Popiſh Counſellors, contributed not a little; but above all, the Profeſſions of the Rebels there, whoſe Views were no leſs dangerous to him, than thoſe of the Parliament, yet appeared the leſs ſo to him, as they were always violent againſt the Parliament, and were

† Family Collections, ut ſupra.



Loghart Castle near Maflow in Ireland belonging to John Perceval Earl of Egmont — This Castle was garrison'd in the Rebellion 1641 by S.r Phillip Perceval with 150 Men — It was Surpris'd by y.e Irish and continued Several Years in their Poſſeſſion and garrison'd with 300 by them — S.r Hardreſs Waller in 1650 by the Help of Cannon reduced it in four Days — In his Letter to the Parliament he Calls it a place of grede Strength.

W.m Ny. Vines fecit.

BRITISH MUSEUM

were, in this Reſpect, united in a common Cauſe with the King himſelf.

SIR *Philip Perceval*, therefore, very ſoon applied himſelf to the Leaders of the Houſe of Commons, among whom Mr. *Pim* and Mr. *Holles* were his intimate Friends; the former on account of a near Relation that ſubſiſted between them, and the other from a Reſemblance in Principles, which afterwards kept him in a cloſe Correſpondence as long as Sir *Philip* lived.

IT was with great and unwearied Diligence that Sir *Philip Perceval* employed near three Months in the Execution of this Charge. His Repreſentations had Weight and Credit beyond thoſe of moſt Men, not only on account of his Fortune and Character, but as he was himſelf an *Engliſhman*, and eſtabliſhed in a great Acquaintance, even before his Father had taken him over into *Ireland*; and made uſe of thoſe Advantages to ſo good an Effect, that he procured a conſiderable Supply to be ſent over particularly into *Munſter*, under the Lord *Inchiquin*, Sir *Charles Vavaſour*, and Colonel *William Jephſon*; ſo ſeaſonably, that it enabled the *Engliſh* to take the Field in the beginning of the Year in that Province *, and to defeat the Enemy, as will preſently appear.

SIR *Philip Perceval* returned ſoon after this again to *Dublin*, which he reached the laſt of *April*, 1642 †, but ſome time before, without his own Deſire, the Employment of Commiſſary-General of the Army in *Ireland* was conferred upon him, by a Vote of the *Engliſh* Houſe of Commons; and by other Reſolutions of the ſame Day, his Salary was ſettled, with Allowances for his Clerks, *&c.* at 3 *l.* 7 *s.* 6 *d. per diem*, with a Power for the farther § Employment and Payment of ſuch Officers as might be afterwards found neceſſary to him, and ſhould be warranted by the Lord Lieutenant-General,

* Family Collections, ut ſupra.

† Sir Philip Perceval's Repreſentation to the Houſe of Commons in England, Autograph. penes Com. Egmont.

§ Journal of the Houſe of Commons, 23 March, 1641.

General, and other chief Governors in that Kingdom. ——After which, having received his Inſtructions from the Earl of *Leiceſter*, the Lord Lieutenant, then in *London*, dated the ſixth of *March*, and a Letter from the ſame Lord to the Lords-Juſtices in *Ireland*, to notify his Appointment to that Office, he left *London*, and reached the other Kingdom before the End of *April*, as we have ſaid; where the firſt Salutation he received was, the Account of the Surprize of his Seat called *Caſtlewarning* *, near *Dublin*, by the Rebels, who deſtroyed and plundered every thing they could find there, to a great Value. This was ſeconded immediately by an Account ſent him by *John Hodder*, one of his Agents in the County of *Corke*, of his Loſſes by the War in that County alone, ſince the Rebellion firſt broke out †, which were comprehended under theſe two Articles:

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
In Stock, *viz.* Cattle, *&c.*	2,866	00	0
In Rent, ——	2,587	14	0
Making in the whole,	5,453	14	0

But the Circumſtances of the Public were ſuch, that he had hardly Time to reflect upon his own private Loſſes; and he had now a Multiplicity of Affairs upon him, the Office of Providor-General of the Horſe being added to his other Employments.

At this Juncture, the King having given the Earl of *Ormond* Authority under his Signet, dated *May* 11, 1642, to appoint all the inferior Officers in the Army, as often as their Commands ſhould become vacant, during the Abſence of the Lord-Lieutenant, and as long as the Rebellion laſted; a Power which was at firſt kept ſecret, leſt the Lord-Lieutenant ſhould be diſpleaſed at it, who had not intirely devoted himſelf to the Parliament Intereſt §. —— But that Lord appearing

* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N° 335.
† Ibid.
§ Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 335.

pearing every Day more duped, or biaſſed to the Meaſures of that Party, the ſame Caution was no longer uſed with him; and the Earl firſt exerciſed that Commiſſion in conferring a Troop of Horſe upon the Lord *Dillon*, Son to the Earl of *Roſcommon*, and a Company of Firelocks upon Sir *Philip Perceval*, which produced great Reſentments between the two Lords.

THE public Service in thoſe Times, made it neceſſary to keep ſeveral Out-Garriſons in convenient Places, and many of theſe requiring Supplies from *Dublin* by Land, ſeveral Inconveniencies were found in ſending them, when the Convoys were appointed out of ſeveral Companies, particularly Difficulties in the Command, and Danger of want of Secrecy in the Execution. To prevent theſe Evils, the Earl of *Ormond* conferred this Company upon the Commiſſary-General, Sir *Philip Perceval*, who had already, upon ſeveral Occaſions, ſhewn the Advantage of this new Regulation to the public Service; he had been already at a great Expence in arming and ſupplying this Company, and was beſides, as the Author of the Duke of *Ormond*'s Life obſerves, (who relates this Affair at large) a Perſon of the greateſt Merit, and univerſally eſteemed; yet the Earl of *Leiceſter* complained highly of this Step, as a Slight of his Authority, and ſent over a Commiſſion to his Son, the Lord *Liſle*, then in *Ireland*, for one Captain *Denn* to command that Company: but the Lords Juſtices and Council interpoſed on behalf of Sir *Philip Perceval*, and prevented the Lord *Liſle* from the Execution of his Father's Orders. And thus he kept his Poſt, till he was farther and abſolutely confirmed in it by the King, in a Letter dated *Auguſt* the twentieth, from *Stoneleigh-Abby* in *Warwickſhire*, a Houſe of Sir *Thomas Leigh*, where he had then his Head Quarters.——— This Affair, though in itſelf a Matter of no great Importance, ſo piqued the Lord *Liſle*, who ſaw both himſelf, and his Father's Authority, extremely ſlighted on this Occaſion, that he never forgave Sir *Philip Perceval*, and

was afterwards an Inſtrument of great Trouble to him on the other Side of the Water.

The Rebels in *Ireland* improving and encreaſing every Day, in Order, Diſcipline and Supplies, nothing ſeemed poſſible to aggravate the miſerable Condition of the *Engliſh* in that Kingdom, but that which now fell out: and this was the War between the King and the two Houſes of Parliament in *England*, which after ſeveral Years Duration, at laſt ended in the Loſs of that Prince's Head, and the Eſtabliſhment of one of the Parliamentary Officers, in the ſame uncontrolled Authority, to deſtroy which in the Crown was the Motive of this great Event.

It is a great Misfortune, that Men are not as able to foreſee the Train and Conſequences of thoſe Springs which move the Minds of Nations, before they reach their Criſis, as they afterwards are to trace them to their proper Sources; had this been poſſible at that Time, the Crown had never then vainly aimed at that deſpotic Power, on which it ſeemed to doat with a peculiar Madneſs, beyond even the common Rage and Luſt of Power in Princes. During the Reign preceding, and that of which we ſpeak, the divine and uncontrollable Authority of Kings had been talked up ſo much, that there was no other Language within the Reach of the King's Ear; it ecchoed back to him from his own Mouth, and thoſe of his wretched Miniſters, ſo loudly, that he miſtook it for the Voice of the whole People; and what was a worſe Miſtake, he took it for the Senſe of the ſame People likewiſe.

In tracing the Cauſes of this Revolution, we need to go no farther back than to the Reign of *Henry* the Seventh, when the Commons firſt, by Permiſſion given to the Nobility to alienate their landed Eſtates, (before not to be done without a Licence from the Crown, which was generally obtained with Difficulty) received the firſt Puſh, that rolled them towards that Point of Power to which they have ſince arrived. Another Accident likewiſe happened in that Reign, which was the Diſcovery of the *Weſt-Indies*, from whence flowed in

in a mighty Tide of Wealth, and that falling generally into the meaneſt Hands, enabled them gradually to purchaſe out the old Nobility, who then grew neceſſitous when Money grew plenteous, becauſe they then firſt found the Means of contracting Debts.

IN the enſuing Reign, King *Henry* the Eighth, by the Diſſolution of the Abbies, threw a great additional Weight of Property into the Hands of the Commons, the greateſt Part of thoſe Church-Lands, then, or ſoon after, falling into them.

FROM that Time to the End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, the growing Wealth of *Europe*, and encreaſing Commerce of *England*, which drew in a large Share of that Wealth to this Kingdom, entirely overturned the ancient Ballance. Theſe new Riches coming entirely to the Commons, the Lords and ancient Gentry never concerning themſelves in thoſe Hazards or Occupations by which they were acquired.

THE Property in the Reign of King *James* the Firſt, being now in this great Proportion turned into the Channel of the People, it is evident that the Power was eſſentially in the People, and that this neceſſarily created a ſtronger Diſpoſition towards a popular Government, than ever had been ſeen before.—— Power and Dominion muſt ever follow Property.—— It may be queſtioned, however, whether that Property was yet ſo much diffuſed, as to effect a Change ſo ſudden and violent, if other Cauſes had not concurred, to provoke and animate the People to exert their new acquired Authority; and theſe were found in the arbitrary Meaſures then purſued by the Crown, and in the bigotted Proceedings of the Clergy. Theſe Cauſes if properly diſtinct, had ſtill ſo much Dependance on each other, that it is not neceſſary to make any Diſtinction between them.

THE State of Prerogative had never been high in *England*, for any conſiderable Time after the *Norman* Conqueſt: however, artful Men employed to preach up Chains and Fetters, have ſought to convince the People of it, knowing how powerfully the worſt of Pre-

Precedents affect the Minds of Men, who ſeldom ſeek for more in Government that what they think their Anceſtors enjoyed. The Conqueror himſelf acted neither as a Conqueror, nor as a Tyrant; many of the *Engliſh* were, indeed, diſpoſſeſſed of their Eſtates, yet not till they had rebelled againſt his Government, and only thoſe that did; but the *Normans* ſtill continued free. ——— The *Engliſh* and the *Normans* quickly became one People. —— And *Henry* the Firſt, who had not a legal Right to the Crown, his elder Brother ſtill living, was obliged to confirm the Liberties of that blended Nation, to ſecure his Title.

KING *John* was the firſt who attempted openly to carry the Power of the Crown to any great Exceſs, but with an Iſſue as wretched and fatal to himſelf, as glorious and happy to his Subjects, who forced the *Magna Charta* from him.———*Henry* the Third, his Son, purſued his Father's Steps, and ſuffered greatly for it; yet he prevailed at laſt, and enjoyed, but could not eſtabliſh to his Poſterity, a Power more than was his Due: in contending for which, he had been impriſoned by his Barons, and had been often forced to the Confirmation of his Father's Charter beforementioned. ——— Till this Time, whatever were the Condition of the Populace, the Condition of the Crown was low, that of the Nobility being ever able to reſtrain it. ——— At the Cloſe of the Reign laſt ſpoken of, the Crown impaired that Power in the Lords, by a great Confiſcation of the ancient Baronies; yet was ſtill unable to carry its own beyond the Bounds of Reaſon, with Impunity. The Prince who next endeavoured this, was the Grandſon of the laſt, who, by ſupporting Favourites againſt the Laws, cauſed Diſorders, which ended in his own ignominious Death. This Tragedy reſtrained the like Attempts for many Years: they were at length revived by *Richard* the Second, his Great Grandſon, who likewiſe made a Reparation to his People at the Expence of his Life and Crown. The Advancement of *Henry* the Fourth to the Place of the Prince laſt mentioned, eſtabliſhed that

Diviſion of the two Houſes of *York* and *Lancaſter*, which, though it could not prevent all Attempts, and every Inſtance of that unlimited Authority, yet effectually hindered its Continuance. The Change of each Family for the other, as they abuſed their Truſt by Turns, affording from Time to Time a frequent Relief againſt ſuch Injuries. Thus we are brought down to King *Henry* the Eighth, in whom, as all Pretenſions centered, ſo was the Prerogative exalted beyond what had ever been known, almoſt in any Age, in theſe Dominions. ——— The Lords had long been loſing and impairing thoſe immenſe Eſtates, which were the ſole Foundation of their Power; they had loſt their Leaders, by the mercileſs Carnage of the Princes of the Blood: and the Commons had not, as yet, diſcovered the Force of that Wealth, which gradually flowed into their Channel. Thus by the Weakneſs of the firſt, the Ignorance of the laſt, and the ſingle Pretenſions of the Prince, he maintained himſelf in great Authority during his whole Reign, though not without that Deference to Parliaments which his Succeſſors, with leſs Abilities of every ſort, vainly thought unneceſſary for them to ſhew.

THE Grounds on which the Princes mentioned formerly proceeded, when they aimed at this Prerogative, were generally, either the Merits of their Anceſtors, who had endeared their Poſterity to the People, an illuſtrious Train of Progenitors, ever educated and derived among them, the Influence of their own Revenues, or the Aſſiſtance of ſome of the Nobility, whoſe great Authority and Intereſt they purchaſed by Favours and Honours, always to be furniſhed of the Crown, in every Age, to the Gratification of a few.———But in the Times to which we direct our Diſcourſe, the Princes who thus aimed at arbitrary Power, were deſtitute of every one of theſe Supports: Their Family was of a foreign Extraction, taken up ſuddenly upon the Throne, out of a Nation to which the *Engliſh* had an utter Averſion, on account of the continual Quarrels with them, and an equal, though unjuſt Contempt

tempt, on account of the Poverty of their State. The very Alliance by which they claimed the Crown, was with a Female, whoſe Marriage was as obſolete as the Diſtance of one hundred Years could make it. The Crown Revenues were now exhauſted, and the Prince had nothing to depend upon, but what he annually begged of his People, or endeavoured to raviſh by Force from them, to exerciſe which, he had no Army, nor Means to raiſe one, or to maintain it. What little could be collected by either of theſe Means, was vainly and diſtaſtefully laviſhed upon needy Favourites of his own Country, or drawn from him by the baſe Flatteries of the Refuſe of the *Engliſh*, who paid their Court by rendering themſelves odious to the whole Nation, in which, in Proportion as they ſucceeded, in the ſame Proportion they ſecured their own Advancement: And yet, had this Income, thus miſpent, been either much greater, or better employed, the Crown had been ſtill incapable of buying any conſiderable Aſſiſtance with it.——The Public was not to be bought, but at the ſolid Price of Liberty, and the Service of Individuals was not worth the Purchaſe, a few being no longer able to do what they could formerly do, the Power of the Nobility being by this Time wholly reduced and broken.——What then could be the Grounds on which they propoſed to build this unlimited Sovereignty, may well deſerve our cloſe Enquiry.

KING *Henry* the Eighth having, as we have before obſerved, diſſolved the Abbies, and made an Alteration in the Religion then eſtabliſhed. This Reformation was ſtill purſued in the following Reigns, excepting only the ſhort Time that his eldeſt Daughter *Mary* ſat upon the Throne.——At the beginning of this Change, the new Clergy, who had been advanced upon the Ruins of the old, made it their principal and earneſt Buſineſs to ſupport the Power of the Crown, from which they derived their Preferments.—— This Change, however neceſſary and advantageous to the State, was doubtleſs in its firſt Steps illegal and arbitrary; they reaſonably thought this the ſureſt Way to maintain

maintain this Alteration, upon which their own Grandeur depended, by preaching the People into a conſcientious Opinion, that the Crown had an abſolute Power to diſpoſe of the Properties of any of its Subjects, in what Manner it ſhould pleaſe, and that the People had no Right to reſiſt. With thoſe Views, the Canons, Homilies, and ſtanding Sermons of the Church were formed, inſinuating ſuch divine Rights in the Perſons of our Princes; and ſuch a magical Virtue in the holy Oil with which they were anointed, as utterly deſtroyed all Liberty in the People, by taking away the Power and Principle of their Defence, and ſuch as never was parallelled in any State, but that of the *Roman* Empire, where the ſame impious Practice of the Deification of their Princes prevailed in the laſt Stages of their Government.

THESE Doctrines, levelled at firſt againſt the Papiſts, whoſe Party remained in the beginning very ſtrong, upon the Diminution of that Set of Men, were ſoon converted againſt another, who were now become more dangerous to the Proteſtant Clergy than their firſt Enemies had been; theſe were that Claſs of Men who thought the Reformation imperfect, and the remaining Power and Revenues of the Church ſtill too conſiderable, who endeavoured farther to pare away thoſe Supports of Pride and Vanity, which render the Clergy of all Religions but too reſemblant to each other; and to deprive them of that great Remnant of ceremonious Pageantry, Pomp, and Superſtition, with which they enthralled the ignorant Vulgar by a ſtrange Enthuſiaſm, and kept them in a blind Obedience to themſelves.——— Theſe Men, who from an Affectation of the moſt rigid Virtue, and Purity of their Manners, obtained the Name of *Puritans*, had doubtleſs a Multitude of hot and bigotted Spirits in their Party, very extravagant in their Way, but their was in general better Senſe, and a more open Underſtanding in theſe of that Denomination, and they plainly comprehended the natural Tendency of that Eccleſiaſtical Power, and its Œconomy, into Popery again, to which they thought

the Clergy of all Religions inclined, and which they judged to be eſſentially little more, than that Form of Church Government in ſpiritual Matters, which ſubdues the Minds of Men in the greateſt Degree, and raiſes the Spiritual Order to the higheſt Share of Power in the State. Reaſon alone created this Opinion in them, Experience, her Aſſiſtant, has given Proof of it to us, the Proteſtant Clergy having of later Years been ever found the main Support of the Pretenſions of a Popiſh Prince to the Throne of theſe Kingdoms, from whoſe Government they can expect nothing but a Change of that Religion which they themſelves pretend to follow, in Oppoſition to the other. The ſame Men foreſaw likewiſe how great an Union had been formed by theſe Doctrines between the Crown and the Clergy; a Circumſtance extremely dangerous to Liberty, and never before obſerved in any ſuch Degree in all the Hiſtory of *England*.

The Prudence of Queen *Elizabeth* moderated Matters tolerably well between theſe different Parties, during her long and glorious Reign; but upon the Acceſſion of King *James* the Firſt, a Prince of a very different Capacity, the Miſchiefs were in themſelves not only grown older and ſtronger, but they became inflamed by his imprudent, paſſionate and contemptible Conduct, his Hatred to the Puritans, who had reduced his Authority in *Scotland* to a low Ebb, threw him headlong into the Arms of the *Engliſh* Clergy, with whom he concurred in the Heat and Deſire of Perſecution of Men of that Denomination; on their Parts, they uſed their utmoſt Endeavours, in return, to gratify their Prince in his greedy Thirſt after an abſolute Power, independent of his Parliaments. Thus a viſible Bargain was ſtruck between the Clergy and the Crown, the Conditions of which were evidently the Eſtabliſhment of the Prince in this formidable Independency, on the one hand, and on the other, the Ingroſſment and Management of all temporal Affairs, as well as ſpiritual, in the Hands of the Church.

The

THE Conſequence of this Conjunction was very natural; it was a Coalition of the popiſh Party with the Church and Crown; the former flying eagerly for Protection to thoſe who had no Averſion to them, unleſs when they were their Rivals for Preferments in the Church, which was now the Caſe no longer, and were united with them in the common Sentiment of raiſing the ſpiritual Power to a Point as high as poſſible.

ANOTHER Conjunction as natural, was that of the Puritans with the Diſſenters of all Denominations, who now came to endure the ſame common Sufferings, from the united Power of the Crown, the Clergy, and the Papiſts, to which Party alſo adhered all who had any Spirit, or Principle of Liberty, and deſired to preſerve their Country from that abject Slavery, which the former Conjunction threatened to introduce among them.

THE whole Nation thus became divided into two Parties, compoſed each of Intereſts united without Affection, and joined together wholly, to what they perhaps all hated, or feared, by a common Oppoſition to ſomething which they hated or feared ſtill more. —— From hence, a Latitude for prodigious Inflammation opened, each Party reviling and characterizing the other, under that Denomination which they judged moſt unpopular and moſt galling; the one Party acquiring the Scandal of Popery, while the other was reproached with Fanaticiſm and Irreligion, becauſe the Perſons of which it was compoſed, conſiſted of ſuch a Variety of different Perſuaſions in theſe Matters, that no one Opinion, as to Religion, could well be ſaid to predominate at firſt among them.

THE Ferment to which the Minds of Men were now raiſed, ſufficiently portended ſome great and general Calamity. The Clergy, and their Party, were the leaſt ſenſible of their approaching Danger; their narrow and confined Education, and little Practice of the World, expoſed them eaſily to create, by their Ambition and Obſtinacy, the moſt terrible Diſorders, but deprived them of the Means to effect their Ends, or to foreſee the Conſequences of their own Meaſures.

They had laboured, indeed, with great Effect, to preach the Conſciences of Men into Submiſſion to the Prince, and had, with amazing Aſſurance, inculcated this Abſurdity as a Divine Commandment; and they urged it further, from the Canons of the Church, which, once eſtabliſhed by what they pretended to be the proper Authority, they affirmed, in effect, to be as valid as the Goſpel itſelf.

THE Women, the Old, the Weak, and the Unfortunate, are ever prone to Superſtition; theſe form the moſt numerous and clamorous Part in all Societies, and they were greatly influenced by theſe Impreſſions, whilſt the Clergy, from a Diſpoſition in human Nature which often impoſes on us all, believed their Succeſs much greater than it was, becauſe they wiſhed it greater: They flattered themſelves in this Imagination, and fixed the Meaſure of their Influence upon the Numbers they infected, without conſidering their Quality or Intereſt. From hence they formed a Computation of their Strength, fatal to themſelves, and to the Prince their Maſter, whom they deceived, as they had been deceived themſelves, and who now began to think himſelf ſecure in the Exerciſe of any Prerogative he ſhould pleaſe to aſſume, depending on the ſlaviſh Biggotry introduced among his People.

WE are by this time able to diſcover that new Power which aroſe, when all other Powers that our Princes formerly enjoyed were loſt; and it was upon this alone that they founded all their Hopes to ſucceed in thoſe Attempts which their Predeceſſors had hitherto made in vain: And though it has not proved ſufficient to compleat their Views, it is a miſerable Truth, that it has nearly done it upon ſeveral Occaſions ſince that Conjuncture. The ſame Spirit ſtill breathes among us under the different Appellations of *Tory* and *Whig*, each of which are ſtill much in the ſame manner fired with the ſame Impreſſions, and actuated by the ſame Principles, (without being in general ſenſible whence they are derived, what they mean, or whither they lead;) yet ſufficient to plunge us a new into Blood and Confuſion,

upon

upon many Incidents that may very poſſibly happen to this Kingdom.

KING *Charles* the Firſt, bred up in the conſtant Obſervations of theſe Politics in his Father, obtained his Father's Crown at a Time when the latent Miſchief ariſing from them was juſt ripened; and when he thought, on the contrary, that they had ſubdued all Power of Oppoſition. Upon this Preſumption, he governed his Subjects of every Condition from the Beginning of his Reign with a very harſh and abſolute Authority: But, being willing to ſoften the Rigour of Reflection upon a Prince, who paid ſo dearly for his imprudent Conduct, we ſhall not enter into a Detail of thoſe ungracious Actions by which he loſt the Affections and Opinion of his People.

IT is ſufficient, therefore to obſerve, that theſe were the Circumſtances of the Nation, this the Power on which the Prince depended, theſe the Methods of his Government. King *Charles* diſcovered enough how much he had miſtaken every one of theſe; but he diſcovered this too late: He yielded, in many Particulars, when his yielding only diſcovered the Incertainty of his Temper, and the Weakneſs of his Reſolution. So that in the Extremity to which Things were reduced, he could not reap the Benefit which Conceſſions much leſs important would have given him at the Beginning.——— He only confirmed the Party that oppreſſed him in their Meaſures of Oppoſition. Theſe Men diſcovered leſs Danger from perſiſting againſt a weak, than from confiding in a treacherous Prince, as they imagined him to be.———And thus began that formidable domeſtic War, which for ſo many Years rendered this Nation one univerſal Scene of Blood and Deſolation.

THE Rebels in *Ireland** now growing very formidable by this Situation of Affairs in *England*, (having ſettled ſeveral Diſputes among themſelves, appointed Colonel

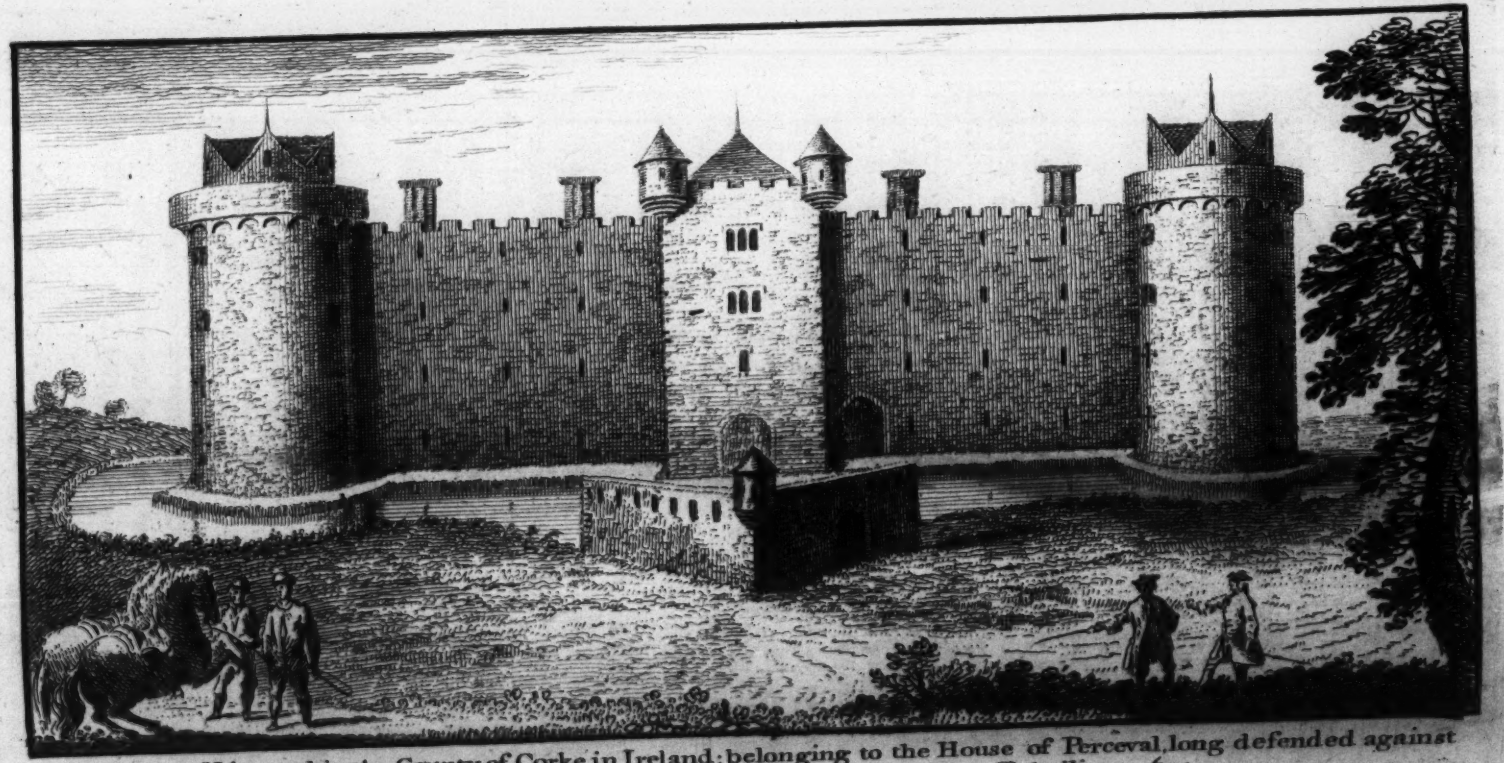
* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

Colonel *Garret Barry* to the Command of the *Munſter* Forces*, as an Expedient to prevent the Miſchiefs of that Emulation which appeared in the Lords *Roche*, *Mountgarret*, *Muſkerry*, and other Noblemen of that Party, for the ſupreme Conduct of the War) entered into the County of *Cork*, and beſieged the City of that Name, yet without Succeſs, though their Numbers were ſo much ſuperior, that the *Engliſh* Army could not keep the Field againſt them. But, finding the Loſs of Time ſpent before that City, prejudicial to their Cauſe, they raiſed the Siege, and, for the preſent, quitted that Country, returning into that of *Limerick*, which borders on it, where, in a ſhort Time, they over-ran the whole Country, taking the City of *Limerick* itſelf: There they became Maſters of much Artillery and Proviſions for Sieges, with which they were not before ſo well furniſhed; after which, having reinforced their Army with Men, and ſtrengthened it with all neceſſary Proviſions of War, they reſolved to march in the Fluſh of their late Succeſſes, to make a ſecond Attempt upon that County, which they had lately quitted from its Situation and Extent, and the Strength of its *Engliſh* and Proteſtant Eſtabliſhment, the greateſt Bulwark of the contrary Cauſe.

Purſuant to this Reſolution, they entered the County of *Cork* again upon *Tueſday* the twentieth of *Auguſt*†, 1642, with a Body of Seven thouſand Foot and Five hundred Horſe, under the Command of the Lord *Muskerry* and General *Barry*, bringing with them a large Train of Artillery; and, among the reſt, one ‡ Piece of Battery of ſo large a Bore, that it was drawn by five and twenty Yoke of Oxen. With this Force they ſat down before the Caſtle of *Liſcarrol* the ſame Day. The Importance of the Situation of this Caſtle, and of that Line which Sir *Philip Perceval* had made upon his Eſtate, was now

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.


BRITISH MUSEUM



The Castle of Liscarrol in the County of Corke, in Ireland; belonging to the House of Perceval, long defended against a Numerous Army of the Irish by that Family, during the great Rebellion. 1641.—

now diſcovered plainly. It was impoſſible to paſs in any Part of this Line, which, as we before obſerved, extended ſeveral Miles, but through a Moraſs, which nothing but the Seaſon of the Year, and particular Drowth of that Summer, could have rendered practicable to Men or Horſes, and which was ſtill impaſſable to any Wheel-Carriage. This obliged the *Iriſh* to diſmount all their Cannon, and to lay them in hollow Timbers, in which they dragged them through the Mire with wonderful Difficulty, and ſuch a Loſs of Time, as proved fatal to them in the Iſſue. From the important Situation of this Place, upon the firſt Entrance of the Enemy into that Country in the Beginning of the Year, they had been obliged to make a painful Turn out of the direct Road, which lies through the Paſſes to the Left, over the Mountains of the *Roches* Country, which were then extremely difficult from the Woods and Bogs with which they were covered, and ſo to leave theſe Caſtles behind them in their Advance to the Siege of *Cork*; an Error, for which they ſuffered much, the Country being kept in Awe by the Garriſons of theſe Caſtles, and their Convoys continually taken and interrupted by Parties detached from them.

To correct this Error, they determined in this ſecond Attempt to begin by taking in theſe Caſtles of Sir *Philip Perceval*, which had galled them to ſuch a a degree before. *Liſcarroll* was then commanded by *Thomas Raymond*, one of the Seneſchals of Part of Sir *Philip*'s Eſtate, and garriſoned with a ſufficient Body of Men, and provided with as good a Proportion of Ammunition and Proviſions as the ruined and almoſt deſperate Condition of that Province could then afford.

† THIS Place was ſituated in a fine and fertile Country, and ſtrong both by Art and Nature.

IT was a Parallelogram, or oblong Square (if we may uſe the Expreſſion) the Area of which, in the Clear,

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond. † Ibid.

Clear, was an hundred and twenty by two hundred and forty Feet*.———The Walls were thirty Feet high, and of great Thickneſs, flanked by four round and two ſquare Towers, much taller than the reſt of the Building.———This Caſtle is ſaid to have been built by King *John*, when he firſt entered *Ireland*, and was in a manner impregnable before the Uſe of Cannon had ſo much changed the Art of War.—— To add farther to its Strength†, Sir *Philip Perceval* had ſurrounded the whole by a ſtrong Covered-Way, well flanked and palliſadoed, according to the modern Stile of Fortification. Before the great Gate of the Caſtle he erected a Ravelin, and on the oppoſite Side caſt up a very ſtrong Intrenchment, in the nature of a Crown-Work, which took up a large Extent of Ground, and preſerved the Cattle and Proviſions of the Garriſon; by all which it was rendered ſo defenſible, that the Lord *Inchequin*, General of the *Engliſh* in *Munſter*, in a Letter to Sir *Philip*, affirmed it to be the ſtrongeſt Place in that Province: And this was verified fully by the Defence it made, which was ſo vigorous, that, after the utmoſt Efforts of the Enemy's Army, it ſurrendered at laſt upon honourable Conditions, not till *Friday* the ſecond of *September*, having ſuſtained a Siege of thirteen Days with the utmoſt Bravery and Reſolution.

THE obſtinate Reſiſtance of this Place, which was but one of four Caſtles, in Prudence, to be taken before they advanced farther (and of theſe, that of *Annagh*, commanded by one *Fiſher*, another Steward of Sir *Philip Perceval*, was far more difficult to be attacked) diſconcerted wholly the Meaſures of the *Iriſh*, who thought the Number of their Troops and Terror of their Succeſſes, would have procured Admiſſion into every one of theſe upon the firſt Summons, and gave Time to the Lord *Inchequin* to call in all his Forces there

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.
† Ex Chart. Famil.

there, from the Scarcity of Proviſions, diſperſed into very diſtant Quarters, by which Means he was rendered capable to take the Field upon the ſame ſecond of *September*, when, ſetting out from *Cork* with a Body of near two thouſand Foot and four hundred Horſe, he came before the Caſtle of *Liſcarroll* the next Morning; whereupon that famous Battle enſued, in which that Lord, with ſo great an Inequality of Force, totally defeated the Enemy; by which Victory the Province of *Munſter* was tolerably freed from the Incurſions of the *Iriſh* for the Remainder of that Year, and the Caſtle of *Liſcarroll* immediately recovered, and reſtored again into the Hands of its Owner, Sir *Philip Perceval*, under the Conduct of the ſame Officer who had defended it ſo well.

GREAT Part of the Supplies intended by the Parliament of *England* for the Relief of *Ireland**, being never employed, out of a Jealouſy in the King, that they would be uſed againſt himſelf, and the reſt diverted to the immediate fitting out of the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Eſſex*, who was appointed General of the Parliamentary Forces againſt the King, that Country was left a Prey to the worſt Ravage of Rebellion; and neither Party in *England* having Time or Means to ſpare towards the Aſſiſtance of the Proteſtants in *Ireland*, the Confederate Catholicks had Leiſure to ſettle a regular Plan of Government, which, in the firſt Hurry and Confuſion, had been omitted, and without which it had been impoſſible for them to have proceeded to any great Effect.

THE Deputies of every Province in *Ireland** aſſembling the twenty-fourth of *October*, 1642, at the City of *Kilkenny*, having firſt agreed to a Declaration, that they did not aſſume the Authority of Parliament, and that they acted only as a Parliament during the preſent Confuſion, formed themſelves upon the Parliamentary Model, aſſuming only the moderate Title of the *General Aſſembly*, the Biſhops and the Nobility ſit-

* Carte ut ſupra. † Ibid.

ting together, and the Commons by themſelves, though in one great Room, the inferior Clergy forming a Houſe of Convocation in another Part of the Town.

THE Proceedings of the *Convocation* *, as they called it, growing violent and furious, and claiming a Reſtitution of the Church-Lands and Privileges of their Order, which affected as well the Properties and Liberties of the *Roman* Catholics, as of the Proteſtants, fell quickly into great Contempt.—But the *General Aſſembly* proceeding upon wiſer and more prudent Grounds, firſt declared the *Magna Charta*, and the Statute and Common Law of *England*, ſo far as it did not extend to deſtroy the *Roman* Catholic Religion and the Independency of *Ireland*, to be the Baſis of their Conſtitution. They then appointed a *Judicature* for each County, compoſed of a Deputy, or two, from each Barony, requiring the *Sheriff* to be choſen out of three Perſons nominated by theſe County Councils reſpectively, and confirmed by a Council of Twenty-four, which was called the *Supreme Council*. This Council of Twenty-four was to be choſen by the *General Aſſembly*, and was authorized to tranſact the current Buſineſs of the State, to receive and determine Appeals from all other Courts, and to direct all Military as well as Civil Powers; *twelve* of theſe to be always reſident at the Helm of the Government, with equal Voices; *two Thirds* to conclude the reſt; never leſs than *nine* to make a *Quorum*, and of the nine, *ſeven* to be a legal Majority; with a Preſident, choſen by the *General Aſſembly* out of the *Supreme Council*, to be reſident with that Council; and, in caſe of Abſence, Sickneſs, *&c.* the Majority to chuſe a Vice Preſident out of their own Body: This Council to be confirmed, or a new Election of them to be made, upon the meeting of every General Aſſembly, which was to be annually choſen, and convened.

HAVING formed this proviſionary Settlement, they determined that no Suits ſhould be commenced for Lands which had been quietly poſſeſſed for three Years before theſe Troubles, and provided againſt the Miſ-

* Carte's Hiſtory, ut ſupra.

Miſchiefs of any Diſtinctions or Compariſons between the ancient and modern *Iriſh*, or new *Engliſh*, all whom they wiſely endeavoured to unite, by impoſing ſevere Penalties on thoſe who ſhould promote theſe invidious Diſtinctions. After which, they proceeded to appoint their Generals; *Preſton* for *Leinſter*, *Garrett Barry* for *Munſter*, *John Bourke* for *Connaught*, and *Owen O Neil* for *Ulſter*.

THE *Supreme Council* entered upon the Exerciſe of their Authority about the latter End of *November*, 1642, when the *General Aſſembly* broke up; and it muſt be ſaid, to the Honour of the Chiefs of the Confederacy at that Time, however odious the firſt Actions of this Party were, that, from the Period of this Regulation of their Government, they behaved with as much Moderation and Juſtice as any People under ſuch Circumſtances are found in the Hiſtories of any Time to have done; and more, in the Methods of a War carried on between different Nations, than with that bloody and mercileſs Rage which generally attends all Civil Contention, eſpecially where Religious Differences inflame the Quarrel.

THE faithleſs Proceedings into which ſome of the ſame Party fell afterwards, in the Courſe of the War, are not to be aſcribed to them, but to a factious and bigotted Clergy, who, under the wild and raſh Direction of the Pope's Nuncio, did afterwards deſtroy this Settlement which the Leaders of that Time had wiſely made; and, to the extreme Diſcontent of all the reaſonable and leading Men, ſubverted theſe prudent Proviſions, and fruſtrated that Peace which the others had eſtabliſhed, in ſuch a Manner, and at ſuch a Juncture, that they had, in all Probability, obtained a permanent Settlement of their Religion, if the Perfidy and furious Driving of that ambitious Set of Men, who aimed at engroſſing the whole Government of that Kingdom, and at recovering all the old Revenues of the Church, had not involved that Kingdom again in a new War; confounded all the moderate Counſels, both of their own Party and of thoſe they fought againſt;

neceſſitated the Marquis of *Ormond* to throw the Government into the Hands of the Parliament of *England*, to which he was, in his Nature, utterly averſe; and brought on thoſe ſevere Scourges upon their Party and their Country, which drove them into univerſal Beggary and Ruin, and reduced them, within a little, of being cut off from the Face of the Earth, and of being no longer found a Nation.

SIR *Philip Perceval**, having left his Lady and Family in *London*, continued labouring in the painful Exerciſe of his new Employment; in which, aſſured partly by the Votes of the Houſe of Commons in *England*, who appropriated ſeveral thouſand Pounds to him, and farther confirmed, by the Honour and Intereſt he had in ſupporting the State to the utmoſt of his Power, he involved himſelf into prodigious Debts upon the Publick Account. The Parliament continuing ſtill to vote him Payments in conſiderable Sums, but never bringing thoſe Votes into Execution, or furniſhing any material Supply, nor even paying any of his Appointments, not ſo much as the Sum of two hundred Pounds, which they voted towards the immediate Support of his Wife in *London* †, out of the Money due to him for the bare Salary of his Poſt, of which he never received one Farthing.

He remained, however, conſtantly with the Earl of *Ormond*, then General of the Forces, with whom he continued in the moſt intimate Friendſhip; as a Proof of which, that Lord, being taken extremely ill, he entruſted Sir *Philip Perceval* to write, as he imagined, his laſt Requeſts to the King‡, and alſo appointed him *Executor* of the Will which he then made. And this Regard might have reaſonably been expected from the *Earl*; for, beſides the former Services we have mentioned even in the Heat of theſe Calamities, Sir *Philip* had moſt readily ſupplied him with many thouſand Pounds, at

* Family Collections, ut ſupra.

† Repreſentation of Sir Philip Perceval to the Engliſh Houſe of Commons, penes Comit. de Egmont.

‡ Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond, Vol. I. fol. 365.

at a Juncture when the Earl could neither raiſe any Money on his own Eſtate, nor borrow any conſiderable Sum from any other Perſon.

IT is not neceſſary for us to purſue the Train of thoſe Tranſactions which happened during the Remainder of this Year, 1642. No, very extraordinary Events occur, but the ſame wretched Scene of Diſtreſs overſpread the Country; and all that is to be admired, during this Period, is, that it was poſſible for the *Engliſh* Forces to maintain themſelves againſt the *Iriſh*, who were in want of nothing, being ſecretly ſupplied, as we have ſhewn, with Arms and Ammunition, both from Cardinal *Richlieu*, then firſt Miniſter of *France*, and from the zealous Contributions of the *Roman* Catholics abroad, particularly out of *Italy*, where the Pope (who was very aſſiſtant to them,) publiſh'd a Bull to warrant and juſtify the moſt violent Meaſures of their Party. In the mean time the *Engliſh* Army, totally deſerted by the King, and, in a manner, unaſſiſted by the Parliament, were reduced to the utmoſt Extremity of Want, being half naked, and never certain of Subſiſtence for one whole Month togther.——— During theſe Extremities, it is eaſy to judge the terrible Condition of Sir *Philip Perceval**, upon whom the ſole Labour lay to obviate theſe Diſtreſſes, as Commiſſary General of the Army; in which he performed his Part with ſo much Dexterity, that, by the general Voice of all the Officers and of the whole Army†, he was the only Inſtrument, under Heaven, of their Preſervation: And this they certified in a ſolemn Manner to the Parliament of *England* in 1645.

THIS Concurrence of ſo many Opinions, and this wonderful Popularity with ſuch a Set of Men, under Neceſſities ſo preſſing, carry with them much higher Proofs

* Vide Family Collections, ut ſupra.

† Certificates and Evidences of the Earl of Inchequin, Sir Thomas Wharton, Knight of the Bath, Sir John Giffard, &c. in favour of Sir Philip Perceval, delivered to Parliament 1645.

Proofs of his Integrity and great Abilities than any Pen can expreſs. Armies are naturally jealous of thoſe who preſide in Poſts of this nature, and are ever ready to attribute even the neceſſary Hardſhips they endure to the Corruption or Negligence of Officers, who are employed to diſcharge any Truſt in which Money is concerned.——But, to the eternal Glory of Sir *Philip Perceval*, this Army acknowledged his publick Virtue in the ſtrongeſt Terms of Gratitude; and, even after he quitted this unhappy Poſt, ſuch was their Dependence on him, that they devolved the whole Direction of their Intereſts upon him in the *Engliſh* Parliament, as we ſhall ſhew in its due Place.

THESE Evidences of his admirable Conduct in this Station, need no further Corroboration; and yet there was a wretched Author, who had the Impudence to arraign his Behaviour, even in this Particular, though he did not dare to uſe his Name, and reflected upon him (ſpeaking of the Management of the *Iriſh* Affairs in the Committee appointed for that Buſineſs, which ſat in the Star-Chamber in *England* in 1645,) in theſe Words.——— "That few in that Committee under-"ſtood the Buſineſs of *Ireland* beſides two Gentlemen, (meaning Sir *John Clotworthy*, (afterwards Viſcount *Maſſareene*) and Sir *Philip Perceval*) "whoſe Intereſt leading "them to ſeveral Provinces, much injured the equal "Management of the whole, and he (*viz.* Sir *Philip*) "to whom the Proviſions were entruſted, ordered them "at that rate, as that the Complaint was great."—— The Malice of the Man was very apparent, and equally ridiculous in this Suggeſtion, for the Army was in a manner ſupported by Sir *Philip*'s private Purſe, he having ſpent above two thouſand Pounds in the Diſcharge of that Truſt, and contracted a Debt of above eleven thouſand Pounds for the ſame Service, which the Parliament had never anſwered. Moreover, they had never paid him one Farthing of the Appointments of his Place, which were ſwelled to a large Sum, and his Accompts were, in *Terrorem*, kept unpaſſed, to the Amount of above

above eighty thouſand Pounds, to oblige him to continue his Employment; which, though he laboured to be acquitted of, finding (as he ſays in his own Repreſenſation to the Houſe of Commons ſome Years after) *that he ſhould be ruined by it*, yet he could not obtain that Favour, *merely becauſe of the great Services he did the Army, which no body elſe either could or would have undertaken to have ſerved in that Juncture.*——— But this Author, as on many Accounts he deſerves but little Credit, ſo in this Particular he deſerves none; his apparent, Partiality to the Lord *Liſle*, and his Tool Sir *John Temple* (the inveterate Enemies of Sir *Philip Perceval*) being the ſole Occaſion of theſe abſurd Reflections.

It was by the Endeavours of this Cabal, and their Adherents, that Sir *Philip Perceval* was thus ſeverely treated by the Parliament of *England*. We have already ſhewn the Reaſon of the Lord *Liſle*'s Reſentment, which took its Riſe from that trivial Victory which he obtained over the Earl of *Leiceſter*, the Lord *Liſle*'s Father, in the Affair of the Commiſſion for the Company of Firelocks before-mentioned, and was aggravated afterwards by Sir *Philip*'s Oppoſition to him during his Lieutenancy in *Ireland*, and by their Difference in Principle as to public Affairs. Sir *John Temple*'s Rage was grounded upon other Motives*: He had enjoyed in the Beginning of the War the Poſt of Commiſſary General of the Army, of which he made an exorbitant Profit, till the King thought fit to diſmiſs him, and the Parliament placed Sir *Philip* in his Room.——— The Difference of their Conduct in this important Charge was apparent to all the World, and brought as much Glory and Applauſe to the one, as it reflected Scandal and Diſgrace upon the other. Another Cauſe aroſe ſoon after to heighten and aggravate this Subject of Uneaſineſs, Sir *John Temple* had, by his Attachment to Sir *William Parſons* and the other Lord Juſtice, obtained (among other Favours ſhewn

* Family Collections, Vol. I. fol. 400.

ſhewn to their Creatures) a *Cuſtodium* of the Mills and Fiſhery of *Kilmainham.* * Theſe *Cuſtodiums*, generally granted under a Pretence of providing for the Neceſſities of the Officers and Soldiers, when the State was unable to afford them a regular Pay, were a very great Abuſe: They were Portions of the Enemies Lands allotted to particular Men to draw their Subſiſtence from; but it was ſoon found, that they were looked upon in another Light, and the Service grew ſtrangely neglected, the Army being taken up in the Improvement of theſe Lands, which they conſidered as their own Eſtates, and were conſequently brought with Difficulty into the Field when the Publick Service called them. This is ſufficient, as to theſe *Cuſtodiums* in general; but in particular, as to that which Sir *John Temple* had obtained, it was of notorious Prejudice to the State; for, all the Corn for the Uſe of the Army being ground at thoſe Mills which he had thus obtained, and he receiving the ſixteenth Part for Toll to his own Uſe, it is evident that he put into his own Pocket, once in ſixteen Days, the full Value of what would ſupply the Army for a Day.——This ſcandalous Advantage, made by a private Perſon in a Time of ſo much public Indigence, was intolerable, and gave the Army ſo much Diſcontent, that it was much feared ſome terrible Conſequences would have followed from it. Sir *Philip Perceval*, now fixed in the Employment of Commiſſary General of the Army, and Providore General of the Horſe, having a full View of this enormous Abuſe, could not in Duty permit the Continuance of it. He was ſenſible of the Odium he ſhould draw upon himſelf from many Perſons then in Power, by endeavouring to oppoſe this Grievance; but he had Virtue and Courage adequate to any Undertaking, and he accordingly made a Repreſentation of this Affair to the Lords Juſtices, who being more intereſted in the Support of theſe Practices than concerned for the Publick Good, refuſed to remedy the Evil they had themſelves created.

Sir

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

SIR *Philip Perceval* was not a Man easily deterred from any Pursuit, which he thought himself in Honour obliged to undertake, he persisted therefore in his Resolution to deprive Sir *John Temple* of that unwarrantable Perquisite, and accordingly referred the Case to the King in *England*. The King still retained in *Ireland* the Power of disposing of Preferments, the Quarrel not being upon the same Footing there as it was in *England*, and no Party being yet formed either in his Favour, or in that of the Parliament, the Protestant Part of the Nation being hitherto sufficiently embarrassed to maintain themselves against the *Roman* Catholics alone, without engaging in any new Disputes.——Private Men, therefore, however inclined in Principle, preferred their Suits to the King, without incurring any Resentment for that Conduct from the *English* Parliament, Things being still permitted to run in their usual Course in that Kingdom. Sir *John Temple*, though a violent Man of that Party, and linked in private Engagements with the Lord *Lisle* and Sir *William Parsons*, both Independents, had yet made no Scruple to apply for the Confirmation of this *Custodium* to the King himself, and had at first obtained it*.——But, upon this Information from Sir *Philip Perceval*, his Majesty resumed his Grant with great Indignation; and, being further made acquainted with his Practices, to model the Army, and to draw the Management of Affairs there into the Hands of the Parliament, in Concurrence with the Lord Justice, Sir *William Parsons*, and several of the Privy Council, he sent over an Order to secure the Persons of Sir *John Temple*, Sir *William Parsons*, Sir *Adam Loftus*, and Sir *Robert Meredith*, who were accused upon several Articles of High Crimes and Misdemeanors in that Kingdom.——But the Time not serving then for the Exercise of any great Severity on the King's Part, with relation to such Matters in *Ireland*, the Prosecution was carried no further;

* Carte's History of the Duke of Ormond.

ther; and thoſe Gentlemen being diſcharged ſome time after, Sir *John Temple* retired to *England*, where, being conſidered as a Sufferer for the Republican Cauſe, he was well received, and had a Seat in Parliament ſoon after provided for him.——— We ſhall leave him there for ſome time, endeavouring, by all the worſt and moſt malicious Arts, to revenge himſelf upon Sir *Philip Perceval*, who had wounded both his Intereſt and Reputation in ſo deep a Manner; the firſt, in having deprived him of this *Cuſtodium* in the Way we have ſhewn; the latter, in having obtained the ſame *Cuſtodium* himſelf*, and in rejecting abſolutely at the ſame time all manner of Profit from it, delivering out the whole Quantity of Corn, which was brought in to be ground at the Mills before-mentioned, to the Uſe of the Army, not even deducting the Charge of the Labourers employed in the Grinding, or the neceſſary Expences incident to the Reparation of them; all which was very conſiderable, and a generous and voluntary Contribution to the Public Service, among many other great Diſburſements, which he ſo largely made to the ſame diſintereſted Purpoſe.——— The Iſſue of theſe Endeavours of Sir *John Temple* will have their Place hereafter in this Work. But we now turn ourſelves to a very important Point in the Hiſtory of that Time, which is the Affair of the Ceſſation concluded between the *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* in the Year 1643, which requires our Attention in a more particular Manner, as Sir *Philip Perceval* was much concerned, and ſuffered very ſeverely for his Share in that Tranſaction.

To underſtand thoroughly the Grounds of this Meaſure, we muſt conſider a little the Condition of the Parties in *Ireland* at that Juncture;——— the *Preſbyterian* Intereſt in the North; the Church of *England* Intereſt every where elſe, though divided into Parties different as to their Inclinations with reſpect to the contending Powers, ſtill worked together, without any apparent

* Family Collections.

apparent Breach among themſelves againſt their Common Enemy [the *Papiſts*, in the Management of the War, till the Beginning of the Year 1643; yet, during that whole Time, both the King and the Parliament had reſpectively endeavoured to propagate their Principles, and to engage the *Iriſh* Officers and Army in their Intereſts.——Neither Party, at the ſame time, contributed any thing conſiderable to the Support of theſe Armies; as an Inſtance of which, we may mention here what Sir *Philip Perceval* advances himſelf to the Houſe of Commons, in his famous Repreſentation*, That the Army in *Munſter*, which conſiſted of Seven thouſand Men, had received both in Proviſions and in Money, from the Beginning of the War to *September* 1643, no more than the Value of Twenty-three thouſand Pounds. The Reaſon of this Neglect on either Side was this, both the King and Parliament believed the Attempts of the Rebels leſs important than they were, and thought whenever the domeſtic Broils ſhould ceaſe, and the whole Force of *England* ſhould be re-united, that the *Iriſh* muſt be certainly ſubdued, however great their preſent Advantages might be;——and both were ſo hardly preſſed by each other, that they could not afford any material Supplies, without weakening themſelves in *England*. The Parliament, indeed, faintly ſtrove to maintain the War (which they had no Leiſure at that time to terminate;) but chiefly upon account that they ſaw, upon a Concluſion of it, the King would draw over great Supplies from thence, particularly from the *Roman* Catholic Party, which, for many Reaſons formerly given, were leſs inveterate to the Royal Cauſe than to the other: They all perceived plainly, that the Proteſtant Armies would likewiſe afford a conſiderable Body of Men upon ſuch an Event in Favour of the ſame Party. The Earl of *Ormond*, Commander of the *Leinſter* Ar-

* Repreſentation of Sir Philip Perceval to the Houſe of Commons in England, ut ſupra.

my, was wholly devoted to the King, and had diffuſed the ſame Sentiments among the Troops under his Command.———The Lord *Inchequin* had an Army in *Munſter*, compoſed of different Complexions, and very hardly to be determined upon how far they would adhere to the other Cauſe; as was their General himſelf, who was little known in *England*, being an *Iriſh* Nobleman of *Iriſh* Extraction, but thought to be ambitious, and therefore likely to be moved by theſe Advantages of Honour and Preferment, which were Matters more in the Diſpoſal of the Crown than of themſelves.———The little Body of Troops in the Province of *Connaught*, together with the Influence of the Earl of *Clanrickard* there (he being of the *Romiſh* Religion, though a moderate Man) were judged to be dedicated to the Cauſe of the Crown; and even the *Ulſter* Army, under the Command of General *Monroe*, compoſed chiefly of the *Scotiſh Iriſh*, had a Mixture in it of another Leaven ſo ſtrong, that they could not entirely rely upon their Aſſiſtance in the Caſe of a Concluſion of theſe Troubles. They likewiſe knew enough of the Nature of military Men, to be very ſure, that in troubled Times, and as long as any Action ſubſiſted in any Parts of theſe Dominions, if the *Iriſh* Armies ſhould be diſbanded upon a Concluſion of their Work in that Kingdom, they would inevitably concern themſelves again in the Diſorders ſtill left undetermined on the *Engliſh* Side. And thus we ſee that the Parliament could not well avoid a Neglect of that Country; nor were they perhaps ſo criminal in this Omiſſion, ſince the Event did plainly diſcover, that any Efforts they might have made to quiet that Rebellion, would have turned out leſs to the Proteſtant Advantage, than to the private Profit of the King and the Party engaged with him.

The King, on the other hand, ſurrounded by a Crowd of Papiſts, who were well received at Court on the Queen's Account, ſeemed to be much leſs animated againſt the Authors of theſe Diſorders than could have been expected of him.

WE have already ſhewn how far they had reconciled themſelves to that Party by a common Deteſtation and Apprehenſion of the other, and how that ſtrange Conjunction came to be effected between the Church of *England* and the Profeſſors of their Religion. There were even ſome of the *Iriſh* in near Poſts about the Perſons of the Royal Family, who, being Men of great Cunning, and poſſeſſed of all the ſubtle Arts of Inſinuation, in which that People, with a proper Education, are inferior to no other, had continually inculcated the good Intentions of their Countrymen, and their Ability to ſerve the King at this Juncture; a Circumſtance, which qualified their Buſineſs to receive the beſt Varniſh they could put upon it. And ſuch was the Effect of the continual Induſtry of theſe People, that they, by inſenſible Degrees and imperceptible Meaſures, ſuch as uſually work the great Changes in all Courts, quickly made an Impreſſion upon the King's Mind, not a little favourable to that Party, the Leaders of which were wiſe enough to improve this Diſpoſition in the King, ſo fortunate to them, by many Offers of Submiſſion, and Profeſſions of Attachment to his Perſon and Government, which they moſt earneſtly deſired to manifeſt in a full and general Aſſiſtance of his Majeſty to recover his juſt Rights and Flowers of the Crown, provided only (as they ſaid) that there might be a Treaty concluded upon ſuch Terms, as might not violate their Conſciences in the Matter of their Religion (which they pretended had been reſolved to be totally extirpated;)———that they might be protected againſt the chief Governors of that Kingdom, who had lately ruled them with an Iron Rod;——and laſtly, that their Liberties might be ſecured, by an Independence upon the *Engliſh* Parliament, which, they ſaid, had lately aſſumed an unuſual Power, by interfering with the Legiſlative Buſineſs of that Kingdom.

THE Parliament could not be long ignorant of this Tendency in the King to treat with the *Iriſh* Rebels, and could not be much longer dubious what the Iſſue

of

of any Treaty with them might prove.——They dreaded, as we have already obſerved, the Leiſure of ſo many Armies, and they conſequently prepared to defend againſt the Event, by alarming the Publick, by appealing to the *Engliſh* Nation upon it, and by ſetting forth the diſmal Conſequences of the Introduction of an Enemy ſo formidable, on account not only of their Religion, but of thoſe deadly Feuds which had been fermented more than ever of late Years, by the ſevere Treatment of that People. By this Conduct, they propoſed either to deter the King from taking a Meaſure ſo unpopular, or, if he ſhould take it, to animate and inflame the Public as much as poſſible to aſſiſt them againſt this Addition to his Power.——To all this they added ſhrewd Reflections upon the Terms which they ſuppoſed the King would grant that People for their Aſſiſtance, with reſpect to their Religion.——Whether they had this from an Intelligence of the King's Intentions, or whether their own Sagacity prompted them to theſe Concluſions, from the perfect Knowledge of the Temper of the Court, and the Diſtreſs of the King concurring with the Succeſſes of the *Iriſh*, which muſt naturally induce them to expect high Terms for their Aſſiſtance; be this as it will, they were very prophetic in all they advanced to the Publick, and they reaped ſo much Advantage from this Proceeding, that they obliged the King, with the ſtrongeſt Profeſſions of Horror and Deteſtation againſt that Party and Religion, to renounce, for the preſent, ſeveral Steps which he quickly after took, and to make the moſt ſolemn Affirmations, that his Conſcience would never ſuffer him to conſent to certain Points, to which, in no long Time after, he ſubmitted in the moſt ample Manner, and to which he gave the Sanction of a public and formal Treaty.

It is evident enough, that the King had early entertained the Notion of bringing over the *Iriſh* to his Aſſiſtance againſt the Parliament; for the War between him and the two Houſes commenced only in the Sum-

mer

mer 1642, and in the beginning of the very next Year 1643, he commiſſioned the Earl of *Ormond* * to conclude a Ceſſation with the oppoſite Party, upon that Plan.——It appears alſo very plain, that the Earl of *Strafford* had formerly inſinuated this Method, of reſtraining the Spirit of Liberty which appeared in *England*, before his Impeachment, and the breaking out of the Rebellion.——And one of the Crimes for which he ſuffered Death, was his Endeavour to make the King abſolute in *England*, by the Means of Force out of the other Kingdom; *a Scheme too obvious not to occur to any violent Miniſter, or arbitrary Prince, ſo long as the Imprudence of the* Engliſh *will engage them to perſevere in thoſe Methods of Hardſhip and Oppreſſion, and Denial of the ſame common Conſtitution and Liberty to that Country, in which they have hitherto injudiciouſly perſiſted.* Nations thus refuſed the common Benefits of Nature, and the more exaſperated at the Want of them, by ſeeing the Enjoyment of them ſo perfect, and ſo advantageous, in a neighbouring Country, muſt be eaſily drawn to ſupport the Endeavours of any Prince to enſlave the People by whom they are themſelves enſlaved; and Time will inevitably bring on Conjunctures, when their Aſſiſtance will be ſought, and when Men of Figure in ſuch Countries will have Senſe enough to perceive themſelves, and Addreſs enough to convince the Publick, that they ſhould gratify their Intereſt, as well as Revenge, by concurring in ſuch Meaſures.

THERE is no wonder, therefore, that the King ſhould be now Maſter of ſo plain a Leſſon, firſt taught him by ſo able an Inſtructor, and brought more frequently into his Thoughts by the Condition he was then in. His Majeſty having well received the Agents ſent over by the *Roman* Catholics, *viz.* the Lords *Coſtello* and *Taaf*, whom he protected from the Violence of the Parliament, by whom they had been impriſoned in way to the King, and from whom they had made their

* Vide Carte's Hiſtory, ut ſupra.

their Eſcape; and theſe Lords having behaved very handſomely in ſeveral Actions during their Stay there, at length diſmiſſed them, after ſuch a Reception as he thought would give high Contentment to the *Iriſh* Confederates, though it drew ſevere Reflections upon himſelf from the Parliament of *England*.

HAVING thus prepared the Way, and created the Earl of *Ormond* a Marquiſs that he might appear with greater Credit.——Upon the twenty-third of *April* following, 1643, the King firſt wrote to that Lord to enter into a Treaty with the *Iriſh*, and to conclude a Ceſſation of Arms with them for one Year, giving him no Reſtriction whatſoever, as to Religion, or any other Particular. This Latitude, together with the ſtrict Injunction of Secrecy, and an Order at the ſame Time to ſend over the Proteſtant Army to the King's Aſſiſtance, was looked upon by the greateſt Part of both Nations, to be a fatal Step to the Proteſtant Intereſt in general, and it was the more exploded, becauſe upon the Commencement of the Rebellion, the King had ſolemnly engaged to both Houſes of Parliament, that he would never conclude a Peace with the *Iriſh* Confederacy, without their Concurrence and Conſent.—— And in the Opinion of all Men, who did not rather conſider Words than Things, a Ceſſation for one whole Year, under all theſe Circumſtances, was likely to have full as evil Conſequences, and was doubtleſs as much comprehended under the original Intention of that Engagement, as any Peace could be.

THE Marquiſs of *Ormond*, though as much attached to the Court as any Man, and in truth ſo much that he incurred, for ſome Time, the Character of being dedicated to it in all Events, in order to advance himſelf by that Means, had yet ſo great a Stake, and ſo much Reputation to loſe, being in no reſpect inferior to any Subject then in that Kingdom, that he did not care precipitately to enter into this Meaſure, which he knew would render him obnoxious to the Parliament, and to the whole *Engliſh* Nation, and which would probably prove his Ruin, if there ſhould follow

follow a Miſcarriage in the King's Affairs. As much, therefore, as he was diſpoſed to an implicit Obedience to the King, he was not able to effect this Matter with any Prudence. The Hindrance to this Scheme was firſt, the Oppoſition of the Privy-Council and the Lords Juſtices in *Ireland*, who were not yet modelled to the Purpoſe, Sir *William Parſons* being ſtill in the Government, with ſeveral others of the Parliament Party. In the next Place, the *Iriſh* themſelves, elated by the proſperous Condition of theſe Affairs, and proud of the Favour ſhewn them particularly by the King, were ſcarcely manageable by the wiſeſt of their Leaders, and valued themſelves at ſuch a Rate, that they were hardly to be treated with upon any Terms; to which their Clergy greatly contributed, being very ſenſible, that the Care to be taken of their particular Intereſts would not equal their Expectations, from the Continuance of the War. But the principal Difficulty ſprung from the Zeal and Activity of Sir *Philip Perceval*, who obviated, in a moſt miraculous Manner, the immediate Diſtreſſes of the Army, beyond the Hopes of all Men, by a new and deſperate Engagement of his Eſtate, to the Value of 10,000*l.* which yet remains unpaid by the Crown; by this Means he had taken away the preſent Plea of Diſtreſs, without which the Marquiſs could not venture upon a Treaty *, nor could the King's Affairs poſſibly admit of that Step, ſince it would have totally alienated from him the Party of the Proteſtants, which adhered to him in *England*; a Loſs no way to be repaired by the precarious Aſſiſtance he propoſed to draw from thence.

THE King, however ſenſible of this Miſchief, was yet ſo warmed with the Imagination of the Succeſs of this Project, that he preſſed the Concluſion of the Treaty with great Earneſtneſs; and his Orders were ſo poſitive, that the Treaty, which had been interrupted

* Repreſentation of Sir Philip Perceval, ut ſupra.
† Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

ed by the Cauſes we have mentioned, was at length again renewed †, upon the twenty-ſixth of *Auguſt* of the ſame Year. The King, to prevent all Obſtructions to it, as far as in him lay, having now removed ſuch of the Council as he knew were likely to oppoſe it, and recalled the Earl of *Leiceſter*, ſtill Lord-Lieutenant, (who waited at *Cheſter* only for a Paſſage,) as knowing that Lord would never have concurred in this Meaſure, and that the Marquiſs of *Ormond*'s Commiſſion would have determined immediately upon the landing of the chief Governor.

THE Marquiſs of *Ormond*, who had been by his good Underſtanding ſo long deterred from taking this dangerous Step, without the utmoſt Precautions, having now the Council modelled in ſuch a manner as to approve the Tranſaction, and having received a Commiſſion for that Purpoſe under the Great Seal upon the thirty-firſt of *Auguſt*, proceeded in good earneſt in that Work. ——— He had waited till the Diſtreſs of the Army was greater than it had ever been; and he artfully propoſed to the City of *Dublin*, either to accept the Ceſſation, or to furniſh 10,000 *l.* without which he ſaid the Army could not poſſibly ſubſiſt; well knowing, that he ſhould receive a Refuſal of that Contribution, which they were no longer in any Condition to raiſe, and conſequently, obtain thereby a farther Juſtification of this Proceeding. ——— He contrived alſo, that ſeveral of the principal Officers, and Men of firſt Conſideration in the Kingdom, ſhould be commanded to attend the Treaty, that he might receive the greater Countenance, and that he might not bear the Load of that important Affair alone.

SIR *Philip Perceval* *, who was a miniſterial Officer, and was poſitively commanded by the Lords Juſtices and Council to aſſiſt the Marquiſs in this Treaty, did his utmoſt to avoid it, and even reſented the Marquiſs's Endeavours to bring him thither, in ſuch a manner, as cauſed a Coolneſs between them for a long Time

* Family Collections, ut ſupra.

Time after. He was very ſenſible of the Danger he incurred in this critical Negotiation, and laboured, to the utmoſt of his Power, at leaſt to be diſmiſſed his Charge, and to have his Accounts paſſed, (which amounted, as we have occaſionally obſerved in another Place, to above eighty thouſand Pounds) before he entered upon it; prudently judging, that he might be otherwiſe expoſed to utter Ruin, if the Parliament ſhould take Offence at him for his Engagement in the Treaty. A Foreſight which fell little ſhort of the Truth, as will appear hereafter. He urged all this in vain, and his Requeſts were denied him; nay, ſuch was the unwarrantable Zeal of the Miniſters on that Side, to forward this Tranſaction, that he was threatened, that theſe Accompts ſhould be diſputed to his Deſtruction, if he did not actively concur to bring it to Effect.

THESE Threats and Dangers did not *, however, deter him from oppoſing the Demands of the *Iriſh* Commiſſioners to the utmoſt of his Power, both by Writing and Speaking, in ſuch a manner, that the Terms were rendered much the better in that Treaty by his Endeavours, than they would otherwiſe have been, though he had not Influence ſufficient to prevent the Concluſion of it, nor was he, indeed, abſolutely againſt any Treaty, the Affairs of the Proteſtant Side being extremely deſperate; but finding this Method of treating likely to be very pernicious, he would not give his Aſſent to it; and the Ceſſation was accordingly concluded without his Concurrence.

THE Articles were no ſooner ſigned, than he deſired to be quit of his Employment, which he at length obtained, and paſſed Part of his Accounts, to the Amount of fifty thouſand Pounds: yet he was obliged, in order to get his Buſineſs executed, to ſign a Paper, with many other Perſons of Diſtinction, importing an Approbation of this Step, and a Juſtification of it, drawn

* Evidence of Sir Thomas Wharton, and the Earl of Inchequin, penes Comit. Egmont.

from the Neceſſities of the State: which Paper, though it implied an Approbation of the Articles before the Treaty was concluded, was, notwithſtanding, never ſigned by him till the Treaty was actually compleated, and then, (as he afterwards acquainted the Parliament in *England*, before whom he was accuſed for having ſigned that Paper) he thought he had done no Crime in that nominal Concurrence, without which he abſolutely affirmed, he could not have lived there, and without which he had been utterly ruined.

Sir *Philip Perceval* made no Scruple to own every where the Compulſion that had been put upon him, and to expoſe the Folly of this Meaſure; but he was much ſhocked to find, that the Ceſſation (which, as much as he diſliked it, he never thought would have been improved to that Purpoſe) was now actually confeſſed to be the Foundation for an abſolute Peace, to conclude which, the principal Men of the Confederates were preparing, by his Majeſty's Conſent, to go to *Oxford*, where he then lay.——It was not from any inveterate Hatred to the confederate Catholics, among whom he had many perſonal Friendſhips, and particularly with the Lord *Muſkerry* and General *Barry*, but it was from an Apprehenſion, that the Neceſſities of the King's Affairs, and the Solicitations of thoſe about him, who favoured that Party, concurring with his Majeſty's little Acquaintance with the Conſtitution or State of *Ireland*, would lead him into ſuch Conceſſions as would prove abſolutely ruinous to the Proteſtant, and to the *Engliſh* Intereſt in that Kingdom.—— Without being a Favourer of the Parliament, he had ſo much public Spirit, that he dreaded the Conſequence of the Introduction of the full Force of the *Iriſh*, as well as the *Engliſh* Troops, employed againſt him, in the King's Service, on the other Side, which would have inevitably, in his Opinion, overthrown the Conſtitution, and deſtroyed the Liberties of *England* to all Eternity. He was the more alarmed likewiſe, as were all others, (even indifferent Men) to find that the King had been ſo imprudent, as to commiſſion the

Earl

Earl of *Antrim* to raiſe for his Service 10,000 Men of the *Ulſter Iriſh*, who had begun the Rebellion, and had been guilty of almoſt all the ſhocking Barbarities, which reflected ſo much Odium upon the whole Confederacy. The King had iſſued Commiſſions of the ſame Nature to the Lord *Taaf*, and other conſiderable Leaders of that Religion; all which were ſo contrary to the Profeſſions he had formerly made, that it did him a mighty Injury in *England*. And indeed, it grew plain enough, that the Caſe was, (as Lord *Digby*, the King's principal Secretary about that Time *, wrote to the Marquis of *Ormond*) "*he had given over all* "*Regard to what the oppoſite Party ſhould ſay or think* "*of his Meaſures.*" At this Time likewiſe all manner of Care was taken to oppoſe the *Iriſh* to the *Scotiſh* and Proteſtant Army in the North, who would not ſubmit to the Ceſſation; and the ſame Lord charged the Marquiſs to leave a ſufficient Number of that People to ſtop the Progreſs of that Army, which had already done conſiderable Service againſt the confederate Catholics, and had probably terminated the Rebellion there in a different manner, if they had not met with theſe Obſtructions. It is ſtrange to ſee what a Spirit reigned in the Court at this Time, and the Clergy were ſtrongly infected with it, as may be ſeen in all their private Correſpondencies. We have now a Letter before us, from the Archbiſhop of *York* to the Marquiſs of *Ormond*, dated from *Oxford*, the ſeventh of *March*, in this Year 1643, in which he ſays †,——*If you could rid that Iſland of thoſe venemous Men of the North, as Nature hath done it from venomous Beaſts, you might live happily among yourſelves, and be the moſt bleſſed Neighbours that ever this Kingdom had.* And about the ſame Time §, Sir *Philip Perceval* received a Letter from the Biſhop of *Raphoe*, dated from *Oxford* the twenty-third of *February*, 1643, wherein he treats thoſe Northern

* Carte's Appendix to the Hiſtory of Ormond,——Letters.
† Ibid. Vol. III. Letter 243.
§ Family Collections, ut ſupra, Vol. IV. N° 394.

Northern *Iriſh* with the ſame Inveteracy, and even ſays in ſo many Words, *That he had rather be a Papiſt than a Preſbyterian. Let it ring*, adds the Biſhop, *through all* Ireland, *what is as clear as the Sun, that the* Iriſh *Nation muſt ſtand or fall with King* Charles; *all their Safety, under God, is their Adherence to their Sovereign, and all their Honour in their future Loyalty. A Proteſtant, or rather Catholic Chriſtian I am, and Popery I know, but from this Gallimawfry of ſo many new Religions, good God deliver me.*

We have already explained the Myſtery of this ſtrange Partiality to the former in this Claſs of Men; and we only mention theſe two Letters as corroborative of what we have before advanced upon this Subject.———For a meer Politician to conſider Matters of this Sort with ſome Latitude, may admit of ſome Defence; but for two of the greateſt Prelates of the Proteſtant Church, one of them to ſpeak with that Inveteracy againſt the great Bulwark of the Proteſtant Religion, and to ſay, that if *Ireland* was wholly Papiſt, they would be the moſt bleſſed Neighbours that ever *England* had: the other, to prefer the Popiſh Religion, which differs ſo fundamentally in Matters of Faith from their Profeſſion, to the Preſbyterian Opinion, which was only ſomewhat more rigid in Diſcipline, and leſs formal in Ceremony, diſcovers ſomething of the Temper of the Church at that Time, which is perhaps more prudent to be obſerved, than to be farther enlarged upon.

Sir *Philip Perceval* was no Bigot in Religion, no Slave in his Politics, no Republican in his Principles: he wiſhed well to the Proteſtant Religion, both becauſe he thought it more conſiſtent with Reaſon, and becauſe the Clergy derived leſs political Influence from it over the Minds of the People.———He adhered to the King, becauſe he was the legal Magiſtrate of his Country; and he kept at great Diſtance from the Parliament, becauſe he doubted whether they had it not in view to change the Conſtitution, which he thought a Work of Difficulty, and great Hazard.———In this Method

Method he ſteered, with univerſal Reputation, till the Time of this Ceſſation, when his Eyes were more opened, and he was forced to ſee, what he was unwilling to ſee before.

BUT now he began to alarm his Friends and Relations, and to uſe his utmoſt Intereſt to oblige the Government to the Allowance of having Agents deputed alſo on the Proteſtant Side to the King, to oppoſe thoſe who were already appointed for the Catholics. This was a Circumſtance which gave much Trouble to the Court, as they were ſenſible how great an Obſtruction it would prove to the Concluſions they intended to draw with the confederate *Iriſh* alone: they foreſaw that it would be impoſſible to make the ſame Conceſſions to them, if theſe Commiſſioners from the Proteſtants appeared at the Treaty, becauſe they would fully lay open all the Dangers and Inconveniencies to which, without their Preſence, the Court might have pleaded Ignorance, and Want of Information, after the Treaty was once concluded, and the Buſineſs paſt a Remedy.———But the Thing was in itſelf ſo reaſonable, that it was impoſſible to refuſe it.———It is to be believed, that the Marquiſs of *Ormond* was himſelf very uneaſy at this extraordinary Countenance then ſhewn to the *Iriſh* Party, though he was ſo far embarked with the Crown, and ſo involved in Difficulties, that he could not openly diſcover his Concern, and was obliged to concur in it; for it is certain, that after *the King himſelf had nominated Sir* Philip Perceval *to be one of thoſe Commiſſioners**, the Marquiſs was ſo far from obſtructing that Choice, that he gave it the utmoſt Applauſe, and endeavoured to ſtrengthen his Credit in that Employment to the utmoſt of his Power, though no Man living was better acquainted with his real Principles than himſelf.

THE Commiſſioners of neither Party being ordered to attend his Majeſty till the Spring following, we ſhall have Leiſure to ſpeak of the Conſequences of the Ceſſation, during that Interval.

THIS

* Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Vol. III. Appendix, 1644.

THIS Treaty had been concluded without the Satisfaction of either Party, the *Engliſh*, and the Proteſtant *Iriſh*, conſidered it as a Breach of the King's Faith with the Parliament, and as a Ruin of the Adventurers, who, upon the Act paſſed in *England* to engage their Subſcriptions, had been invited by Aſſurances of Satisfaction out of the Lands to be forfeited by the *Iriſh*, which the King had taken no Care of in this Treaty, all being left to them which was in their Poſſeſſion at the actual Concluſion of it. It was likewiſe conſidered as utterly ruinous to the Proteſtants of *Ireland*, who knowing that the principal Intention of it was to draw over the Forces of their Party to the King's Aſſiſtance, perceived that they ſhould now be left wholly to the Mercy of their Enemy, againſt whom they had no Security or Defence, but what ſhould ariſe from their Truth and Faith, upon which they ſeemed to have but a very ſlender Dependance. In general, the whole Nation entertained very deſperate Apprehenſions of the Conſequence of this Meaſure; and moſt Men thought it better to have ſtruggled in the Continuance of the War through all their Difficulties, than to have thus compounded with the *Iriſh*, who were left in quiet Poſſeſſion of near three Fourths of the whole Country by this Agreement, and obtained Leiſure to ſtrengthen themſelves from abroad, and to ſettle their Affairs among themſelves, in a better manner than they could ever have done without it.—— They ſaid, that the King might at leaſt have afforded, on his Part, as the Parliament had done on theirs, ſome little Aſſiſtance, which, had it been never ſo inconſiderable, would ſtill have enabled them to have ſtood their Ground; and that their Diſtreſſes were purely created to ſerve as a Juſtification of, and to induce a Neceſſity for this Meaſure: in which they appeared to have ſome Reaſon, from the Supplies which they received, in a pretty good Proportion, as ſoon as the Treaty was concluded, in order to enable the Troops to go over to the King.

ON

On the other hand, the confederate *Iriſh* in general, and their Clergy in particular, were equally violent againſt it; *the latter*, becauſe there was not ſo total and ample a Proviſion for their joint Intereſt, as they had flattered themſelves to expect; *the former*, from a general View of their Affairs, which carried, doubtleſs, a better, and more promiſing Aſpect, than they had ever borne before. The Vulgar, who judge ſuperficially of things, conſidered little farther than their preſent Condition. ——— They found the *Engliſh* weak, divided, and unprovided of all Neceſſaries, penned up in a narrow Corner in *Munſter*, confined almoſt to one City in *Leinſter*, themſelves, in a manner, Maſters of *Connaught*, and able enough, with a ſmall Part of their Force, to make Head againſt the Army in *Ulſter*, under the Command of General *Monroe*. All this created Diſcontents among them, and even ſome Diſtruſt of their Commanders.——— But their leading Men, the Lords *Mountgarret*, *Taaf*, *Muſkerry*, *Dillon*, and *Caſtlehaven*, *&c.* had both their public and their private Reaſons, which indiſputably engaged them to enter upon this Treaty. As to the Public, they had Senſe enough to know, (though the People had not) that the Diſparity was ſuch between the Force of the *Engliſh* Nation, and their own, and that Force ſo firmly united, both in Principle and Intereſt, againſt them, that nothing could prevent their Ruin, if they did not make their Peace before the Concluſion of the Troubles in *England*.———They well underſtood their ſingular good Fortune in the preſent favourable Diſpoſition of the King to them, who was more propitious, both to their Cauſe and Nation, than any of his Predeceſſors had ever been, or would probably ever be again. They ſaw his Affairs reduced to that Degree, that they abſolutely required all the Aſſiſtance they could give him, and they foreſaw their own Deſtruction in the Victory of the Parliament; they thought by ſo meritorious a Service at this Juncture, to ſecure the Prince for ever to their Intereſt, and to engage him both in Gratitude and Honour, at leaſt to con-

firm the Conceſſions they had extorted from him, if not to grant them every thing they ſhould afterwards deſire. —— On the other hand, they ſaw that by perſevering in the Rebellion, and by refuſing to comply with thoſe Overtures the King had made, they would exaſperate him againſt them, in an equal Degree with the other Party: and that they ſhould thus be ſure to unite all Intereſts againſt them on the other Side, the Weight of which they were ſenſible that they ſhould certainly feel, upon a Concluſion of the Civil War in *England* (whoſoever prevailed) and againſt which they rightly concluded, that their moſt proſperous Succeſs in the Continuance of that War, could never protect them. ——— As to their private Intereſts, they were moſt of them well known to the King himſelf, and had received perſonal Civilities from him, during his Expectation of this Service, and they thought that they could not fail of great and particular Advantages to themſelves, by ſo eminent an Undertaking for him, at ſuch a Conjuncture.

THE Intereſt of theſe Lords was ſufficient to carry their Point ſo far, that the Treaty was concluded, as we have ſhewn, yet it was not in their Power to enforce a ſtrict Obedience ever after upon that wilful People, who, inflamed by hot and ignorant Spirits, poiſoned by the Emulation and Jealouſy of ſome of their Leaders, who found themſelves too unknown, or too obſcure, to receive ſo much Benefit from this Step as the Lords we have mentioned would have done; and being finally corrupted by a bigotted Clergy, were incapable of attending to any of the ſolid Arguments, which were offered by theſe wiſer Men. They meditated ſtill upon that chimerical and impracticable Project, of engroſſing all the Lands, and all the Power of the State, of being independant of the *Engliſh* Crown, and of eſtabliſhing their Religion in all its Pomp and P geantry; a Religion, eminently ill calculated for a trading Country, for a poor Country, a Country that wants Inhabitants, or Liberty, and conſequently very ruinous to that in particular of which we ſpeak.——

The

The Number of Holidays enjoined by it, is a mighty Loſs of precious Time in Manufacture; their religious Houſes create a Multitude of Drones, who live upon the Labour of others, and are neither uſeful in Generation, in Improvement, or in Defence of the State. Thus it becomes ſingularly prejudicial to their Country, which wants the Hands and united Hearts of all its People.———And its Conſequences are ſtill more fatal, in filling the Minds of Men with narrow Notions, which beget the ſame poor Tendency of Thinking in all Particulars, the very eſſential Requiſite to enſlave Mankind.

BUT it has long been the predominant Folly of the *Roman* Catholics of *Ireland*, to hope to maintain their Religion; a thing impoſſible, againſt ſo vaſt a Force as will ever be brought againſt them upon Contentions of that Nature.——— The People of *Ireland* amount in the whole, at the utmoſt Computation, but to *two Millions*, of which *five hundred Thouſand* hold a different Perſuaſion, who being poſſeſſed of all the Lands and Arms, Proviſions of War, and Places of Defence, are more than able to ſupport themſelves againſt the remaining Number; and were they not alone able, would not fail to engage to their Aſſiſtance the whole *Britiſh* Nation, united in an oppoſite Perſuaſion, and well diſpoſed, upon the leaſt Pretences, to engage in any Service in that Kingdom, where their Countrymen have ever thriven ſo well.——— They want nothing better than the Harveſt of a new Rebellion, in which they could not fail, as they have formerly done, to reap immenſe Quantities of Land, at an inconſiderable Price. And were theſe Advantages of private Profit not to be conſidered, it cannot be ſuppoſed in Policy, that *England* would ever permit ſo fine and great a Country, a Neighbour ſo near, and ſo important in its Situation, to remain in the Poſſeſſion of thoſe of a Perſuaſion which everlaſtingly begets ſo ſevere an Enmity.———Another principal Abſurdity in their Expectations, relates to their ancient Eſtates; many, nay perhaps all Nations, have ſuffered in this Particular,

at ſome Period or other, under the ſame Circumſtances: the *Romans* ſeated Colonies in their Dependencies, and raviſhed from the People of thoſe Countries the beſt of their Lands.——The *Goths* aſſumed to themſelves the Poſſeſſions of the *Aborigines* in *Spain*; the *Franks* ſubdued the *Gauls*, and reduced that Nation into abject Beggary and Servitude; the *Saxons* treated the *Britons* with the ſame Severity; the *Normans*, in the lateſt Inſtance, came in upon the ſame *Saxons*, and made a Forfeiture, almoſt general, of the whole Nation, in their own Favour.——To paſs by all the reſt who acquieſced under this Hardſhip, the *Engliſh* prudently ſubmitted to this Evil, which they could not remedy, they became ſpeedily incorporated into one People with their Conquerors, and in leſs than one Century, enjoyed the ſame common Privileges, and were undiſtinguiſhed from them. In like manner the *Iriſh* would have acted long ſince, if they had acted prudently; and they would be found the trueſt Patriots of that Party, who would endeavour, inſtead of keeping up theſe inviduous Diſtinctions, which, both in Religion and Politics, they ſtill ſo much maintain among them, to haſten an abſolute Union with the *Engliſh*, to deſtroy the Remembrances of thoſe Pretenſions, which continually prompt them to hazard the Remainder, in hopes of recovering what is already loſt, and by a ſincere Coalition of all Intereſts, to obtain the common Benefit of the Laws, which would enable them by their Induſtry, their Alliances, and other Means of a like Nature, to recover more, in a ſecure and happy Way, both to themſelves, and to the whole Country, in one Century, than it is morally poſſible for them to recover to all Eternity, by the Means of Violence, in any Conjuncture whatſoever.

WHETHER theſe Reflections may now have any Weight with that People, we cannot ſay; but it is certain they had very little at that Period of which we write; for having (as we have already ſhewn) received the News of the Ceſſation with great Diſguſt, the common People were every where very unruly upon it, com-

committing great Diſorders, and violating the Articles in a very unjuſtifiable Manner in many Inſtances, and giving infinite Uneaſineſs to their principal Leaders, who laboured, to the utmoſt of their Power, to reſtrain their Madneſs.

AMONG thoſe who were moſt injured by the Breach of theſe Articles, Sir *Philip Perceval* was one *; he had ſuffered ſufficiently by the Conditions of the Treaty, which had left 2000 *l. per annum* of his Eſtate in the Poſſeſſion of the other Party.—— Some of whom having hid themſelves in Buſhes and Bogs all the Day upon which the Ceſſation was to take Effect, conſtrued this to be a Poſſeſſion of thoſe Lands, and proceeded with an high Hand to take the Profits of them, as warranted by that Plea.—— About the ſame Time, they ſurprized the Caſtles of *Ballingile*, *Ballinegrah*, *Templeconila*, *Ballimacow*, *Liſgriffin*, and *Breagogue*, all belonging to Sir *Philip Perceval*, and entered upon that large and fertile Tract of Country which is dependant on them; they endeavoured alſo to gain the Caſtle of *Liſcarrol*, bringing before the Gates a great Number of the Garriſon, whom they had by Stratagem made Priſoners, there threatening to put them to Death, in the Sight of their Fellows, unleſs the Caſtle ſhould be ſurrendered to them, which Barbarity while they were preparing to execute with great Solemnity, the Conſtable *Raymond* ſallied out with his whole Force, and made ſo vigorous an Attack upon them, that he defeated that whole Body, relieved many of his Men, and took a Number of Priſoners, which he afterwards exchanged for thoſe of his own Party, who ſtill remained in the Hands of the Enemy.

UPON this Occaſion Sir *Philip Perceval* made very vigorous Repreſentations to the ſupreme Council at *Kilkenny* †, the Lord *Muſkerry*, their General in *Munſter*, and other leading Members of that Party, who treated him with great Civility and Reſpect, and iſſued repeated

* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N° 429.
† Ibid.

repeated Orders to the proper Magiſtrates, to reſtore thoſe Places, and to make Satisfaction for the great Ravages they had unjuſtly committed in thoſe Parts. ——— The Marquiſs of *Ormond*, then Lord-Lieutenant, wrote in the higheſt Terms of this Violation of the Treaty, and Injuſtice, to the *Iriſh* Commanders, to quicken the Execution of their Orders. But ſuch was the Licence of the Commons of this Time, that they deſpiſed all Commands of their then Superiors, nor could any Redreſs be had, till the Lord *Muſkerry* (who had a great private Friendſhip and Eſteem for Sir *Philip*, notwithſtanding their Difference in Party) prevailed upon the Supreme Council to employ Lieutenant-General *Purcel* *, with their own Troops, to re-eſtabliſh Sir *Philip Perceval* in theſe Lands and Caſtles, which they at length effected, about the latter End of *March* of the ſame Year.

And now the Time approaching when by his Majeſty's Command, Sir *Philip Perceval* was appointed to take upon him the Part of a Commiſſioner at the Treaty to be held between the King, at *Oxford*, and the Deputies of the *Iriſh* Confederates. Sir *Philip* went over thither, and the Marquiſs of *Ormond* wrote a preparatory Letter relating to theſe Affairs †, upon the eighth of *March*, 1644, to the Lord *Digby*, then Secretary of State, in which he referred that Lord to be inſtructed in all that was neceſſary by Sir *Philip Perceval*, of whom he ſpeaks in his manner, "I moſt humbly and earneſtly propoſe, that the Supplies for "*Munſter* be made good, according to the Proportion deſigned, thoſe for this Place enlarged, as your "Lordſhip ſhall find needful, upon Diſcourſe with "Sir *Philip Perceval* (who can beſt of any Man inform "you of our Numbers and Wants) and that from that "Side timely Care might be taken of, and plentiful Supplies ſent to *Duncannon* Fort, which is at preſent "much diſtreſſed by Want, and the moſt important "Place

* Family Collections, Vol. IV.

† Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Appendix, N° 244.

" Place to be ſurely kept that I know in this King-
" dom. And now that I have mentioned Sir *Philip*
" *Perceval*, I may not paſs by him without a very par-
" ticular Recommendation, as of a Man exceedingly
" knowing in all the Affairs in this Kingdom that
" hath been before in the War, in the Treaty, and
" ſince the Ceſſation, extremely induſtrious to ad-
" vance the King's Service, particularly, in providing
" with great Dexterity, Labour, and frequently, upon
" his own Credit, Proviſions for the Men which at ſe-
" veral times were ſent hence, who elſe could not go
" on ſo ſeaſonably or well furniſhed. The only Thing
" I particularly move for him is, that if in this Voyage
" which he undertakes by his Majeſty's ſpecial Com-
" mands, he ſhould die, or otherwiſe miſcarry, he
" may be favourably dealt with in his Accompts,
" which are many and great."

NOTWITHSTANDING this extraordinary Recommendation from the Perſon the King moſt truſted, and though his Majeſty had himſelf made choice of him, yet it is evident ſome Jealouſy was entertained of him on that Side; and it ſeems to have been rather the Opinion of the People of *Ireland*, and a Deſire to act a popular Part with the Proteſtants there, than a Confidence in his entire Attachment to that Cauſe, which induced the King to diſtinguiſh him in this eminent Manner: For though the Lord *Digby**, in anſwer to the Marquis of *Ormond*'s Letter laſt mentioned upon the 29th of *March*, 1644, did aſſure him, *that particular Care ſhould be had of Sir* Philip Perceval†, yet his Acompts were only in part confirmed, and no Security given or Means propounded for the Payment of the Balance due to him, which was ſettled by all the proper Offices before he left *Ireland*, and amounted to *Eighteen thouſand and three Pounds thirteen Shillings and one Penny*; which Sum (with a much greater afterwards contracted) remains a Debt from the Crown to his Poſterity to this Day‡. Neither were his Accompts

* Carte's Hiſtory, ut ſupra. N°. 259.
† Family Collections, N°. 415. ‡ Ibid.

compts then taken for all the Sums he had expended out of his Pocket between the fifteenth of *September*, 1643, the Day of the Ceſſation, and the fifteenth of *March*, 1644, when he left that Kingdom, which amounted to ſeveral thouſand Pounds; though he had been prevailed upon with the utmoſt Reluctance to continue in the Exerciſe of his Charge till that Time.

Sir *Philip Perceval* continued ſome time at *Oxford* before the Commencement of the Treaty, but it was not long before Miniſters there, diſcovered his Principles and Temper not to be ſuch as would entirely ſuit with the Projects of the Court at that Juncture.——Great Endeavours were uſed to engage him in the ſame Meaſures, and to make him a Promoter of them. The Caſe being, as my Lord *Digby* wrote to the Marquis of *Ormond* about that Time*; "*That every Miniſter there apprehended the Neceſſity* "*of a Peace with the* Iriſh *for the Support of their* "*Affairs there*; *but every Body alſo was ſeeking, as the* "*Ape did, to pull the Cheſnuts out of the Fire with the* "*Puppies Foot, and to caſt off the Counſel of granting the* "Iriſh *any thing at all to his Neighbour.*" They went ſo far in this Matter, as to intimate the Offer of an *Engliſh* Peerage, and other Preferments of a very profitable Kind, to Sir *Philip*, as he relates himſelf in his Letter of the fifteenth Day of *May*, 1644†, to the Earl of *Ormond*; but neither his Conſcience or Prudence would ſuffer him to do all that was expected of him, ſo that a great Coolneſs grew to him in theſe Quarters; and thoſe Difficulties relating to his Accompts were laid in his Way, either out of Revenge, or to induce him farther, for his Security, to fall into thoſe Meaſures.

Notwithstanding this, the outward Shew of Civility and Reſpect was well maintained, though the greateſt Vigour and Reſolution was exerted on the Side of

* Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Appendix, N°. 285. Oxford, May 9, 1644. † Family Collections, ut ſupra.

of Sir *Philip Perceval* and his Collegues, who behaved with great Courage in oppoſing the Demands of the *Iriſh**, which, by their Conſequences, tended to throw the whole Power of the State into their Hands, and to render the Proteſtant Religion and Proteſtant Party more dependant and ſubordinate to them than they ever had themſelves been to the other. The ſolid and noble Arguments uſed by Sir *Philip Perceval* on this Occaſion†, are of very great Force and Beauty; but theſe Debates are too prolix and numerous to be inſerted here. In this Tranſaction he bore the principal Part, as his Writings and Papers ſhew; and he had ſo much the Advantage of the oppoſite Party in his Method and Manner‡, that the King's Privy Council, who wiſhed Succeſs to the *Iriſh* Commiſſioners, and the *Iriſh* Commiſſioners themſelves, both conſcious of it, ſhortened their Debates, and contrived that their Meetings ſhould be as few as poſſible.

IT is more than probable, that the Marquis of *Ormond* and Sir *Philip Perceval* acted in Concert upon this Occaſion§; for, in the Lord *Digby*'s Letter laſt mentioned to the Marquis, he complains there, *That the Marquis had never given his Opinion any Way upon the intended Peace, though much ſollicited to it*; and, at the Time of the Treaty, Sir *Philip* correſponded with the Marquis in a very free Manner. The following Extract of one of his Letters, dated from *Oxford* the 23d of *May*, 1644, may be properly enough inſerted here, as it ſhews not only the Friendſhip of Sir *Philip* to the Marquis, but a little of the Nature of the Proceedings of the Court in that Tranſaction.

——" At our firſt Coming, ſays he, we kiſſed the " King's Hand‖, and received noble Uſage, as I for- " merly wrote. After a while, we were put three " Queries

* Borlaey's Hiſtory of the Iriſh Inſurrections.

† Family Collections

‡ Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Appendix. Letter from Sir Philip Perceval to the Marquis of Ormond, N°. 296.

§ Ibid. N°. 296. ‖ Ibid.

" Queries by Sir *John Colepepper*, the Earl of *Briſtol*, " the Earl of *Portland*, Lord *Digby*, Mr. Secretary " *Nicholas*, and Sir *Edward Hide*, upon the Propo- " ſitions of the *Iriſh*;——the Unuſualneſs and Dan- " gerouſneſs whereof, the ſtrict Injunction of Secrecy " (while the others took Liberty to diſcourſe the Par- " ticulars in Queſtion, and to ſhew the Reaſonableneſs " of their Side to divers of both Sexes) together with " ſome ſtrange Reports, (which I forbear to mention) " gave us, firſt, Cauſe to be more wary in our written " Anſwer, conceiving, (not altogether without Ground) " that we ſhould, in due Time, have been acquainted " with what the *Iriſh* moſt inſiſted on, what they " waved, and what they inclined to grant, that we " might come to cloſer Fight.

" On *Saturday* laſt the *Iriſh* were diſpatched, and " two of them gone to *Exeter*. On *Tueſday* the reſt " went away unknown to any of us.——* The Agents " of the Proteſtants obſerved the *Iriſh* high, and " courted by divers, and themſelves, even by their " Acquaintance (as they thought) neglected, and us " ſo reſerved towards them, that they ſeemed not to " take it well of us, or others. Afterwards they took " Counſel, ſuch as they could find here, and made " Propoſitions more diſliked, yet warranted (as they " ſay) by their Inſtructions, approved by the Board, " and by moſt of the Lords, conceived to be, in them- " ſelves, more juſt than others, if the Times were ſea- " ſonable: The Copies of all, I am confident, are " ſent to your Lordſhip.

" The King, ſeeing that at this Time he could " not make a Peace with any Security, and without " granting ſuch Things as ſcarce any of his Council " durſt adviſe, reſolved to continue the Ceſſation, " as the leaſt Danger, and was pleaſed to let me know " as

* Note, that theſe *Proteſtant Agents* were diſtinct from the *Commiſſioners*, who were either ſummoned by the King to attend the Treaty, or ſent by the State.——The Agents were private Perſons, who were ſent by a buſy Party of the Proteſtants, without any regular Authority, to diſturb the Proceedings of the reſt, and took upon them to interfere in this Treaty, as Perſons of great Conſequence.

" as much; at which Time he did tell me too how " abundantly he was ſatisfied with your Lordſhip, and " I made bold to acquaint his Majeſty, what extraordi- " nary Burthens you have borne for his Service, whereof " he did proteſt he was very ſenſible.

" ON *Wedneſday* this was approved by almoſt eve- " ry one of the Council, conſented to by the Lord " *Muſkerry* (as the King did tell me) and ordered to " be the Debate of the next Day.

" THE next Day his Majeſty was adviſed to go " to *Reading*, and at the ſame Time the ſame Party " did (as I doubt) adviſe to caſt Part of the Burthen " of this Buſineſs on your Lordſhip. I confeſs, I did " expreſs a greater Senſe of it in your Lordſhip's Be- " half than perhaps became me; and did let them " that rule moſt, know, how much eaſier it would be " for them to give the *Iriſh* Content *here*, than for " your Lordſhip *there*; how you had, for his Maje- " ſty's Service, already gained the Envy of the *Scotiſh* " Nation, and of the Parliament; and that they would " put you into the ſame Danger with the reſt of the " Nation of *England*, and of the *Iriſh* too, who pro- " bably will demand, or do ſomething that your Good- " neſs would not brook.

" THEY ſcarcely ever conferred with the Agents " from *Ireland*'s Proteſtant Party, or us, to ſee how " things might be moderated; but were glad, as ſome " ſay, of any Occaſion to put the Burden (which is " dangerous,) on others; and yet they ſeem to have " granted the things moſt oppoſed.——

THUS ended the famous Treaty at *Oxford* with the King and the *Iriſh*, in which his Majeſty ſuffered manifeſtly in a high Degree; for, to the great Confuſion of his Miniſters at *Oxford*, there aroſe an Impoſſibility, from the nature of the Demands of the *Iriſh*, to comply with them; though the Scruple was not, whether they were proper to be granted (a Matter, as their Affairs then ſtood, little conſidered;) but whether any Man could publickly own himſelf the Adviſer of ſuch Methods, which none had the Hardi-

neſs to do.——In the next place, the Troops which the King had already drawn from *Ireland* ſoon after the Ceſſation, were all diſperſed or cut to-pieces upon their very firſt Landing in *Cheſhire*, and elſewhere: and thoſe formidable Bodies of the *Iriſh*, intended to be raiſed under the Marquis of *Antrim* and the Lord *Taaf* *, were brought to nothing, by the Difficulties created by the ſupreme Council of *Kilkenny*, who, jealous of the Merit which thoſe Lords would claim, and, meditating ſtill further Confuſion, by the Inſtigation of the Bigots among them, refuſed their Concurrence to this Project: So that, in reality, the King obtained nothing by many extraordinary Meaſures, and the Negociations of one whole Year, but what was the Reſult of his having proved to the Publick the Truth of all the Scandal which the Parliament had thrown on him upon this very Account.

One of the firſt, and moſt immediate Conſequences of this Affair, was the Defection of the Lord *Inchequin*, together with all the *Munſter* Army, from the King to the Parliament; for which that Lord aſſigned, as his Reaſon, the manifeſt Partiality of the King's Party to the *Iriſh*, and the ruinous Meaſures they evidently ſtrove to take for their Exaltation, and for the entire Ruin of the Proteſtant Party there; his Enemies have, indeed, aſſigned another Motive for this Conduct, drawn from a Diſappointment which he met with in relation to the Preſidency of *Munſter*, which he much deſired; yet ſo many took Diſguſt at the ſame time at what they diſcovered at *Oxford* during this Treaty, and left that Party, which, till then, they had faithfully ſerved, without any perſonal ill Uſage on that Side, or Proſpect of Advantage on the other, that this Step may well deſerve a more generous Conſtruction.

Sir *Philip Perceval* †, now looked upon at *Oxford* as a *Roundhead*, as Sir *George Ratcliff* ſays in his Letter to the Marquis of *Ormond*, dated the eleventh of *June*,

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.
† Ibid. Appendix, N°. 305.

June, 1644, for no other Reaſon, but that he had refuſed to aſſiſt in the deſtructive Projects of the Court in one Inſtance, where neither his Conſcience, Reaſon, or perſonal Safety, could permit him to join with them, grew very uneaſy at his Stay there; and, finding every Day new Matter of Offence, and diſcovering much leſs Principle and Juſtice than he had expected in thoſe Quarters, he determined to alter his Situation. In this Dilemma, he was obliged to retire to the Parliament, having rendered himſelf ſo obnoxious to the *Iriſh*, by his Oppoſition to them on the Treaty, that he found it particularly unſafe to return to *Ireland*; ſo that, privately leaving *Oxford* about the Beginning of *Auguſt*, 1644, he made the beſt of his Way to *London*, deſerting all his Eſtate in *England*, which then lay in the King's Quarters, and which was preſently employed to the Uſe of the Royal Army *; and, having ſettled his Wife and Children at *Annables*, in *Hertfordſhire*, he returned to the Parliament the ſeventh of the ſame Month.

As ſoon as he arrived there, he was received with open Arms by Mr. *Hollis*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and the reſt of the Leaders of that Party, which was called the *Preſbyterian*, in Oppoſition to the *Independants*, who now began to raiſe a more inveterate and deſperate Faction about this Time.——— Theſe Gentlemen, with whom he had been long intimately acquainted, preſſed him much to accept a Seat in Parliament, which, notwithſtanding his Refuſal of it, they ſtill ſtept vacant, till he was afterwards prevailed upon to take the Charge upon him, as we ſhall come to ſhew hereafter.

He remained attending the Publick Affairs †, though in a private Station, in eminent Confidence with thoſe Gentlemen, who hitherto directed all Affairs, and found himſelf much more capable than he had ever been before to aſſiſt the Publick Service, to which he indefatigably applied himſelf; and, as a Proof

* Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 557.
† Ibid. N°. 557.

Proof of the Credit in which he ſtood, we cannot omit to mention, *that he attended, by a general Order, at all the Committees of the Houſe of Commons relating to the two Kingdoms*; a Fact ſo extraordinary, that we ſhould ſcarce give Credit to it, if it were not poſitively affirmed in an original Draught of the Evidence of Sir *Thomas Wharton*, given into Parliament in his Favour, when he was there accuſed in 1645.

We muſt now return to the Affairs of *Ireland*, which we left yet quiet, in a good meaſure, by means of the Ceſſation concluded, as we have before ſhewn, in *September*, 1643.——But upon the Return of the Commiſſioners from *Oxford*, which was in the Summer, 1644, the Year being pretty far advanced, it became neceſſary to think of continuing the War, or of entering upon ſome new Treaty to prolong the Truce, or to effect the Peace.——And here, the ungenerous Management of the Court to their faithful Servant the Marquis of *Ormond*, was very notorious, the Miniſters then endeavouring all they could to engage him to conclude a Peace with the *Iriſh*, though they knew it could not be done without an entire Sacrifice of the Proteſtant Intereſt, and to put himſelf at the Head of the Popiſh Forces to reduce the *Scotiſh Iriſh* Army in the North, who ſtill held out againſt the Confederates, without giving him any Command for it.——The Marquis well knew the Hazard he muſt run by ſuch an extraordinary Meaſure taken without a legal Warrant; and his Danger was the more viſible, the more impoſſible he found it to get any poſitive Inſtruction or proper Authority for the Step to which he was preſſed*.——Beſides, he was averſe in his Nature to the Conſequences of that Meaſure; ſo that by a very judicious Steadineſs and prudent Conduct in this Conjuncture (though the Lord *Digby*, Secretary of State to the King, wrote him very earneſtly to be leſs ſcrupulous, and artfully preſſed him into it) he had Addreſs enough to ſteer ſafely out of this Danger. In one of theſe Letters, dated at *Ilcheſter*

* Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond.

cheſter the twenty-ſecond of *July*, 1644, that Lord writes to this Effect*.——— "*I am not more ſenſible* " (ſays he) *of the hard Taſk which is put upon your* " *Excellence, by referring the Buſineſs of the Peace of* " Ireland *unto you, than his Majeſty himſelf is; but* " *his Majeſty being neceſſitated unto that Courſe by the* " *Condition of his Affairs here, which would not per-* " *mit him, without great Hazard, to act any thing* " *himſelf in that Buſineſs in this Conjuncture of Time,* " *it is the Part of a gallant Miniſter to ſerve his Ma-* " *ſter in great Streights and Difficulties, by eaſing him* " *of thoſe Burdens which would be heavy upon him.*"— In the ſame Letter he likewiſe preſſes the Neceſſity of a Peace with the *Iriſh*, and an Union with them againſt the Preſbyterians in the North of *Ireland*, whom he calls *thoſe Traitors of the Covenant, ſo much more dangerous than any other, as they are more firmly linked to the Rebels here.* Theſe Paſſages open a good deal the mean and treacherous Ways of acting on that Side, which we mention (not with a View to blacken that Party) but to ſtrengthen the Juſtification of Sir *Philip*, in his Deſertion of it.

THE Marquis of *Ormond* having at length received poſitive Orders from the King to renew the Ceſſation, prolonged the Term from the fifteenth of *September*, 1644, till *December* following; and thence continually from time to time till the thirtieth of *July*, 1646.—— When a Peace was concluded between the King and that Party, of which, both as to its Nature and Conſequences, we ſhall come to ſpeak again, when we have done with the Tranſactions of the intermediate Time.

THESE Negociations related only to the Provinces of *Connaught* and *Leinſter*, and ſuch Parts of *Munſter* and *Ulſter* as were in the Poſſeſſion of the *Iriſh*; but the *Scotiſh Northern Iriſh* ſtill rejected all Accommodation with the Rebels, and maintained their Ground againſt them, and the Proteſtant Army under the Lord

* Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Appendix, N°. 318.

Lord *Inchequin* in *Munſter*, had given themſelves up to the Parliament ſoon after the Ceſſation.——Thus the *Iriſh* became enabled to turn their whole Force upon theſe two divided Bodies of the Proteſtants, who were ſo remote from each other, that there was no Poſſibility of Communication between them. It is almoſt a Myſtery, in this ſad Conjuncture of Affairs, how theſe Armies could ſubſiſt, againſt the whole united Power of the *Iriſh*, and of the Proteſtants of the Royal Party, under the Marquis of *Ormond*. And it is equally ſtrange, that a Prince ſo deified for his Zeal to the Eſtabliſhed Religion of his Country, ſhould have given his Approbation to ſuch a Meaſure, and even endeavoured to unite the *Iriſh* with his own Troops, to deſtroy the Proteſtant Army of that Kingdom.

But, from this imminent Danger, the Proteſtant Intereſt there was miraculouſly preſerved by the treacherous and furious Practices of the *Romiſh* Clergy, and the Officers they had gained to command their Troops, as we ſhall come to ſhew hereafter.

The latter End of this Year paſſed off in Treaties and Negociations, and there was very little Action, particularly in *Munſter*, till the Beginning of the following Year, 1645, when the Earl of *Caſtlehaven*, at the Head of five thouſand *Iriſh*, took in moſt of the principal Strong Holds of that County, as *Capperquin*, *Mitchell's Town*, and *Ballybooly*, the Lord *Inchequin*, with the *Engliſh* Army, being obliged to ſtand upon the defenſive. The Terror of this Succeſs had ſuch an Effect, that the Caſtle of *Liſcarrol*†, which had been before ſo well defended againſt a much more conſiderable Force, ſurrendered without firing a Shot, though then in the beſt Poſture of Defence, and commanded by the ſame Officer, *Raymond*, before-mentioned, who, for his Cowardice or Treachery, was condemned afterwards to Death, though pardoned by the Indulgence of Sir *Philip Perceval*.

The Caſtle of *Annagh*, another Garriſon of Sir *Philip*'s‡, commanded by *Fiſher*, another of his Stewards, was beſieged

* Family Letters, Vol. V. N°. 514. † Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

beſieged at the ſame time. This Caſtle was, by Nature, almoſt impregnable, being ſituated at the Entrance of a kind of Iſland two or three Miles round, environed by a Bog a Mile over, and utterly impaſſable but by a Cauſeway artificially made, and defended in ſuch a manner, that although the Caſtle was almoſt beaten into Ruins by the Enemy, and they had made ſeveral Aſſaults; in which three hundred of their beſt Men periſhed, yet were they in no Proſpect of prevailing, the Defence continuing as briſk as ever, and being eſteemed the beſt that had ever been made of any Place in *Ireland*; till at length, the Conſtable *, leſs wiſe than valiant, conſenting to a Conference, with two or three of his Officers, was treacherouſly taken, and barbarouſly put to Death, in the Sight of his own Men; who being thus deprived of their Commander, imprudently ſurrendered, upon Promiſe of Quarter, notwithſtanding which, they were all murdered in cold Blood, partly out of a brutal Policy, to diſcourage the like obſtinate Reſiſtance for the future; and partly to ſatisfy the Reſentment of the Lord *Caſtleconnell*, who was then in the *Iriſh* Army †, and had ſworn a bitter Revenge upon all that belonged to Sir *Philip Perceval*, becauſe he had refuſed to give him his eldeſt Daughter in Marriage, before the War.

THE Caſtles of *Welcheſtown* and *Templeconila* §, Places of leſs Conſideration, fell into their Hands with more Eaſe; ſo that in this Year his whole Eſtate in thoſe Parts came into the Poſſeſſion of the Rebels.

DURING all theſe Tranſactions Sir *Philip Perceval* remained in *England*, doing every thing he could to ſupport the Intereſt of that Country, and labouring with ſo much Induſtry and Skill as to acquire very great Eſteem and Confidence from the leading Men of that Time; but this Situation was not exempt from thoſe Inconveniencies which ever attend ſuperior Merit and Eſteem.

SIR

* Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 515.
† Family Papers, Bundle 4.
§ Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 515.

Sir *John Temple*, of whoſe Animoſity to Sir *Philip* we have already ſpoken, was at this Time in the *Engliſh* Houſe of Commons, whither he had been preferred by the Lord *Liſle*, whoſe Creature he was; and whoſe Hatred to Sir *Philip* was equally virulent, from the Obſtruction he had given to his Endeavours in depriving the Earl of *Inchequin* of his Command, which that Lord moſt ardently endeavoured, as well from private Animoſities between them, as on account of the Independant Cauſe, which the *Earl* by no Means favoured.———In that Circumſtance, Sir *John Temple* was employed by that Lord, (who was lately made Lieutenant of *Ireland*) as a kind of Manager of *Iriſh* Affairs, in which Station he took upon him, in a very odious Manner, and in a Way very deſtructive to that Country.———It is eaſy to conceive, how a Man of an imperious and revengeful Nature, not governed by much Judgment, muſt agitate himſelf, with the Introduction of the Perſon he moſt hated, in the ſame Employment with himſelf, and by the daily Obſervation of his own waining Intereſt, and the riſing Credit of his Antagoniſt.———Being a Man of a baſe Character, he ſcrupled not the baſeſt Means to prejudice Sir *Philip Perceval*, and actually endeavoured to ſuborn, and offered Money to ſeveral who had ſerved under Sir *Philip*, in his Office of Commiſſary-General, to give ſome Evidence of Male-Practice †, in Execution of that Charge.

So harſh a Character as what we have given of this Man, ſeeming to be more virulent and criminal, than the Motive we have aſſigned for it can in any Degree juſtify, requires likewiſe a farther Proof than we have yet given.———In order, therefore, to ſupport what we have aſſerted of him, as we do every Circumſtance of this Work, with pregnant Evidence, we ſhall offer ſome Extracts of Original Letters, which will ſufficiently confirm the Truth of what

* Family Letters, Vol. V.
† Ibid. Vol. IV. N° 462.

what we inſinuate, ſince they expreſs the Sentiments of the very Time itſelf, and of very eminent Men, who were concerned in the Events here ſpoken of, and were the living Witneſſes of his Conduct.

SOON after Sir *Philip Perceval*'s Acceſſion to the Parliament *, he received the following Letter, together with others to the ſame Effect, dated *November* 1644, from Mr. *Savage*, one of his Stewards, and Managers of his Affairs in *Ireland*.

Right Worſhipful Worthy Sir,

" ——— I thought it my Poſt to acquaint you, " that ſince your going thither, I find ſome ſay that " have been employed by you, that 15 *l.* was private- " ly offered, (by a ſecret Agent of Sir *John Temple*) " to one of them to make ſome Certificate, which, at " firſt Sight, they think might leſſen your Merit in " the Service here, and that being refuſed by him, " with Anſwer that it was moſt unjuſt, it was offered " to another under Clerk, who, I believe, took it.— " In Diſcourſe with me he told me, that no Certificate " could hurt you, who all Men knew had contributed " more towards the Maintenance of the Army, when " the State were at a *Non-plus*, than could be expected " of any private Man, or than any other Man could " do, and engaged yourſelf ſo deeply to keep off the " Ceſſation; but he is poor, and has a Charge, and " we have been able to give him little ſince you went, " and diſcharged him ſome time ſince, and he was " diſcontented. ———

Your faithful Servant in all Humbleneſs,

Valentine Savage.

* Family Letters, Vol. IV, N° 462.

Sir *Philip Perceval* writing to Major-General *Jephſon*, upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1645, expreſſes himſelf in this Manner*: — "For my own Particular, "I could tell you, that the old Malice of Sir *John* "*Temple*, and his Independant Brethren ſo continues, "and takes ſuch a Riſe from the new Preferment of "the Lord *Liſle*, and other Friends of the ſame Stamp, "that among four or five of them a Council was held, "and Preferments and Money offered to any that "would ſay aught againſt me, either of Words or "Actions. ——— A godly Courſe, is it not? and it "was on a Faſt-day too.—— But that God that hath "preſerved me hitherto, will, I hope, preſerve me "ſtill."———In anſwer to which Letter, *Jephſon* returns this Paragraph*: ——— "What you tell me "of the vile Proceedings of that Wretch, and of "the Party whoſe Engine he is, gives me no Sur-"prize, neither Apprehenſion for your Safety.——— "Your Abilities and Integrity are a Coat of Mail, not "penetrable by the Bolts of theſe Men's Malice.—— "But I do profeſs, that if God had given him ſo "much of his Wiſdom, as the Devil of his Intentions, "both you, and all of us, would have good Cauſe to "betake us to our Prayers."

Again, upon *February* the twelfth, 1646, the Lord *Montgomery* (after Earl of *Mountalexander*†) writing to Sir *Philip Perceval*, to acquaint him that the Army in *Ulſter* had elected him a Commiſſioner to conduct their Affairs with the Parliament of *England*, to this Effect: ——— "We removed, on your "Behalf, the only Objection made againſt you, *viz.* "that your Eſtate being in *Munſter* and *Leinſter*, you "would little mind *Ulſter*; which we affirmed, you "would never balance with the Credit to diſcharge "faithfully the Truſt by our Army repoſed in you, for "the Relief of our Forces in *Ulſter* and *Connaught*, "whereof

* Family Letters, Vol. V. N° 554.
† Ibid. Vol. V. N° 713.

" whereof all are now conſident. ——— Couſin, it is " ſaid by ſome eminent Perſons, that there is ſuch " Differences and Animoſities between you and Sir " *John Temple*, who has ſo great Power with the Par- " ty, that it might prejudice your Agency; but I " hope your Judgment and Diſcretion will guide you " ſo, as that you will more heartily manage your Af- " fairs.——Sir *John Clotworthy*, (afterwards Viſcount " *Maſſareene*) hath an high Eſteem of, and com- " mended me for electing you, as the only Perſon " that he thinks capable to check and fruſtrate the ill " Intentions of that ill Man and his Aſſociates."

Montgomerie.

ARTHUR ANNESLEY, (afterwards the famous Earl of *Angleſey*) Son to the Lord *Mountnorris*, who was ſo cruelly treated by the Earl of *Strafford*, being a young Man of very conſiderable Parts, which carried him afterwards to ſo high a Station in the Government of *England*, was even at that Time actively employed, though then only in the Affairs of *Ireland*. This Nobleman, in a Letter to Sir *Philip Perceval*, dated from *Dublin* the twenty-firſt of *July*, 1647 *, after acknowledging his great Friendſhip, particularly in his Care to defend him from the Venom of this Sir *John Temple*, whoſe greateſt Skill (as he ſays) lay in traducing, adds farther, " I find that this Party leaves " no Way unaſſayed to render you uſeleſs to the Pub- " lic; but take a right Chriſtian Courſe, and ſubmit " your Cauſe to God, who never yet failed to make " revengeful Perſons (though upon the faireſt Pre- " tences) feel, that he judged them to touch upon his " Prerogative."

In the ſame Collection we find another Letter of the fourteenth of *Auguſt*, 1647 †, from *Francis* Lord *Mountnorris* before-mentioned, then Viſcount *Valentia*,

* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N° 854.
† Ibid. Vol. VI. N° 870.

tia, to Sir *Philip*. ——— In which, ſpeaking of the Affairs of the other Kingdom.———" To what End (ſays he) " do I ſpeak of *Ireland?* when I ſee thoſe, " who, I am confident, were moſt zealous for the " good of it, endeavoured to be ruined for their being " ſo, and how the Votes paſs for *Munſter*; and ſo " long as Sir *John Temple*, and his Motions, may be " credited, and they who ſupport him; I ſpeak plain " *Engliſh*, and I care not who knows it; I look for " no Good for *Ireland*, for I know how he and his " Confederates came to their Places; and they who " buy, muſt ſell. If I am not deceived, Sir *John Temple* " would be another *Radcliffe*, but he wants his Capa- " city, and I hope ſhall never have ſuch powerful " Support to do Miſchief. —— Pray preſent my Ser- " vice to Mr. *Holles*, and Sir *Philip Stapelton*, and " tell them, I pray God to defend them and myſelf " againſt the Malice of theſe Enemies of the Com- " monwealth.

Fran. Valentia.

We could produce Authorities almoſt innumerable to the ſame Purpoſe, if what we have already mentioned were not ſufficient; but we ſhall not load this Work with any farther Quotations of this kind, ſince we have fully juſtified what we have advanced with regard to the baſe and inveterate Character of this Man, and his Adherents. Let us, therefore, now return to the Thread of our Narration.

The Lord *Liſle* and Sir *John Temple*, finding themſelves unable, notwithſtanding all theſe wicked Arts and low Endeavours, to procure any material Evidence to the Prejudice of Sir *Philip Perceval*, now changed their Plan, and laboured another Point, which was to prejudice very many of the Houſe againſt him, for the Part he acted in the Ceſſation; a Tranſaction ſo odious to the Parliament, that the very bare Mention of it, was ſufficient to raiſe the greateſt Rage and Violence, againſt any Perſon ſuppoſed to have been concerned in it.

it.——This was long inſinuated, before it was thought a proper Time to digeſt the Malice into a formal Charge againſt him, upon which Occaſion he publiſhed, and gave into the Houſe of Commons, that famous Vindication of himſelf, which is ſince incorporated, in part, into the Hiſtory of thoſe Times *.—— Wherein, after having ſet forth at large the great Diſtreſſes of the Army at that Time, and ſhewn how their Neceſſities led moſt Men to judge a Ceſſation neceſſary at that Juncture; and having ſtrongly ſhewn, how far he was from creating thoſe Neceſſities, with a View to induce that Step, he concludes in the following Manner:—— "And if any Plot or Deſign there "were in any, to draw on a Neceſſity, whereupon to "ground a Ceſſation, or an unjuſt or diſhonourable "Peace, the ſame was altogether unknown to me, "who abhorred any ſuch Thought at all Times, and "did uſe all poſſible Means in my Power, to the ut-"moſt Hazard of my Life and Subſtance, to ſuſtain "the Armies in all Diſtreſſes, in the Way of the War, "and to prevent any ſuch Neceſſities; in which pub-"lic Services, I really ſpent eleven thouſand Pounds "of my own Eſtate, beſides divers Goods of my own, "and what Money or Goods I could procure of others, "contracted an Arrear of four thouſand Pounds, and "upwards, for Entertainments, due unto me by the "Parliament for ſeveral Employments in that War, "appearing to be the Muſter-Maſter's Accounts. I "engaged myſelf for more than one thouſand Pounds "for Proviſions for the Army, (having never refuſed "to engage myſelf, or any of my Eſtate, for them, "upon any Occaſion.) I have loſt twenty thouſand "Pounds perſonal Eſtate, by the Cruelty and Rapine "of the Rebels, with the Lives of divers of my "Friends, Kindred, and Servants, in Time of full "Peace, without any Provocation, before any Army "was on Foot againſt them, beſides a large Part of "my Eſtate in Lands of Inheritance, of two thouſand "Pounds *per annum* more; and been at great Charge "in my Office of Clerk of the Crown of the King's Bench,

* Carte's Hiſtory of Ormond, Vol I. fol. 454.

" Bench, to record Indictments of High-Treaſon, (ac-
" cording to the Laws of the Land) againſt three thou-
" ſand of the Rebels, and theſe, for the moſt part,
" Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Freeholders; and (ac-
" cording to the Duty of my Place) proceeded to the
" Outlawry of two thouſand of them, for all which
" it cannot be reaſonably conceived I ſhould expect to
" receive Satisfaction or Recompence, by any ſuch
" Neceſſity.——— I did alſo, without Charge to the
" State, raiſe and arm a competent Number of Sol-
" diers, Horſe and Foot; and to this Day have main-
" tained two Caſtles of my own in *Munſter*, viz. *Liſ-*
" *carrol* and *Annagh*, in the moſt remote Parts, or
" Out-bounds of the Quarters of the Proteſtant Party,
" and moſt ſubject to the Incurſion of the Rebels, and
" thereby continually much annoyed the Rebels; in
" which Caſtle I relieved ſeveral hundred *Engliſh* for
" almoſt twelve Months of the War, until my Provi-
" ſions grew very ſcarce; and that by the Help of an
" Army marching that Way they were fetched off. —
" Beſides three other Caſtles, *viz. Templeconilla*; *Wel-*
" *cheſtown*, and *Bregogue*, which I maintained during
" the War, until two of them were, by the *Iriſh* trea-
" cherouſly ſurprized, about the Time of the Ceſſation;
" they having made it a Deſign, upon Notice of my
" Averſion to the Treaty. ——— And alſo with little
" Charge to the State, maintained one other Caſtle,
" nine Miles from *Dublin*, called *Caſtlewarning*, lying
" in the moſt open Way of marching of the Armies,
" where they uſually repoſed upon all Occaſions, where
" alſo I mann'd the Lands adjoining, which few o-
" thers in our Quarters did, and paid Contribution to
" the Army thereout. All which will, I hope, in
" due Time be taken into Conſideration; the raiſing
" and maintaining of Forces againſt the Rebels, be-
" ing invited and encouraged by Promiſes of Reward,
" by Order of both Houſes, printed the twelfth of
" *November*, 1641. And having performed my Du-
" ty in all that is before-mentioned; I could not con-
" ceive how any Blame could be caſt upon me, or

" upon

" upon any of thoſe unhappy Proteſtants, whoſe Blood " the *Iriſh* yet thirſt after, and who were not privy to " any Deſign, (if any Deſign there was to work or " draw on a Neceſſity) or had any Deſign of the ſaid " Ceſſation, but conſented, or ſubmitted unto the ſame, " only becauſe they had no Means to avoid, or with- " ſtand it, or could not otherwiſe hope to ſubſiſt, or " ſurvive the then inſtant Danger; but I hoped that " all Means would have been uſed to encourage and " cheriſh us, by whoſe Means or Deſigns ſoever our " Miſeries or Neceſſities were wrought or brought up- " on us."

THE Truth of all the Particulars in this Remonſtrance can admit of no Diſpute, (as the Author of the Hiſtory of the Houſe of *Ormond* obſerves, who has given a large Extract of this remarkable Paper) being delivered into the Houſe of Commons, at that Time prepared to take Advantage of any Error, much leſs of any Falſhood, delivered in this Account; and the Perſons who moved this Trouble were all then preſent to have confuted him in his Facts, if they could have had the leaſt Pretence to do it.—— But his Merit was ſo extraordinary, and his Sufferings ſo great, that the Malice of his Enemies retorted upon themſelves, and the Proſecution was quaſhed for that Time, Sir *John Temple*, and his Adherents, not venturing to own that they had intended to bring in the Accuſation, finding that his Integrity, Underſtanding, and Services, were Obſtacles too great for them (as the Houſe ſtill continued to be modelled) to ſurmount.

YET, notwithſtanding this, the Houſe growing more of the Independant Stamp, to which Party Sir *Philip* had ever been averſe, and the Lord *Liſle* being appointed Lieutenant of *Ireland*, as we have before obſerved, that Lord and Sir *John Temple* undertook again to bring this Charge againſt him, and they proceeded in it in the ſame ſcandalous Manner, holding Councils of their Cabal to regulate the Method of it; and continuing to offer Money and Preferments to any who would

furniſh Matter of Accuſation againſt him *, either as to his Words or Actions.

THE Accuſation was at length reduced to theſe four Articles †.

I. THAT he was long acquainted intimately with the Earl of *Ormond*, and privy to all his Plots and Deſigns, and his Majeſty's in favour of the *Iriſh*, and acted all he could at the Ceſſation in favour of them.

II. THAT being ſent to *Oxford* upon the King's Letter, dated in *October*, 1643, as a Commiſſioner with the Treaty of Peace between the King and the *Iriſh*, he aſſiſted the King's Ends there.

III. THAT he did come thence with the King's Leave, and acted for him here ever ſince.

IV. THAT he never owned any of the Proteſtants of *Ireland*, nor appeared with them till after the Battle of *Naſeby*.

SIR *Philip* knew how determined his Enemies were at any Rate upon his Ruin, but his Integrity ſupported him in this difficult Situation §, ſo that he made a bold and noble Defence.———In anſwer to the firſt Article, of his being concerned in the Ceſſation. —— " He ſhewed firſt, the great Neceſſities that ſubſiſted at " that Time for taking that Step, which nevertheleſs he " brought Certificates from the Earl of *Inchequin*, and " many great Officers of the Army preſent at the Trea- " ty, beſides many Evidences of diſtinguiſhed Charac- " ters, to prove that he oppoſed, both by writing and " ſpeaking, in ſo diſtinguiſhed a manner, that he had " in-

* Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 554. —— Sir P. Perceval's Letter to Col. Jephſon, 14 Feb. 1645.

† Ibid. Vol. V. N° 551.

§ Ibid.

" incurred the moſt inveterate Odium of the *Iriſh* Con-
" federacy in ſo doing: he ſhewed farther, that at that
" very Time, he had actually engaged himſelf and For-
" tune for eleven thouſand Pounds, an immenſe Sum in
" that Country, and in that critical Conjuncture, in Pro-
" viſions for the Army; and that the Plea of Neceſſity
" was greatly leſſened by that Supply——He concluded
" his Defence upon this Head by obſerving, that he muſt
" have acted like a Madman, if he had wantonly entered
" into that Meaſure, ſince one of the Articles of the Ceſ-
" ſation was, to leave all Lands in the Hands they were
" then in at the Time of the Treaty, and that above
" two thouſand Pounds *per annum* of his own Eſtate was
" actually then within the Line of the Enemies Quarters,
" who, by Virtue of that Article, had ever ſince re-
" mained in Poſſeſſion of it.

" WITH reſpect to the Earl of *Ormond* *, he ac-
" knowledged, that he had formerly had a great Regard
" and Friendſhip for him, and had even done him ſo
" much Service as to be bound for him in great Sums,
" to the Amount of many thouſand Pounds, during thoſe
" diſtracted Times; which Act of Friendſhip was likely
" to prove very ruinous to himſelf, having, as then, re-
" ceived no kind of Security for the Sums he had ſo pro-
" vided for him. But that after the Affair of this Ceſ-
" ſation, he had in that, and other Particulars, ſome-
" what cooled in his Opinion of him, thinking him too
" much attached to the King's Cauſe, and too indulgent
" to the Rebels; ſo that whatever private Reſpects he
" might yet retain for him, he had often declared, and
" was very free to do it, that he was a very improper
" Perſon to carry on the War in thoſe Parts; and in
" this that his Actions well agreed with his Words, hav-
" ing for ſome Time paſt, (*viz.* ever ſince the Parliament
" had declared him obnoxious to them) never corref-
" ponded with him.

" THAT he could not deny †, nor was he unwilling
" to own, that he had been at *Oxford* with the King, in

* Family Collections, Vol. V. N° 551.
† Ibid.

" 1644, whither he was employed to do his Majeſty " Service, and did his Endeavour ſo to do, (though his " Services were not well conſtrued there) by oppoſing " the unreaſonable Demands of the Lord *Taaf*, and o- " ther Agents for the *Iriſh* Rebels. And under this " Head he brought many Perſons of Note to teſtify how " much he reſiſted all thoſe Propoſitions; how great Of- " fence he took at the Indulgence then ſhewn to that " Party by his Majeſty and his Council, inſomuch that " many very conſiderable Officers of the Army, at that " Time engaged on the Side of the King, declared that " from Sir *Philip*'s Advice and Exhortations there, hav- " ing obſerved the particular Conduct of the Royaliſts " on this Occaaon *, they had been alone perſuaded to " deſert that Cauſe, and to have engaged, as they had " immediately done, in the Service of the Parliament. " ———As to the Particular of his having Licence from " the King to leave *Oxford*; That without that Licence " he could not have left that Place; and that it was hard " to have that alledged againſt him, when he made no " other Uſe of it, than to come immediately to the Par- " liament, with whom he had continued ever ſince, and " been as active as any Member that was moſt forward " to accuſe him.

" In the laſt Place †, as to his being an Abettor of " the *Iriſh* Rebels, he ſaid, that if he had ſo been, he " muſt have ſhewn a Temper much more charitable than " thoſe who drove on this Proſecution with ſo much Vi- " olence.———And here he gave the Deduction of his " Sufferings by that unhappy Rebellion, in which he " ſhewed, that he had loſt the Profit of an Eſtate of four " thouſand Pounds *per annum*, then in Poſſeſſion of the " Enemy, or wholly waſted by them.———That he had " been at the Charge of maintaining Garriſons in ſeveral " of his Caſtles, for above five Years ſucceſſively: that " he had loſt by the Deſtruction of his Woods, Houſes, " and Rents not received during the War, at a mode- " rate

* Family Papers, Vol. V. N° 556.
† Ibid.

" rate Computation, no leſs at that Hour than ſixty " thouſand Pounds, beſides the Benefit of Places for " Life, of greater Value than three thouſand Pounds " *per annum*, as well as ſeveral others, which he had " likewiſe enjoyed before the War, in Value not much " inferior, though upon another Tenure.——To all " which he deſired Leave to add two thouſand Pounds, " which he had ſpent of his own Money in the Exerciſe " of his Employments, ſix thouſand Pounds Arrears ſtill " due to him on the ſame Account, and eighteen thou- " ſand and thirty Pounds, which he had contracted for " Proviſions for the Army, not including the Sum laſt " mentioned, for which he had engaged himſelf, on Ac- " count of the Ceſſation, for which he had not ſo much " as received any Security from the Public.——After " this Account of his great Loſſes, he called upon any " Man to diſprove any Fact he had advanced; and re- " ceiving no Anſwer, obſerved, how incredible it was " that he ſhould be ſo quickly reconciled to thoſe, who " had drawn ſo much Diſtreſs and Injury upon him."

THIS noble Vindication of himſelf, together with the warm Support of his Friends, Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Mr. *Pierpont*, Sir *William Lewis* *, and the reſt of that Party, defeated once more the Malice of his Enemies, who had the Mortification to find the Enquiry dropped, and to diſcover, that the Houſe did not by any Means approve of theſe malicious Endeavours, which they took much Pains to extenuate and excuſe, and with much Difficulty preſerved themſelves from the juſt Cenſure of the Houſe, by a reſolute Denial of the baſe Methods they had uſed in the Proſecution, and by the falſeſt and meaneſt Profeſſions of a perfect Reconciliation with Sir *Philip Perceval*, but how well theſe Profeſſions were obſerved will be ſhortly ſeen.

THE Criſis of this Affair happened between the fourteenth of *February*, 1645, and the twenty-fifth of the next Month, 1646; and about this Time it appears

* Family Papers, Vol. V. N° 562.

pears that Sir *Philip Perceval* accidentally engaged in a Matter which proved afterwards of great Service to his Family §: Lieutenant-General *Cromwell* even then aſpiring to the Government of *Ireland*, he was engaged to aſſiſt him in it. —— And it appears by ſeveral Letters which then paſſed between Sir *Philip* and Sir *Hardreſs Waller*, their common Friend, that out of a real Regard to the Intereſt of *Ireland*, which he thought it would greatly benefit, he very actively employed himſelf to promote this Buſineſs.———Though otherwiſe no great Favourer of the Perſon, as may be well preſumed from what we have ſaid of the Independants, among whom *Cromwell* was ſo eminent a Leader. And this was ſo well received by *Cromwell*, that he ever retained a grateful Remembrance of it, which he manifeſted afterwards to his Poſterity in a very conſiderable Degree, when it was no Obſtruction of his Views to do it.

THE Independants now growing every Day in Power, renewed their Attempts upon him †, and ſo ſoon after as the ſecond of *April*, in the Year 1646, he received Advice, that one *Hill*, who had been Maſter-Baker of the *Iriſh* Army, during the Exerciſe of his Poſt of Commiſſary-General, and whom he had diſcarded from Male-Practices in his Office, was privately ſent for out of *Ireland*, by the Lord *Liſle*, Sir *John Temple*, and that Cabal, to raiſe ſome Information againſt him, with reſpect to his Conduct in that important Employment.———Sir *Philip* neither deſired to prevent, nor could he have prevented an Inquiry into this Affair if he had deſired it, ſo that in the *July* following the Parliament appointed certain Perſons to enquire again into theſe pretended Articles of Accuſation.———But *Hill*'s Evidence was found to be ſo frivolous and malicious, that no Report was made upon it; notwithſtanding which, Sir *Philip* could never obtain the Juſtice of a proper Declaration of his Innocence, which he

§ Family Papers, Vol. V. N° 536, & 544, Decem^{r} 4th, 1645.
† Ibid. Vol. V. N° 565.

he ſollicited with the greateſt Importunity, for above a Year together.

ALL theſe private Difficulties did not diſcourage him from acting vigorouſly in the Defence of his Country †; for in the ſame Month of *April*, 1646, it appears that his Caſtle at *Caſtlewarning* was beſieged, and that it was bravely defended by an *Engliſh* Garriſon, which he there maintained.

THE Diſorders in *Ireland* were now riſen to a higher and more dangerous Point than ever.———For the Treaty ſet on foot (in Conſequence of the Ceſſation) in 1645, as well as the Supplies which the Catholics were to ſend the King, being fruſtrated by the Subtilties of the *Iriſh* Clergy.—— The War was again renewed, as we have ſhewn, greatly aggravated by the Diviſion of the Proteſtants, and by the Proſpect of Aſſiſtance which appeared to the *Iriſh*, upon the Arrival of *Rinuecini*, Archbiſhop of *Fermo*, who, in Quality of Legate from Pope *Urban* the Eighth, landed at the River of *Kenmare*, in *Ireland*, the twenty-ſecond of *October*, 1645.

THE Bulls and Acts publiſhed in that Kingdom from the Pope at this Time to juſtify and encourage all the Violence and Barbarity proceeding from the religious Zeal of the ignorant Wretches of that Party, created ſo great a Spirit among the Bigots and the Vulgar, that the Supreme Council (though not extremely well affected to this new Gueſt, of whom they were very jealous, not only as he had abridged their Power with the People, but as he was evidently ſent to puſh Matters, rather for the Intereſt of the Clergy and Church than for the Nation) were obliged, at length, to congratulate his Arrival, which, however, they did not do till the ſeventh of *January* following.

THE King's Affairs in *England* being now grown into ſo bad a State, that neither Fear of Reproach, nor Scruples of Religion, were judged ſufficient to counterballance his Neceſſities, the Marquiſs of *Ormond* was commanded to conclude a Peace with the *Iriſh*, which was done upon the thirtieth of *July*, 1646. The

† Family Papers, Vol. V. N° 575.

The chief Condition on the Part of the *Iriſh* being, that they ſhould furniſh a Body of ten thouſand Men, for the Service of the King, againſt the Parliament of *England*.

In order to obtain which, the King conſented, among other Articles:

That the *Roman* Catholics ſhould not be obliged to take the Oath of Supremacy.

That all Acts to the Prejudice of *Roman* Catholics ſince 1641, be repealed.

That all Caſtles, Garriſons, and Places of Command and Importance, be equally truſted to Proteſtants and Catholics.

That *Ireland* be declared by Parliament independant of *England*.

That the Plantations in *Connaught*, *Kilkenny*, *Clare*, *Thomond*, *Tipperary*, *Lemerick*, and *Wicklow*, be repealed.

That an Act of Oblivion be paſſed, without Reſtriction,

That a Parliament be held the laſt Day of *November* next, *viz.* 1646.

And that Incapacities for *Roman* Catholics to ſit be removed.

The Conſequence of this Treaty was of infinite Importance to the *Iriſh*, for they not only obtained by it an entire and abſolute Oblivion, of all thoſe Actions in which they had been concerned ſince the beginning of their Rebellion, ſome of which were indeed of a very flagrant Dye.———But by aboliſhing the Plantations, they rooted out the Proteſtant Religion; and by other Articles, particularly that of chuſing a Parliament in which they were to be admitted, they were ſure to put the Government of the Nation abſolutely into their own Hands after that Parliament ſhould meet; *till when, by an Article in the Treaty, twelve Commiſſioners (or any five of them) choſen by themſelves, were to ſhare the Power of the Government with the Lord-Lieutenant.*

What-

WHATEVER Part the King might act in this Affair, who is said to have had so great a Zeal for the Protestant Religion, and Establishment of the Church of *England*, that it was, and has ever been the Cry of his Party, that he suffered as a Martyr for his steady Adherence to it, or however his Resignation of the Protestant Religion, and all its Professors, in so great a Kingdom, to the Mercy of the *Roman* Catholics, or his Engagement to establish his Power (or, as it was pretended, the Protestant Religion) in *England*, by an Army of *Irish* Papists, might tally with his Professions, or how far the entire and unlimited Pardon of so severe a Rebellion might agree with Prudence, we shall not take upon us to determine.———But certain it is, that never any Men acted a more artful Part, than the Chiefs of the Supreme Council of the Confederate *Roman* Catholics, who were at this Time principally led by the Influence of the Lords *Muskerry*, *Taaf*, and *Dillon*.

FOR if the Treaty took Effect, as they really intended, a very sufficient Provision was made for the Interest and Security of their Party.———The Liberties and Independencies of their Country were maintained and vindicated, and assured to them by the Prince himself.——— And their Religion, without providing for the Support of Bigottry, or without the Subversion of Property, established firmly.—— More could never have been expected, nay desired, by any Nation inferior to its Neighbours, after the most successful War.——— Yet this was obtained by a Party of People, who had long lived under Subjection to a foreign Power, and by no Means able to finish the War in the Bowels of their Country, by Way of Arms at least, in so short a Time as was absolutely necessary that she should.———This Wisdom appeared not only in the embracing such an Occasion, but in the Conditions of the Treaty, and above all, in that Stipulation for the Troops to assist the King, who would, in all human Probability, be put into a Condition there-

by to maintain the Articles of the Treaty, which nothing but the Ruin of the *Engliſh* Parliament could ever ſecure to them.———On the other hand, if it ſhould not take the Effect deſired, it muſt ſtill have this inevitable Conſequence, that it would render the King extremely odious to the People, and embitter the Parties in *England* to that Degree againſt each other, that a Concluſion of theſe Diſorders, on the *Engliſh* Side, would be rendered in all Probability impracticable, or at leaſt extremely tedious; and this was the Point the next to be wiſhed by the Confederate Catholics, if the firſt was not to be attained.

THIS was one of thoſe critical Events which happen to States, as well as private Men, which offered once by Fortune, and if then abuſed, never preſented a ſecond Time.

WE have ſeen it hitherto embraced with the utmoſt Sagacity, and Meaſures taken upon it with ſo much Prudence, that the Eſtabliſhment of the *Roman* Catholics, and their Religion, ſeemed now to be ſecured to them, upon a Foundation more ſtable and certain than could ever have been expected: we have ſeen a War abſurdly, raſhly, and cruelly commenced, now brought, in all Appearance, to a moſt fortunate Concluſion for the Authors of it. ——— As we have done Juſtice in naming thoſe who ſo prudently brought their own Affairs in that Kingdom to this Point; ſo the ſame Juſtice obliges us to name another Set of Men, with a very different Imputation on their Conduct; theſe are the Biſhops and Clergy of the Catholic Party, who in a moſt amazing and frantic Manner cruſhed this great Proſpect of their Party in its very Birth, and brought about, in the End, almoſt the Extirpation of their Nation, by a vain and ſenſeleſs Proſecution of their corrupt and private Views.

RINUECINI, the Pope's Nuncio, perceiving that his Maſter was not likely to attain, under this Peace, the high Degree of Authority which he hoped from the Iſſue of the War; and the Biſhops and Clergy not having obtained any Share of the Temporal Power,

Power of the State, nor recovered the Church Lands which they had loſt at the Reformation, Particulars, which they ever have in View, though they will never be gratified in them by Men of Senſe of any Denomination, they jointly and unanimouſly reſolved, if poſſible, to break the Treaty.——In order to which, they convened (without any Colour of Authority) a Congregation of the Clergy at *Waterford*, where they began, by inveighing againſt the Peace, as not having provided carefully enough for the Advancement of Religion, and by not ſuffering it to be proclaimed in that City.——At the ſame time, they ſent their Emiſſaries to inflame the People, upon the ſame Account, in other Parts of the Kingdom; and ſoon after, the Nuncio returned Letters of Thanks and Apoſtolical Benediction to one *Molliffe*, a ſeditious Fryar, who had raiſed the Multitude, abuſed the Herald, and almoſt murdered the Magiſtrates who proclaimed the Peace at *Limerick*.——During this Interval, they laboured, by their Agents, to engage *Owen Roe O Neal*, the General of the *Iriſh* Army in *Ulſter*, to their Party; to which the Proſpect of private Advantage to himſelf, from the Continuance of the Publick Confuſion, made him accede without much Difficulty.—— This Agreement was made with ſo much Secrecy and Expedition, that the Lord Lieutenant, who was gone to *Kilkenny* to receive the Congratulations of the People upon the Peace, narrowly eſcaped being ſurprized by *Owen*'s Army, which marched with the utmoſt Privacy to intercept his Return to *Dublin*.

AFTER this treacherous Action, their Views being no longer to be concealed, and their Party being ſtrengthened by this Army, and afterwards by that commanded by *Preſton*, who was General for the *Iriſh* in *Leinſter*, they threw off the Maſk, and the Convocation declared the Peace to be void, and inhibited all Perſons to ſubmit thereto, or to pay any Taxes, Impoſitions, or Contributions, which had been ſettled by that Agreement; and ſuch was the ſottiſh Bigotry of

the Common People, that they delegated an entire and abſolute Power of governing and commanding, as well in Secular, as Eccleſiaſtical Matters, to the Pope's Nuncio,—who ſoon after, *viz.* on the twelfth of *Auguſt*, 1646, committed to Priſon the Commiſſioners who had made the Peace, by Order of the General Aſſembly, and declared the Favourers of it guilty of Perjury.——The ſupreme Council, ſcandalized at this infamous and unwarrantable Proceeding, ſtill continued to maintain the Peace, being ſupported by all the moderate and rational Men of that Religion. Upon which the Clergy, upon the eighteenth of *Auguſt*, decreed a Ceſſation of Divine Service.——After this, having marched their Armies under *Preſton* and *O Neil* to *Kilkenny*, then the Seat of the Government of the Confederates, they ſeized and impriſoned the Lord *Muſkerry*, and all the Members of the Supreme Council, excepting two (*Plunket* and *Darcy*, who entered into their Views;) and on the twenty-ſixth of *September* aboliſhed that Authority under which the War had been, till then, conducted by the *Iriſh*, and appointed, by a ſolemn Decree, a *new Council* with the ſame Powers, conſiſting of *four Biſhops*, and *eight Laymen*, the moſt bigoted they could find in their whole Party; yet the Oppoſition of the ſober and honeſt Party of the Confederates ſtill continuing to this extravagant Uſurpation of the Clergy, upon the fifth of *October* following the Nuncio pronounced a general Sentence of Excommunication on all ſuch as ſhould ſubmit to the Peace.

The Nuncio having, by theſe violent Meaſures, ſurmounted all Reſiſtance, declared himſelf Generaliſſimo of the *Iriſh* Armies under *Preſton* and *Owen Roe O Neil*, and at the latter End of the ſame Year, 1646, beſieged *Dublin* with an Army of Sixteen thouſand Foot, and Sixteen hundred Horſe.

In the March to undertake this Siege*, *Caſtlewarning*, the laſt of the Caſtles left in the Poſſeſſion of

* Family Papers, Vol. V. N°. 685.

of Sir *Philip Perceval*, was taken, and totally deſtroyed.

The Marquis of *Ormond* was now in *Dublin* with the ſhattered Remains of a Party, divided between its Attachment to the King, and their Intereſt and Affection to the Proteſtant Cauſe.

THERE was viſibly no Way left to prevent the Nuncio's Party from taking the Place, and becoming in conſequence Maſters of the whole Kingdom, but by giving it up to the Parliament Party, who were ready to receive it, and able to defend it. Sir *Philip Perceval*, true to the juſt Intereſt of his Prince, and to the real Intereſt of both Nations, laboured ſo earneſtly with the Marquis at this Juncture*, by Letters to his Lady (all Commerce with the Marquis being forbidden by Parliament) that he almoſt brought him to take that Meaſure, which in the *June* following, 1647, he actually did take.——But, for the preſent, the Marquis obtained a Reſpite from this Extremity of Danger, almoſt miraculous, through the Differences between the two Generals of the *Iriſh*, *Preſton* and *O Neil*, and the Jealouſies of the *Leinſter* and *Ulſter* Armies; the former of which, though engaged in the Popiſh Quarrel, were of ancient *Engliſh* Deſcent, and conſequently dreaded that of *Ulſter*, who were compoſed of the old *Iriſh*, and viſibly diſcovered a Deſign to extirpate the whole *Engliſh* Race, in the Concluſion of the Quarrel.——This greatly confounded the Operations of the *Iriſh*, and the Animoſities among them roſe at laſt to ſuch a Point, that *O Neil* marched off with his Army upon the ſixteenth of *November*, and *Preſton* entered into a Treaty with the Marquis of *Ormond* to ſupport the King. It was this faint Proſpect (though it quickly vaniſhed, by the Inconſtancy of *Preſton*, who ſoon after joined the Nuncio's Party again) that induced the Marquis to alter for that Time the Reſolution which he had once taken; and upon that Occaſion (having obtained Ammunition and Proviſion from

* Family Papers, Vol. V. N°. 645.

from the Parliament Fleet, by amuſing them with Expectations of his complying with their Propoſals) departed a little from that ſtrict Faith and Honour which was ſo bright an Ornament to his Reputation.—But in Juſtice it muſt be added, that this was the only Inſtance of his Life in which he did it.

We ſhall, at preſent, follow this deteſtable Conduct of the Nuncio and his Clergy no farther, than to ſhew that they came at length to propoſe the calling in of a Foreign Prince, and actually ſent Agents to *Rome*, *Spain*, *France* and *Lorrain*; with Offers of the Protectorſhip of the Nation to the Pope, or any other Power who would aſſiſt them with the moſt Vigour.——Till at length they obliged the Royal Party among the Proteſtants (who had been too often amuſed by them, from the Hopes of Aſſiſtance for their Maſter) to reſign their Powers, and to deliver up all the Places they yet retained in the Kingdom to the Parliament, who, acting but with one View, ſoon made themſelves entire Maſters of that Country, which ſtill perſiſted in its bigoted Attachment to theſe Incendiaries ſo far, that the ſenſible Part of the Confederates were obſtructed from making any Head againſt *Cromwell*, who, in a few Months, with a mere Handful of Men, ſubdued them, and afterwards puniſhed their monſtrous Folly and Iniquity with a very ſignal Severity.——This was the Iſſue of that Peace, which, if religiouſly adhered to, would have raiſed that People in a few Years to a Degree of Splendor in *Europe*, which they had never known before, and will probably never now experience, at leaſt as a ſeparate State.

Sir *Philip Perceval*, now entirely eaſed of all Care, after the Defence of his Eſtate, his Caſtles and Strong Holds, being all either in the Hands of the Enemy, or deſtroyed by them, paſſed the Remainder of the Year 1646, in a cloſe Attachment to the Intereſt of the two Nations*, and being choſen Member of Parliament

* Family Papers, Vol. VI. N°. 857.

liament for *Newport* in *Cornwal*, was eminently ſerviceable in that Station, though ſtill perſecuted in a moſt inveterate Matter by the Attempts and falſe Accuſations of the Independants, againſt which he laboured inceſſantly to ſecure himſelf.

NOTWITHSTANDING this exceſſive Animoſity of that Party, the World in general had a very high Senſe of his Integrity and Worth*, which was ſufficiently diſcovered in *February* the ſame Year, 1646, when he was elected by the Province of *Ulſter* a Commiſſioner to manage the Affairs of that Province, and of the Army there, in the *Engliſh* Parliament; a Truſt of the greater Honour, as it was the general Complaint at that Time, that the Portion of Supply allowed by *England* for the whole Kingdom of *Ireland* was very unequally divided, through the Partiality of the Members of the different Provinces to their reſpective Counties: Theſe Differences were then carried to an exceſſive Heighth; and yet his Integrity was in ſo high Eſteem, that he was preferred, without Sollicitation, to this Employment for *Ulſter*, the only Province in that Kingdom in which he had no Eſtate.

THE Reſpect and Eſteem in which he then ſtood, was not confined to that Province only, that of *Munſter*, in no degree jealous of his being employed for another Part of the Country, ſoon after diſcovered ſtill a greater Dependance on him.——For the *Munſter* Army under the Earl of *Inchequin*, whoſe Intereſt he had ſtrenuouſly and ſucceſsfully ſupported the Year before, when the Lord *Liſle* (being appointed Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland* by the Parliament) had uſed him extremely ill, and would have modelled that Army in the independent Way, unanimouſly petitioned him from *Cork*†, upon the 28th of *May*, 1647, in a very handſome Addreſs, to take upon him the Management of their Affairs in *England*.———This was a Commiſſion, as Things then ſtood, of great Difficulty and

* Family Papers, Vol. VI. N°. 713.
† Family Collections, Vol. V. N°. 804, 805.

and Hazard; but he undertook it chearfully without any Conſideration of Advantage, upon this Principle, which he ever profeſſed, that he would always willingly contribute his Life and Fortune for the Publick or his Friend. * The firſt Traces we find of this Tranſaction, are in a Letter from the Earl of *Inchequin* to Sir *Philip Perceval* the Beginning of *May*, 1647, wherein he ſays; " All the Officers about me having caſt out Words of " the Advantage that we might derive from your Aſ- " ſiſtance, if we could obtain it, to ſollicit the Parlia- " ment upon all Occaſions, which all of them did ear- " neſtly wiſh for: I told them, that if my Intereſt in " you could prevail, I would employ it to get them that " Favour; but becauſe I ſuppoſed that if you did un- " dertake it, their Deſires being written, would give " your Endeavours in their Behalf ſomewhat the more " Force, it would be convenient that, along with my " Letters, I ſhould ſend that which the Major General " *Jephſon* will get done as ſoon as we meet; and much " Fear they are in, that you will notundergo the Trouble.

† THIS Letter was ſoon after followed by another from the whole Council of War of the *Munſter* Army, dated the 28th of *May*, 1647, in theſe Words:

SIR,

" THE chief Officers of the Forces in the Ser- " vice of the Parliament within this Province " having met together, and, calling to Mind the un- " wearied Labours and Endeavours upon all Occaſions, " faithfully and conſtantly expreſſed by you in their Be- " half ever ſince the Declaration made in *July*, 1644, " they have commanded me to return you their " Thanks in their Names, and to let you know, that " the Knowledge they have of your Integrity, Worth " and Abilities, and the great Aſſurance they have of " your good Affections for the Advancement of the " Parliament-Service every where, without any par- " ticular Reſpects, have moved and encouraged them " to

* Family Letters, Vol. V. N° 804, & 805. † Ibid.

" to entreat you, that you would be pleaſed to take " upon you the friendly Charge to ſollicit the honou- " rable Houſe of Parliament from time to time for " all Things that you ſhall conceive neceſſary for their " Service, and the Encouragement of the Army, as " you ſhall think fit, or ſhall receive Inſtructions or " Directions from them. And ſo, *&c.*

By Order of the whole Council of War.

D. L.

AFTER this, we find him conſtantly employed in defending the Conduct of the Earl of *Inchequin**, and in preſſing Supplies for the Army in thoſe Parts, and not long after he preſented to the Houſe, and defended one of the moſt poignant Remonſtrances of that Time, which was tranſmitted from that Army to him by a Deputation of three Officers, Lieutenant Colonel *Stubbes*, Major *Choppyng*, and Major *Elſynge*, and backed by a Letter from the General, *deſiring him to engage Mr.* Hollis, *Sir* Philip Stapilton, *and the reſt of his Friends in the Houſe, to join with him in the Juſtification of that Meaſure.*

FROM this Time forward, Sir *Philip Perceval* entered into private Engagements with the Earl of *Inchequin*, to bring over the Forces under his Command in *Munſter* to the Aſſiſtance of the Parliament, which was every Day treated with more Indignity by the Independant Party, and the Army under their Direction. —— Theſe Engagements could not be ſo ſecretly carried, but they were ſuſpected by the Leaders of that Side; ſo that, animated both by a virulent State, and by a neceſſary Regard to their own Security, they reſolved to make another Attempt in Parliament upon him.

In order to which, upon the fifth of *July*, 1647, they obtained a Vote, that no Man who conſented to the

* See Vol. VI. N° 837, 3d July 1647, from the Lord Inchequin to Sir Philip Perceval.

the Ceſſation ſhould ſit in Parliament.*——What relates to this Affair, we may properly give out of one of his own Letters to Sir *Charles Coot*, after Earl of *Mountrath*, then Preſident of *Connaight*.

July 23, 1647.

" TOUCHING my own Particular†, I would " gladly give your Lordſhip ſome Account. " I was, by ſome Kindred of mine in the Weſt, im- " portuned to take on me a Burgeſs's Place, which " was long reſerved for me; and, truly, if I had not " been over-ruled by ſome worthy Men of *Ireland*, " who did preſs me, that I could not, with good " Conſcience, refuſe it in relation to that neglected " Country, I had not undergone the Burthen. Not " long after (you know the Man §) one made private " Whiſperings, and at length his Friends got a Vote, " that no Man who conſented to the Ceſſation ſhould " ſit.——The Order I ſend you, and I forbear to " ſit until the Committee have given their Judgment. " If they make a Vote, that no Man that ever was at " *Oxford* ſhould ſit, I ſhall be content; and, truly (as " Things are) however my Adverſary in Malice did " think to hurt me, I believe he does me much Cour- " teſy, though he may do *Ireland* much Harm; for, " indeed, I had no private Conſiderations before me, " as he had, and I am ſure I have not loſt in Reputa- " tion by it, whatever he has done; and I am confi- " dent I ſhall have much more Quiet at laſt than he. " I crave your Lordſhip's Pardon for this long Letter, " aſſuring you, that I ſhall ever contribute my beſt " Endeavours, as I always have done, for the Publick, " and for my private Friends, among whom I ſhall " count it an Honour to ſerve you. And ſo, with my " Service to your Lady, and Prayers for you all, " I remain,

Your Lordſhip's, &c.

P. P.

It

* Whitelock's Memorials.

† Family Collections, Vol. VI. N°. 857. § Sir John Temple.

IT appears by this Letter, that upon the Promulgation of this Reſolution, Sir *Philip Perceval* reſolved to abſtain from Parliament till it was agreed by a Committee appointed for that Purpoſe, who were the Perſons affected by it; but finding that it was ſolely calculated to keep him from the Houſe, and that no further Proceedings would be had in that Affair, if they could obtain that End,—he returned before the End of that Month, and then deſired that a full Enquiry might be made into his Conduct:——Upon which Occaſion he made the two following Speeches, which are exactly copied from the Original, in his own Hand-writing.

* MR. SPEAKER,

" I HAVE ſeen a Vote of this Houſe, paſſed the " fifth of this Month, forbidding every Member " of this Houſe to ſit in ſeveral Caſes, and particu- " larly if they be guilty of conſenting to the Ceſſa- " tion made in *Ireland*, which I uſed all poſſible " Means to prevent, by providing for the Army in " their extremeſt Wants and Diſcontents, to the en- " dangering of my own Life and Eſtate; yet, becauſe " the Words may admit of a double Conſtruction, " and that I have no Deſire to give any Offence to the " Houſe, conceiving the Intent of the Votes to be only " to diſcover the Truth of Mens Actions and Affeec- " tions, and finding, as well by Examination of my own " Conſcience, as by Advice of Counſel, that I never " did any thing contrary to any Ordinance, Declara- " tion, or Order, of both or either Houſes, I humbly " deſire that I may be heard with my Evidences and " Proofs for clearing of my Innocence to them, That " if the whole Courſe of my Actions (which will beſt " teſtify my Conduct) do ſhew, that I have not only " loſt a fair Eſtate for adhering to the Parliament,

* Family Collections, Vol. VII. fol. 123.

" but ſpent and engaged the Remainder, I may ſtand " upright in the good Opinion of this honourable " Houſe, which I value equal with my Life.

" Sir, I am perſuaded, it is not your Intention that " this Evil be revenged on any who were not privy to " the Deſign, who neither deſired nor occaſioned it, " who were ruined by it, and laboured to prevent it, " and to let the Soul eſcape who ſinned in converting " the Means of the Publick to their private Purſe, or " did cauſe Want or Diſcontent in that Army, " which were the Pretences for making the Ceſſation; " that God knows, before whom I ſpeak, my con- " ſtant Endeavours and my many Diſburſements, and " many Witneſſes, without Exception, I yet have to " teſtify how averſe my Soul was to it, and how real " I have ever been in the Service of the Parliament " both there and here.

" THIS was laid to my Charge above a Month " ago, and a Committee appointed to examine it, " and I have very often attended many of them; but " ſo great has been the Buſineſs of this Houſe, that I " could never yet be heard.——I never ſought this " Employment, nor had any Engagement upon me " therein, other than the Publick Good, and there- " fore I humbly claim it, as a Right belonging " to me as a Member of this Houſe, to be heard; " and, as I am able inſtantly to make it appear, that " the Proſecution againſt me is only for my Zeal " in your Service, I deſire the Orders of this Houſe " may not be prejudicial to me, or the Place I ſerve " for, until the Matter be examined.

" IT is almoſt four Years ago ſince the firſt Ceſſa- " tion was made, which I attended, againſt my Will, " by Command of thoſe whoſe Authority it was Death " to diſobey.——Since my coming away, there " have been twenty, as I take it.—— When, I ſay, the " firſt Ceſſation could not be avoided,——I was ſo far " from yielding any willing Conſent, that I objected " all that could be urged againſt it; and, as ſoon as it

" was

" was concluded, I requeſted that State to be quit of " the Charge, and as ſoon as I could get the Parlia- " ment's Accompts for Fifty thouſand Pounds cleared, " I deſerted my Fortune there, and, with the reſt of " the well-affected Proteſtants, did ſo uſe my Endea- " vour, that we prevented any Peace (then daily ex- " pected to enſue) and that at a Time when no Part " of *Ireland* was in a Poſture of Defence (the North " excepted) and when it was not doubted, if the Peace " had enſued, that Twenty thouſand of the Rebels " ſhould have arrived in this Kingdom, to have kept " a continual War here; and I came hither, contrary " to many great Invitations, when the Parliament " Condition was extremely low.

" SIR *John Borlace*, who was Lord Juſtice, who " confirmed the Ceſſation, and who, by Act of Coun- " cil, required Obedience thereunto by all Men, has " been by the ſame Hand recommended to this Houſe, " rewarded and employed, ſo likewiſe Sir *George* " *Shurley*, and many others.

" NEITHER could any Man live there, but he " muſt conſent to it. The Treaſurer of Wars recei- " ved Money of the *Iriſh*, and paid the Army for " the Time, ſo did the Commiſſary of the Clothes, " and forty other Officers, who have been employed " and rewarded by the Parliament.

" I TENDERED my Juſtification to divers of the " Committee of both Kingdoms, now almoſt three " Years ſince, when the ſame Perſon had raiſed ſome " Suſpicions of me, as I have many times ſince done " to moſt of the Committee of *Iriſh* Affairs, and to " the Lord Lieutenant as ſoon as he was appointed; " and his Lordſhip, after much Time ſpent in De- " bate, was pleaſed then to declare, that he could find " nothing in Word or Deed to except againſt me,—— " and that it was only Animoſity in others; and now " though many of my Witneſſes are dead and gone " beyond-ſea, and when it is declared by the Articles " of *Dublin*, that all Proteſtants of *Ireland* ſhall be as

" free

" free as any here that never offended, I am never-
" theleſs ready to come to a full Trial.

" MR. SPEAKER,——if there be any well-affected
" to this Houſe belonging to that Kingdom, as there
" are many, I appeal to their Teſtimonies,——two
" or three excepted, whoſe Ill-will I have gained by
" doing you faithful Service.

Another Speech upon the ſame Occaſion.

MR. SPEAKER,

" AS to a Certificate alledged to be ſubſcribed
" by me (among others) after the finiſhing the
" Agreement of the Ceſſation, I remember that there
" was a Certificate drawn, and ſigned by all who there
" attended, before I knew it, or ever heard of it, or
" ſaw it; but whether it went to the Effect of that
" now mentioned or not, I cannot remember, and it
" was after that all Things were agreed on between
" the Lord of *Ormond* and Commiſſioners of the Re-
" bels (with whom he alone treated) and I remember
" not that I ſigned it; but if I then ſigned it, being
" commanded thereunto, and being a Miniſterial
" Officer then attending there, by expreſs Order of
" the Civil and Martial Power, it is humbly offered
" to Conſideration; firſt, that my Signing or not Sign-
" ing could not be material, as to the farthering or
" hindering the Ceſſation, which conſequently ren-
" ders that Certificate leſs uſeful any way; ſecondly,
" that my Refuſal to ſign might prove penal unto me,
" as well in Reſpect to the Circumſtances of Time
" and Place, being then among many Officers and
" Soldiers who were then full of Wants and Diſcon-
" tents, and reſolved that Way, as alſo in regard of
" apparent Danger of Ruin and Deſtruction to my-
" ſelf and my Poſterity, in reſpect of my Accompts,
" I having then Accompts and Diſcharges for Sixty
" thouſand Pounds and more. The Parliament alſo
" might have ſuffered Loſs and Diſſervice, if I had
" denied any ſuch Commands at that Time; and it

" is

" is alſo to be conſidered, that the Rebels had then " almoſt ſurrounded us with a numerous Body, under " the Command of *Caſtlehaven*, during the Treaty;— " that the Treaty was held within Hearing of the " Rebels Ordnance;——that the Rebels had within " four or five Days before the Concluſion of the " Treaty taken ten of our Garriſons within four or " five Miles of the Place, ſo that we who attended " there were in danger daily of being then ſwallowed " up by them, while the Soldiers that yielded up thoſe " Garriſons, came daily in a ſtarving Condition unto " the Place of Treaty, begging a Supply of their " Wants, and while moſt of the Colonels of our Party " were attending the Treaty, and a ſmall Party only " of the Army Abroad making towards the Aſſiſtance " of my Lord *Moore*, who was then twenty Miles " off, in Oppoſition to *Owen Roe O Neil* and *Preſton*, " whoſe Forces were united and approaching. In " fine, it is notoriouſly known, that I always diſaf- " fected any Ceſſation or Peace with the Rebels or " their Adherents, and that I heartily deſired and zea- " louſly endeavoured a thorough Proſecution of the " War is very apparent, as I conceive, by what I " have ſaid, and other indiſputable Evidence.

" In all my Words and Actions I have ever ex- " preſſed myſelf well affected to the Parliament, and " have always acknowledged there and here, that we " had been ſwallowed up by the Rebels, if, by the " Goodneſs and Wiſdom of the Parliament, and the " Bleſſing of God on their Endeavours, we had not " been preſerved: And I was before, and at, and after " the Ceſſation, extremely grieved and afflicted at the " making of the ſame, which I then expreſſed to " many of the beſt affected there, ſome whereof " are now here; and I did all that in me lay to hin- " der it, by procuring Subſiſtence for the Army, and " to keep off any Want or Neceſſity, that might give " an Occaſion or Colour for it, beyond any Means " allotted me, and beyond the Expectations of moſt " Men upon the Place.

" In Manifeſtation of my Diſlike of it, I did " (when I ſaw the Treaty was likely to proceed) be- " fore the Meeting, collect and reduce to Writing " ſeveral good Reaſons againſt the making of the " Ceſſation, expreſſing the Dangers which were there- " by likely to enſue to the Religion, and to the Pro- " teſtant Party, particularly, in that it was feared that " the Rebels would be continued in the Churches, " and alſo in the Eſtates which they had torn from us " (whereof I had then Two thouſand Pounds *per* " *Annum*, and ſince much more in their Hands;) and " that it was alſo feared that the Army would be ſent, " or permitted to go into *England*; which Reaſons " I communicated unto Sir *William Parſons*, Sir *Sa-* " *muel Mayert*, Sir *Paul Davys*, Sir *William Uſher*, " and many others, who were well noted in *Ireland*, " to carry good Affections to the Parliament, who " gave me their Aſſiſtance therein, and I made the " beſt Uſe thereof that I could to prevent any Ceſſa- " tion, or any Miſchief to fall upon our Party.

" At the Treaty, which I moſt unwillingly at- " tended, I did as much as in me lay, to oppoſe " the particular Propoſitions and Deſires of the " Rebels by Word and Writing, as ſome Perſons " of Quality, then alſo attending there by Order, " and now here, can teſtify.

" I could not have had any private End or Ad- " vantage by it, my Lands being then in the Rebels " Hands, which I could have no Hopes to recover " during the Ceſſation (which gave our Poſſeſſions to " to the Rebels) and thereof, or for any other my " Sufferings, I could expect no other Satisfaction, " but by a thorough and effectual Proſecution of the " War, which I did moſt earneſtly deſire and endea- " vour from the firſt Moment of the Rebellion to " this Hour, as appears by all my precedent and ſub- " ſequent Actions, and is notoriouſly known to all " thoſe that were well acquainted with me.

Soon

" SOON after the Ceſſation concluded, I joined " with the well affected Proteſtants there in framing a " Petition for Agents to be allowed them to oppoſe " the Papiſts upon the then intended Peace, which " then, and not till then, I underſtood the Ceſſation " was intended for an Introduction unto, I did there, " and at *Oxford* upon the Treaty, do and perform " faithfully all that lay in my Power for oppoſing the " Rebels, and for preſerving the Intereſt of *England*, " according to the Act of the Adventurers, and from " thence I came to the Parliament almoſt three Years " ſince, declining the Remainder of my own Fortune " and Eſtate in the King's Quarters, when Things " ſeemed very doubtful on this Side.

" THERE did not arrive there, to my Knowledge, " or that ever I heard of, any of thoſe Orders, Let- " ters, Votes, or Declarations made by both or either " Houſes of Parliament, and they cited alſo ſeveral " Precedents of Ceſſations made in that Kingdom " and other Places.

" IN *February*, 1643, the Honourable the Houſe " of Commons declared, that no Orders of the Lord " of *Ormond* ſhould be of any Force, and that both " Houſes would juſtify and maintain them who ſhould " oppoſe any Power derived from his Lordſhip, ever " ſince the Knowledge whereof I never obeyed any " Order or Direction of his Lordſhip, but oppoſed " his Proceedings to the utmoſt of my Power in all " Places, and all at my own Charges, now near three " Years together.

" OTHERS, who gave Orders for the Committee " of Treaty of Ceſſation, and all Matters preparatory " unto it, without which it could not have been, and " for confirming and publiſhing the ſame as ſoon as " made, commanding all ſorts of People to give Obe- " dience thereunto, without which it had been ineff- " fectual, and divers others who lived under the Ceſ- " ſation two or three Years, after departed thence, " and came unto this City, received Pay there during " their Stay, and are approved of as worthy Perſons,

" and ſome of them preferred, and ſome of them re-
" warded for their Service, which I grieve not at;
" ——it is far from me, I wiſh them no harm; nor
" can I doubt of receiving the ſame Meaſure, being
" neither privy nor Party to any Plot or Deſign of
" the Ceſſation, but having done all that I could to
" prevent it before it was made, and to oppoſe it af-
" terwards, or any Peace to enſue; and having, ſo
" ſoon as it was poſſible for me to make up the Ac-
" compts of that Army for the Parliament, deſerted
" that Place, and ever ſince conſtantly and faithfully
" here attended and ſerved; nor am I conſcious that,
" in the whole Courſe of my Life, I have been guilty
" of any Failure of Duty to the Parliament."

By this noble Method of proceeding, he ſo checked the Fury of the Attack then made upon him*, and ſo baffled his Antagoniſts, that, notwithſtanding their Numbers in the Houſe, he was cleared with Reputation, as to this Particular, ſo often objected to him between the twenty-third of *July* and the firſt of *Auguſt*, 1647, when he is found again eſtabliſhed in his Seat in Parliament.

His Eſcape out of this dangerous Affair is the more extraordinary, and infinitely to his Honour, becauſe the Independants and the Army were now in ſo high a Degree the Maſters of the Parliament, that Mr. *Hollis*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, and the moſt leading Members of the Preſbyterian Party (who were about the ſame Time impeached by the Army, with a View to clear the Houſe of them) finding all Oppoſition ſo very dangerous, upon the twentieth of *July*, 1647†, petitioned the Houſe to have Leave to withdraw for ſix Months, until the Publick Affairs were ſettled, then to return to their Trials:——To which the Army, who only wanted to free themſelves from their

* Family Collections.
† Whitlocke's Memorials.

their Obſtruction to their Meaſures, immediately conſented.

THEY who were eſteemed the boldeſt and moſt invincible Spirits, of his Party, thus ſubdued, it could have been no Wonder or Matter of Reproach, if Sir *Philip* had yielded to the ſame Torrent.——But, in the Place of Flying, when the Publick was deſerted by moſt other Men, he then thought it moſt incumbent on him to exert himſelf, not only by remaining in the Houſe, and concurring in the Oppoſition, but by advancing into the moſt eminent Station among thoſe few brave Men, who had the Reſolution to act this bold and honeſt Part.

FOR, about this Time the Commons, being juſtly jealous of the Deſigns and Power of the Army, and thinking it might be yet poſſible to defend themſelves againſt them, had new modelled the Militia, which before was of the Independant Stamp*.——But the Army advancing nearer *London*, and its Influence prevailing, their Courage failed: The Houſe repealed their former Order, and voted the Militia again into the Hands of the Army Faction.

WHEREUPON the City taking a great Alarm†, entered into Subſcriptions and Agitations at *Skinners-Hall* to reſiſt the Encroachments of the Army, and upon the twenty-ſixth of the ſaid Month the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, and Common-Council-Men of *London*, petitioned the Houſe in a reproachful Manner, to put the Militia again into the Hands from whence, for fear of the Army, it had been removed; complaining, that the Senſe of their Court had not been taken ſince the laſt Alteration:——This Application was ſeconded by many Apprentices, and a great Mob, with theſe Demands.

1. That the Order for the Change of the Militia of the City of *London* be repealed‡.

* Whitlocke's Memorials.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

2. THAT a late pretended Declaration [*that thoſe who act to get Subſcriptions are Traytors*] be revoked.

3. THAT all Members of the Houſe, particularly the eleven Members impeached by the Army, be called into the Houſe, and act as a free Parliament.

THIS diſorderly Rout forcing the Doors, entered into the Houſe of Commons*, and there ſtood, in a very violent Manner crying, vote, vote, with their Hats on, till Seven of the Clock that Evening, when they compelled the Houſe to paſs the Vote concerning the Militia in the Form that they deſired.

BOTH Houſes, after this great and unparalleled Violence, (which though it proceeded from a good Principle, was of a direct Tendency to ſubvert the Liberty of Parliament) not well knowing in what Method to direct their Conduct, having met upon the next Day, which was the twenty-ſeventh, adjourned to the thirtieth of *July*.

UPON that Day, to the great Aſtoniſhment of the whole Nation, it appeared, that upon the Meeting of both Houſes, that their Speakers, with a great Number of their Members, were gone over to the Army, among whom were many of thoſe moſt eminently active againſt all the late Inſolencies and Actions of of that Body ‡.

THIS extraordinary Event is the moſt difficult to be underſtood of any in the whole Hiſtory of that Time.——They left the Parliament, pretending, that the Riot of the 26th of *July* had made it dangerous to ſtay; but it ſhould ſeem, that the real Sources of that Action could have been no other than theſe; firſt, a Fear that the Army was now upon the Point of making themſelves Maſters of all, and would totally ruin

* Whitlocke's Memorials.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

ruin thoſe who did not thus make their Peace in time; or, ſecondly, That they thought the Army was going to reſtore the King without them, and that they were deſirous, for their own Security, to bear a Part in that Merit.

BE that as it will, it is certain, that this was a Conjuncture of the moſt exceſſive Hazard *; notwithſtanding which, ſome of the moſt reſolute Members, among whom Sir *Philip Perceval* was one, ſtill remained determined to do their beſt and lateſt Offices for their Country;——the Lords chuſing the Lord *Grey*, and the Commons Mr. *Pelham*, Speakers of their reſpective Houſes for the time being.

AFTER this†, they proceeded the ſame Day, with all poſſible Vigour, to reſiſt the Storm expected ſoon to fall upon them: They voted *that the King ſhould come to* London; *that the Militia of the City ſhould have Power to raiſe ſuch Forces as they ſhould think fit for the Defence of the City*; *that they might chuſe a Commander in Chief, to be approved of by the Houſe*; *and he to chuſe Officers, to be approved of by the Militia.*——— And ſuch Expedition was uſed, that the Sheriff and Common-Council having attended the Houſe that Morning, carried back theſe Reſolutions to the City, who, in a Common-Council in the ſame Afternoon, elected Major-General *Maſſey* to command the Forces in Chief; and the Militia Reformadoes, Officers, *&c.* were appointed to appear the next Morning in *St. James's Fields*, to be ranged in proper Regiments.

NEXT Morning, being *Saturday*, *July* 31, the Forces muſtered in *St. James's Fields*, and made a great Appearance ‡.———The brave Members met again, and purſued their vigorous Reſolutions, giving Orders *for ſtaying and liſting of Horſes in the City, and ſhutting up all Shops therein:* They likewiſe received a Declaration from their abſent Speakers and Members

* Whitelocke's Memorials.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

Members with the Army, who, after a very hard March, had advanced towards them that Night as far as *Uxbridge*. They likewiſe received Letters from the Army, in the uſual Cant of their Leaders, pretending to be very tender of the City; but that they laid to Heart ſo much the terrible Inſults offered to the Parliament on *Monday* the 20th of *July*, *That, as God ſhall enable them, they will uſe their beſt Endeavours for Preſervation of the Parliament from Violence.*—Notwithſtanding which, the City publiſhed a Declaration againſt the Army, and in Defence of the Privilege of Parliament, and of the King; and Major-General *Maſſey*, Sir *William Walley*, and Major-General *Poyntz*, liſted the Reformadoes, and prepared for the Defence of the City with the utmoſt Diligence.

In all theſe warm and vigorous Meaſures*, Sir *Philip Perceval* was moſt eminently reſolute and active; and the next Day, being *Sunday* the firſt of *Auguſt*, in the Afternoon, he was appointed by the Houſe, with Sir *William Lewes* and Mr. *Oldeſworth*, *to prepare Letters to be ſent to the King; the Commiſſioners with the King, to the Commiſſioners with the Army, and* Sir Thomas Fairfax, *and therein to encloſe the Votes of both Houſes, for his Majeſty's coming to ſuch Place as both Houſes ſhould determine.*

The next Day†, being *Monday* the Second, the Houſe, unwilling to appear Abettors or Approvers of the Riot, of which the Army complained, appointed a Committee to *receive Informations, and to examine who were the Actors, Promoters, Abettors and Encouragers, or Parties to that Tumult; of which Committee Sir* Philip *was appointed one.*

This Day the Army advanced as far as *Calnebrook*‡, within ſeventeen Miles of *London*, whereupon a general Panick began to ſeize the People§. The Borough of *Southwark* petitioned to be under no Officers

* Journal of the Houſe of Commons.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid.
§ Whitlocke's Memorials.

eers but thoſe of the Generality of their Borough. Many Thouſand Citizens in like manner petitioned the Common-Council for a Compoſure;——but in ſuch a diſorderly Manner, that General *Poyntz* was obliged to fall in upon them with his Troop to diſperſe them, which he did, after having killed and wounded many of them; —— The very Common-Council began to waver; they ſat late, and declared the Danger of a new War,——and reſolved to write to *Fairfax*, the General of the Army, the next Day. Theſe ſtrong Symptoms of an approaching Deſertion of the City, upon which only the Parliament then relied, were very ſufficient to induce the Generality of Men to have withdrawn, as ſpeedily as they could, for their own Security: But there were Men produced in that Age of more than common Virtue; they kept their Seats, and attended to their Duty*; and this Day added Sir *Philip Perceval*, Sir *Robert Pye*, and *Robert Harley to the Committee of Safety appointed to join the Militia of the City of* London, *for the Defence of the King, the Parliament, and the City.*

UPON *Tueſday*, the third of *Auguſt*, the Army rendezvouzed at *Hounſlow-heath*, within ten Miles of *London*; and the Terror of their Approach was ſuch, that the Borough of *Southwark* declared for them.—A Body of the City Troops were beaten by a third of their Number, detached from the Army. The City was in utter Confuſion, expecting hourly to be ſacked and plundered, and fourteen Lords, and above a hundred of the Commons, retired to the Camp at *Hounſlow*.—— Sir *Philip Perceval*, ſupported by his Courage and Virtue, remained unſhaken in this great Storm, and was this Day *Chairman* of that great Committee which the Houſe appointed *to prepare Inſtructions for a Committee to be ordered to go to the Army, as alſo a Letter deſiring Major-General* Brown *to attend the Service of the Houſe.*—— The Time preſſing ſo much, Sir *Philip Perceval reported the Inſtructions* the ſame Day *for the*

* Journal of the Houſe of Commons.

the Committee to be ſent to the Army, and alſo the Letter ordered to be written to General Brown; to which the Houſe having aſſented, they were immediately carried by Sir *Philip Perceval* to the Lords for their Concurrence. ——— He likewiſe *reported* from the Committee *ſome Reſolutions and Propoſals in relation to the ſettling Affairs between the Parliament and the Army*, which were re-committed, and, upon a ſecond Report, being agreed to, were alſo carried by him to the Lords, and received their Concurrence.

It is unneceſſary to purſue this Matter ſo far, as to give an Account of the tame Conceſſions of the City, and the triumphant Entry of the Army.——— It is ſufficient to obſerve, that after this Day the Army were entire Maſters of the Parliament, who never thought any more to act, but under their Direction, though they were kept together for ſome Years afterwards, to do the Drudgery, and to bear the Scandal of the Meaſures neceſſary to ſupport that flagrant Uſurpation.

It is equally needleſs to add any Encomiums on the Conduct of Sir *Philip Perceval*, who thus preſented himſelf in the Gap, againſt thoſe who invaded the Liberty of his Country, and there maintained his Ground, in the ſignal Manner we have ſhewn, to the lateſt Gaſp of the Nation's Freedom.

After this fatal Turn, he left *London*, and went into the Weſt, near *Briſtol*, to ſee the Duke of *Ormond*, and ſome of his Relations in that Country*; from thence he went to *Cambridge* to viſit his Son, then eſtabliſhed at that Univerſity; and after that remained at *Audley-End*, with the Earl of *Suffolk*, who was his great Friend, for a conſiderable Time, thinking by this entire Neglect of public Affairs (in which he could be no longer ſerviceable) to leſſen the Keenneſs of the Malice of the Party, which he had ſo long, though ſo unſucceſsfully oppoſed.

But

* Family Collections ut ſupra, Vol. VI. N° 906.

BUT they had already met with too much Obſtruction from his Activity, and retained too much Fear of his Parts and Courage, not to endeavour to prevent his Return, to diſturb them any more in that Station, where his Place was ſtill open for him.———How to bring about his Ruin was then grown the more difficult, ſince he had been ſo honourably cleared, as to that important Particular of his Concernment in the Treaty of Ceſſation.——But the Lord *Liſle*, and Sir *John Temple*, purſuing ſtill their ancient Virulence againſt him, were very active in this honourable Employment; and proceeded with ſo much Diligence, that during the Abſence of Sir *Philip Perceval* they procured one *Richard Wine* †, who had been an Agent under *Hill*, the chief Baker of the *Iriſh* Army, formerly mentioned, to come up to *London*, to renew the Charge againſt Sir *Philip*, with relation to the Exerciſe of his Place as Commiſſary-General in that Army.

WE have already obſerved, that this Complaint had been referred in *July* 1646, to certain Perſons, appointed by the Houſe of Commons to make Enquiry into it; but the Depoſitions of *Hill* appeared ſo frivolous and malicious, that they could not find any Matter to ground the leaſt Cenſure upon: the utmoſt Effects of their Fury at that Time could extend no farther, than to make no Report at all, and to leave the Matter in ſuſpence, to be taken up again when a more favourable Opportunity ſhould offer.

THEY imagined that this Opportunity was now come: the Independants being without Controll in Parliament, they thought * their Numbers ſufficient to carry any Point. This *Wine* was therefore directed to preſent a Petition in *Hill* his Maſter's Name, that the Examination of his Maſter's former Complaint, in *July* 1646, might be revived; which Petition he delivered in, both to the Houſe of Lords and Commons, upon the eighteenth of *September*, 1647.

SIR

† Family Letters, Vol. VI. N°. 912.
* Ibid.

Sir *Philip Perceval*, alarmed at this new Attack, but fortified in his Integrity, returned to Parliament §, and took his Seat again before the twenty-firſt of that Month.

The twenty-eighth of *September* was the Day appointed for the Conſideration of this Petition *. But he defended himſelf ſo handſomely on that Occaſion, and the Malice of his Enemies appeared in ſo ſtrong a Light, that the Houſe, even as it was then modelled, would not proceed any farther in it at that Time.—— The Perſons ſo inveterate againſt him, being obliged to content themſelves once more with leaving the Matter in a State of Suſpence.

Sir *Philip Perceval*, conſcious of his own Innocence †, and well knowing, that as Affairs then went, this Delay, (which was evidently intended to his Prejudice) would prove fatal to him, upon the fourth of *October*, with his uſual Spirit, petitioned the Houſe "That the ſaid *Wine*, being a Perſon of wretched Cha- "racter, and of no Note, and his own Character being "ſo much concerned by his vile Suggeſtions, might be "required to give Security to be forth-coming when "the Matter of his Complaint ſhould be heard. He "ſhewed alſo, that the Allegations of this Petition, and "the Facts of which he was accuſed, had been long "before ſufficiently and fully canvaſſed by the Order of "the Houſe, to his own Honour. He likewiſe ſet forth "the Malice of the Proſecution, and the Baſeneſs of Sir "*John Temple*, and the reſt of his Enemies, concluding "with an earneſt Prayer to be immediately examined."

The Houſe received the Petition, but proceeded not upon it; and in this uneaſy Situation he remained, unable to bring this Matter to any Iſſue: yet ſtill continuing to act the ſame Part in Parliament that he had ever done, giving all the Obſtruction in his Power to the Meaſures of the Independants, ſupporting and aſſiſting the Intereſts of the Earl of *Inchequin*, and his Army,

§ Family Collections, Vol. VI. N° 912. *Ibid.
† Ibid. N°. 913. Ex Autograph.

Army, who were now firmly reſolved, upon the firſt favourable Opportunity, to declare in favour of the Parliament, (if they could have diſengaged themſelves from the Influence of *Cromwell*, and the *Engliſh* Army) or in favour of any Party that was moſt likely to preſerve the Conſtitution, in Oppoſition to a Body of Men, who, under the public Profeſſion of Liberty, had enſlaved the three Kingdoms. —— Theſe Principles and Reſolutions not long after ſhewed themſelves, when the Earl and his Army quitted the Parliament, as they ſtill called themſelves, and went over to the King's Intereſt, in the following Year.——— Sir *Philip Perceval* had, by his Conduct, Counſels, and Intereſt with that General and Army, the whole Merit of this Change, but he did not live to ſee the Effects of it.———He continued, however, as long as he could act at all, to perſevere in the ſame Views, and acted upon the ſame Plan; which is evident from the following Letter from the *Iriſh* Army, tranſmittd to him but a few Days before his Death †.

From the Army in Munſter.

* *SIR*,

" WE having formerly emboldened ourſelves to
" recommend unto your Care and Favour the
" Repreſentation of our Condition and Affairs, unto
" the High and Honourable Court of Parliament, and
" finding ourſelves at this Time more eſpecially occa-
" ſioned and neceſſitated to importune your Courteſy,
" we ſhall deſire that from the Bearer you would un-
" derſtand, how great a Misfortune we find ourſelves
" depreſſed under, by the Subtilty and Malice of our Ad-
" verſaries, whoſe cunning Practices have brought us
" under a Notion and Eſteem of being diſaffected to,
" and revolting from the Parliament's Service, for which
" they think they have a ſufficient Ground, from a
" late Remonſtrance, framed and ſubſcribed by us,

† Family Collections, Vol. VI. N° 921.

" at a Time when all Mouths and Ears were filled " with the Reports of moſt unexampled Force and " Violence, obtruded on the Honourable Houſe, by " ſeveral tumultuous Preſſures upon them, and other- " wiſe; and for profeſſing our Integrity to their Ser- " vice and Safety, and our Deſires of our own juſt " Conſervation, we are branded with moſt horrible " Characters of Defection and Unfaithfulneſs.——— " To vindicate us from which, we deſire you would " pleaſe to offer to the Conſideration of the Honoura- " ble Houſe of Parliament, this juſt and poignant Ar- " gument, to falſify the Suggeſtions of our Adverſa- " ries, That ſince the framing and ſubſcribing that " Remonſtrance, this Army has done as active and " conſiderable Service upon the Rebels, as could in " Reaſon or Juſtice (conſidering the Condition it was " in) be expected at our Hands.———That the Re- " fuſal of the incloſed Propoſitions, made to us, and " offering both Advantage and Opportunity to ac- " compliſh thoſe Ends our Enemies charge us with, " will, we hope, ſufficiently evidence to the World " the Integrity of,

S I R,

Your moſt humble Servants,

The Whole Members of the
7 Octob. 1647. Council of War of *Munſter.*

Exam. Robert Pravers, *Judge-Marſhal.*

It appears plainly and poſitively, from a Multitude of Original Papers now before us, that this ſtubborn Conduct, and theſe Remonſtrances from the *Munſter* Army, proceeded from the direct Advice and Counſel (almoſt in every Step) of Sir *Philip Perceval* to the Earl of *Inchequin*, who, from the Time of the Treaty with the *Iriſh* at *Oxford*, in 1644, had taken all his Im-

Impreſſions from him, and entertained a wonderful Veneration for his Judgment and Virtue. ——— The Earl at that Time left the King, upon the Obſervation of the bad Meaſures which he then purſued, and did Sir *Philip* the Juſtice of a public Acknowledgment, that it was from his Opinion that he took that Step. ——It is equally evident, that he now returned to the King's Intereſt, (whoſe Cauſe was at length become the better of the two) from the Opinion of the ſame Perſon.———It is impoſſible to read the authentic Inſtruments we have here quoted, and to attend to the Courſe of theſe Tranſactions, without a full Conviction, both of the Abilities and Probity of this Man; for it is certain, that no Perſon in that Time, or perhaps in any other, ever received a Mark of greater Diſtinction, than that of having a great Army, in effect, at his Devotion, and under his Direction, in which he then held no Employment, merely from the Opinion of his Parts, Diligence and Integrity, and from a due Senſe of the Generoſity and Juſtice of his Conduct, with reſpect to that very Army, in a Charge liable to great Difficulty, and much Miſinterpretation, which he had formerly held among them. ——— The Weight of this important Influence muſt have been as great, as the Satisfaction of receiving ſo great a Proof of Affection and Truſt, at a Time when his Enemies laboured his Deſtruction in Parliament, on Pretence of Miſbehaviour in his Employment in the ſame Army. —It ſhould ſeem impoſſible, after this Teſtimony of Confidence from the very Troops with whom he had been concerned, that they ſhould arraign his Conduct any longer on that Score.———But what will not Malice attempt, when prompted by Revenge, Self-Intereſt, and Self-Preſervation, attended with Power, and backed by corrupt Numbers.—*Cromwell*, and his Officers now joined with the Lord *Liſle*, and his Cabal, and diſcovered, on all Occaſions, ſuch a degree of Inveteracy to him, as gave him Reaſon to expect the moſt fatal Conſequences.—And he privately received about this

this Time frequent Advertiſements, that his Life was in immediate Danger.

God only now knows how far theſe foul and dark Deſigns were put in Execution on him, but that they put a Period to his Life, is very certain; for being thus harraſſed to a Degree beyond the Force of his Nature to ſupport, as well by the inveterate Endeavours of his Enemies to procure his Ruin, as by the wretched Condition of his private Fortune, which was either all in the Hands of the Rebels, or ſequeſtered for his Engagements on the Public's Account; being alſo prevented by his Adverſaries from recovering any Part of the vaſt Sums expended by him for the Uſe of the Army, or even any Part of his Salary due for the Exerciſe of his Employments, inſomuch that he paid 40 *l. per Cent* †, for all the Monies he expended; and foreſeeing the total Change of the Government, which ſoon followed after, by the Death of the King, in which he expected inevitable Deſtruction alſo to his own Affairs. ——— The Preſſure of ſo many melancholy Reflections wrought ſuch an Effect upon his Mind, that they threw him into a kind of Fever upon his Spirits, as it ſeemed, of which he died in *London*, upon *Wedneſday* the tenth of *November*, 1647 §, (according to ſome in the forty-eighth, but really) in the forty-ſixth of his Age.

He was buried three Days after, in the Church of *St. Martin in the Fields* *, in *Weſtminſter*, the famous Primate *Uſher* preaching his Funeral Sermon, to which he choſe for his Text the fourteenth Verſe of the fourteenth Chapter of *Job*: *If a Man die, ſhall he live again? All the Days of my appointed Time will I wait, 'till my Change come.*

The following Epitaph was written by *R. Maxwell*, Biſhop of *Kilmore*, and placed upon his Grave: but his Monument, by the rebuilding of that Church, has been a few Years ſince intirely deſtroyed.

Epi-

† Family Collections. Vol. VI. N° 926. § Ibid. N° 933.
* Ex Regiſt. Paroch. Sancti Martini, Weſtminſter.

Epitaphium Clariſſimi Viri Philippi Perceavelli, Equitis Aurati, Hiberniæ, qui obiit bonis omnibus deſideratiſſimus, 10° die Novembris, Anno Domini 1647.

Fortunam expertus jacet Philippus utramque:
Dotibus ac genere Nobilitatus Eques:
Qui niſi (ſed quis non multis) peccaſſet in uno
Quod Vitio vertat vix habet Invidia *.

Flevit. R. Epiſcopus Kilmorenſis Maxwell.

Tranſlated thus:

Philip *here lies, at length ſubdued by Fate:*
By Birth illuſtrious, and by Fortune great.
Capricious Chance long taught him to explore,
By Turns, her fickle Fondneſs, and her Power.
Could the Remembrance of his Virtues ſleep,
Envy herſelf at the ſad Loſs would weep.

BUT his moſt glorious and durable Monument was that ſignal Reputation which he left behind him, which was conſidered in ſuch a Light by his very Enemies, that upon the Day of his Burial, *viz. Saturday* the thirteenth of *November*, 1647, the Lords and Commons both joined in an Order for the Sum of two hundred Pounds, to be paid to *Catherine* Lady *Perceval*, his Widow, to defray the Expences of his Interment.

IT is almoſt incredible how great and general a Concern appeared upon his Death; his private Friends were not only ſo affected by it, as hardly to be capaple of any Conſolation; but the Letters from the Duke of *Ormond*, the Earl of *Inchequin*, Mr. *Hollis*, and many of the greateſt Men, upon that Incident expreſſed

* The Reader will obſerve this Epitaph to be falſe Latin, and bad Metre; but we give it as we find it.

ſed the Senſe of this Loſs, as the greateſt Calamity that could befal themſelves or the Public at that Conjuncture.———* Among the reſt, Mr. *Hollis* writing to the Earl of *Inchequin*, in favour of his diſconſolate Family, deſiring his Aſſiſtance as General in *Munſter*, to preſerve what he could out of their Eſtate in thoſe Parts, expreſſes himſelf in theſe Words. ——— *We therefore conclude here with Confidence, that your Lordſhip's own innate Nobleneſs, accompanied with the tranſcendant Merit of the dead Man, who hath brought an apparent Prejudice to the Public and Private by his Departure hence, will be ſufficient and prevalent Interceſſors to incline your Lordſhip to a Contribution of all poſſible Favour towards his Poſterity.* ——— And the ſame † Earl of *Inchequin*, who owed him the higheſt Obligations, for the ſteadieſt Friendſhip, and moſt conſtant Application to preſerve him from the Malice of his Enemies in *England* (of which there is the ſtrongeſt Evidence, in above a hundred Letters during the Troubles §, which are preſerved in the Collection here quoted ‖) wrote the following Letter to Lady *Perceval*, upon the News of his Death.

" I Have received a Letter from Sir *Paul Davys*,
" mentioning the Death of your dear Huſband,
" and my no leſs dear Friend; whoſe Death I may
" certainly account one of the greateſt Misfortunes
" that

---

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N° 943.

† Ibid. N° 944.

§ In one of theſe, dated from Cork the twenty-ſecond of April, 1746, to Sir Philip Perceval, he writes thus:

My dear Friend,

" I Have laſt Night received five ſeveral Packets from you, with
" Letters from many noble Friends in them, unto whom I hope
" to return others in exchange within four or five Days.— My Ob-
" ligations are very great to all of them; but truly I look upon the
" Friendſhip that you perform towards me, as a Bleſſing very much
" more than ordinary intended by the Hand of Providence to pre-
" ſerve me againſt Malice and Injuſtice."

‖ Vol. V. N° 777.

Inchequine.

" that can befal me. ——— And really, Madam, it " ſhall be unto me a great Happineſs, if I be able to " manifeſt my Love to him, by any Service to your " Ladyſhip, or any of your Children, and therefore I " humbly beſeech you to command me freely, in all " Things wherein I may be uſeful for your Service; " and conceal not from me neither your own or your " Childrens Conditions, from Time to Time, that I " may the better underſtand how I may lay hold of " any Opportunity to do ſomething for your or their " Advantage. ——— I have directed Captain *Hodder* " to give you an Account of what Monies could be " gotten here for you, which are ſent you; and I " ſhall be careful to improve all your Intereſts for the " beſt Advantage, according to my Judgment, where- " in good Succeſs (I am confident) will be no more " ſatisfactory to yourſelf, than,

Madam,

Your ſorrowful, and

Very humble Servant,

Inchequin.

BUT among all theſe eminent Perſons, none ſeems to have expreſſed ſo ſincere an Affection, or ſo great a Concern, as Mr. *Pierpoint* *, with whom, above all the Leaders of that Time, (as Sir *Philip* himſelf obſerved in one of his Letters a little before his Death) he lived in the greateſt Friendſhip, and uſed the greateſt Freedom; for this Gentleman applied himſelf to the Houſe of Commons †, upon *Saturday* the thirteenth of *November*, three Days after Sir *Philip*'s Death, for a Part of his Arrears to be paid to his Widow, and ob-

* Vide Family Collections, Vol. VII. N° 857. to the Lord Preſident of Connaught.

† Vide Journal of the Houſe of Commons.

obtained an Order for that Purpoſe, which he himſelf carried to the Lords for their Concurrence, the ſame Day. Nor was this all, but he continued to perſevere in all the Acts of Friendſhip that were poſſible for Man to ſhew, and performed the Part of the moſt tender Parent to this Family for a long Time after.

Left us now take a ſhort Review of the Character of this worthy Man, as it may be naturally drawn from the Account which has been already given of his Life.—In his Temper he was wonderfully firm and reſolute, and greatly diſtinguiſhed for that ſuperior Courage the Mind, which is far more eſſential to a great Man of than a perſonal Bravery; yet of this, likewiſe, he had manifeſted, on many Occaſions, a very ſufficient Share. He had high Sentiments of Religion, but wholly free from every Weakneſs of Education, vulgar Prejudice, or Superſtition.———His Notions of Government and Liberty, were as juſt and ſtrong as any of that Age, and would have carried him too far, but from a firm Conviction, that the Temper of a People, and the Forms of a Conſtitution to which they had been accuſtomed, were the proper Magnet of the public Conduct in all Revolutions, and he thought the *Engliſh* too long habituated to Monarchy, and their Property not enough diffuſed to admit a Commonwealth.——— He therefore never intended the Subverſion of the Regal State, and was ever forward to promote an Accommodation with the King upon reaſonable Terms.——— During the whole Courſe of his Life he maintained the Principle of Honour, with a ſcrupulous Exactneſs.——— In private Concerns he carried it ſo far, that he was formidable to all who did him the moſt trivial Injury, and no Man ever purſued his Satisfaction more long and ſteadily than he did. The ſame Temper rendered him as true a Friend as a dangerous Enemy.—— In public Life, he was equally governed by the ſame Motive.———And nothing gave him more Pain than his Deſertion of the King, to whom he owed many perſonal Obligations, which created in him a great Conflict

Conflict between his private and his public Honour. ——Yet he diſtinguiſhed too well, not to prefer the latter, when he fully perceived the deſperate Meaſures of the Royal Party. ——— He was often reproached with this, by ſome who had Freedom with him to talk with him upon ſuch a Subject.———But he ſaid, that he left the King to ſerve him, for he ſaw that he would not ſerve himſelf; and he thought the ſureſt Way to ruin him, was to aſſiſt him in thoſe extravagant Courſes which he fatally purſued.———He never imagined that the Parliament intended to carry Things to thoſe Extremities which afterwards enſued, as certainly they never did. ——— And when the Faction which aroſe among them, and to whom all the Crimes of that Party may be wholly aſcribed, unveiled their dangerous Deſigns, he oppoſed them, in every Inſtance, to the moſt extreme Diſtreſs of his Affairs, and to the manifeſt Hazard both of his Life and Fortune.——— Without any private Inducements, or ſecret Engagements with the King, he laboured to reſtore him upon juſt Conditions. ——— And though, during a great Part of that troubled Time, his Employments lying principally on the *Iriſh* Side, and that Country having little ſaid of it during thoſe Tranſactions, he thereby became leſs the Object of the Hiſtories which have been written ſince of thoſe Times; yet he was then very eminent in *England*, as well as *Ireland*, for his Engagements there. And during the two laſt Years of his Life, when he dedicated himſelf ſolely to the public Buſineſs of *England*, in Parliament, he grew to be greatly noted, and encreaſed in Intereſt and Reputation on this Side, to ſo high a Degree, that he would have undoubtedly been as conſiderable as any of that Age, in the enſuing Revolutions here, if he had lived to have been concerned in thoſe extraordinary Tranſactions which followed after his Death; nor could he have failed by his known Capacity, Experience, and Integrity, to have contributed greatly to have prevented many of thoſe Evils which ſhortly after befel this Nation. And in this he had actually proceeded farther

than almoſt any other Man, for by his Intereſt with the Earl of *Inchequin*, and the Army in *Ireland* under his Command, he had formed the daring Project of bringing over that Body of Troops, to maintain the Freedom of the Parliament, againſt the flagrant Tyranny of the Independant Party, and the *Engliſh* Army.—— But this great Deſign, not yet ripe for Execution, fell with him, and has therefore met with but ſlight Mention from the Writers of that Time.———Nor can the whole of this Affair be now laid open, the Letters relating to it, and ſtill remaining in this Family, being for the moſt Part written in a Cypher, which none have been able to explain.———But having lived with great Reputation, ſo he died with equal Glory, manifeſting, in his lateſt Actions, a vigorous Reſolution and Integrity, deſerving to be for ever recorded.

For at that ſurprizing Period, in the Year 1647, when the Army openly declared their Oppoſition to the Parliament, and marched againſt the City of *London*, who had engaged to ſupport its Freedom, threatening abſolute Ruin to the honeſt Party, who maintained the public Liberty againſt their furious Meaſures, and when, by the Terror of their Approach, the former Leaders of that Party had timorouſly withdrawn ; ———he generouſly took the Poſt they had left, and was viſibly, at that Time, the principal Conductor of that glorious Oppoſition which the Army found, being Chairman of thoſe Committees which were appointed to manage their Defence ; nor did he quit this Station, till he was himſelf deſerted by the City, and the remaining Members of the Houſe.

It cannot be denied but he had many Enemies; but this, inſtead of doing Prejudice to his Character, if conſidered juſtly, is a great Relevation of it.—— For inveterate as they were, and ſupported by the Power of a Party which was ſuperior in the Houſe, with all the Efforts of their Art and Malice, they could obtain no Cenſure upon his Conduct in any one Inſtance. ——— A ſuperior Integrity, and uncommon Abilities, never fail to create Enemies, and that in a ſupreme

ſupreme Degree, when thoſe Abilities, and that Integrity are placed in ſuch a Situation, as to be capable of croſſing and impeding the Endeavours of wicked Men. ——— The Greatneſs of his Fortune likewiſe, if we conſider in one View his prodigious Loſſes, and the great Inheritance which he left to his Poſterity, (then conſiſting of above ſeventy-eight Knight's Fees) which was very vaſt, could not fail to draw upon him much Envy.———And this was much encreaſed by the Magnificence of his domeſtic Expences before the War, in which (as he was well able to ſupport it) he was exceeded by no Subject of any Rank or Condition, particularly in his Table, which was ornamented with more Plate than was uſually found in moſt of the great Houſes of that Age. All which he lived to alienate for his Support, during the Courſe of theſe Diſtractions.———He had likewiſe high Notions of his Birth and Family, and a Senſe of all the Advantages he enjoyed, which did him ſome Hurt in this Particular, becauſe he knew in his Conduct to maintain them well, and perhaps with a Degree of Dignity and Spirit, which could not be agreeable to the mean Men who were advanced in high Stations by the Confuſion of theſe Times.———But that he was governed by Reaſon, even in this Particular, is evident, from his Refuſal of thoſe Advancements, and Titles of Honour, with which he was tempted by the King at *Oxford* to deſert his Principles.

THE only Blemiſh which his worſt Enemies could offer to his Reputation, was, that it was ſomewhat ſullied by too great a Deſire of amaſſing Wealth; but this Diſpoſition never ſhewed itſelf in him any otherwiſe, than in his preſerving Employments, which were thought by ſome unworthy of him.———Of theſe he enjoyed many, reſerving the principal Profits to himſelf, and leaving his Deputies upon ſmall Salaries to execute the Buſineſs: but how far this Circumſtance may tarniſh the Luſtre of ſo great a Character, we may leave to any impartial Man, who will conſider at the ſame Time how generouſly he beſtowed his Fortune,

tune, and how freely; and what exceſſive Sums, in the moſt deſperate Times, he ventured, to ſerve the Public, or his Friends. His Engagements for his Relations in *Somerſetſhire*, of the Houſe of *Weſton-Gordein*, and the Marquiſs of *Ormond* in *Ireland*, will prove the one, and the whole Tenor of his public Life demonſtrate the other, beyond the Power of Malice to contradict.

As to his Perſon, his Advantages in that Particular were likewiſe very great.———He was but of a middle Size, and his Complexion of a rediſh Caſt, ſo that, according to the *Iriſh* Cuſtom, he was ſtiled *Philip Rua*, or *Red Philip*, by which Name he is ſtill revered among them to this Day; but his Limbs were ſo well put together, and his Body ſo exactly proportioned, that both for Strength, Activity, and Grace, there was hardly any Man of his Time exceeded him.

In fine, his Death, at that Juncture, was as great a Loſs as ever befel any private Family; ſince from his Abilities, his Friendſhips, and his Services, if his Days had been prolonged only to that Period which is reaſonable for Men of his vigorous Conſtitution to expect, he had certainly lived to have obtained thoſe Rewards which he ſo well merited, and probably raiſed his Houſe, in his own Life, to a Level with any in theſe Kingdoms.

His Will, which was made in 1641, and to which he added a Codicil in 1643, containing a large Mention of his Relations and Family, we ſhall inſert at length.

Extract. Regiſtro Curiæ Prærogativæ infra Regnum Hiberniæ.

" *IN Dei Nomine, Amen.* Although I am in
" good Health and perfect Memory, (I give God
" Thanks for the ſame) yet well knowing the Frailty
" of this Life, and the Certainty of Death, and the
" Uncertainty when every one ſhall depart this Life,


BRITISH MUSEUM



The Right Hon.ble
S.r Philip Percival K.t
Register of y.e Court of Wards in Ireland &c. &c.
AND
One of the most Honourable Privy Council,
to King CHARLES y.e First
Born 1599. Died 1647.

Ant.: VanDyck Eq.: pinx.t C. Lempriere delin. W.H. Toms sculp. 1751



J. Faber Fecit 1743.

The Rt. Hon.ble Sr. Philip Perceval Kt.
1st. of that Name Register of ye Court
of Wards in Ireland, &c. &c. &c.
and one of the Most Hon.ble Privy Council
to King Charles ye 1st. Born 1599 Died 1647.


BRITISH MUSEUM

" hoping to be ſaved through the alone Merits of
" JESUS CHRIST, my Lord and only Saviour and
" Redeemer, I do make and ordain this my laſt Will
" and Teſtament, in manner following: *Imprimis*, I
" will, and my Will is, that I may be buried with as
" little Charge as may be, in reſpect of the Times,
" and of the preſent Condition and Fortune whereunto
" I am reduced, by the preſent Inſurrection in this
" Kingdom: and I leave among the Poor five Pounds,
" to be diſtributed as my Executors ſhall think fit.
" *Item*, I give, grant and bequeath unto my loving
" Wife two hundred Pounds in Gold, formerly ap-
" pointed for her, all her Apparel, and my Coaches,
" Coach-Horſes, and Furniture, with the Uſe of all
" my Plate, Jewels, Furniture, Houſhold-Stuff, and
" Utenſils of all ſorts, at *Dublin*, or in *England*, ſhe
" firſt giving her Bond to my Executors, to the uſe
" of my eldeſt Son, and others, in Remainder of my
" Eſtate, to reſtore the ſame at her Marriage or Death,
" in as good Caſe as ſhe finds them, neceſſary Wearing
" and Caſualty excepted. *Item*, I do limit and be-
" queath to my Son *Arthur Perceval* the Wardſhip of
" the Body and Lands of *Anne Caſey*, in as large and
" ample Manner as I might hold and enjoy the ſame;
" and to my Daughter *Judith* all other Wardſhips
" that I have Intereſt in, in like manner: and I leave
" alſo unto the ſaid *Arthur* my Debts due by Mr. *John*
" *Fox*, in caſe the ſaid *Anne* do die. *Item*, I do limit
" and appoint that Portions be raiſed for my Daugh-
" ters and younger Sons, out of my Leaſes and Debts,
" and out of one third Part of my Lands, Tenements,
" and Hereditaments in the County of *Cork*, in ſuch Pro-
" portion as my Executors ſhall think fit, having Re-
" ſpect to the Times, and to my Debts. *Item*, I do
" leave, deviſe and bequeath to my Children the Pro-
" fits of my Offices in the King's-Bench and Court of
" Wards, for and towards the Maintenance and E-
" ducation of my Daughters and younger Sons in Re-
" ligion and Learning.———And if any Surplus do
" remain, the ſame to be diſpoſed of by my Execu-
" tors,

" tors, for and towards the Preferment of my ſaid " Daughters and younger Sons. *Item*, I leave and " bequeath unto my Siſter *Mules* the Rent of the Sta- " bles in the *Cookſtreet*, being eight Pounds *per an-* " *num*, during her Life, or until ſhe recover her " own Eſtate, towards her Charge. *Item*, I will and " my Will is, and I do hereby grant, deviſe and be- " queath all my Mortgages, and all Sums of Money " due, or hereafter to be due, for and by Reaſon of " the ſame, all my Leaſes and Chattles real, all my " Goods, Plate, Jewels, Houſhold-Stuff, Debts, Cre- " dits, Utenſils, Books, Writings, and Evidences " whatſoever (other than the Legacies hereby granted " and bequeathed unto others) unto my eldeſt Son " *John Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years, if " he ſhall live ſo long, without Impeachment of " Waſte, and afterwards to the eldeſt Son of the ſaid " *John* lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of " eighty Years, if he ſhall ſo long live, without Im- " peachment of Waſte, and afterwards to the Heirs " Male of the Body of the ſaid *John*, lawfully to be " begotten; and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to my ſecond " Son *Arthur Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years, " if he ſhall live ſo long, without Impeachment of " Waſte, and afterwards to the eldeſt Son of the ſaid " *Arthur*, lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of " eighty Years, if he ſhall live ſo long, without Impeach- " ment of Waſte, and afterwards to the Heirs Male " of the Body of the ſaid *Arthur*, lawfully to be be- " gotten; and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to my third Son " *George Perceval*, for the Term of eighty Years, if " he ſhall ſo long live, without Impeachment of Waſte, " and afterwards to the eldeſt Son of the ſaid *George*, " lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of eighty Years, " if he ſhall ſo long live, without Impeachment of " Waſte, and afterwards to the Heirs Male of the " Body of the ſaid *George*, lawfully to be begotten; " and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to the Heirs Male " of the Body of me the ſaid *Philip Perceval*, law- " fully begotten and to be begotten; and for want of

ſuch

" ſuch Iſſue, to the Heirs Female of the Body of
" me the ſaid Sir *Philip*, lawfully begotten and to
" be begotten; and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to the
" Heirs of the Body of my Father *Richard Perceval*,
" ſome time of *Sydenham*, in the County of *Somerſet*,
" Eſquire, deceaſed, and of my Mother *Alice Perce-*
" *val*, lawfully begotten; and for want of ſuch Iſſue,
" to the Heirs of the Body of *George Perceval*, Eſq;
" deceaſed, Grandfather of me the ſaid Sir *Philip*,
" and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to my Couſin *James Per-*
" *ceval*, of *Weſton* in the County of *Somerſet*, Eſquire,
" and his Heirs. And I do hereby limit and declare
" and appoint, that all Feoffees, Conuzees, Reco-
" verors, Donees, Leſſees, or Truſtees of me reſpec-
" tively, the ſaid Sir *Philip*, or of any Mortgages,
" Leaſes and Goods ſhall ſtand ſeiſed and poſſeſſed of
" the ſame reſpectively henceforth, to the Uſes and
" Intents in theſe Preſents above-mentioned, and to
" no other Uſe, Purpoſe, or Intent whatſoever, any
" Thing to the contrary notwithſtanding. *Item* I will
" and my Will is, and I do hereby grant, deviſe and
" bequeath unto my loving Wife, during the Term
" of eighty Years, if ſhe ſhall ſo long live, one third
" Part of all the Rents, Iſſues and Profits of my Ma-
" nors, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in *Ire-*
" *land* (except my Lands in the County of *Kildare*)
" to her own Uſe, and towards the Maintenance and
" Education of her Children, until they ſhall be o-
" therwiſe provided for; and one third Part thereof
" to the Uſe and Payment of ſuch Debts as at the
" Time of my Death I ſhall *bona fide* owe of my own
" proper Debt, and not for others, or for Surety of
" any other, and the two third Parts above-mentioned,
" ſo ſoon as the above-named Charges reſpectively
" ſhall be determined, the ſame to be and remain to
" my ſaid Son *John Perceval*, and the Heirs Male of
" his Body, and others in Remainder after him, as
" my Mortgages are above limited or expreſſed, and
" therefore I do hereby grant, deviſe and bequeath
" one third Part of all the Rents, Iſſues and Profits

" of my Manors, Lands, Tenements and Heredita-
" ments (except my Lands in the County of *Kildare*)
" and all my Manors, Lands, Tenements and Here-
" ditaments in the County of *Kildare*, to my ſaid eldeſt
" Son *John*, for the Term of eighty Years, if he ſo
" long ſhall live, without Impeachment of Waſte,
" and afterwards to the eldeſt Son of the ſaid *John*
" *Perceval*, lawfully to be begotten, for the Term of
" eighty Years, if he ſhall live ſo long, without Im-
" peachment of Waſte, and afterwards to the Heirs
" Male of the Body of the ſaid *John Perceval*, lawful-
" ly begotten; and for want of ſuch Iſſue, to my ſe-
" cond Son *Arthur Perceval*, for eighty Years, if he
" ſhall live ſo long, without Impeachment of Waſte,
" and afterwards to ſuch others, and in ſuch Order as
" my Mortgages are above limited and appointed by
" theſe Preſents. And I do hereby limit, declare and
" appoint, that all Donees, Feoffees, Conuzees and
" Recoverors reſpectively, which are ſeized, or to be
" ſeized of any Manors, Lands, Tenements, or He-
" reditaments, now or late in me or my Aſſigns, or
" whereof the Rents, Iſſues, or Profits are, or were,
" by me received, ſhall thereof ſtand and be ſeized
" to the Uſes and Intents in theſe Preſents expreſſed,
" limited and declared, and to no other Uſe, Pur-
" poſe, or Intent whatſoever, any thing to the con-
" trary notwithſtanding. *Laſtly*, I do hereby nomi-
" nate, ordain and appoint my ſaid eldeſt Son *John*
" *Perceval*, my loving Brothers Sir *William Uſher*,
" and Sir *Paul Davis*, Knights, Executors of this my
" laſt Will and Teſtament; and my loving Uncle Sir
" *Samuel Mayart*, Knight, one of the Juſtices of the
" Court of Common-Pleas, Sir *Maurice Euſtace*,
" Knight, his Majeſty's Serjeant at Law, my loving
" Brother *Richard Fitzgerald*, Eſquire, and *Nicholas*
" *Brown*, Gent. Overſeers of the ſame. *In Witneſs*
" of all which, I have put my Hand and Seal the twen-
" tieth Day of *December*, *Anno Dom.* One thouſand
" ſix hundred forty-one.

PHILIP PERCEVAL.

Codicil.——" I deſire that the Debts for which " Sir *William Uſher* and Sir *Paul Davys* are bound for " me be firſt paid, or compounded for, before others, " and that ſuch Portions be raiſed for my ſaid Daugh- " ters and younger Children as my Eſtate may bear, " notwithſtanding any thing to the contrary, ſo as the " ſame exceed not five thouſand Marks a-piece) as my " Eſtate may raiſe it, which I authorize my Executors " to provide, and as the Times may enable it. And I " enjoin my eldeſt Son to increaſe their Portions, as " he ſhall be able, to recompenſe my Care of him. " ——The twenty-firſt of *February*, 1643.

PHILIP PERCEVAL.

FOR a final Concluſion of what we have to ſay with reſpect to the Sufferings of this great Man, we ſhall ſubjoin the following Account of the Loſſes of this Family by the great Rebellion, as taken from a Draught made out by Sir *John Perceval*, his Son, and annexed to a Memorial by him preſented to the Crown, ſoon after the Reſtoration, upon a Petition then exhibited for a certain Portion of forfeited Lands, of which he obtained a Grant, though he was unhappily defeated of it, as we ſhall ſhew in a proper Place.

The Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval* Creditor.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
To 11 Years Income of his Eſtates in the Counties of *Cork*, *Tipperary*, *Waterford*, *Kerry*, *Dublin*, *Kildare*, *Mayo*, and *Sligo*, in *Ireland*, at 4,600 *l. per annum*, from 1641 to 1652, ——	50,600	0	0
To 8 Years Income of ditto, from 1652 to 1660, —— ——	36,800	0	0

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
To 19 Years Profits of his hereditary Place of Regiſter of the Court of Wards; the Salary and Fees of which were 1700 *l. per annum*, as returned to Parliament upon the Diſſolution of that Court: and the Perquiſites and Profits of Wardſhips, *comm. ann.* as much more, making in the whole 3,400 *l. per annum*, from 1641 to 1660, ———	64,600	0	0
To 19 Years Profit of the Places of Clerk of the Crown, and Keeper of the Records of the King's-Bench, Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas, General Feodary of *Ireland*, Eſcheator of *Munſter*, Keeper of the Records of the Tower of *Birmingham*, Keeper of the Rolls of the Upper Houſe of Parliament, Cuſtomer of *Dublin*, *&c. &c.* being for Life, to Sir *Philip* and his Son, at 2,000 *l. per ann.* from 1641 to 1660, ———	38,000	0	0
To Spoil and Waſte of Timber, Caſtles, Houſes, and Stock, —	20,000	0	0
To Money expended more than received, on Account of the Army *, in the Offices of Commiſſary-General, and Providor-General of the Horſe, as *per* Account delivered to the proper Offices in his own Hand-writing,	18,003	13	1

To

* Family Collections, Vol. IV. N° 414, and 415.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
To a Debt incurred by Contracts for the Army upon Sir *Philip Perceval*'s private Credit, ——	10,000	0	0
To Salary as Commiſſary-General of the Army, ſettled by Vote of the *Engliſh* Parliament at 3 *l.* 7 *s.* 6 *d. per diem*, or 1231 *l.* 17 *s.* 6 *d. per ann.* as delivered to the Sub-Commiſſioners, certified by Sir *Henry Tichborne* and Col. *Randolf Clayton*, from 23 *March*, 1641, to the 28th of *July*, 1647, being 1952 Days*, —— —— ——	6,881	16	0
To Salary as Providor-General of the Horſe, from the ſame Date, at 14 *s.* 8 *d. per diem*, certified as aforeſaid †, —— ——	1,431	0	0
To Salary as Captain of a Troop of Horſe for Convoy of Proviſions, at 14 *s.* 4 *d. per diem*, from 15 *June*, 1642, to the 28 of *July*, 1647, being 1868 Days, certified as aforeſaid §,—	1,338	0	0
To ready Caſh belonging to Sir *Philip Perceval* when the Rebellion broke out, expended for Subſiſtence of his Family during the Troubles, —— ——	7,500	0	0

To

* Family Collections, Vol. VII. fol. 267.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
To ditto borrowed on the ſame Account during the Troubles, between 1641 and 1660, —— ſome Part bearing an Intereſt of 40 *per Cent.* but at a Medium 15 *per Cent.* —— ——	11,500	0	0
To 19 Years Income of the *Engliſh* Eſtate, at 850 *l. per annum*, from 1641 to 1660,—— ——	16,150	0	0
Total of Loſſes and Credits,	282,804	9	1

The Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval* Debtor,

By Profits out of the *Iriſh* Eſtate, from 1641 to 1652,——the little to be made of it being applied to the Defence of the State, —— —— ——	00,000	0	0
By Profit out of the *Iriſh* Eſtate from 1652, when reſtored by *Cromwell*, to 1660, at a Medium 2,600 *l. per annum*, —	20,800	0	0
By Profit from the *Engliſh* Eſtate, for 19 Years, deducting two Years when it was ſeized into the King's Hands, and one, when ſequeſtered by *Cromwell*,	13,600	0	0
By 200 *l.* paid to Sir *Philip Perceval* by the Parliament of *England*, on Account of his Salary,	200	0	0
By ditto, paid by ditto on the ſame Account to his Lady, ——	200	0	0
Total of Profits,	34,800	0	0

Total

Total of Dues and Loſſes to Sir *John Perceval*, —— ——	282,804	9	1
Deduct as by Particular of Profits,	34,800	0	0
So that the Loſſes of the Family by the great Rebellion amounted to —— —— ——	248,004	9	1

AND even this prodigious Sum is far ſhort of the Truth; for ſeveral private Grants and Monopolies are not here mentioned, the Profits of which were wholly loſt by this Confuſion.——— Neither is there any Account of the farther Suffering of the Eſtate from the Year 1660, which, though gradually improving, did not arrive at the ſame Rent again, for which it was ſet in 1641, till the Revolution, when it received again a new Blow, as we ſhall ſhew in its due Place.———To the Score of this Rebellion muſt likewiſe be added, the Loſs of that great Employment in the Court of Wards, which was certainly far more advantageous than it has been here ſtated; for the Abolition of the Court of Wards was a manifeſt Conſequence of that Event. It would be eaſy to ſhew many other fatal Inconveniences to this Family from the ſame Cauſe.———But what we have already mentioned is ſufficient to prove, that if this Calamity had not happened, the Fortunes of this Family had been almoſt immenſe, eſpecially when we conſider the vaſt Advantages which were to be made at that Conjuncture in that Kingdom, by a Man in ſuch a Situation of Intereſt, Fortune, and Sagacity, as Sir *Philip Perceval*.——— Let us now turn our Eyes from this dark and melancholly Conſideration, to an Admiration of that Providence, which has enabled this Family to ſupport ſo great a Shock, though followed by another little more than twenty Years after, which alone might equal the Loſſes that almoſt any private Family has

ſuffered

ſuffered by Civil War.——May the Deſcendants of this Houſe retain a grateful Senſe of the Favours they have received, in being ſtill preſerved in that high and affluent Condition in which they ſtill continue to ſtand, and may they reflect from thence, how much it is the Intereſt of every great Family to conſult the Peace and Quiet of their Country.

HAVING now cloſed our Account of this great and eminent Man, we ſhall next come to ſpeak of *Catherine* Lady *Perceval* his Wife.——She was Daughter of *Arthur Uſher*, Eſquire, eldeſt Son of Sir *William Uſher*, Knight, (Clerk of the Council to Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James* the Firſt) by his Wife *Judith*, the Daughter of Sir *Robert Newcomen*, Baronet, both by the Side of the Father and Mother deſcended from very eminent and ancient Families, of *Engliſh* Extraction, in that Kingdom.——That of *Uſher* being originally of the Houſe of *Nevil* (as it is ſaid went over into *Ireland* with King *John*, in the Place of Uſher to that Prince, where taking the Name of that Office, and acquiring large Poſſeſſions, they have continued to this Day.——That of *Newcomen* having lately been of conſiderable Note in the County of *Lincoln* in *England*, from whence the Branch which ſettled in that Kingdom is deſcended, we ſhall refer to the Account of this Houſe which the Office of Arms in that Kingdom largely furniſh, with relation to it.

BEING then a very young Woman, ſhe was married in *Dublin*, upon the ſixteenth of *October*, 1626: ſhe left a numerous Offſpring, and having outlived her Huſband thirty-four Years and fifty-three Days, died at *Dublin*, upon the ſecond of *January*, 1681-2.

HER Will bears date upon the eight of *May*, 1681, and was proved in the Prerogative Court at *Dublin* *.

SHE

* Cur. Prærogat. Hiberniæ.



I. Faber Fecit 1743

Catharine Dau.r of Arthur Eldest
Son of S.r William Usher K.t Wife to
S.r Philip Perceval K.t (1.st of that Name)
Married 16 Oct.r 1626 Died 2.d Janu.y 1681-2.

BRITISH MUSEUM

SHE was a Woman of a very great Spirit and high Reſentments, which led her to expect too much of her Huſband's Family, and to be too eaſily diſcontented with their Conduct to her.———She lived to ſee two Generations deſcended from herſelf; and this Temper being inflamed by Perſons ill-diſpoſed and intereſted, produced at length a total Ceſſation of all Intercourſe between her and her Huſband's Family. ——— The Particulars of theſe Diſputes are not very proper to be related here; it is ſufficient to mention the Conſequences of them, which were, that ſhe gave away, or left from her Huſband's Relations, almoſt every Thing that was in her Power of any Value.

ISSUE of Sir *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, Knight, (the firſt of that Name) and of *Catherine Uſher* his Wife.

I. *JOHN*, afterwards Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, by whom the principal Line of this Family was continued.———He was born upon the ſeventh of *September*, at *Dublin*, 1629; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *RICHARD PERCEVAL*, ſo called after his Grandfather, born at *Dublin*, upon the eighteenth of *Auguſt*, 16—, about five in the Morning, (Sir *Philip Perceval* being then abſent in *Munſter*)—— Sir *Paul Davies*, Knight, Brother-in-law to the Lady *Perceval*, *Richard Fitzgerald*, Eſquire, Brother-in-law to Sir *Philip*, were the Godfathers, and the Lady *Dorcas Mayart*, Aunt to the Lady *Perceval*, Godmother: but this Child dying upon the twenty-ninth of *May*, 1638, was buried upon the ſecond of *June* following, at *St. Audeon's*, *Dublin*.

III. *WILLIAM PERCEVAL*, born at *Dublin* upon *Aſcenſion-Day*, the thirtieth of *May*, 1633, about five in the Morning; the Child was

baptized upon the fifth of *June* following, the Godfathers being Sir *William Parſons*, Baronet, Maſter of the Court of Wards and Liveries, and Sir *William Uſher*, and the Godmother the Lady *Newcomen*, the Wife of Sir *Beverley Newcomen*, Baronet. But this Infant died upon *Tueſday* the eleventh of *June*, in the Forenoon following, and was alſo buried at nine the ſame Night in the Church of *St. Audeon*.

IV. *ARTHUR PERCEVAL*, born alſo at *Dublin*, upon *Sunday* the ſeventh of *September*, 1634, at eleven at Noon: ſo named from his Mother's Father. His Godfathers were the Right Honourable Sir *Thomas Rotheram*, Knight, one of the Privy-Council, and *Francis Windebank*, Eſquire, Son of Sir *Francis Windebank*, Knight, one of his Majeſty's principal Secretaries of State. ——— The Godmother was *Anne*, Wife of *Robert*, afterwards Sir *Robert Meredith*, Aunt to the Lady *Perceval*. ——— He lived till he was near twenty Years of Age, and was a young Man of excellent Accompliſhments and great Hopes: but having never married, he died at *London* during the Time of the Commonwealth, in *January*, 1653.

V. *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, the youngeſt Son, ſo named from his Great Grandfather, was born upon the fifteenth of *September*, 1635, at twelve at Night.———This Son lived to marry, and to leave Iſſue, from whom ſeveral Families of great Worth, now ſubſiſting, do proceed. ——— The Inheritance he obtained out of the Eſtate of the Family, by Deed from his Brother, dated the tenth of *November*, 1660, and confirmed by his Will, were the Caſtle, Towns, and Lands of * *Ballinecloghy*, *Stone-town*, *Cloncroſs*, *Fanogh*, *Killmore*, *Ballingharis*, and *Brownſtowne*, in

* Vide the Will of Sir John Perceval, Bart. dated 14 Nov. 1600.



I Baker fec. 1741

George Perceval of Temple House
in Com. Sligo Esq.r Youngest Son of
the Rt. Hon.ble Sr. Philip Perceval Kt.
1st. of that Name Born 15th Sept.r 1635
Ob. 25th March, 1675.


BRITISH MUSEUM

TABLE of the Deſcent of the preſent Lords of TEMPLEHOUSE, in the County of *Sligo* in *Ireland*, and of their Iſſue.

Look back to the firſt Table of the ſixth Book.

Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, Knight, Regiſter of the Court of Wards, and one of the Privy-Council to King *Charles* the Firſt, *ob.* 10 *Nov.* 1647, *æt.* 44. = CATHARINE, Daughter of *Arthur*, Son and Heir of Sir *William Uſher*, Knight.

2 GEORGE PERCEVAL, ſecond Son, born *A. D.* 1635, drowned near *Holyhead* 25 *March* 1675 = MARY, Daughter and Heir of - - - - - *Croſton*, Lord of *Templehouſe*, in *Com. Sligo*, *ob.*

1 Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, Bart. eldeſt Son, from whom the Earls of *Egmont* are deſcended. *Vide* the firſt Table to Book VI. ↑

Lord of *Templehouſe*, in *Com. Sligo*, *ju. Uxor.*

1 PHILIP PERCEVAL, Lord of *Templehouſe*, eldeſt Son, born *Auguſt* 3, 1670, *obiit Aug.* 1704. = ELIZABETH D'ABERON, now living.

3 CHARLES PERCEVAL, Colonel of a Regiment, and Governour of *Denia* in *Spain*, killed in a Duel 16 *April* 1713, *ob. ſ. p.* married *Jane*, Daughter of - - - - *Booth.*

2 WILLIAM PERCEVAL, ſecond Son, Dean of *Emely* in *Ireland*, born 14 *Decemb.* 1671, *ob. Aug.* 29, 1734. = KATHARINE, Daughter of *Charles Prettie*, of the Silver Mines, in the County of *Tipperary*, Eſq;

1 KENE PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son, now living, and in Holy Orders, born 2 *April* 1710.

2 WILLIAM, a Student of Law, now living, he married *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John Croker*, Eſq; *ob. illa June* 1739.

3 CHARLES, third Son, in Holy Orders.

KATHARINE, Wife of *Brewſter Laughlin*, Eſq;

1 JOHN PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son of *Philip*, now Lord of *Templehouſe*, 1741. = ANNE, Daughter of - - - - *Cowper*, in *Com. Sligo*, Eſq; now living, 1741.

MARY, Wife of - - - - - *Forreſter*, of *Wotton Baſſet*, in *Com. Wilts.*

2 GEORGE, a Clergyman, now living, ſecond Son.

3 WILLIAM PERCEVAL, third Son, now living at *Fort St. George.* = - - - - Daughter of - - - - - *Horden.*

1 PHILIP PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son, born 10 *Oct.* 1723.

2 JOSHUA, ſecond Son.

3 JOHN, third Son.

1 MARY.

2 MARGARET.

3 ANNE.

2 RICHARD.

1 WILLIAM PERCEVAL, eldeſt Son.

in the County of *Tipperary*, and certain other Lands in the County of *Sligo*.

THIS *George Perceval*, the ſecond of that Name, having married *Mary*, Daughter and Heir of ——— *Croſton*, of *Templehouſe*, in the County of *Sligo*, (who lived till the fifteenth of *October*, 1705) acquired by her that Lordſhip, which has ſince been the chief Seat of his Deſcendants.—— This Gentleman going over to *England*, was unfortunately caſt away and drowned, near *Holyhead* in *Wales*, together with the Earl of *Meath*, and ſeveral other Perſons of Diſtinction, upon the twenty-fifth of *March*, 1675.

HE left three Sons, *Philip*, *William*, and *Charles*, and a Daughter named *Catherine*.

PHILIP, *(the ſecond of that Name of this Line) eldeſt Son and Heir of* George, *inherited the Eſtate. He was born upon the third of* Auguſt, 1670, *and died in* Auguſt 1704, *leaving, by* Elizabeth D'aberon, *his Wife, three Sons,* John, George, *and* William, *and a Daughter* Mary, *all now living.*

JOHN PERCEVAL, *(the firſt of that Name of this Line) was born the third of* October, 1700, *and is the third Lord of* Templehouſe *of this Family.* ——— *His Wife, whom he married the ſeventeenth of* October, 1722, *is* Anne, *the Daughter of* —— Cowper, *Eſquire, in the County of* Sligo, *born alſo in the ſame Year; by whom he had three Sons and three Daughters, all now living.* Philip, *the eldeſt Son, born the tenth of* October, 1723. Joſhua, *the ſecond of* March, 1728. John, *the twenty-firſt of* March, 1734. Mary, *the fourth of* March, 1724. Margaret, *the twenty-ſeventh of* April, 1727. *And* Anne, *the twenty-third of* July, 1731.

GEORGE PERCEVAL, *the ſecond Son of* Philip Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire, was born*

born upon the thirtieth of November, 1703, *and is in Holy Orders, and as yet unmarried.*

WILLIAM PERCEVAL, *the third Son of* Philip Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire, was born the twenty-fourth of* December, 1704; *and going over to the* Eaſt-Indies *for the Improvement of his Fortune, married in the Year* 1730, N. N. *the Daughter and Coheir of* —— Horden, *an eminent Factor there, by whom he has two Sons,* William, *born the firſt of* January, 1731, *and* Richard, *born in* 1735.

MARY, *the Daughter of* Philip Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire, is Wife of* —— Forreſter, *who is in Holy Orders.*

WE now return to William Perceval, *the ſecond of that Name of this Line, ſecond Son of* George Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire*; *he was born the fourteenth of* December, 1671, *and died the the twenty-ninth of* Auguſt, 1734; *having entered into Holy Orders, he was made Dean of* Emley *in* Ireland, *and Rector of* St. Michan's *in* Dublin.—*He married upon the fifth of* April, 1708, Catherine, *Doughter of Colonel* Pritty, *of the Silver Mines in the County of* Tipperary, *who was born the twenty-firſt of* December, 1681, *and died the third of* December, 1730. —— *By this Lady he left three Sons and a Daughter, all now living:* Kene, *eldeſt Son, unmarried, born the ſecond of* April, 1710, *who is alſo in Holy Orders*; William, *ſecond Son, born the twenty-fourth of* June, 1711, *who having applied himſelf to the Inns of Court, is now a Barriſter at Law. He married* ——, *Daughter of* —— Croker, *Eſquire, in the Year* 1738, *but is now a Widower, his Wife dying in* June 1739.——Charles, *the third Son, is alſo in the Church, and is yet unmarried, born* December *the ſeventh,* 1713. —— Katherine,

the

the Daughter, is married to Brewſter Laughlin, *Eſquire, Collector of the Port of* Dublin.

WE are next to ſpeak of Charles, *the third Son of* George Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire. He was born the eighth of* February, 1674. —— *He married* Jane, *the Daughter of* ——— Booth, *Eſquire, who died the twenty-ſecond of* June, 1726. ——— *This* Charles *having engaged in a military Life, was advanced to the Degree of a Colonel. He ſerved with great Reputation in the Wars of* Spain, *and gallantly defended the Town of* Denia, *which was entruſted to him; but was unhappily ſlain in a Duel in that Country, by Colonel* ——, *upon the ſixteenth of* April, 1713, *having had Iſſue, which did not ſurvive.*

CATHERINE, *the Daughter of* George Perceval *of* Templehouſe, *Eſquire, was born the twenty-ſixth of* January, 1664, *and died the tenth of* January, 1728.——*She married* George Brereton, *of* Carigſlany, *in* Ireland, *deſcended from the Lords of that Name in* Ireland, *who were eminent Men in that Kingdom, and derived themſelves from a Family of great Antiquity in the County of* Cheſter *in* England. *Her Huſband died the twenty-ſixth of* June, 1720, *leaving by the ſaid* Catherine *his Wife two Sons,* William *and* Robert, *and three Daughters,* Jane, Mary, *and* Roſe.

WILLIAM BRERETON, *the eldeſt Son now living, was born the ſeventeenth of* March, 1696, *and upon the twenty-third of* March, 1720, *married* Alice, *Daughter of* —— Norcott, *by whom he has had a numerous Iſſue,* viz. *five Sons and three Daughters:* George, *born the twenty-firſt of* December, 1721. ——— William, *born the ſixteenth of* May, 1723.——— Perceval, *born the nineteenth of* October, 1726.——Robert, *born the fourteenth of* January, 1727.—— Edward, *born the*

the third of March, 1728.——Mary, *the twenty-fifth of* May, 1731.——— Roſe, *the twenty-ſixth of* Auguſt, 1732.———Elizabeth, *the ſeventeenth of* Auguſt, 1735.

ROBERT, *the ſecond Son of* George Brereton, *and of* Catherine *his Wife, is in Holy Orders, and Rector of* Burton, *in the County of* Cork, *a Preferment in the Gift of the Earl of* Egmont.—*And* Jane, *the Daughter of* George Brereton, *born the eighth of* October, 1695, *now living, was married on the twenty-third of* November, 1721, *to* John Bickerſtaff, *Eſquire, by whom ſhe has a Son* John, *born the twenty-ſixth of* September, 1733; *and a Daughter* Catherine, *born the twenty-ſixth of* September, 1722.

VI. *JUDITH PERCEVAL*, the firſt born Child of Sir *Philip Perceval* and *Catherine* his Lady. She was born upon *Chriſtmas-Day*, 1627, at ten at Night; and on the firſt of *January*, the New-Year's-Day following, ſhe was baptized, at Sir *William Uſher*'s, in *Bridge-ſtreet*, *Dublin*, *Thomas Cave*, Eſquire, Comptroller of the Cuſtoms, being God-father, and *Judith*, Wife of *Arthur Uſher*, Eſquire, her Grandmother, and *Alice*, Siſter of Sir *Philip Perceval*, and Wife of *Richard Fitzgerald*, Eſquire, being God-mothers, Sir *William Uſher* and Sir *Robert Newcomen* being preſent at this religious Ceremony *.———This young Lady having refuſed many Matches of great Dignity and Advantage, paſſionately engaged her Affections upon Colonel *Randolph Clayton*, of *Mallow*, in the County of *Cork*, in *Ireland*; a Gentleman of great Merit †, but a Fortune not thought ſuitable to her, and was married to him, againſt the Inclination of her

* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N° 1043, &c.
† Ibid. Vol. VI. N° 1040.

her Friends and Relations, in *February*, 1653, doing thereby a great Injury to the Eſtate of her own Family.— Her eldeſt Brother being obliged to provide her Portion in thoſe diſorderly Times, at ſo great Diſadvantage, that he ſold a conſiderable Eſtate, then ſet at a trifling Rent, at the Rate of two Years Purchaſe; to which were added the Lands of *Ballydonnell*, *Derryravone*, and *Ballintlea*, in the Barony of *Fermoy*, and County of *Cork*, which were made over to her and to her Heirs.——— By this Gentleman ſhe had a Son named *Laurence*, who lived long in great Eſteem in his own Country; and by the Daughter and Heir of ——— *Coulthrope*, had two Sons, *Randal*, who died in 1729, without Iſſue, and *Coulthrope Clayton*, who became Heir to his Brother, and is now living, as yet unmarried.

VII. *ANNE PERCEVAL*, was born at *Dublin*, upon *Sunday* the thirteenth of *September*, 1635, at one in the Morning.———On *Wedneſday* the twenty-third of the ſame Month ſhe was baptized, Sir *James Ware*, Auditor-General, being God-father, and the Lady *Bagſhaw*, and Mrs. *Elizabeth Uſher*, Siſter to the Lady *Perceval*, God-mothers.———She died unmarried.

VIII. *DORCAS PERCEVAL*, was born at *Dublin*, upon *Tueſday* the thirtieth of *October*, in the Afternoon, Sir *Philip Perceval* being then in *Connaught*, upon the Commiſſion of Survey for diſtinguiſhing Poſſeſſions, on *Thurſday* the firſt of *November* he returned, and ſoon after the Child was baptized, *Nicholas White*, Eſquire, and the Lady *Newcomen*, Wife of Sir *Thomas Newcomen*, Baronet, and the Lady *Tichborne*, were her Sureties.———This Lady married *Jonas*

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N° 1115.

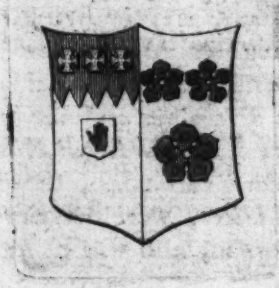
nas Wheeler, Eſquire, Son and Heir of the Biſhop of *Clonfert*. ——— When ſhe died we cannot ſay, but ſhe out-lived her Mother. ——— She left one Son, who by the Daughter of —— *Veſey*, Archbiſhop of *Tuam*, left an only Son, (who died without Iſſue) and alſo left three Daughters, *Elizabeth*, *Judith*, and ———: *Judith Wheeler* is ſtill living, and unmarried; *Elizabeth* married ———, the Son and Heir of ——— *Palliſer*, Archbiſhop of *Caſhel*, and died in 1735, leaving *William Palliſer*, Eſquire, now living, his only Son and Heir, who married *Jane*, Daughter of Colonel *Matthew Penefather*, late Commiſſary-General, and Siſter to the late Counteſs of *Antrim*, but as yet they have no Iſſue. ——— The youngeſt Daughter was married to ——— *Barrington*, of the *Queen's County*, by whom ſhe left two Sons, *Jonas* and *Wheeler Barrington*, and two Daughters, ———, and *Catherine*: of the Daughters, *N. N. Barrington* married ——— *Beard*, Eſquire, a Major in the Regiment commanded by General *Dormer*; and *Catherine* is yet unmarried. Of the Sons, *Wheeler Barrington*, the ſecond, is yet unmarried, and obtained by Will a great Part of his Uncle *Wheeler*'s Eſtate; *Jonas Barrington*, the eldeſt Son and Heir, is now living, and is married to ——, Daughter of Sir *John Bourne*, by whom he has ſeveral Children, all Infants.

IX. *CATHERINE PERCEVAL*, was born in the Year 1640, the Lady *Davies*, and Mrs. *Alice Uſher*, were her Sureties. She died a young Woman, and was never married.

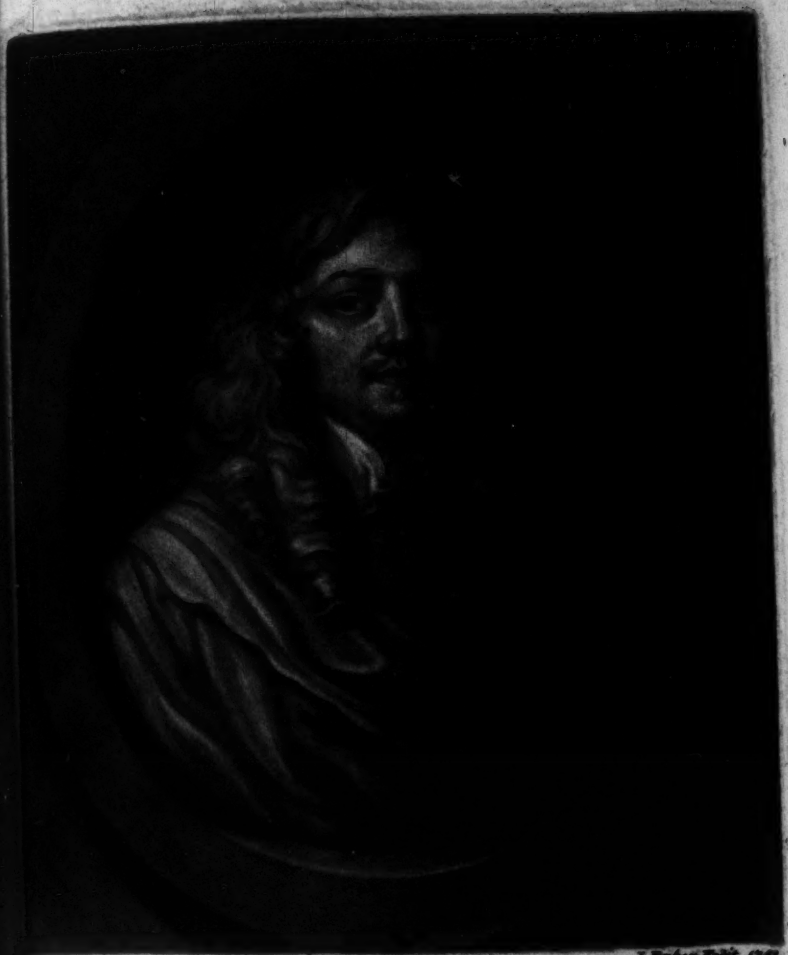
X. SIR *Philip Perceval* had likewiſe another Child born in *London*, of this Lady, in 1646; but whether Male or Female we cannot ſay, nor is it of any great Importance, ſince it died ſoon after its Birth.

CHAP. IX.

The Right Honourable Sir JOHN PERCEVAL *(ſeventh of that Name) Baronet, Regiſter of the Court of Wards, and Regiſter of the Court of Claims, chief Prothonotary of the Common Pleas, Clerk of the Crown, one of the Council of Trade,* &c. *one of the moſt Honourable the Privy Council to King* Charles *the Second, and Knight of the Shire for the County of* Cork *in* Ireland.



SIR *John Perceval*, (Seventh of that Name) eldeſt Son and Heir of Sir *Philip Perceval*, and the Lady *Catherine* his Wife, was born at *Dublin* upon the ſeventh of *September*, 1629. He received part of his School



The Rt. Honble Sr.
(7th of that Name)
of Wards & Register
one of the Council of
Hont. the Privy Council
of ye Shire for ye County
Born 1629

Jn.o Perceval Bart.
Register of the Court
of ye Court of Claims,
Trade, one of the most
to K. Charles II.d & Knight
of Cork in Ireland
Ob: 1665

BRITISH MUSEUM

School Education at *Ringwood* in *Hampſhire*, where, during the Confuſion of thoſe Times, he remained ſome Years with *Edmund Perceval*, his Relation, formerly an Officer under Sir *Philip Perceval* in ſome of his Employments.———After this, he paſſed near two Years under the * Direction of one *Sachat*, a *French* Gentleman in Sir *Philip*'s Houſe at *London*; together with the Earl of *Inchequin*'s eldeſt Son, of whom Sir *Philip* took the ſame Care as of his own Children, out of his Friendſhip to the Father, who being then General of the Army in *Munſter*, was unable, in the Diſtraction of thoſe Times, and the Hurry of his military Employment, to give any Attention to his Education.———And having made the utmoſt Proficiency in the Studies proper for that Time of Life, he was removed to the Univerſity † in *February*, 1646, when he was little more than ſixteen Years of Age.

HE was there in a cloſe Application to all the uſeful Literature taught in thoſe Places in the Year 1647, when his Father died; and had Prudence enough to conſider, that though he was left the nominal Lord of a very great Fortune, the Diſorders of the Times had put it into ſuch a Condition, that it would yield him little more than a moderate Subſiſtence. He likewiſe ſaw the Affairs of both Kingdoms in a very unſettled State, and he therefore reaſoned from theſe Circumſtances in a very wiſe manner, that it would be more beneficial to his Fortune, and leſs hazardous to the Intereſt of his Family, ſtill to remain a little longer where he was, under pretence of his Studies, till he could form a better Judgment how to direct his Courſe in publick Life, in which he ſaw that he muſt neceſſarily embark, as ſoon as he entered the World.

BUT in little more than two Years ‖ after, being then nineteen Years of Age, finding the Royal Cauſe intirely defeated by the Death of the King, and the

* Family Collections. Vide Vol. VI. N° 832.
† Family Letters, Vol. V. N° 716.
‖ Ex Chart. Famil.

Rebellion of *Ireland* intirely ſubdued, he thought it highly neceſſary for him to appear before the Settlement of that Kingdom could be effected, in which he had ſo great an Intereſt at ſtake: He therefore quitted his Retirement, and entered at once upon the Management of the Concerns both of the publick and of his private Fortune, with an admirable Sagacity.

It was impoſſible for any Man to lie under * Difficulties that required greater Dexterity and Skill, than thoſe in which he then laboured: For the Independants, who had by this Time ingroſſed the whole Authority, were Enemies to him for the Part which his Father had acted againſt them in the latter Period of his Life.——And the Greatneſs of the Spoil of ſuch a Fortune, as that which he inherited, was no ſmall Encouragement to the keen Proſecution of thoſe who had this Pretence to urge his Ruin.

In this unhappy Circumſtance †, he endeavoured to cultivate, as much as poſſible, the Friendſhip of thoſe in Power, and applied himſelf particularly to the Speaker *Lenthall*, who, in Expectation of gaining him in Marriage for his Daughter, eſpouſed his Intereſt with great Warmth: And this Gentleman expecting that this Fortune, when ſecured, was to be enjoyed by one of his own Family, was very diligent to preſerve it from that Confiſcation with which it was then threatened. However, by ſome Accident, which afterwards happened, the Marriage never took effect; and that Gentleman falling lower in his Credit, and Sir *John Perceval* ſtanding in need no longer of his Aſſiſtance, it gave ſome handle to thoſe who were not his Friends, for an Aſperſion of him, as if he had acted with a little too much Art upon that Occaſion.

But it was not this, or any other Circumſtance, that ſo much preſerved him, as an Incident which we ſlightly touched upon before in the Life of his Father, Sir *Philip Perceval*.——It muſt be remembered, that at the latter End of the Year, 1645, *Cromwell* had greatly

* Ex Chart. Famil. † Ibid.

greatly ſollicited for the Government of *Ireland*; and Sir *Philip*, out of an Opinion, that no Man was better qualified to undertake that Service at that Juncture, than he was, heartily endeavoured to promote this View; and though this Intrigue took no Effect at that time, yet it was a Circumſtance which *Cromwell* never forgot. He had great Qualities; among which, that of Gratitude was not wanting, though it was the Temper of his Genius not to ſuffer that, or any other Vice or Virtue to obſtruct his ultimate Deſigns. As long, therefore, as Sir *Philip Perceval* lived after he had oppoſed the Meaſures of the Army, on the Succeſs of which the Greatneſs of *Cromwell* intirely depended, he ſeemed inſenſible of any Obligation to him, and actually ſought his Ruin: But that great and worthy Man having ſunk under thoſe Difficulties to which his Spirit would never yield, and all Apprehenſions of his Virtue and Integrity being removed by his Death, *Cromwell* found that he might ſhew ſafely his Remembrance of the Service we have mentioned to his Poſterity; and he did it with great Zeal, affording him his Protection in the ſtrongeſt and moſt effectual Manner, at a Time when, perhaps, no other Support could have poſſibly preſerved him.

THE firſt remarkable Inſtance of his Friendſhip was in the Year 1650*, when a Deſign was formed to deprive him of his Eſtate in the County of *Somerſet*. One *Latimer Sampſon*, who had been a Dependant on Sir *Philip Perceval*, and was indebted to the Family in a conſiderable Sum, being preſſed by Sir *John* to make Payment of it in 1649, meditated Revenge, and ſwore that his *Engliſh* Fortune ſhould be ſequeſtered for it. The Man had ſoon after an Opportunity to put his Promiſe in execution; for the Times being then favourable to every mean and puſhing Fellow, this *Sampſon*, among the reſt of the Rabble that then obtained Preferment, was advanced to the Poſt of a *Commiſſioner of Sequeſtrations* for the County of

* Family Letters, Vol. VI. from N° 977 to 984.

of *Somerſet* in the following Year; and there ſuborned ſeveral Wretches to give their Teſtimony of a Multitude of Facts, with relation to the Principles, Religion, and Engagements of the late Sir *Philip Perceval*, and of his Widow, the Lady *Katherine*, all infamous Falſhoods, and many of them ſuch as were notoriouſly contradicted by the general Knowledge of all who had acted on the publick Theatre of that Age.——Yet, upon the Strength of their Affidavits, and truſting that no immediate Enquiry would be made into this Affair, they made no ſcruple to ſequeſter the whole Eſtate in thoſe Parts, and to divide the Profits of it between the State and the Tenants, ſome of whom were by that means induced to ſupport this illegal Proſecution.

THE Matter was, after much Difficulty, removed to the Cognizance of the ſuperior * Courts in *London*, where, though there was not found a Man ignorant of the Villainy of theſe Proceedings, and though Perſons of the firſt Figure, both in *England* and *Ireland*, appeared to give their utmoſt Countenance againſt ſuch Oppreſſion; yet it was thought politick thus to revenge the Sins of the Father upon the Son, and to permit this Grievance to continue to the vaſt Loſs and Expence of the Family, till *Cromwell*, growing more abſolute in his Power, generouſly reſcued the young Man out of the Gripe of this unhappy Juriſdiction.

THE ſame Meaſures had been taken to diſtreſs the Family in the other Kingdom, where the Commonwealth had no ſooner made themſelves Maſters, than they ſequeſtered the whole Eſtate. The utmoſt Endeavours of Sir *John Perceval* had no better Succeſs at firſt, than to preſerve it from an abſolute Confiſcation, As his Intereſt improved, this Severity relaxed, but from the firſt of *May*, 1650, to the firſt of *May*, 1651, the Contribution which he was obliged to pay out of that Part only which lay in *Munſter*, amounted within thirty-five Pounds of two thouſand Pounds *per An-*

* Family Letters, Vol. VI. from N° 977 to 984.


BRITISH MUSEUM



The Castle of Kanturk a very Magnificent Pile of Building belonging to John Perceval Earl of Egmont, To whom it gives the Title of a Viscount — It was begun in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, but the Government upon a Malicious Representation of its Strength, gave Orders that it Should not be compleated according to

*Annum**; and from *May* 1651, to *May* 1652, the Charge, as it was certified by the Commiſſioners of the Revenue themſelves, amounted to two hundred Pounds more than the Eſtate produced.

SIR *John Perceval* being now of Age, laid claim to all his Father's Eſtate in *Ireland*, amounting in the whole to ſeventy-eight Knights Fees, and one half containing ninety-nine Thouſand odd Hundred Acres of Land of *Engliſh* Meaſure, all lying in the beſt Parts of that Kindom; of which great Poſſeſſions, that the Reader may have ſome Idea, we ſhall incert at length the Claim itſelf in the very Words in which it was then made.

The Claim of John Percevale, *of* Caſtlewarning, *in the County of* Kildare, *Eſquire, Son and Heir of Sir* Philip Percevale, *Knight, of the ſame, deceaſed.*

Corke, *County of* Corke.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval*† claims the Lord-
" ſhips, Manors, Caſtles, Towns, Lands, Tene-
" ments, and Hereditaments of *Loghert*, and the Fo-
" reſt of *Loghert*, *Tuckersſtown*, *Thomaſtown*, *Gortfin-*
" *lare*, *Kill-Patrick*, *Ballibrittig*, *Balligiblin*, *Liſen-*
" *cullen*, *Knockenleagh*, *Rathdenan*, *Kilgerah*, *Kanturk*,
" and the Iſland of *Kanturk*, *The Park*, alias *Dromich-*
" *clare*, *Killinleagh*, *Knockeſgeagh*, *Knochardraghan*, *Weſt-*
" *Ballywollaghan*, *Knocknegeeby*, *Roſline*, *Moylerach*,
" *Rathranny*, *Clonrobin*, two fifth Parts of a Plowland
" of *Monicurnine*, *Ballintobber*, *Dromraſtall*, *Tinger-*
" *ghy*, and *Gearinſheaghy*; and nine Pounds Sterling
" payable out of, and iſſuing out of *Garricmacownye*
" and *Gortnecolagh*; all which Premiſes are ſituated,
" lying and being in the Barony of *Duhallow*, and
" County of *Corke*.

" THE

* From the Commiſſioners of the Revenue's Certificate penes Comit. de Egmont.

† Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

" The ſaid *John Perceval* likewiſe claimeth the " Manors, Caſtles, Towns, and Lands of *Annagh*; " *Coolemore*, *Rocheſtown*, *Culleagh*, *Kilgrogan*, *Rath*, " *Carrigeen*, *Ballyadam*, *Ballintample*, *Ballymaccow*, " *Farrendine*, *Drumcarbud*, *Ballygreaſy*, *Liſcarroll*, *Ra-* " *clare*, *Spittle*, *Killgullane*, *Ballinlinny*, and the *Ar-* " *denne* of *Ballaghbowra*, *Ballinvallyvecky*, *Tullig Boan-* " *nagh*, *Curraghnelaheſhery*, *Kilgonane*, *Farrenbearty*, " *Garrenigivogue*, *Breoliticlagh*, *Ardſkeagh*, *Ballintrel-* " *like*, with their and every of their Appurtenances; " and alſo a yearly chief Rent, *&c.* all ſituate and be- " ing in the Barony of *Orrery*, in the ſaid County of " *Corke*.

" The ſaid *John Perceval* claims the Manor, Caſtle, " Town, and Lands of *Carriglemleary*, with the Ap- " purtenances, and the Town and Lands of *Baltydon-* " *nell*, *Derryaume*, and *Balintlea*, in the Barony of " *Fermoy*, and County of *Corke* aforeſaid. And alſo " ten Shillings *per* Plough-land, iſſuing out of *Dri-* " *nagh*, *Iniſcarty*, *Kilſhovan*, *Farrenmacotter*, *Temple-* " *murray*, *Ardſkeagh*, *Ballyntrelick*, *Annagh*, *Colemore*, " *Rocheſtowne*, *Culleagh*, &c.

Tipperary, *County of* Tipperary.

" The ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth the Manor, " Caſtles, Towns, and Lands of *Nenagh*, alias the *Ne-* " *nagh*, *Templemore*, alias *Crockinny*, *Ballypecke*, *Car-* " *ling*, *Killawran*, *Liſdonouly*, alias *Liſdonnellen*, the " *Grange of Nenagh*, *Ballyhaninbeg*, *Bawne*, *Denemo-* " *nagh*, *Lebeſerab*, *Kilbeg*, *Carriggegowne*, *Knockbrack*, " *Rathmoyle*, *Glanigeiry*, *Coalecannogh*, *Kilgregan*, *Bal-* " *libeg*, *Killogany*, *Curraghleogh*, *Ballerourkemore*, *Gar-* " *ranballiverſkin*, *Roſpologhmore*, *Loſſneaugh*, *Ballyn-* " *vellan*, *Ballymulvaſey*, *Meary*, *Kilthelane*, *Burreſbeg*, " *Aghallybegg*, *Kelvillaglahy*, *Kellins*, *Liſneriddoge*, *Bal-* " *lychinkin*, *Ballyadam*, *Gortnegilliny*, *Culleragh*, *Bal-* " *lyrary*, *Rachinelyne*, *Garrymore*, *Kelkeraſker*, alias " *Farrendowda*, *Kearone*, and *Balligibbon*; and alſo " the Towns and Lands of *Kilmore*, *Ballypiercy*, *Shrip-*

" *ſtowny*

" *ſtown*, and *Caherabane*; and the Town and Lands " of *Riſmurtagh*, and *Rathmoely*, with their and every " of their Appurtenances: all which ſaid Premiſſes are " ſituate, lying and being in the ſaid County of *Tippe-* " *rary*.

County of Catherlogh.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth the Manor, " Caſtle, Town and Lands of *Cloghgrenane*, and *New-* " *ſtown*, with the Appurtenances, in the ſaid County " of *Catherlogh*.

Waterford, *County of* Waterford.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth the Town and " Lands of *Knocknegeeragh*, in the ſaid County of *Wa-* " *terford*, by virtue of a Leaſe thereof for divers " Years yet in being.

Kerry, *County of* Kerry.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth the Town and " Lands of *Anglemont*, in the ſaid County of *Kerry*.

Mayo, *County of* Mayo.

" THE Manors, Caſtles, Towns, and Lands of " *Dowlagh*, *Clogher*, *Derrithlathye*, *Carrowcoolagh*, " *Dirrivonagh*, alias *Draminonagh*, *Carrowcleagh*, *Bal-* " *lingow*, *Knocknawolin*, *Shandrum*, *Roſelar*, *Knockne-* " *boly*, *Roſedowne*, *Roſſow*, *Ackill*, *Killdawnaght*, *Slew-* " *more*, *Mornecronane*, *Icheroy*, *Lym*, *Downkinally*, *Lit-* " *teragh*, alias *Morveagh*, or *Carrowgarrow*, *Dowrgh*, " *Ballycori*, *Claggin*, *Roſsfinagh*, *Tullagha*, *Dowvorielly*, " *Ballycory*, *Aghris*, *Rathcarriſkcaconla*, *Raby*, *Iniſh-* " *Towrow*, alias *Frigh-Iſland*, *Carrowbegg*, *Inchquirke*, " *Carrowfallagh*, *Roſſeveragh*, *Boureſoule*, *Roſſegiblin*, " *Skirclagh*, *Kilcernagh*, *Derryford*, *Killcrick*, *Roſſe-* " *more*, *Derayaday*, *Carraneboy*, *Balliveighan*, *Carrow-* " *bane*, *Knockyrought*, *Knocklam*, *Knockteneveal*, *Knock-* " *negee*, *Kilbridy*, *Triennemore*, alias *Tennemore*, *Car-* " *rowbeg*, *Graffy*, *Roſeleane*, *Carrowkennedy*, alias " *Graignady*, *Carrowkennedy*, alias *Carrowkillina*, " *Derryclittagh*, *Derryramgree*, *Draminlean*, *Derrycan-*

" *turd*, *Knockbanlomane*, *Killmore*, *Lenarrow*, *Ballyki-*
" *nard*, *Carrowmore*, *Roſſeturban*, *Roſſebarnagh*, *Car-*
" *roga*, and *Straffarnow*, with their and every of their
" Appurtenances, ſituate and being in the ſaid County
" of *Mayo*.

Kildare, *County of* Kildare.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claims a yearly Chief-Rent
" of ſeventeen Shillings and Sixpence, Sterling, from
" *Richard Alben*, and his Heirs, due to the Manor of
" *Oughterard*; the yearly Chief-Rent of ten Shillings,
" Sterling, from *Thomas Aylmer*, and his Heirs, for a
" Freehold in *Tobberbridy*; the Chief-Rent of ſeven-
" teen Shillings and ten-pence halfpenny, Sterling,
" from *Edward Allen*, of *Biſhop's-Court*, and his Heirs,
" for his Freehold in *Oughterard*; ſeveral yearly Chief-
" Rents out of *Clinche's-Rent*, *Scurlock's-Land*, *Sut-*
" *ton's-Land*, *Young's-Land*, *Skee's-Land*, *Hog's-Land*;
" and Suit of Court belonging to the ſaid *John Perce-*
" *val*'s Manor of *Oughterard*.

Dublin, *County of* Dublin.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth five hundred
" Acres of Land in *Newcaſtle*; two hundred Acres of
" Land in *Loughton*; and the Town and Lands of
" *Ballimakilly*, containing threeſcore and fourteen
" Acres.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claimeth a Corrody, or
" yearly Profit, iſſuing out of, or chargeable on the
" Lands of *Kinſaley*, in the ſaid County, *viz.* to him
" and his Heirs, for the four Terms of the Year, ap-
" appointed for Cauſes in Law to be determined, and
" two Horſe-men, or Serving-men, in his, or his Heirs
" Company, ſufficient and competent Meat, Drink,
" and Lodging, and other Neceſſaries, fit and conve-
" nient for Gentlemen to have, and Keeping for their
" Horſes or Nags, and their Boys, *viz.* for every ſuch
" Horſe or Nag, by the Night, four Sheafts of Oats
" double-banded, beſides ſo much Hay and Glee as
" the ſaid Horſes ſhould eat or need; and alſo for the

" Boys

" Boys ſuch Meat as the Holder of the Plough ſhould " have: And in the abſence of the ſaid *John Perceval*, " his Heirs or Aſſigns, the Servant or Agent of the " ſaid *John Perceval*, his Heirs or Aſſigns, to be re- " ceived for Horſe Meat, and Man's Meat, with other " Neceſſaries, as aforeſaid, for the Time aforeſaid.

" THE ſaid *John Perceval* claims the Benefit of ſe- " veral Statutes of Staple, Recognizances and Judg- " ments acknowledged before the twenty-third of *Oc-* " *tober*, 1641, to Sir *Philip Perceval* [his Father,] or " to ſome other for his Uſe, by ſeveral Perſons, *viz.* " by *Dermot Mac Carty*, alias *Macdonnagh*, of *Kan-* " *turk*, Eſq; *Daniel Sullivane*, alias *O-Sullivane*, alias " *O-Sullivane-bear*, of *Beerhaven*, *Nicholas Brown*, of " *Ballifinane*, *in* Com. *Kerry*, *John Brown*, of *Kilcanim*, " in Com. *Kerry*, *Teige Oge Carty*, of *Killbarrymorroghy*, " in the County of *Corke*, *Dominick Tirry*, of *Kille-* " *niglory*, Sir *Edward Fitzgerald*, of *Ballinmalooe*, and " *Edward Fitzgerald*, of *Caſtleliſhin*, and others, in " certain Sums of Money: But in regard the ſaid *John* " *Perceval*'s Writings are in *England*, whereby he " doth not know what other Perſons are bound in the " ſaid Statutes, Judgments and Recognizances, and " the Sums they are bound in, he humbly craves Li- " berty for the inſerting thereof, upon view of his " Writings and Evidences.

Summa Total. Feodor. Milit. 78 *&* *dimid.*
Summa Totalis Acrar. 62,502.—*Hib. Menſ.*—
* *Anglic. Menſ.* 999,900.

Val. Savage, *Agent for*
John Perceval, *Eſq*;

* By the reducitory Table of Iriſh Acres in the Engliſh Meaſure—the Number of Engliſh Acres appears to be above one Hundred and one Thouſand; ſo that either the Reduction was not formerly ſo exact, or ſome ſmall Part of the firſt Number were not of the common Standard of Iriſh Meaſure.—— It muſt be likewiſe obſerved, that there are two Copies of this Claim: They differ in one or two trifling Articles, which ſeem to have been omitted by Miſtake in one Copy.—In every thing elſe they agree, as may be ſeen by comparing this Copy with that which is entered in the firſt Vol. fol. 92.

To this great Account muſt be added the Manors of *Caſtlewarning* and *Oughterard*, in the County of *Kildare*, which were then in Jointure to his Mother, and in her Poſſeſſion.—* The Rent of ſix Houſes in *Dublin*, value 169*l.* 10*s.* The Manors, Caſtles, Towns, and Lands of *Gortinlongport* and *Jonemoile*, *Monecomritt*, *Uragh*, *Muckron Drumore*, and part of *Glanboyd*, in the County of *Leitrim*, in all which, as we preſume, he had been already confirmed, ſince they are not mentioned in the Claim aforeſaid.

CROMWELL appears at this Time to have intereſted himſelf exceedingly for him, and notwithſtanding all the Chicane and Repreſentations of thoſe who were employed in the Revenue, and thoſe who ſtill had their Eye upon ſo great a Forfeiture, he prevailed to have a Leaſe made to him of twenty-eight Carucates, or Plough-Lands and an half, under the Rent of ten Shillings *per* Plough-Land, payable on the firſt of *May*, and firſt of *November*; which, notwithſtanding the Hardſhip of the Detention of the reſt, and the Mortification of becoming Tenant to his own Eſtate, was, however, a great Amendment of his Circumſtances, and the more comfortable, as being a very probable Earneſt of the Reſtoration of the whole.

THE Peace of *Ireland* was about this Time firmly eſtabliſhed:——For ſoon after the King's Death, the Pope's Nuncio, who, in Conjunction with the old *Iriſh* and the Clergy, had (as we have before at large obſerved) rejected the Peace concluded by the ſupreme Council, which had plunged the Nation into the moſt fatal Confuſion, by forcing the Marquis of *Ormond* to deliver *Dublin* into the Hands of the Parliament, and by preventing a Union between the two Intereſts in *Ireland*, which at that Juncture had probably not only reſtored the King, but eſtabliſhed the Independancy of *Ireland* for ever.———This Man being deſervedly become odious to all honeſt Men, and the Commonalty themſelves being no longer led ſo blindly by their Prieſts,

* Family Collections, Vol. VII. fol. 310.

Prieſts, (who had abſolved them from all Dependance even upon the Leaders of the Catholick Party) at length was obliged to fly that Kingdom upon the twenty-third of *September*, 1648-9.——— But *Owen Rua Oneil*, at the Head of the ancient *Iriſh*, together with the Clergy and the bigotted Part of the Catholicks, ſtill maintained the Separation they had made; and with an enthuſiaſtic Obſtinacy perſiſted in this deteſtible Conduct, till they gave *Cromwell* full Leiſure to make an intire Reduction of the whole Kingdom, which he did in nine Months, ſtaying no longer there than from the ſecond of *Auguſt*, 1649, to the Middle of *May*, 1650, when he was called over to carry the War into *Scotland*, where King *Charles* the Second ſoon after arrived, in order to invade *England*, at the Head of the Troops of that Nation.

IRETON, who was left Lord Deputy in the place of *Cromwell*, found but inſignificant Oppoſition; and *Ludlow*, who upon his Death ſucceeded him in Command in *May*, 1651, had yet leſs. In *Auguſt*, 1653, *Fleetwood*, who had married *Ireton*'s Widow, and *Cromwell*'s Daughter, went over thither with ſupreme Command, and found little more to do than to receive the Submiſſion of thoſe few who ſtood out, rather as Robbers and Banditti, than regular Forces; and the twenty-ſixth of *September* following, the Parliament of *England* declared the Rebellion of *Ireland* totally ſubdued.———The Settlement of *Ireland* was now become the moſt important Point. An Act of Confiſcation paſſed on the twelfth of *Auguſt*, 1652, and another for ſettling the Eſtates of the Adventurers, on the twenty-fifth of *September*, 1653, which was confirmed afterwards again in 1656. An High Commiſſion Court was erected for Trial of the Rebels.—— Multitudes who ſubmitted on Conditions, were tranſported abroad, which ſo diminiſhed the Inhabitants of that Kingdom, that great Encouragements were thought neceſſary to be given to the *Engliſh* who would go over to ſettle in their Places.———Another Point of Politicks was, to tranſplant the Popiſh Inhabitants, who

yet remained, from their reſpective Habitations, into the Province of *Connaught*, who thus by change of Habitation, loſt all that Dependance upon their Lords, and all that Attachment to their Clans, which had been the Growth of ſo many Ages: a Work, which if it had been more univerſally purſued, would have more effectually broken the *Iriſh* Intereſt, than any other Policy whatſoever.

To forward this Settlement *, *Cromwell* ſent over Sir *John Perceval*, with General *Fleetwood*, and he was there chiefly entruſted in the important Affair of *the Tranſplantation*, of which he had been the principal Adviſer, in Oppoſition to other more violent Meaſures. He was likewiſe employed in the *Union and Diviſion of Pariſhes*, and conſulted upon all the weightieſt Buſineſs of the Settlement of that Kingdom, ſparing neither Charge or Pains in that great and difficult Work. ——— There are ſtill extant † Letters from *Fleetwood* to the Government of *England*, expreſſing the higheſt Senſe of his Utility and Merit.— And he ſo recommended himſelf by theſe Services §, that he recovered again the Office of the King's Bench, which had been ſequeſtered with his Eſtate, from the Time of his Father's Death till then.———And upon the ſixth of *July*, 1653 ‖, the Commiſſioners of the Revenue of the Sequeſtrations received Orders from the Government, to give him the full and entire Poſſeſſion of his Eſtate, which had now been of a prodigious Value, but for the great Debts of his Father, and the Engagements which he was then forced to enter into to provide for his Siſters, all which Charge he was obliged to anſwer, during the Confuſion of thoſe Times, by the Sale of above fifteen thouſand Acres of his beſt Land, at little more than two Years Purchaſe.

CROM-

* Ex Chart. Famil. Vol. VI. N° 1101.
† Ibid. § Ibid.
‖ Ibid. N° 1089.

CROMWELL was now arrived at the Sovereign and Abſolute Power of theſe Kingdoms. From very obſcure Beginnings, and from a raſh Conduct, he roſe from a low Condition at the Commencement of the War, to the Supreme Authority. He became, by a Violence of Temper, and bitter Expreſſions againſt the King, the Idol of the more determined Party in the Parliament. Thoſe Meaſures which often ſink a Man, and which at leaſt bring his Prudence into queſtion, made him appear a ſafe Inſtrument for thoſe whoſe Views and Conditions were the moſt deſperate. This gained him an eminent Command in the Army, from which the Earl of *Eſſex*, for a contrary Spirit, was diſplaced. ——Soon after, in *June* 1646, he fought the Battle of *Naſeby* with Succeſs, which confirmed his Election to the great Employment he was in, and proved deciſive to the King's Affairs.——The King in *May* 1646, threw himſelf upon the *Scots* for Protection, but they ſold him to the Parliament, and *Cromwell* would have made his Terms with him to his own Advantage, but having by intercepted Letters diſcovered the King's Intention to deceive him, he determined to take away his Life, as the only Means then left for his own Preſervation. By Seditions of the Army, which he artfully raiſed, he terrified the Parliament to abet his Meaſures, expelled many, made many fly for Safety, till there remained only ſuch as concurred in his Project of trying the King.—A Court was commiſſioned for that Purpoſe, he was arraigned with great Formality of Juſtice, condemned as a Traitor to the People he had governed, and finally, beheaded upon the thirtieth of *January*, 1648.

THE Parliament being thus under the Dread and Influence of the military Power, *Cromwell* contented himſelf with the Supreme Power of the Army, and ſtill acted in ſeeming Obedience to the Parliament, till all the Diſorders of the three Kingdoms were appeaſed. By the Beginning of the Year 1650, after a Struggle of nine Months, as we have ſhewn, he had reduced *Ireland*.——Upon his Return, he invaded

Scot-

Scotland, whither King *Charles* the Second had retired, and whence he was preparing to invade *England*.—— He worked upon the Weakneſs of *Fairfax*, who was nominally, though not really, in Command above him: and upon ſome Scruples in that Lord, (who was a very weak Man) as to the Juſtice of that War, he obtained the Title of Captain-General of all the Forces. He gave the *Scots* an abſolute Defeat at *Dunbar*, upon the third of *September*, 1650; and the next Year followed them into *England*, with their King at their Head, and obtained a compleat Victory over that Nation, and all the Remnant of the Royaliſts, who had joined them at *Worceſter*. This great Event happened upon the ſame third of *September*, 1651. And now the Army having no farther Employment in either of the three Kingdoms, he had Leiſure to purſue his grand Deſign; and after amuſing the Public for a conſiderable Time, with ſome Projects of a Settlement of the Government, on Pretence that the Parliament were dilatory, and neglected that Settlement, that they might continue in the Power themſelves. He went down to the Houſe with a Party of Soldiers, upon the twentieth of *April*, 1653, in a moſt daring, inſolent, and furious Manner, and diſmiſſed that Parliament, which had ſat twelve Years, had done the moſt extraordinary Things that were ever done by Parliament, had exerciſed the greateſt Power, and had enjoyed the Affections of the People in the higheſt Degree.

THE next Step which was taken by *Cromwell*, was to appoint a Council of his Officers, by which Authority a Convention, in the Nature of a Parliament, was appointed, conſiſting of about one hundred and twenty Members, who met the fourth of *July*, 1653, and reſigned their Power again in *December*, 1653; upon the Diſſolution of which, his Council of Officers inveſted him with the Supreme Authority, under the Title of *Protector of the Three Nations*.——After this, he appointed a Parliament to meet on the third of *September*, 1654, which was to conſiſt of four

four hundred Members for *England*, elected by Counties and great Cities only, to the Excluſion of the ſmaller Boroughs, thirty Members for *Ireland*, and thirty for *Scotland*.

THERE appears about this Time an entire Friendſhip between *Henry Cromwell*, the Son of the Protector, and Sir *John Perceval*, which had its firſt Riſe at the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, and continued till the Deſtruction of that Family. *Sir *John* returning into *England* in *May* 1654, was then received by the Father and the Son with great Diſtinction, and was deſigned one of the Members for *Ireland*, to ſerve in that Parliament, which met on the fourth of *September*, 1654; but being fearful of engaging too deeply in the Meaſures of that Government, he declined the Favour, and excuſed himſelf ſo well to *Cromwell*, on account of his public and private Concerns in *Ireland*, that he dexterouſly avoided that Diſtinction, without incurring, however, any Suſpicion or Diſpleaſure from the Protector.

THE Protector now carrying his Power with a high Hand, and having diſſolved that Parliament we have juſt now mentioned, upon the thirty-firſt of *January* of the ſame Year in which it was called, Sir *John Perceval* grew very apprehenſive that the Government would never ſtand long in the Condition it was in, he was therefore determined, as much as poſſible, to withdraw from that Intimacy which others courted, and he ſo much feared. And having laboured inceſſantly on that Side the Water, in Conjunction with the Lord *Broghill*, and one of his own Tenants, *Vincent Gookin*, then an eminent Man with *Cromwell*, to ſettle a firm and laſting Quiet on that Side the Sea, and for which he was diſtinguiſhed with the Honour of Knighthood from *Henry Cromwell*, his Friend; he returned to *Ireland* again, and landed there in *July*, 1655,

* Family Collections, original Letters, N° 1124, 1133, 1149, 1173.

1655, from whence he retired to his Caſtle of *Liſcarrol* *, and endeavouring to keep himſelf as free as he poſſibly could from any Share whatſoever in the public Management of Affairs at that Juncture.

It was during this Receſs that he firſt found Leiſure to think ſeriouſly of the Continuance of his Family †, and placed his Affections on *Catherine*, the only Daughter of *Robert Southwell*, of *Kinſale*, Eſquire, one of the moſt amiable and excellent Women that any Age ever produced, and of an Extraction very ancient and honourable, of which we ſhall come to treat more particularly, when we come to ſpeak farther of her.

Sir *John Perceval* now thought of nothing more than to continue in that agreeable Retirement, which he had choſen upon his own Eſtate, and in the Improvement and ſtrengthening his Intereſt there, by drawing to himſelf a great Number of *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* Proteſtants to cultivate his Lands, and by diſtinguiſhing thoſe of the Catholic Intereſt who had remained faithful to his Family, and ſhewn themſelves leaſt factious in the late Diſorders. In this Occupation he had already made ſome Progreſs, when he was interrupted in it by the Arrival of *Henry Cromwell*, the ſecond Son of the Protector, who was appointed Lord-Lieutenant of that Kingdom in 1655. This young Man had excellent Parts, and as good a Nature, which inclined him to the Acquaintance of Men of Worth and Underſtanding. ——— Thoſe Qualities recommended Sir *John Perceval* to the firſt Share in his Eſteem, which concurring with the former Intimacy and Friendſhip he had contracted with him, and corroborated by that ſuperlative Knowledge in the Affairs of *Ireland*, for which he was very eminent, inſenſibly brought him again into public Buſineſs, in which he was almoſt ſolely conſulted and relied upon, during all that Adminiſtration. An Honour which he could not avoid, without Suſpicion, when preſſed upon him, as it

* Family Collections, original Letters, N° 1222.
† Family Letters, Vol. VII. fol. 227, and 228.

it was; and finding this the Caſe, he chearfully ſubmitted to the Hazard, but with a Reſolution of making no farther Uſe of his Intereſt, than for the Service of the Public; a Conduct, which was proved by the Event to be as wiſe as honeſt.

THE Union-Parliament, which we laſt mentioned, having entered into Debates of too high a Nature for the Security of the Protector, and having, by the Liberty they had taken in their Conſiderations on the then preſent Settlement of Affairs, diſpleaſed the Author of their Power, he diſſolved them upon the thirty-firſt of *January*, 1654, after they had ſat little more than two Months; after which he reſorted again to his old Council of Officers, by whoſe Appointment the Kingdom was divided into Diſtricts, and governed by Major-Generals. But finding it impoſſible, without ſome Appearance of a Repreſentative, to keep a People quiet who had lived from all Time under a Parliamentary Conſtitution, he ſummoned another Parliament, which met the ſeventeenth of *September*, 1656.

ONE of the firſt Affairs that came into Debate, was the Security of his Highneſs *Oliver Cromwell*'s Perſon, which was not a little expoſed to Danger, both from the Reſentments of the Republican, and the Intrigues of the Royal Party. An Act was accordingly paſſed to this Effect, upon the twenty-ſeventh of *November* the ſame Year: and ſuch was the Deſire of *Cromwell* to engage Sir *John Perceval* to his Intereſt, though he avoided all Occaſions of it, and that he ſufficiently knew his Averſeneſs to enter into any deeper Engagements with him, that he nevertheleſs appointed him *one of the Commiſſioners for the Security of his own Perſon, and Continuation of the Nation in Peace and Safety* †; labouring thus to gain him by a Point of Honour, and by a Mark of Confidence, politickly at the ſame time intending to mark him out in a particular manner as a ſuſpicious Perſon to the other Party, who

† Scobell's Collections.

little imagined that a Truſt of this Nature was conferred upon a Man, who received it with ſuch Reluctance.

During the Seſſion of this Parliament, *Cromwell*, to render it as reſemblant as he could to the ancient Conſtitution, appointed a Houſe of Lords, to which he ſummoned the principal Officers of the Army, and ſome others, whom he thought moſt attached to his Perſon, and either by their Power, Figure, Poſts, or Fortune, moſt likely to ſupport the Dignity of that Body. For a Seat in this Houſe he had deſtined Sir *John Perceval*; but he refuſed it abſolutely *, and made uſe of his Friend *Henry Cromwell* to make his Denial and Excuſes for him, as well as he could.

It is not neceſſary to purſue the Story of that Government much farther, it is ſufficient to ſay, that this Parliament growing alſo very troubleſome, the Commons diſputing the Power of the Lords Houſe, and being intractable in other Particulars, they were diſſolved alſo, upon the fourth of *February*, 1657; after which nothing memorable happened, the Protector governing from that time forward wholly by his Council of Officers, the chief of whom was *Fleetwood*, his own Brother-in-law.———Not long after this he died, and *Richard*, his eldeſt Son, ſucceeded, but could not maintain his Authority; after which, the Nation fell into a kind of Anarchy, chiefly governed by the Army, who, as their different Officers prevailed, either directed all by their own Councils, or by the Aſſiſtance of the old Parliament, which for a Time they called together, to colour their own Power, till at length the Reſtoration was effected by one of thoſe Commanders, *Monk*, who found it too hazardous to attempt the Regal Power for himſelf, and thought it a more certain Way to Greatneſs, to be more moderate in his Ambition, than moſt of his Fellow-Soldiers had been. During this Tranſaction, what is moſt memorable as to Sir *John Perceval*, was the Uſe he made of his Friend-

* Family Letters, Vol. VI. N° 1173.

Friendſhip with *Henry Cromwell*, whoſe tame Reſignation of the Power of his Family, at the Time of his Brother's Depoſal, was principally owing to the Inſtances of this Gentleman.

THIS Conduct had no ſmall Effect in his Favour, upon the Acceſſion of King *Charles* the Second §, and had already ſo recommended him to thoſe who immediately brought about that great Event, that he was named by the Parliament of *England*, who then returned to the Houſe, *one of the four Counſellors to the Preſident of* Munſter, and appointed by thoſe commiſſioned by them to manage the Government of *Ireland*, *Clerk of the Crown*, *Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas*, and *Keeper of the Public Accounts*, upon the ſeventh of *May* preceding the Return of the King, which followed upon the twenty ninth of the ſame Month, 1660.

SOON after that great Change of Affairs, he was ſworn one of the Privy-Council; and upon the ninth of *September*, 1661, created a Baronet, with this remarkable Clauſe in the Patent, never (as we can learn) granted before or ſince, "* That the eldeſt Son, or "Heir apparent, of every Baronet of this Family, "ſhould, at the Age of twenty-one Years, upon No- "tice given thereof to the Lord Deputy-Chamberlain, "or Vice-Chamberlain of the Houſhold, or in the "Abſence of them, to any other Officer or Miniſter "attendant upon the Perſon of the King, to receive "the Order of Knighthood from the King, his Heirs "and Succeſſors, or the ſaid Deputy for the Time be- "ing, of the King, his Heirs and Succeſſors, *To have, hold and enjoy* (altho' in the Life-time of his Father, "or Anceſtor, exiſting a Baronet by Virtue of this Pa- "tent) by Virtue of the ſaid Knighthood, the ſame "State Degree, Dignity, Stile, Title, Name, Place and "Precedency, with all and every other Conceſſions made "to the ſaid Sir *John Perceval*, and his Heirs for ever."

By

§ Family Letters, Vol. VI. fol. 803.
* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

By which Clauſe the Chief and the Heir Male of this Family, are always to exiſt Baronets at the ſame Time.

Sir *John Perceval* was a Man of too good Senſe to reſt ſatisfied at that Juncture, with any temporary Inſtance of Favour, or particular Mark of Reſpect, ſuch as this we have laſt mentioned certainly was, and was intended to be; notwithſtanding the general Act of Indemnity paſſed at the King's Return, and his Declaration antecedent to it, he was ſtill very apprehenſive that he might be one time or other queſtioned for the Engagements he had entered into under the Common-wealth, and under *Cromwell:* and he knew ſo well the Inſtability of Affairs in Courts, that he thought a Change might happen, when no Diſtinction would be made between the Honour of his Conduct, during the Time he was embarked in that Intereſt, and the factious Views of the greateſt Incendiaries of that Time, he therefore made uſe of that favourable Conjuncture, to obtain a Patent of ſpecial Pardon for all Treaſons, Rebellions *, *&c.* and for all Engagements, of what Nature ſoever, of which he might have been guilty, either under the Parliament, the Common-wealth, or the Protector, from the beginning of his Life, to the twenty-ninth of *December*, the twelfth of *Charles* the Second, *A. D.* 1660. Which Patent bore Date at *Weſtminſter*, the twenty-ſecond of *April*, 1662, the fourteenth of *Charles* the Second; and was ſpeedily paſſed in due Form, under the Great Seals of *England* and *Ireland*.

In 1661 he was choſen Knight of the Shire for the County of *Corke* †, and ſerved in that Parliament which, in the following Year, concluded the important Buſineſs of the Act of Settlement in *Ireland*, under which all the Eſtates of that Kingdom are now held; and this great Work was principally conducted by the Earl of *Orrery*, and Sir *John Perceval*, whoſe ſuperior Knowledge of the Intereſt of *Ireland*, was univerſally acknowledged.

But

* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

† Journal of Parliament.

BUT from this Parliament this Family received a very ſevere Blow.——— For by the Abolition of the Court of Wards, which was by them effected in 1662, they were deprived of their great hereditary Employment in that Court, which appears from the Papers of the Family to have produced never leſs than 3,400 *l. per annum*, in the loweſt Years.———Being by far the moſt beneficial Place, though not the firſt in Rank of that Commiſſion.———This Employment depending greatly upon the Grant of Wardſhips, (of which it was entitled legally to the Choice of the two beſt that fell, after the Maſter had made his Choice of two for himſelf) and being allowed as many more as the Intereſt of the Party could obtain, it amounted often to a much greater Sum.———The Profits of this Place roſe ſo high in one Year, 1640, the laſt that this Family truly enjoyed it, (the Rebellion breaking out ſoon after) that it produced in neat Money ſeven thouſand five hundred Pounds.———But theſe Advantages being not then prudent to be divulged, nor capable of being brought to Account, and ſome lurking Objections to Sir *John Perceval* ſtill ſubſiſting, on account of his former Conduct, he could obtain no more in lieu of it, than a Sum of 5000 *l.* nor could he even compaſs that, without great Difficulty.

IT appears that he ſtruggled very hard to prevent the paſſing of this Act; not only becauſe he had ſo much private Reaſon to oppoſe it, but becauſe he likewiſe thought it very prejudicial to that Kingdom.——— In this View he preſented ſeveral Memorials to the King*, ſhewing with great Strength of Reaſon (though he acknowledged it to have been an oppreſſive Inſtitution, and to require to be much corrected in the Direction) yet that it was highly neceſſary in that Kingdom, where nothing could entirely reduce the Natives to the Condition of good Subjects, or to the Proteſtant Religion, but an Eſtabliſhment of this Kind, which entitled the State to the Education of all the Men of Fortune

* Ex Autograph. penes Com. de Egmont.

Fortune in it. ——— He demonſtrated, by numerous Examples, how vaſt a Benefit had in that Reſpect accrued to the Public from it, ſince the Reign of King *James* the Firſt to that Time, and that it could not fail totally to change the Religion and Manners of the *Iriſh*, in leſs than one Century, if ſuffered to continue. ——He urged likewiſe the great Confuſion that would ariſe in Deſcents and Pedigrees, and Titles to Eſtates, from the Want of ſuch a Court, who carefully preſerved all Traces of this Kind, and equally guarded the Intereſts and Fortunes of helpleſs Orphans, who would be otherwiſe expoſed to the Villany of bad Guardians, and wicked Relations.———All theſe were Conſiderations of very great Weight, and which have ſince been proved to be ſuch, by the Adherence of the Natives to their old Religion, by a great Confuſion of Titles, and other enormous Abuſes, in the Management of the Eſtates of Minors, but the Example of *England*, where this Court had been already laid aſide, and the popular Clamour againſt it, rendered all thoſe Arguments of no Effect.———Nay, their very Force made them the leſs effectual, for the Popiſh Party, knowing how much their Intereſts were concerned in the Conſequences of this Court, ſecretly uſed their utmoſt Endeavours, (which were of no ſmall Force in that Reign) againſt it.———The King himſelf, who either regarded no Religion, or was even then converted to that, did not entertain the moſt favourable Opinion of it, from theſe Conſiderations. ——— He had likewiſe a farther Inducement to its Diſſolution, which was the Proſpect of a great Increaſe of his Revenue.——— And this he compaſſed in a manner attended with Circumſtances of no great Honour to himſelf; —— for taking Advantage of the Diſpoſition in *Ireland* to free themſelves from this Branch of the Prerogative, he ſo managed, that the Parliament there was made to believe, that upon granting an hereditary Exciſe, they ſhould obtain their Deſire.———Whereupon Heads of a Bill were prepared to grant this Revenue of Exciſe, and to aboliſh the Court of Wards,

by one Act. ——— But after the Parliament had advanced far in it, he ſuggeſted that it would be more decent to divide the Matter into two Bills, that the thing might appear rather a Conceſſion from, than a Condition with the Crown. ——— This being done, the King paſſed the one Bill, and rejected the other, obtaining, by this mean Artifice, the Revenue, but leaving the Condition, upon which alone it was granted, unperformed. ——— The Parliament, however, though thus deterred, ſtill perſiſting in the ardent Deſire to carry this Point, ſubmitted to grant a ſecond Equivalent, and gave the Hearth-Money for it, to the Crown Hereditarily, which it ſtill enjoys.——Thus that People, tamely and weakly in all Reſpects, eſtabliſhed theſe heavy Charges upon themſelves and their Poſterity, the Exciſe amounting to above 140,000 *l.* and the Hearth-Money to above 42,000*l. per annum*, in lieu of the Court of Wards, from which the Crown never received in that Kingdom above 10,000 *l. per annum.*

A Plot for a new Inſurrection, and for the Surpriſal of the Caſtle of *Dublin* †, by Colonel *Jepſon*, and ſeveral others of the old Officers of the Republican Army, being diſcovered in 1663, *Lachir*, one of the chief Conſpirators, was brought to his Trial; and the Government deſiring to convince the World that they acted in this Affair, at ſo critical a Juncture, with as great Juſtice and Impartiality as poſſible, a very honourable Jury was appointed, and Sir *John Perceval* was the Foreman of it.

IT was now high time, after the Settlement of the more immediate Concerns of the Government in ſuch Points as related to its Security, to conſider how to recover the Trade of that Kingdom, which was reduced

Note—The Hereditary Exciſe conſiſts of two Branches. The *Imported Exciſe*, which amounts to above 78,000 l. per Ann. The *Inland Exciſe*, which amounts to very near as much.

* Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

duced almoſt to nothing by the terrible Devaſtations of Rebellion, for near twenty ſucceſſive Years. It was full twenty-three Years ſince the Rebellion firſt broke out, and there had ſcarce been any Quiet there, but the laſt four Years of that Period, after the Reſtoration, and moſt of that Time had been ſpent in ſettling Diſputes among the different Parties of the Kingdom, and in ſuppreſſing, or guarding againſt new Plots and Diſturbances. A Council of Trade was therefore then eſtabliſhed in *Ireland*, with very great Proſpect of Advantage to the Country *, and Sir *John Perceval* was appointed one of the firſt Members of it, upon the twenty-ſixth of *May*, 1664.

THE Condition of *Ireland* was now extremely low, the Rents of it not above eight hundred thouſand Pounds *per annum*, and its Specie not above two hundred thouſand Pounds. It was not without extreme Difficulty, that Money could be brought to pay the ſmall Rents for which the Lands were let, to anſwer the Taxes of the Crown, or to return the Ballance of ſuch Commodities as the Neceſſities of the Country required to import from *England*. They had very little Trade with any Country but with *England*, and no Capacity of ſatisfying theſe Demands, but by the Exportation of about ſeventy thouſand Head of Cattle thither, the full Value of which amounted to no more than one hundred and forty thouſand Pounds. ——— It might have been imagined at ſuch a Juncture, that *England* could have entertained no Jealouſy of their Proſperity, no Apprehenſion of the Greatneſs, nor any Envy of the private Fortunes of that Kingdom. It muſt ſurely ſeem to all other Nations, and in all future Times, a very imprudent Conduct, to offer any Diſcouragement to the Improvement of that Country, and to the better ſettling it with new People, when all the Calamities, even of the three Kingdoms, were certainly owing to, or at leaſt could never have happened in that high Degree, but from the Idleneſs

* Laruens's State of Ireland.

neſs and Poverty which prevailed there, and created a dangerous Dependance on the chief Men; a Poverty which kept them ignorant, and prevented their Change of a Religion, ever dangerous to the Civil and Religious Rights of this Nation. The moſt rational Meaſures to have purſued with that Country, doubtleſs were ſuch which were not then, nor have ever yet been followed; Trade and Manufactures ſhould have been promoted, no Difference made between the Intereſts of the two Kingdoms, no Oppreſſion to diſcountenance the poor People of the Country, or to have alienated the Affections of thoſe who remained there. By theſe Meaſures they had grown up in one common and hearty Cauſe had brought into the public Ballance the Labour and Strength of two Millions of Inhabitants, and had rendered that Country an invincible Barrier to all Invaſions from abroad, whereas it ſtill remains expoſed to the Attempts of the Enemies of this Kingdom, and is ſtill conducted in ſuch a manner as to afford a certain and great Aſſiſtance to ill-deſigning Men, whenever the Affairs of *England* ſhall return into the ſame critical Circumſtances in which they have ſo often been, and in which, from the Viciſſitude of mundane Affairs they may often be again.

IT is the leſs ſurprizing that Maxims of this pernicious kind ſhould have prevailed, at a Time when the Conduct was ſo new, that its deſperate Effects had not been yet experienced, ſince after a moſt fatal Trial of theſe Meaſures for near fourſcore Years, this falſe and erroneous way of thinking is ſtill ſo prevalent in *England*. It was the Luſt of Power which hurried *the Leaders* of the two Houſes of Parliament into it, and it was the miſtaken and miſinformed Notions of *the reſt* that, enabled them to carry their Point. The Parliament, during the Time of the Rebellion, and the Confuſion of that Conjuncture, wreſted this Part of the Prerogative from the Crown, and had then firſt began to exerciſe a kind of Sovereignty over that Kingdom. The People of *Ireland* affirm, that there was no one Precedent for the *Engliſh* to interfere with them in the

Buſineſs of the Legiſlature before that Period, the *Engliſh* Lawyers themſelves had exploded that Doctrine, and the greateſt Members of the *Engliſh* Parliament had impeached a great Miniſter of State*, for affirming it to have been a Conquered Country, which was the only Ground from whence they could claim that Superiority.———And the Reaſon given for that Accuſation is very memorable, "That it was the high-"eſt Treaſon to affirm that which muſt endanger the "Freedom of whole Nation, and conſequently cor-"rupt and alienate their Affections." This Argument, however ſolid, was not ſufficient to cheque the violent Spirit which reigned in the prevailing Party of the Parliament of *England* at that Time, who having once acquired this Branch of the Prerogative, did not ſufficiently conſider the dangerous Conſequences which followed, and may perhaps hereafter follow from it to the *Britiſh* Commerce, the *Britiſh* Liberties, and even the Exiſtence of the *Britiſh* Nation.

THIS Spirit ſeemed to flame to an extravagant Degree in the Year 1663, when a Clauſe was paſſed in a Bill intitled *An Act for the Government of Trade*, whereby they abſolutely prohibited the Importation of *Iriſh* Cattle; and this the Party before-mentioned drove on with a Fury that ſeemed to intend the total Confuſion and Ruin of that Kingdom. ——— Upon this Occaſion Sir *John Perceval*, both as an *Engliſhman*, and as one entruſted with the Welfare of the Trade of the other Kingdom, exerted himſelf to the utmoſt of his Power. He drew up a lively and prophetic Repreſentation of the Diſtreſs it muſt occaſion, in *Ireland*, and the future Miſchiefs which muſt follow from it; all which have been amply verified in the Event. This Repreſentation was readily aſſented to by the reſt of the Council of Trade in *Ireland*, made the Act of their Body, and tranſmitted to *England*.

IN this Interval, the firſt apparent Conſequence of the Reſtraint here mentioned, was a very conſiderable Advance

* See Mr. Pym's Speeches againſt the Earl of Strafford.—Alſo the Articles of his Impeachment in Ruſhworth.

Advance of the Price of Proviſions in *England*, and in Conſequence of that, a ſudden Riſe of the Price of Labour, which was in no degree anſwered by the Riſe of the Rents; and thus began that Dearneſs of its Commodities, which increaſed ſince, by Meaſures of as wild a Nature, with reſpect to that Kingdom, has arrived to ſuch a Point, as in a great degree to confound the Commerce of *Great-Britain*, and to render her incapable of furniſhing any Manufactures at ſo low a Rate as her Neighbours; under which apparent Evil ſhe now labours, perſiſting too long in the ſame Meaſures which have brought her into this Condition, by reſtraining *Ireland* in her Manufactures, by whoſe Aſſiſtance alone, from the Cheapneſs of her Labour, ſhe is able to recover again the Ground ſhe has loſt.—The Populace ſtill maintaining this Prejudice to ſuch an Extravagance, as to oblige, even thoſe of a more open Underſtanding, rather to ſuffer all the Powers of *Europe* to undermine their Trade with Impunity, than to give that Encouragement to *Ireland* (from whom *England* always receives the utmoſt Gain ſhe makes) which would enable that Country to give a total Check to the Commerce of all the Rivals of *England*, and in a Courſe of Time, with ſmall Advantage to herſelf, reſtore theſe Kingdoms to the joint Poſſeſſion of a more certain Mine of Treaſure than all the Mountains of *Peru* produce.

THE Conſequences of this Reſtraint in *Ireland* were ſudden and horrible. The Demands of thoſe to whom *Ireland* was indebted on the Ballance of her Trade, were ſo urgent *, that the Specie of the Kingdom was remitted to ſuch a Degree, as to cauſe an Impoſſibility of the Payment either of the Rents of private Eſtates, or of the Revenues of the Crown, and the Subſidies granted by the Parliament remained unpaid. Horſes formerly ſold for thirty Shillings were now ſold for twelve Pence; and Oxen ſold for fifty Shillings before the Prohibition, were now ſold for ten.

YET

* Vide Carte's Hiſtory of the Duke of Ormond.

YET in *England* the ſame Meaſures were purſued; as if, having that Country now down, it had been reſolved that ſhe ſhould never riſe again. Their Blow was followed from Seſſion to Seſſion, till at laſt in 1667, not only all Importation of *Iriſh* Cattle was prohibited, but alſo that of all Beef, Pork and Bacon, out of that Kingdom into *England*. The Matter was carried ſtill farther, and it was propoſed to alter the Book of Rates of *Ireland*, and to compel the *Iriſh* to receive all foreign Commodities out of *England*. But the Abſurdity appeared too great, to oblige them to trade with *England*, when they had abſolutely prohibited the only Means they had to ſatisfy the Ballance, or to barter in Exchange. This Project therefore was at length dropped; yet ſuch was the general Malignity of all Degrees of Men at that Time againſt that Kingdom, that the Lords, at the ſame Conjuncture, attempted to oblige the King to deprive the Peers of *Ireland* of that Place and Precedency in *England*, which they had ever enjoyed ſince the Acquiſition of that Country to the Crown of *England*. ——— This Attempt was utterly inconſiſtent with their Patents, with the Nature of the Peerage, and with all Precedents, and indeed, not calculated truly for the Honour of the *Engliſh* Lords themſelves, whoſe Peerage being of the ſame Nature, granted by the ſame Prince, and confirmed under the ſame Great Seal, muſt have ſuffered a palpable Diminution by any Contempt admitted to fall upon any Part of the Nobility of either Nation.

BESIDES, about the King's Perſon a natural Attendance was due from the *Iriſh*, as well as from the *Engliſh* Peers, let the Place of his Reſidence be where it would; ſo that their Preſence in *England* was, from the Nature of the Peerage, not meerly voluntary, while the King lived here: and being therefore in ſome degree neceſſary, it ſhould ſeem requiſite and juſt that their Privilege ought to be maintained inviolate.——The King, for theſe Reaſons, was not to be prevailed upon in this Particular, which affected his Prerogative in ſo tender a Point, and ſtruck ſo deeply at his

his Intereſt, in the Affections of all the greateſt Subjects of that Kingdom. He rejected this Application with great Firmneſs, "and told the Lord *Aſhley*, afterwards Earl of *Shaftſbury*, a great Promoter of this "Violence, that *the Nobility* would receive juſt ſo much "Advantage by *this Project*, as *the Nation* had received by that of *the Prohibition of Cattle*; and that "as he was confident a little time would ſufficiently "demonſtrate the Miſchiefs of *the one*, there ſhould be "no Experience of Inconvenience from *the other*. "He ſaid farther, that he was aſtoniſhed to find the "*Engliſh* Lords ſo deſirous to undermine their own "Dignity, for that they had no better, or other Foundation, than that upon which the *Iriſh* ſtood. And "that to allow him the Prerogative of diſpenſing with "the Privileges of the one Body, was, as he thought, "no great Advantage or Security to the other. In "fine, he ſaid, that he was the common Father of "both Nations, and would prove himſelf to be ſuch, "as long as he ſat upon the Throne of both Kingdoms."

SIR *John Perceval* had not contented himſelf with the bare Duty of his Office, but laboured inceſſantly by his Intereſt and Friendſhips in *England* *, to obſtruct this indiſcreet Conduct. And the Alliances of his Family being on this Side, and for many Ages ſo well known in that Kingdom, (out of which, in the whole, neither himſelf, nor his Father or Grandfather, had ever ſpent above twenty-five Years, and in which he ſtill retained a conſiderable Eſtate) gave him great Weight upon that Subject. He was too well known to be ſuſpected of ſpeaking from any private Regard to the Advantage he might reap (from any Encouragement to *Ireland*) in his private Fortune. It was ſufficiently ample to put him above ſo mean a Conſideration, and his Honour, as well as his Underſtanding, rendered him incapable of purſuing a ſeparate Intereſt in either Kingdom, which every Man of Senſe

* Family Collections, Vol. VII.

Senſe muſt ſee and feel to be deſtructive to the whole. ———He went over to *England**, to follow this important Affair, and to prevent the violent Meaſures then projected, and afterwards carried partly into Execution, in a very ill State of Health, about the Year 1664; and in that Year we find by his Letters, that his Endeavours had a very good Effect upon ſome of the moſt conſiderable Men. But the Gout, Stone and Dropſy, and a Complication of other Diſorders, encreaſing violently upon him, he was obliged to quit that Cauſe, and return to *Ireland*, to take his Farewell of his Lady, whom he had left there, alſo in a very ill Condition of Health.———He had the Satisfaction to live long enough to ſee her‖, but this was rendered a very melancholy Meeting, by the Certainty of the Impoſſibility of his Recovery.

He died very ſoon after, upon *All-Saints-Day*, (*viz.*) the firſt of *November*, 1665, at *Dublin*, and was buried upon the fifth of the ſame Month, in the Church of *St. Audeon* there, having lived thirty-ſix Years and fifty-four Days; of which ſhort Space he had ſpent by much the greateſt part in conſtant and indefatigable Application to the public Concerns of his Country, with an unblemiſhed Reputation, and a Character of Virtue and Integrity, which too rarely accompanies that of a conſummate Capacity.

His Will is dated the fourteenth Day of *November* †, and was proved the fourth of *December*, 1675.

Sir *John Perceval* having intended to build a Church at *Burton*, and a magnificent Monument being deſigned to be erected there, it was thought ſufficient for that Time to place only the following Memorial of him over his Grave, the Body being intended to be afterwards removed.

§ Here lieth the Body of Sir *John Perceval*,
Baronet, eldeſt Son of Sir *Philip Perceval*,
Knight,

* Family Collections, Vol. VII. ‖ Ibid.
† Ex Regiſtro Prærogat. Hiberniæ.
§ From the Entry in the Herald's-Office, London.


BRITISH MUSEUM



I. Faber Fecit 1748

Catharine only Daught.r of Rob.t
& sister of S.r Rob.t Southwell of King
weston in Com: Glou.r K.t Wife to S.r John
Perceval Bar.t 1.st of that Name Born 1.st Sep.r 1637.
Married 14 Feb.y 1655 Died 17 Aug.t 1679.

Knight, and of *Catherine*, the Daughter of *Arthur Uſher*, of *Dublin*, Eſquire.

He was born in *Dublin*, the ſeventh of *September*, 1629, and died there on the firſt of *November*, 1665, in the thirty-ſeventh Year of his Age.

He married on the fourteenth of *February*, 1655, *Catherine* the only Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinſale*, Eſquire, and of *Helena Gore*.

By whom he had Iſſue

(1.) *Philip*, born at *Kinſale*, the twelfth of *January*, 1656.

(2.) *Robert*, born at *Kinſale*, the eighth of *February*, 1657.

(3.) *John*, born near *Burton*, the twenty-ſecond of *Auguſt*, 1660.

(4.) *Charles*, born at *London*, the fourth of *November*, 1661, and who died at *Kinſale* in *July*—— 1662.

(5.) *Catherine*, born at *Dublin*, the nineteenth of *March*, 1662.

(6.) *Helena*, born at *Kinſale*, the ſeventeenth of *February*, 1665, which was after her Father's Death.

His Father, Sir *Philip Perceval*, Knight, who was Son to *Richard*, and Grandſon to *George Perceval*, Eſquire, of the Family of *Weſton*, in the County of *Somerſet* in *England*, died in *London* the tenth of *November*, *Anno* 1647, and was buried in the Church of *St. Martin in the Fields*, in the forty-ſixth Year of his Age.

We now come to ſay ſomething of *Catherine* Lady *Perceval*, the Relict of Sir *John*, and Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinſale*, Eſquire, deſcended from many of the beſt and moſt ancient Families in *England*, from whence her Grandfather had tranſplanted himſelf but a few Years before.—— And though her

Fortune was no more than Three thouſand Pounds, ſhe brought with her Accompliſhments and Virtues more valuable than any Portion, and ſuch as created the greateſt Harmony that ever was experienced in that State.——A Choice ſo virtuous and diſintereſted could not well fail of one of the firſt Bleſſings of ſuch Marriages, which is a ſpeedy Concluſion*;— notwithſtanding the ſtrong Oppoſition of the Lady *Perceval* to it, who had much greater Views for her Son, and conſidered more his Intereſt than real Happineſs in that State.

THE firſt of this Family†, from whom, with Certainty, thoſe who now bear the Name may be deduced, was *John Southwell* of *Felix Hall*, in the County of of *Eſſex*, by ſome aſſerted to have ſerved in Parliament for the Borough of *Lewes* in *Suſſex*, *A. D.* 1450; which *John*, by a Daughter of ——— *Salmon*, alias *Pride*, had a Son *Robert*, who, by his Wife *Iſabella*, Daughter of *John Boyce*, had *Richard Southwell*, Eſq; who, marrying *Amy* eldeſt Daughter and Coheir of Sir *Edmund Wychingham*, by *Alice* Daughter and Heir of *John Falſtaff*, obtained in her Right the Manor of———, in the County of *Norfolk*, in the Time of *Edward* the Fourth. This *Richard Southwell* left three Sons, *Robert*, *Richard*, and *Francis*; of which the eldeſt, Sir *Robert*, dying without Iſſue, *Francis*, his ſecond Brother, by *Alice* Daughter and Coheir of *William Tendring*, Son of *Thomas Tendring* and *Agnes* his Wife, the Daughter and Heir of——— *Holbrook*. Having executed the Office of Auditor of the Exchequer in the Time of *Henry* the Eighth, left Sir *Richard Southwell*, Knt. who became Heir to his Brother *Robert*.——This Sir *Richard* was a very eminent Man, and had a great Share in the Death of *Henry Howard*, Earl of *Surrey*, Son and Heir of *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, by affirming, that he knew certain Things of the ſaid Earl which touched his Fidelity to the King; but he dying alſo without Iſſue, the Eſtate deſcended

* Family Collections, Vol. VI. N°. 1065.
† From a MSS. late Mr. Le Neve's.

deſcended to *Richard*, Son of *Francis Southwell*, youngeſt Brother of the ſaid Sir *Richard*, by *Alice*, Daughter and Coheir of *William Tendring*, aforeſaid.—This laſt Sir *Richard*, Son of *Francis*, was Maſter of the Ordnance, and of the Privy-Council to King *Henry* the Eighth, *Edward* the Sixth, and Queen *Mary*; and alſo one of the Executors of the Will of the ſaid King *Henry*.——He left no Iſſue by his firſt Wife *Thomaſine*, Daughter of *Thomas Darcy* of *Denbury*, in the County of *Eſſex*, Eſq; but by *Mary*, Daughter of *Thomas Darcy* of *Denbury* aforeſaid, he left *Richard Southwell* his Son, who was of *Horſham St. Faith's*, in the County of *Norfolk*, and married his firſt Wife *Bridget*, Daughter of Sir *Roger Copely* of *Rowhney*, in the County of Suffolk, by whom he left a Son *Richard Southwell* alſo of *Horſham*, who married *Alice*, Daughter of Sir *Thomas Cornwallis* of *Broomhall*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Comptroller to Queen *Mary*, by his Wife, Daughter of Sir *John Jernegan* of *Somerlayton*, in the ſame County, by his Wife *Bridget*, Daughter of Sir *Robert Drury* of *Halſtead*; of which Family of *Cornwallis* we ſhall here ſay no more, that Houſe being now to be found in the Deſcents of the Peers of *England*.——This *Richard Southwell*, by the ſaid *Alice Cornwallis*, left two Sons, Sir *Thomas Southwell*, and *Anthony*; of which Sir *Thomas* ſeated himſelf at *Polylong* in *Ireland*, and was of the Privy-Council of *Munſter*, but he died in 1626; and of him we ſhall ſay no further, than that the Barons *Southwell* of *Caſtle Mattraſs*, in the County of *Limerick*, are deſcended from him.

ANTHONY SOUTHWELL, the ſecond Son, accompanied his Brother into the ſame Kingdom, and there died in 1623. This *Anthony* married to his firſt Wife *Margaret*, Daughter of Sir *Ralph Shelton*, by his Wife *Anne*, or *Mary*, Daughter of Sir *William Woodhouſe* of *Waxtoneſham* in *Norfolk* (by his Wife, Daughter of *Henry de Reppes* of *Thorp Market*, and *South Reppes*, and of *Anne*, Daughter of *Richard Holditch* of *Didlington* in the ſame County;) which Sir *William Woodhouſe* was Son of Sir *John Woodhouſe*,

of a different Line from thoſe of *Kimberley*, by *Alice* his Wife, Daughter of *William Crofts* of *Wiſton* in *Norfolk*.——Sir *Ralph Shelton*, laſt mentioned, who married *Woodhouſe*, was Grandſon of Sir *John Shelton*, and of *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of Sir *William Boleyn*, and Son (as it is preſumed) though the Proof is not poſitive) of another Sir *John Shelton*, by his Wife, *Margaret Parker*, one of the Daughters of *Henry Parker*, firſt Lord *Morley*, by his Wife *Alice*, the Daughter of Sir *John St. John* of *Bletcho*; which *Henry* Lord *Morley* was Son of Sir *William Parker*, Knight, Standard-Bearer and Privy-Counſellor to King *Richard* the Third, who, by *Alice*, Siſter and Heir of *Henry Luvel*, Lord *Morley*, brought that Title into the Houſe of *Parker*, of which we have already ſpoken, and ſhall ſpeak more at large hereafter.——This *Anthony Southwell*, by the ſaid *Margaret Shelton*, had Iſſue *Robert Southwell* of *Kinſale*, in the County of *Cork* in *Ireland*, who was of the Privy-Council of *Munſter*, and died the third of *April*, 1677, at ſeventy Years of Age. The ſaid *Robert Southwell* married *Helena*, only Daughter and ſurviving Heir of *Robert Gore* of the County of *Somerſet*, by *Catherine* his Wife, Daughter of *Nicholas Hide* (and Siſter of Sir *Arthur*) of *Lottingham* and *Hinton Dawbenny*, Lord Chief Juſtice of *England*, by *Mary* his Wife, Daughter of *Arthur Swaine* of *Sarſton*, in the County of *Southampton*;——which Sir *Nicholas* was Son of *Lawrence Hide* of *Guſage St. Michael*, in the County of *Dorſet*, by *Anne* his Wife, Daughter of *Nicholas Sibell* of *Kent*, Eſq; which *Lawrence* was ſecond Son of *Robert Hide* of *Norbery*, in the County of *Cheſter*, in the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, by his ſecond Wife *Catherine*, the Daughter of——*Boydell* of *Pullcroft*, in the ſame County.——This *Robert Southwell* laſt mentioned, by the ſaid *Helena Gore*, left a Son, Sir *Robert Southwell*, Knight (whoſe Grandſon, *Edward Southwell* of *Kinſale* in *Ireland*, and *King's Weſton* in the County of *Glouceſter* in *England*, continues now the Male Line of this Houſe) and an only Daughter *Catherine*, who became, as we have ſhewn already,

already, the Wife of Sir *John Perceval*, and is the Perſon of whom we here treat.

SIR *John Perceval* having made known his Inclinations to the Parents of the young Lady, of whoſe Affections he was ſatisfied before, the Nobleneſs of his Eſtate, the Greatneſs of his Family, and the Accompliſhments of his Perſon and Character, were Inducements to a quick Concluſion of this Matter; and accordingly the Contract of Marriage was ſigned the ſixth of *December*, 1655.

AND not long after*, *viz.* upon the firſt of *January*, 1655, a Deed was made and inrolled between Sir *William Uſher*, Knight, of the one Part, and Sir *Hardreſs Waller*, Knight, *Walter Waller*, his Son and Heir apparent, *Robert Southwell* the Father, and Sir *Robert Southwell* the Brother of the young Lady, on the other Part, whereby the Lands to be ſettled upon the Iſſue of the approaching Marriage were to be ſecured.

THE neceſſary Preliminaries being thus ſettled, the Marriage was conſummated upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1655-6.

THIS moſt excellent Woman out-lived her Huſband fourteen Years, in a continued Courſe of Sickneſs and Grief, no Time being capable to efface or diminiſh the Remembrance of her Loſs. She remained a ſingular Pattern of all Virtue with her Father and Mother at *Kinſale* in *Ireland* till the Year 1677, when her Illneſs increaſing upon her, ſhe was prevailed upon to go abroad to *France*, where her eldeſt Son then was upon his Travels.——In the beginning of *September*†, having before made her Will upon the twenty-ſeventh of *Auguſt*, 1677, leaving her youngeſt Son, after Sir *John Perceval*, her ſole Executor; ſhe ſet out from *Kinſale* for *Nantz* in *Britany* with her two Daughters, but by Streſs of Weather, the fifth of the ſame Month, ſhe was driven into *Foy* in *Cornwall*,——from whence ſhe ſent her Daughter *Helena*, who was unable to

* Family Collections, Vol. VI.
† Ex Autograph penes Com' Egmont.

to bear the Sea, to *London* to her Relations there.—Upon the ſeventeenth of *September* ſhe ſet ſail again, but was again driven back to the ſame Port: She ſtill perſiſted however in her Reſolution, and at length landed ſafely upon the fifth of *October* at *Croſac*, whither her Son Sir *Philip Perceval* ſoon after arrived to meet her, and conducted her to *St. Nazarre*, from thence by Water to *Nantz*, and afterwards to *Saumur*, where ſhe paſſed that Winter, and all the next Summer, 1678. Sir *Philip*, during that Time, purſued his Travels, and returned to *Paris* in his Way home. This Lady *Perceval* went thither in *December*, and having paſſed that Winter there with her two Daughters, and her Son Sir *Philip*, came back with them to *England* about the beginning of *April*, 1679. The ninth of *May* following ſhe embarked from *Briſtol* to *Cork*, from whence ſhe proceeded immediately to *Kinſale*, where ſhe found Mrs. *Southwell*, her Mother, in a languiſhing Condition, and given over by her Phyſicians. This Lady died ſoon after, upon the firſt of *July* following: Which melancholy Accident made ſo great an Impreſſion on this unhappy Lady, that ſhe followed her ſoon after, departing this Life alſo near the ſame Place, upon the ſeventeenth of *Auguſt*, 1679, where ſhe lies buried under a very noble Monument, with the following Inſcription.

HERE lieth the Body of Dame *Catherine*, Relict of Sir *John Perceval* of *Burton*, Baronet, and only Daughter of *Robert Southwell* of *Kinſale*, Eſquire, and of *Helena Southwell* his Wife.

SHE was born at *Kinſale* the firſt of *September*, 1637: She was there married on the fourteenth of *February*, 1655, and died near unto it upon the ſeventeenth of *Auguſt*, 1679.

HER Huſband, Sir *John Perceval*, died in *Dublin* the firſt of *November*, 1665, in the thirty-

thirty-ſeventh Year of his Age, and lies buried there in the Church of *St. Audeon*.

THEIR Children were firſt, *Philip*, born at *Kinſale* the twelfth of *January*, 1656.

THE ſecond, *Robert*, there born the eighth of *February*, 1657: He departed this Life upon the fifth of *June*, 1671, and was buried at *Lincoln's-Inn* in *London*.

THIRD, *John*, born at *Egmont*, alias *Ballymacow*, near unto *Burton*, the twenty-ſecond of *Auguſt*, 1660.

FOURTH, *Charles*, born in *London* the fourth of *November*, 1661: He died at *Kinſale* in *July*, 1662, and lieth here alſo interred.

FIFTH, *Catherine*, born at *Dublin* the nineteenth of *March*, 1662.

AND, ſixth, *Helena*, born at *Kinſale* the ſeventeenth of *February*, 1665, after her Father's Death.

THIS Lady having paſſed her Youth in all the Exerciſes of Virtue and good Inſtruction, and being remarkable for the Beauties both of Body and Mind, ſhe became the more worthy of that excellent Man that was her Huſband; and was not only endeared to him, by bringing a numerous Offspring, who did partake of his Virtues, but by the Charms of her Converſation during his Health, and her Care and Veneration of him during his Sickneſs.

SHE augmented her Loſs, when he could no longer be a Witneſs of it; for, after his Death, ſhe lived but as his Monument, and paid unto his Memory the Reſidue of her Life in Tears; his Childrens Advantage did thenceforth become her worldly Care, unleſs it ſeemed that ſhe had equal Regard

of

of others, by her boundleſs Compaſſion to all that were in Diſtreſs.

THE great Improvements of her Mind were vayled over with Meekneſs and Humility: The Obſervance ſhe paid her Parents, and her Devotions to God, were unwearied, and of Example unto all.

So that having lived eighteen Years a Virgin, ten Years a Wife, and fourteen Years a Widow, and manifeſting in every Condition of Life the Virtues that were moſt pleaſing unto Heaven and Earth, who can forbid the Remembrance of thoſe divine Words, (*Proverbs* the Thirty-firſt, and the Twenty-ninth) *Many Daughters have done virtuouſly, but thou excelleſt them all.*

SIR *John Perceval*, Baronet, Heir to his Brother Sir *Philip Perceval* (who died at *Burton* the eleventh of *September*, 1680) hath to the Memory of ſo pious a Mother, cauſed this Monument to be erected, in the Year of Redemption, 1628.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Baronet, and *Catherine* Lady *Perceval*, his Wife.

I. SIR *PHILIP*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *ROBERT*, born at *Kinſale* the eighth of *February*, 1657. As ſoon as he was of ſufficient Age, having made a ſingular Proficiency in the *Latin* and *Greek* Languages, he was ſent to compleat the Studies which are generally taught afterwards in the Univerſities at *Chriſt's College* in *Cambridge*; ſoon after which, he was entered at *Lincoln's Inn* in *London*, in order to ſtudy the Law.

In



I. Faber Fecit 1744.

Robert Perceval Esq.r
2.d Son of the Rt. Hon.ble
Sr. John Perceval Bar.t 7.th of that Name
Born 8.th of Feb.y 1657. Dyed without Issue
5.th of June 1677.


BRITISH MUSEUM

IN *May*, 1676, he was put under the Care of the Biſhop of *Landaff*, to be made Maſter of Philoſophy, Mathematicks, and other Branches of that kind of Learning, which he had been too much drawn from by the licentious Example of ſome of his Cotemporaries at the Univerſity.

HIS Parts were admirable, but his Application to his Pleaſures greater than to his Books; ſo that, diſliking the Confinement of that Houſe, he returned to *London*, and lived at his Chambers in *Lincoln's Inn*, where no Opportunities were wanting for gratifying the unhappy Turn he had to the ill Habits of that Age he lived in.

HIS Perſon and Converſation were both more agreeable to others, than advantageous to himſelf; for they led him into Company, which proved his Ruin. Example and Faſhion had, as it generally has upon Men of his Years, too great an Influence, which ſhewed itſelf in moſt of his Actions, and in one Particular, (in which it was aggravated, by a great Courage and high Spirit) in a remarkable degree; for he had been engaged in nineteen Duels before he was twenty Years of Age, in all which he came off with Honour, and commonly with Advantage.

UPON the twenty-ſecond of *May*, 1677, he obtained, in Conjunction with his youngeſt Brother, and to the Survivor of them, a Patent* from the Crown for the Reverſion of the Offices of Clerk of the Crown, Prothonotary and chief Clerk of the Common-Pleas and *Cuſtos Brevium* in *Ireland*; which Improvement of his Circumſtances, increaſed his Exceſſes, and ſupported the diſſolute Courſe he followed.

SIR *Robert Southwell*, his Uncle and his Guardian, had laboured to reclaim him from this unhappy Life: He loved him tenderly, and admired the the Seeds of thoſe great Qualities, Abilities and Virtues,

* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

Virtues, which were ſtrongly rooted in him; though, for the preſent, kept down by the luxuriant Growth of thoſe rank Weeds, which ſpring moſt fruitfully in ſuch a Soil; but he was taken off too ſuddenly, to reap the Fruit of his Inſtruction, for he was murdered by an unknown Hand, upon the fifth of *June*, 1677.

UPON the ſixth of *June*, in the Morning, Sir *Robert Southwell* received the melancholy News that his Nephew lay dead under the *May-Pole* in the *Strand*, where he found him with a deep Wound under his left Pap, which had pierced his Heart, and was the Occaſion of his Death: His Sword was drawn, and lay bloody by him, by which it appeared that he had defended himſelf as long as he was able.

A STRANGER's Hat, with a Bunch of Ribbons in it, was found by his Side; from whence it was at firſt hoped that the Murderer might be diſcovered, but this Expectation was found vain.—— For though the King, by his Proclamations, and the Family, by all proper Enquiries, endeavoured to bring the Offenders to Juſtice, no poſitive or certain Proof was ever attained to; and the Villany has, as yet, eſcaped at leaſt a publick Puniſhment.

MANY extraordinary Circumſtances attended this ſad Affair.——— It becomes the Nature of theſe Relations to give thoſe Circumſtances with their Authorities, and the Reader is left to make his own Judgment upon them, without enquiring into the Author's private Sentiments.———For Men, upon Matters of the following Kind, muſt think differently, according to their different Turns of Mind, and the different Prejudices or Impreſſions of their Education. The Particulars are delivered Word for Word, as they are minuted down by the preſent Earl of *Egmont*, upon a Converſation which Sir *Robert Southwell* had with him immediately before his Death.

" *ROBERT*

" *ROBERT* was but twenty when he was mur-
" dered in the *Strand* by Villains that, to this Day,
" are not found out, and lies buried at *Lin-*
" *coln's Inn*, near one of the Pillars underneath
" the Chapel. Some Circumſtances concerning
" his Death are too extraordinary to be paſſed
" by; and what I am going to relate, I had
" from Perſons whoſe Sincerity I can depend
" on.——A few Nights before the Murder,
" *Robert*, who was a Student in *Lincoln's Inn*,
" was ſitting in his Chamber reading, and it was
" late at Night, when there appeared to him his
" own Apparition bloody and ghaſtly ſtalking
" into his Chamber. My Uncle was ſo aſtoniſhed
" at the Sight, that he immediately ſwooned
" away; but, recovering, he ſaw the Spectre
" walk out again, and vaniſh down Stairs.
" When he was recovered of his Fright, he
" undreſſed himſelf, and went to bed, but in
" extraordinary Uneaſineſs; ſo that he could not
" ſleep, but roſe early, and, putting on his
" Cloaths, went to his Uncle and Guardian,
" Sir *Robert Southwell*, who lived in *Spring-*
" *Garden*. It was ſo early, that Sir *Robert* was
" not yet ſtirring, but nevertheleſs he went into
" his Room, and waked him.——It was a
" Freedom he was not uſed to take, and Sir *Robert*
" was ſurprized; but aſking him what made him
" there ſo early, my Uncle, ſtill in Conſter-
" nation, replied, he had that Night ſeen his
" Ghoſt, and told him all the Particulars, as I
" have related them.——Sir *Robert* at firſt
" chid him for reporting an idle Dream, the Ef-
" fect of an ill Life and guilty Conſcience
" (for he loved his Pleaſure, and followed it too
" much;) but obſerving the Diſorder he was in,
" and having repeated the Story to him, he
" grew very ſerious, and deſired his Nephew

" would take Care of himſelf, and recollect if
" he had given Occaſion to any Perſon to re-
" venge himſelf on him; for this might be a
" true Preſage of what was to befall him.——
" My Uncle, after ſome time, left him, and
" notwithſtanding the Impreſſion this made at
" firſt, I ſuppoſe he wore it off ſoon, or elſe it
" were impoſſible he could be ſo careleſs of
" himſelf the Night he was killed. For that
" Evening he was dogged from Houſe to Houſe
" where he viſited, by a ſingle Man, who fol-
" lowed him at a ſmall Diſtance, who, when my
" Uncle went into a Houſe, would wait like a
" Footman at the Porch till t'other came out;
" inſomuch that once or twice he ſpoke to him,
" aſking what was his Buſineſs in following him
" ſo cloſe, and the other anſwered, what was
" that to him, he was about his own Buſineſs.
" Nay, when my Uncle told his Friends he was
" dogged, he would not let them ſend a Foot-
" man to attend him; and when at Eleven a-
" Clock at Night he was aſſaulted by two or
" three, and wounded ſlightly as he entered
" a Tavern in the *Strand*, where ſome Friends
" of his were, he would not take Warning, nor
" admit any one to ſee him ſafe away; though
" the Tavern-Boy was ſo urgent with him, that
" he chid him for his Impertinence.———But,
" leaving that Company, he was a little time af-
" ter found dead by the Watchmen in the *Strand*,
" ſuppoſed to be killed in a Houſe, and laid af-
" terwards there.——— I have the Examinations
" taken by the Coroner's Inqueſtnow by me; but
" they could not help to a Diſcovery. This my
" Uncle *Southwell* told me himſelf a little before
" he died Word for Word; and there are others
" ſtill living who do confirm the Thing who
" were Servants in the Family, particularly
" Mrs. *Brown* of *Briſtol*, who told me two Years
" ago, that the Night he was killed, ſhe dreamed

" one

" one Mrs. *Sherman*, who lived with Sir *Robert*,
" came to her, and aſked her for a Sheet; and,
" demanding what to do with? Mrs. *Sherman*
" replied, poor Maſter *Robert* is killed, and it
" is to wind him in. As ſoon as ſhe waked, the
" ſame Gentlewoman came into her Room, and
" aſked for a Sheet; and then, remembering
" her Dream, ſhe, in a Conſternation, aſked for
" what? The other anſwered her, *Poor Mr.* Rob-
" bin *lies dead in the Watch-houſe in the* Strand,
" *and it is to wind his Body in.*

" SIR *Philip*, his elder Brother, being returned
" from his Travels, and, intent upon finding out
" the Murderers, fell violently foul one Day in
" *Dublin* upon a Gentleman, whom, afterwards,
" he declared he never had ſeen before, and
" could not account for his Rage; only he was
" poſſeſſed with a Belief he was one of thoſe
" who killed his Brother: They were ſoon parted,
" and the Gentleman was ſeen no more."

IT is ſaid of this unfortunate young Gentleman, that when he came into the Tavern before mentioned, he called for a Glaſs of Brandy, ſaying, that he was a little faint; and then, after having wiped his Sword, which was ſtained with the Blood (as he ſaid) of one of thoſe by whom he was aſſaulted, and whoſe Buſineſs (as he expreſſed it) he had done; and after having with his Handkerchief tied up his Leg, which was wounded as he was going out of the Houſe, in order to retire to his own Chambers, he ſtepped back to tell the Maſter of the Tavern, that he ſhould remember, *That he had been attacked by Perſons who bare him an old Grudge, and that if he was murdered, his Friends would find it out.*

DARK Speeches of the ſame Nature he had uſed to others, but they were ſtill inſufficient to procure a legal Conviction of the Actors in this Tragedy.——As for the further Conſequences of

it

it, and the Suſpicions that were entertained; ſome imagined it was done by *Beau Fielding*, with whom he had a Quarrel at a Play; others, by a near Relation to Sir *Robert Southwell*'s Wife; but the Matter was too uncertain to admit of any free Diſcourſe of any Perſon for it, and for the reſt, we refer to what will be hereafter ſaid of this Affair in the Life of Sir *Philip Perceval*, his elder Brother.

THIS Gentleman fell unmarried, at the Age of nineteen Years and four Months, wanting only three Days, and was buried in a private Manner near one of the Pillars at the North-Weſt End of the Burying-Ground under the Chapel of *Lincoln's Inn*, the ſixth of *June*, 1667, the Day after his unhappy Murder, with this ſhort Inſcription on his Grave.

Robertus Percivale Arm. Obiit. 5. Junij 1667. Etat. 19.

III. *JOHN PERCEVAL*, afterwards Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet.

IV. *CHARLES*, who was born at *Kinſale*, and there died an Infant.

V. *CATHERINE*, married the nineteenth of *October*, 1683, to ———, Son of Sir *William Moore* of *Roſſcarberry*, in the County of *Cork*, Baronet, her firſt Huſband; her ſecond was Colonel ———; and her third was Brigadier General *Freak*: By the two laſt ſhe had no Iſſue, but by the firſt ſhe left a Son, Sir *Emanuel Moore*, who ſucceeded to the Title and Eſtate. He married ———, the Daughter and Heir of ——— *Alcock*, Eſq; in the County of *Tipperary*, by whom he left the preſent Sir *Charles Moore*, Baronet, as yet unmarried, and a Daughter ——, the Wife of ——— *Putland*, Eſq;

VI. *HELENA PERCEVAL*, the youngeſt Daughter, married herſelf, without the Conſent of her Relationsl to Colonel *Daniel Dering*, Son of Sir *Edward Dering* of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, whom ſhe long ſurvived.—— By him ſhe had a Daughter, named *Sidney Dering*, and a Son *Daniel*, a Man of excellent Probity, who was in the Reign of King *George* the Firſt, appointed one of the Commiſſioners of the Wine Licence Office, and afterwards Auditor of the Revenue of the Dutchy of *Cornwall*, and the Principality of *Wales:* He married *Mary Parker*, ſecond Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker* of *Arwarton* in *Suffolk*, Baronet, and Siſter to *Catherine* Counteſs of *Egmont*; and, dying at the *Hague* the Day of ——, 1730, left only one Daughter, named *Catherine*, now living, and —— Years old.

CHAP.

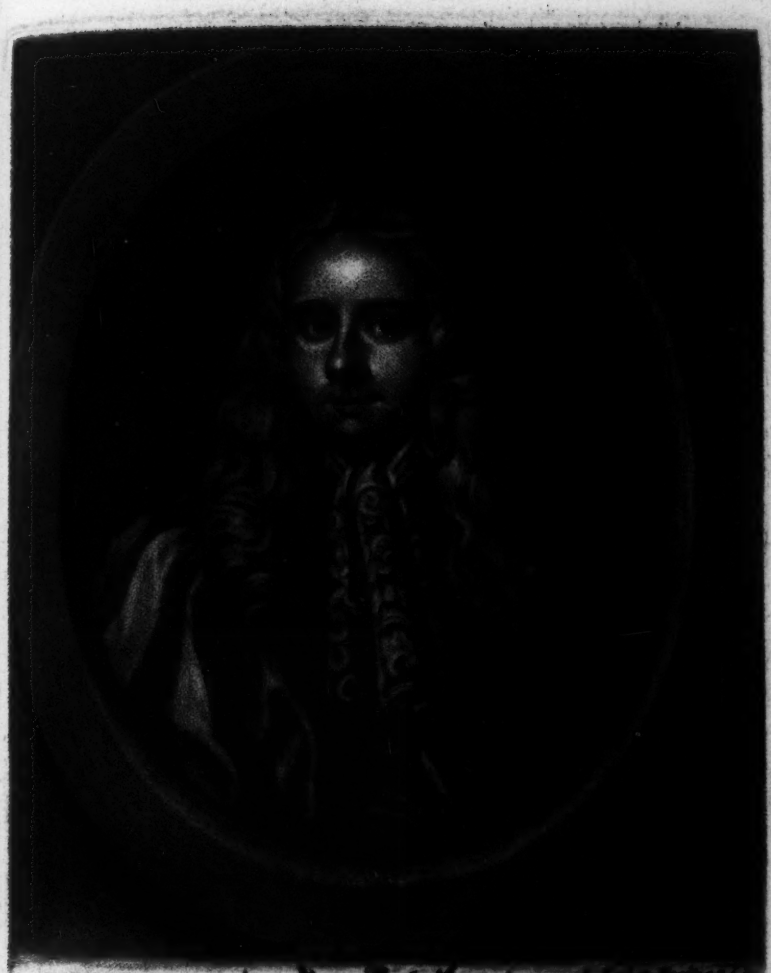
CHAP. X.

Sir PHILIP PERCEVAL, *Baronet, (ſecond of that Name) Lord of* Burton, Liſcarrol, Kanturk, Caſtlewarning, Outerard, *&c. &c.*



SIR *Philip Perceval*, Baronet*, eldeſt Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval*, laſt mentioned, by the Lady *Katherine* his Wife, Daughter of *Robert Southwell*, Eſquire, was born eleven Months after his Father's Marriage at *Kinſale* in Ireland, upon the twelfth of *January*, 1656, and was conſequently little more than nine Years old at his Father's Death.——That Accident was an inexpreſſible Misfortune to this Family; for, not to conſider the growing Intereſt and Credit of Sir *John Perceval*, which promiſed him the utmoſt Succeſs in all his Purſuits, and an Advancement of himſelf

* Vide Monumental Inſcriptions in the former Chapter.



S.r Philip Perceval Bar.t
2.d of that Name Eldest Son of the
R.t Hon.ble S.r John Perceval Bar.t
7.th of that Name Born 12.th of January 1656,
Dyed without Issue 11.th of Sep.r 1680.


BRITISH MUSEUM

himſelf and Poſterity to the higheſt Honours and Preferments of the State, (all which Expectations were thus cut ſhort by the too early Fate of that moſt excellent Man.) There was an immenſe and immediate Loſs which aroſe from it;——for the King, in Conſideration of the eminent Services and prodigious Loſſes of Sir *Philip Perceval*, his Father, and the great Employment of the Court of Wards, which had been hereditary in this Houſe for three Deſcents, and was aboliſhed by Act of Parliament ſoon after the Reſtoration;——as alſo in Regard to thoſe great Arrears which were due for the ſeveral Diſburſements made by Sir *Philip Perceval*, as Commiſſary General of the Army, and Providore General of the Horſe, together with the Appointments due for his Services in thoſe laborious Poſts, none of which had been yet ſatisfied, had granted to Sir *John Perceval* a vaſt Tract of Land, which, though little more than ſufficient to anſwer theſe his juſt Pretenſions at that Time, is now worth Fourteen thouſand Pounds *per Annum**.

THE Greatneſs of this Grant, which conſiſted as much in the Choice, as in the Quantity of Land, was not at firſt attended to, and the Grant had already paſſed ſeveral of the Offices;——when an unexpected Oppoſition was made to it by one of the Adventurers under *Cromwell*, whoſe Lot had been inadvertently inſerted with the reſt. This Man could be brought by no Equivalent, or any other Means, to reſt ſatisfied with the Loſs of his Land; and to have vacated the Grant, in order to make out a new one, would have occaſioned a Proceſs in this Affair from the very Beginning, which muſt have met with inſuperable Difficulties, when the Importance of the Grant was become ſo publick. The Trouble and Vexation of this difficult Affair falling out at the Time of the extreme Sickneſs of Sir *John Perceval*, no doubt, in ſome meaſure, haſtened his Death; which, as ſoon as it happened, rendered this glorious Project entirely abortive. THE

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

THE Intereſt of the Family, now fallen into a long Minority, was too weak to reſiſt the Envy of all Men, and the avaricious Views of the hungry Courtiers, who ſwarmed ſo abundantly in that Reign*. The Grant, in effect, was finally ſtopped, and the whole was, by degrees, wreſted by different Favourites from this Family, no Compenſation having ever been ſince made for this vaſt Injury, nor any Allowance for thoſe great Sums; which, upon the Accounts we have mentioned, are ſtill owing to this Houſe from the Crown.

THIS was a Misfortune for which there was no Remedy but Patience. All that could be done, was to manage the Fortune of the Family with the beſt Oeconomy during the Minority of the Heir. It fortunately fell into the Management of a Perſon of the greateſt Integrity and Worth. *Robert Southwell*, Eſq; Grandfather to Sir *Philip* by the Side of the Mother; was, by the Will of Sir *John Percival*, Overſeer of his laſt Will, and was joined in the Guardianſhip of the Children and Care of the Eſtate, with his Daughter, the Widow of Sir *John*. The Prudence and Affection with which this Charge was executed, ought to be gratefully remembered. A noble Seat was erected at *Burton*, great Debts ſatisfied, and much Money ſaved by their Fidelity and Diligence; and, (which was a Fortune rarely met with) Sir *Robert Southwell*, Son of the ſaid *Robert*, took upon him, after the Death of his Father, the ſame Care, which he executed with the ſame Integrity and Virtue.

SIR *Robert Southwell*, who was a Perſon well acquainted with the World, and particularly ſo with the Genius of the People of *Ireland*, which was at that Time very litigious, and much turned to attack the Rights of thoſe who had Eſtates there, and lived out of that Kingdom†, judging that this would be, for the moſt part, the Caſe of his Pupil, whoſe Relations, Family, and hereditary Friendſhips, were on this Side the Water, endeavoured to qualify him with ſome general

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII. † Ibid.

neral Idea of the Laws; a Circumſtance in Education of excellent Uſe to all Men. He therefore not only directed his Studies while he was at the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, in ſome degree, in that Way, but had him entered as a Student in *Lincoln's Inn*, upon the ſixth of *February*, 1674. It was happy for him, that his Learning in that kind was not intended, or required to extend far; for, though his Parts were excellent, and his Apprehenſion extremely quick, he was like Men of that lively Character, little capable of a ſtrict Application: His greateſt Delight was in the Exerciſes of his Body, for which he was admirably qualified, by an excellent and vigorous Perſon; ſo that in theſe he arrived at ſuch a Perfection*, as to be eſteemed the moſt accompliſhed young Man for Dancing, Fencing, and Riding, in theſe Dominions.

SIR *Philip Perceval* being now near twenty Years of Age, his Guardians thought it proper that he ſhould travel into Foreign Countries, before which it was judged prudent to ſend him into *Ireland*, to take a curſory View of his Eſtate there, in order to engage him, by the firſt Enjoyment of Liberty in that Country, where he had ſo great a Stake, to receive a favourable Impreſſion of it. One Mr. *Gaillhard*, a *French* Gentleman of very good Accompliſhments†, intended for his Companion in his future Travels, was ſent with him thither, by way of Experiment, how they would agree together. They ſpent ſome Time in a little Tour about the beſt Counties of *England*, and then embarked at *Briſtol*, and landed, after a favourable Paſſage, at *Cork*, upon the tenth of *July*, 1676, from whence he went to ſee his Mother at *Kinſale*; and, after having paid his Duties to her, he went forwards to *Burton*, which is but nineteen Miles from *Cork*. He there took a very expeditious View of his Eſtate, with a Judgment moſt extraordinary for his Age; for he became in that ſhort Space greatly acquainted with the Views and Intereſts of his Dependants there,

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII. † Ibid.

a Knowledge of much Importance in a Country where he had ſuch a Number of Retainers ſo conſiderable as they were, and ſo abſolutely different at that Time from the Condition of Tenants in other Kingdoms. With this Foundation of Knowledge, he returned again with the Earl of *Burlington*, and, leaving *Cork* on the ——— of *Auguſt*, ——, landed, after a ſafe Voyage of two Days, at *Minehead*, in *Somerſetſhire*, from whence he went to viſit his Relation, Mr. *Perceval* of *Weſton Gordein*, to whom, whilſt he lived, he ever paid great Deference, as to the Chief of his Family, and thence through *Briſtol* to *London*. He there ſtayed but a very little Time, and, having ſettled all neceſſary Matters for the great Tour he was going to make, he embarked at *Dover*, and landed at *Calais* on the laſt Day of *September*, 1676; from thence he went Poſt to *Paris*, and, after a ſhort Stay there, to *Aungiers*, where he ſpent the following Winter in the Study of the Civil Law, and the Completion of his Exerciſes, which were taught to great Perfection at the Academies of that City*.

DURING his Stay at that Place, he fell into the Company of an *Engliſh* Nobleman, who reſided there upon the ſame Account, and was, by his ill Example, and the Fire of his own Temper, led into ſome Exceſſes, which gave great Uneaſineſs to his Friends in *England*, but particularly into ſuch as hazarded his Perſon; for the great Haughtineſs of his Temper, and the Keneneſs of his Courage, engaged him in ſome dangerous Diſputes, which were determined by his Sword; and in one of theſe Affairs, which was carried very deſperately, he wounded a Gentleman dangerouſly, and was himſelf much hurt. This Concern was aggravated, by a violent Quarrel with Mr. *Gaillhard*†, the Gentleman who travelled with him, whom he treated very ill, on account of ſome Prejudices which he conceived againſt him, as having aſſumed too much upon him in his Carriage, and made too

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII. † Ibid.

too free with his Purſe. This obliged his Guardians to diſmiſs that Gentleman, whoſe Place was ſupplied by another of the ſame Nation, named *Raſigade*, whoſe different Character ſuited better with Sir *Philip*; and, by degrees, ſo raiſed an Intereſt in his Affections, that, by his Advice, (the only Way to operate upon the warm Temper of this young Gentleman) he conducted himſelf ever after abroad with as much Admiration of his Diſcretion, as of his Parts and Qualities, which were much noted where-ever he paſſed.

Sir *Philip Perceval* having ſtaid in *Aungiers* till *October*, 1677, in Expectation of his Mother's Arrival in that Country for her Health; and having ſettled her at *Saumur*, in the manner we have ſhewn before, he went forward on his Travels, and was at *Thoulouſe* the fifteenth of *December*. He paſſed the *Alps* in that Month, and was in extreme Danger from the Snows; which having eſcaped, he reached *Turin*, and was at *Venice* the twenty-ſixth of *February*, the ſame Year, and from thence, in *March* following, he paſſed through *Rome* to *Naples*, and returned thence to *Rome* again the ſixth of *April*, 1678. He ſtayed there till the twenty-ſixth of *Auguſt*, making himſelf perfectly acquainted with the Antiquities and Curioſities of that great and famous City, once the Miſtreſs of the World. Upon the twentieth of *Auguſt*, ſix Days before his Departure, he had an Audience of *the Pope*, to which he was introduced by Cardinal *Howard*, commonly called the Cardinal of *Norfolk*, where he was treated with very great Diſtinction, the *Pope* being well informed of his great Intereſt in *Ireland*, which he would have willingly added to that of the Catholic Party, by Arguments of the great Power he would acquire by joining that Party, of which he flattered him he would be the Leader; but he uſed his Perſuaſions to that Purpoſe in vain,——— Sir *Philip Perceval* was afterwards introduced by the Marquis *de la Monte* to the famous *Chriſtina*, Queen of *Sweden* *, who

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.

who was then there, and was alſo received by her with the higheſt Marks of Diſtinction ever ſhewn to Strangers.——— Leaving *Rome*, he reached *Legborn* the fifth of *September*, and from thence he went to *Florence* upon the ſeventeenth of the ſame Month, where he ſtayed ſeventeen Days, magnificently received and treated by the Great Duke*, who remembered him a Child in *Ireland*, whither he had been formerly driven by Streſs of Weather, and had been received with much Reſpect and Honour by this Family; from thence he proceeded on his Journey homewards. He was at *Bologna* the twenty-eighth of *September*, and at *Genoa* the eighteenth of *October*, having paſſed ſome Time at the Courts of *Modena*, and *Parma*, and *Placentia*†, where the Duke and Dutcheſs gave him an Entertainment no ways inferior to what he had met with elſewhere, being moved to it by the particular Reſpects which had been paid him in other Places.——After this he returned to *Turin* again, and, paſſing through *Chamberry*, *Geneva*, *Grenoble*, and *Montmelian*, he was at *Lyons* on the fifth of *November*, from which Place he arrived at *Paris* in the beginning of *December*, 1678§.

He there paſſed the Winter with his Mother and two Siſters, who came thither from *Saumur* to meet him, and in the beginning of *April*, 1679, returned to *England* with them, as we have formerly mentioned; where, making a ſhort Stay, he embarked from *Briſtol* for *Cork* upon the ninth of *May* following, in Company with his Mother, to whom he was a moſt tender and affectionate Son.

It is incredible with how much Activity and Judgment he then applied himſelf to the Buſineſs of his Eſtate, how ſoon he became acquainted with every thing in relation to it neceſſary for him to know.—— How much he improved his Fortune, ſtrengthened his Intereſt, and gained the Eſteem and Affections of the whole Country at the ſame Time‖. Theſe are Matters

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII.
† Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid.

ters generally found repugnant to each other in all Places, but ſingularly ſo in that Kingdom at that Time, where difference in Religion, the Senſe of late reciprocal Injuries, the Confuſion of the Parties, the Management of a new Intereſt juſt raiſed up ſince the Rebellion, and the Jealouſies of that which ſubſiſted before it extended an Influence over the whole Nation, and in every Part of it, which ſeemed to render it impoſſible for any Man to conduct himſelf in an eminent Point of View with general Applauſe. — Yet a young Man juſt entered the World, without any Experience or Acquaintance with that Kingdom, by the Strength of his Genius, ſurmounted all theſe Difficulties; and it became but too ſoon made manifeſt, to what a high degree he had done it by the Tears of the whole Province of *Munſter* at his Death, which happened a little after the Year 1680.

IT was firſt reported, that he was ſurfeited by eating too great a Quantity of Nuts *, and that this was the Occaſion of his Death; but the Appearances upon his Body afterwards, gave Indications extremely ſtrong, that his Death was not natural.

HE was taken ill with a violent Looſeneſs and Vomiting, at his Houſe at *Burton*, upon the laſt Day of *Auguſt*, 1680, and continued in that Condition until the 11th of *September* following, when he dy'd about five in the Morning †. *Margaret Conron* and *Richard Conron*, two of his Attendants, depoſed, "that his Body "ſwelled up ſtrangely immediately after his Death, ſo "that his Neck raiſes up to his Chin-bone, his Eyes "ſwelled as if they would burſt out of his Head, his "Nails grew mighty Black, his Hair grew Red, and his "whole Body grew very Black and ſmelled ſtrongly."

To corroborate this melancholly Story, two eminent Phyſicians ſigned the following Certificate.

"The dreadful Alteration which happened in Sir "*Philip Perceval*, after his Death induceth us to con-

"jecture

* Family Collections, Vol. VIII. † Ibid.

" jecture of ſome extraordinary Miſcarriage in this " Matter. Given under our Hands,

DON. CONNELL,
THAD. CALLAGHAN.

FROM theſe and other Circumſtances there remained but little doubt that he was poiſoned, yet after all the Diligence that could be uſed, a poſitive Proof of the Villany or rather of the Actors in it, was not to be obtained. — The Occaſion of this horrible Act, can be attributed to nothing elſe but the great Activity which he uſed to diſcover the Murtherers of his ſecond Brother *Robert*, of whom we have already ſpoken in the foregoing Chapter, and it is thought that he had then made himſelf ſo far Maſter of that wicked Scene; and was ſo well inſtructed as to the Authors of it, that the only Security left them was to rid themſelves of him in the ſame unnatural manner.

IT is certain that this Opinion prevailed very ſtrongly at that Time inſomuch, that it was thought to have deterred the further ſearch into this execrable Train of Iniquity, and grew to be judged by ſome, a Point of Safety for the remaining Branches of the Family to puſh the Enquiry no farther, and to leave its Puniſhment to Providence, which is rarely ſlow in avenging Crimes of this Nature, tho' it has hitherto ſuffered this to remain (as far as we can learn) without its juſt Reward.

THE Inactivity of theſe Times, and the Shortneſs of his Life, prevented his making that Demonſtration of his great Qualifications which at another Conjuncture, or in a larger Courſe had made him very eminent. — For beſides thoſe perſonal Accompliſhments of which we have ſpoken, he was yet more remarkable for the Strength of his Reaſon and the Beauty of his Expreſſion, which was manifeſted in all his Writings to a Degree that was almoſt beyond Example in any one of his Age. — And to all this was added the cleareſt Courage, which he rather carried too far, in compliance with the modiſh Cuſtom of private Encoun-

ters, ſo general in *England* at that Period, of theſe he had been concerned in two, which were very remarkable, and attended with ſevere Conſequences to his Antagoniſts, tho' without much Injury to himſelf. The former was abroad, the other was at *Kilkenny* in *Ireland*, where having taken Lodgings, in his Way from his own Houſe to *Dublin*, a *Daniſh* Officer, by a brutal Seizure of them, neceſſitated him to come to that Extremity. — The Circumſtances of this Affair are unneceſſary to be minutely related; it is ſufficient that they fought in the Chamber, for which they contended, and Sir *Philip*'s Gentleman was placed upon the Table with Candles in his Hands to light the Combatants, but the Matter was ſoon determined, by a Wound which Sir *Philip* gave his Adverſary thro' the Body, upon which he ſurrendered his Sword, and Sir *Philip* his Chamber, to which the *Dane* was confined in the utmoſt Hazard of his Life for ſix Weeks after. — In truth, the Warmth of his Temper was his greateſt Failing, which was not a little aggravated by a very high degree of Haughtineſs, ariſing from an Opinion of the ANTIQUITY and DIGNITY of his own Extraction, and of all the other Advantages he poſſeſſed, not ſo well regulated as they ſhould have been; but this Diſpoſition appeared chiefly in the Generoſity, and Honour of his Actions and Engagements, and never gave Offence to any, who did not draw the diſcovery of it upon themſelves, to their own Shame and Correction, by a Behaviour not agreeable to Prudence or good Manners.

SIR *Philip* had laid a regular Plan, before him for his future Conduct: The *firſt Point* of which, was to recover as much of the ancient Patrimony of his Houſe in *England* as he could, which had been formerly alienated by his Father and Great Grandfather, in the manner, and for the Reaſons we have mentioned. And in this he would not have failed to have gone far, (if he had lived) by that ſingular Prudence which he exerciſed in his private Affairs; having left behind him above Eleven Thouſand Pounds,

which he had ſaved in a very few Years. — The *other* was to get into publick Employment in *England*, of which he had Aſſurances; and he was preparing about the Time of his Deceaſe, to go over thither to take a Seat in Parliament which he had ſecured there. — The Accounts we have given of his Parts will ſufficiently ſhew the Reaſons he had to expect Succeſs in a publick Life, backed by ſo great a Fortune by the Advantages of his Birth and Perſon, by the Character of a perfect Attachment to the Prince then reigning, by the faſt Friendſhip of the Duke of *Ormond*, who like a Man of true Generoſity, retained a conſtant Affection for the Deſcendants of his once great Friend, Sir *Philip Perceval*, the Grandfather of this Gentleman, and he had already made ſome advantageous Eſſays of his Intereſt for ſome of his Family, when his farther Purſuits were ſuddenly ſtopped in the fatal manner we have mentioned.

THO' few Men were more deſirous of continuing their Families than he was, yet having at firſt two Brothers, he was not ſollicitous, whether it ſhould be done from his own Perſon, or from one of them; but when he found by a fatal Accident, the Elder of theſe had been taken off in ſo ſudden and extraordinary a manner, and the other left with a Conſtitution very delicate, he began ſeriouſly to think of altering the Condition of his Life, and was determined to do it in *England*, where there was greater Choice out of Families not only more ſuitable to the Dignity of his own (in which Point he was very exact) but more agreeable in Matters of Fortune and Intereſt, neither of which were indifferent to a Man of his aſpiring Views.

* " To the MEMORY of Sir *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, of *Burton*, in the County of *Corke*, " Baronet, Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval*, " Baronet, and of Dame *Katherine* his Wife.

" HE

* From the Entry in the Herald's Office, London.




BRITISH MUSEUM

" HE was Born at *Kinſale*, the 12th of *January*, 1656,
" and died at his Houſe at *Burton*, the 11th of
" *September*, 1680.

" HIS ſaid Father died in *Dublin* (which was the
" Place of his Birth, on the 1ſt of *November*, 1665,
" and in the Thirty-ſeventh Year of his Age, and
" lies there interred in the Church of St. *Audeon*.

" HIS Grandfather, Sir *Philip Perceval*, of *Dublin*,
" Knight, who was Son to *Richard*, and Grand-
" ſon to *George Perceval*, of *Sydenham*, in the Coun-
" ty of *Somerſet*, Eſq; died on the 10th of *Novem-*
" *ber*, 1647, and was buried in the Church of St.
" *Martin* in the Fields, in *London*, in the Forty-
" ſeventh Year of his Age, having with eminent
" Fame, paſſed moſt of his Life, in publick Em-
" ployments, and the Service of the Crown.

" HIS ſaid Mother, Dame *Katherine* (only Daughter
" of *Robert Southwell*, of *Kinſale*, Eſq; and of
" *Helena* his Wife) died the 17th of *Auguſt*,
" 1679, and in the Forty-ſeventh Year of her Age,
" and lies there interred with her Parents.

" HIS Second Brother, *Robert*, was born at *Kinſale*,
" the 8th of *February*, 1657. He had ſtudied at
" *Chriſt's College*, in *Cambridge*, and was ſettled
" at *Lincoln's-Inn*, in *London*, in order to ſtudy the
" Law, being by Nature and Education, fitted for
" Improvements. He was, the 5th of *June*, 1667,
" murdered by an unknown Hand, the Diſcovery
" whereof doth ſtill attend Divine Juſtice.

" HE lies interred under the Chapple at *Lincoln's-*
" *Inn*.

" HIS Fourth Brother, *Charles*, was born in *London*,
" the 4th of *November*, 1661, and died at *Kinſale*,
" 1662, and lies there buried with his Relations.

" THIS young Gentleman, being taken away by a
" violent and ſudden Fever, in the 24th Year of
" his Age, gave juſt Cauſe of Lamentation, not
" to his Friends alone but to all Lovers of his
" Country. — For having trod the Paths of a ge-
" nerous Education, firſt at *Chriſt's Church* in *Ox-*

" *ford*, then at *Lincoln's-Inn* in *London*, and laſtly,
" by Travels into *France* and *Italy*, and retaining
" lively Impreſſions thereof, he was prepared with
" Virtues and Endowments, that rendered him very
" acceptable, and qualified him for publick Service.
" — He had already entered upon giving Teſti-
" mony herein, and began to revive in his Country,
" the Memory of a Father and Grandfather, who
" for Wiſdom, Sagacity, and other Virtues, which
" ſhined in them, were famous in their Generations,
" nor did he neglect the Counſels and Examples of
" a pious Mother, to whom he always bore great
" Reverence. — For he was Devout, Temperate,
" and Modeſt, and was neither by his Fortune,
" Youth, or Comelineſs of Perſon, tempted from
" the Rules of Virtue. He had entertained in his
" Mind, ſo deep a Zeal for the Church of *England*,
" and ſuch Loyalty towards the Crown, that when
" his Fever had miſguided all other Diſcourſes he
" perſevered ſenſibly in theſe, —— Such would his
" Life have been, who thus employed his dying
" Breath.

" Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, of *Burton*, Ba-
" ronet, Third Brother, and Heir to the ſaid
" Sir *Philip*, being ſurpized at this early Fate,
" deploring his Loſs, and counting nothing which,
" thereby deſcends unto him, able to recompence
" ſo great a Stroke upon his Family, erected this
" Monument, in the Year of our Lord, 1683.


BRITISH MUSEUM

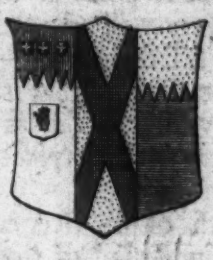


J. Faber fecit 1743

Sr. Jno. Perceval 6th Bart. (8. of that Name)
Lord of Burton, Liscarrol, Kantuk,
Castle-Warning, and Oughteriard &c.
Born 1660 Died 1686.

CHAP. XI.

Sir JOHN PERCEVAL, *Baronet Eighth of that Name, Lord of* Burton, Liſcarrol, Kanturk, Caſtlewarning, Oughretard, *&c.*

PERCEVAL.  DERING.

WE come in the next place to ſpeak of Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet (Eighth of that Name) Third Son of Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, and *Katherine Southwell*, Lady *Perceval*, his Wife, who by the untimely Death of his Eldeſt Brother, Sir *Philip*, and the unhappy Murder of his Second Brother, *Robert*, became Heir to the Eſtate of this Houſe and Chief of his Family.

SIR *JOHN PERCEVAL*, was Born at *Egmont*, near *Burton*, in the County of *Corke* in *Ireland*, upon the 22d of *Auguſt*, 1660, three Months after the Reſtauration of King *Charles* the Second.

His

His School Learning he acquired at *Weſtminſter*, from whence he was removed to the Univerſity of *Oxford*; and being deſigned for the Law, as well as his Second Brother, he was there taught his firſt Rudiments under proper Tutors; but coming to his Eſtate (by the Death of his Brothers) he did not purſue that Study in which he had already made a very great Progreſs.

His Piety and Virtue were very remarkable in one of his Years, and his Manners and Inclinations ſo very engaging, that he was the Darling of all his Family and Relations, inſomuch, that the Lady *Catherine Perceval*, his Mother dying upon the 17th of *Auguſt*, 1679, left him the greateſt Part of her Effects, and made him her ſole Executor.

His Temper was very grave, ſober and modeſt, and his Genius, tho' not ſo quick as that of either of his Brothers was yet very well adapted to that Profeſſion, for which he was at firſt deſigned. — For his Application was conſtant and Exceſſive, ſo that it impaired one of his Eyes, which tho' viſibly as fair as the other, yet afforded him but very little Service for a conſiderable Time before his Death.

Upon the Death of his Second Brother, *Robert*, he likewiſe became poſſeſſed of the better Part of his Fortune, as alſo of the ſole Intereſt in thoſe conſiderable Employments of *Clerk of the Crown*, *Prothonotary* and *Chief Clerk of the Common Pleas*, and *Cuſtos Brevium*, in *Ireland*, which had been granted in Reverſion to the ſaid *Robert*, and himſelf, and to the Survivor of them, by King *Charles* the Second, upon the 22d of *May*, 1677, the Motives of which Grant, are thus rehearſed in the Patent.

" Whereas *Richard Perceval*, Eſq; Great Grand-
" father*; Sir *Philip Perceval*, Grandfather; and Sir
" *John Perceval*, Baronet, Father of *Robert* and *John*
" *Perceval*, younger Sons of the ſaid Sir *John Perce-*
" *val*,

* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

" *val*, Baronet, deceaſed, had all of them with great " Affection and Loyalty, ſerved the King and his " Progenitors, particularly his Majeſty's late Royal " Father, of glorious Memory, during the late Trou- " bles, and had been great Sufferers; upon that Ac- " count, his Majeſty ſhortly after his happy Reſtora- " tion had been graciouſly pleaſed, in Conſideration " thereof, to grant the Office of Regiſter of the Court " of Claims in *Ireland*, to Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, " Father of the ſaid *Robert* and *John*, but that he dy- " ing before he had made Benefit thereby, his Chil- " dren and Family, were not only deprived of all Ad- " vantage by the ſame, but did alſo (by the Death of " Sir *William Uſher*, Knight, his Truſtee, which " ſhortly after happened) loſe the Office of Clerk of " the Crown, and Prothonotary and Chief Clerk of " the Court of *King's-Bench*, or Chief Place, in that " Kingdom, which had been held and enjoyed by " him and his Father, and executed by him and his " Father with ſingular Fidelity, for above forty Years " before. — That his Majeſty, therefore, in Conſide- " ration of the Merit and Sufferings of their ſaid An- " ceſtors, was graciouſly pleaſed to Grant by his ſaid " Letters Patent, the Reverſion of the ſaid Office " and Offices of *Clerk of the Crown*, *Prothonotary*, " and *Chief Clerk* of the *Common Pleas* in the *King's-* " *Bench*, or *Chief Place* in our Kingdom of *Ireland*; " and the Office of *Cuſtos*, or *Keeper of the Writs*, " *Rolls*, *Indictments*, *Proceſs*, *Rules*, *Orders*, *Cer-* " *tificates*, *Memorandums*, *and all other Records and* " *Writings whatſoever*, *belonging to the ſaid Court**. " *To have* and *to hold* the ſaid Office and Offices, to- " gether with all and ſingular Fees, Wages, Stipends, " Perquiſites, Profits, Advantages and Emoluments " whatſoever, unto the ſaid Offices, or any of them, " belonging or appertaining to Sir *Robert Southwell*, " Knight, in Truſt for his Nephews *Robert* and *John* " *Perceval*, and for the natural Life of the Survivor " of them."

His

* Ex Autograph. penes Comit. de Egmont.

His Behaviour was ſo prudent with Regard to his eldeſt Brother, Sir *Philip Perceval**, that he greatly gained his Affection likewiſe, received many Favours, to the Improvement of his Fortune, from him;—— and being invited over by him to *Ireland*, he ſet ſail from *Briſtol* on the twenty-eighth of *May*, 1679, and landed the thirty-firſt, after a bad Paſſage, at *Cork*.—— He paſſed the Summer in that Kingdom with his Brother, who, without any Reſerve, made him intimately acquainted with all the Affairs of his Eſtate. —‖ He ſet Sail on his Return from *Kinſale* upon the ſeventh of *October* following, and landed upon the tenth at *Milford Haven*, where he was driven by very bad Weather.

From that Time he followed his Studies with indefatigable Induſtry†, till the unhappy Accident of his eldeſt Brother's, Sir *Philip*'s Death, which happened, as we have ſaid before, in *September*, 1680; but then being the ſole Heir of this great Fortune, and the laſt Male of his Line, he quitted that laborious Life, and ſoon after married *Katherine*, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering* of *Surrenden*, in the County of *Kent*, Baronet, a Lady already related to him, and to whom he had been privately engaged before.

This Marriage was celebrated upon the —— Day of *February*, 1680, and in the *May* following, 1681§, (leaving his Wife with Child) he went over into *Munſter*, to forward the Buildings at his Seat at *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, in that Province; from whence he ſet out on his Return upon the eighteenth, and landed, after a Paſſage of forty-four Hours, at *Briſtol*, upon the twentieth of *October*, 1681.

Having obtained of King *Charles* the Second‡, a further Reduction of the Quit-Rent of his Eſtate to a very inconſiderable Sum, and received the Favour of loading two Veſſels from *England* with Furniture and Commodities neceſſary to him in that Kingdom, free from

* Family Letters. ‖ Ibid. † Ibid. § Ibid.

‡ See Ibid. Vol. IX. fol. 1173, and fol. 1321. — This Quit-rent was diminiſhed conſiderably before the Time of young Sir Philip Herceval, by Patent, dated Dec. 10, in the 27th of Charles II.



I. Faber Fecit 1743.

Catharine Daur. of Sr. Edn.d Dering of Surrenden in Kent Bar.t Wife to Sr. Jn.o Perceval Bar.t 18th of that Name Born —Married Feb.y 1680-1 Died 2d Feb.y 1691-2.


BRITISH MUSEUM

from the King's Duties: He went over with his Lady into *Ireland*, in 1682, from whence he never lived to return.

HIS manner of Life in that Country was magnificent to a very high degree, of which, for a Specimen, it will be ſufficient to obſerve, that among the Ordinaries of the Expences, his Family conſumed two Bullocks and twenty Sheep *per* Week*, beſides the Milk of thirty Cows, and all other Proviſions in Proportion, as appears by his own Accounts. By an Expence proportional to this in every other Article, by his Buildings, and by a very great Negligence in his Oeconomy, he not only ſpent thoſe large Sums which his eldeſt Brother left him, but plunged himſelf, in leſs than ſix Years, into a Debt of Eleven thouſand Pounds.———Having likewiſe fined down for a long Term of Years divers large Eſtates, the Leaſes of which have many of them ſubſiſted, and ſome do ſtill ſubſiſt, even to our Times.

THE Greatneſs of theſe Expences might raiſe his Reputation with the Vulgar during his Life, but it was the Integrity and Merit of his Actions which endeared his Memory to all Men after his Death: He was the Parent of the Poor, the Arbiter of all Differences with the better Sort, and the univerſal Pattern which all endeavoured to follow, who deſired *to be*, or *to be thought* virtuous.

HIS Affability and general Benevolence never led him to debaſe himſelf with too frequent or too intimate Familiarity with any; his Temper was reſerved, but it was eaſy; and his Station, Family, and Fortune, admitted him to indulge it as far as it was neceſſary, or as he deſired.———He dedicated one Day in the Week to the Country, and then all the Country came in to pay their Reſpects to him, and to maintain the Credit of his Acquaintance.———He had two Particularities; one was, that he accepted very few formal Invitations to any Man's Houſe; and the other, that he never ſtaid longer with his Company than Five in

* Family Letters.

in the Afternoon.——*This* Defect in the Return of Viſits, was made up by his conſtant Appearance at Aſſizes of the County; and *that* in the Form of his Entertainments, was ſupplied by a Gentleman, whom he retained in his Family to ſupply his Place, and to do the Honours of his Table, after the Hour we have mentioned.——The reſt of that Day, and the reſt of his Time, he dedicated to his Devotions, in which he was regular and ſtrict; to his Improvements and Plantations, of which he was very fond; and to his Wife and Children, in whom he placed his chief Delight and Happineſs.——This way of Life, which might have ſeemed to ſavour too much of Pride and Grandeur in any Country, and eſpecially (as Men were then modelled in that Kingdom) loſt him neither Friendſhip nor Eſteem, Reſpect nor Affection; he ſecured all theſe by a degree of Worth and Goodneſs, which made it almoſt thought profane to cenſure any Action or Practice of his Life.——Such was the real Character of Sir *John Perceval*, and ſuch the Habits of a Man, whoſe Name will ever be dear in the Country in which he lived.

THE noble and happy Tranquillity he thus enjoyed, began to be a little ruffled before his Death, when King *James* the Second was advanced to the Throne, and the licentious Conduct of the Catholic Party grew daily more notorious in that Kingdom. Conſiderable as he was, and attached to the Intereſt of that Prince and Family, he ſtill was not exempted from the ill Conveniences of that Time.——His Authority was continually exerciſed to repreſs the Inſolencies of Men, who, in the Pride of their Expectations, abuſed their Power, even before they had formally acquired it.—— The Government itſelf was very thankful to him for his Activity to maintain that Peace in the County, which lawleſs Men (as they will often do at ſuch Conjunctures) unwarrantably diſturbed; but the Juſtice and Wiſdom of his Conduct raiſed him Enemies among that Set of Men, whom he thus repreſſed, and they found Means, low and deſpicable as they were, to bring him into ſome Difficulty.

FOR

FOR Sir *John Perceval*, however entire in his Principles to the Crown, from which he thought the Difference of his Religion could never abſolve him, had nevertheleſs begun to prepare for his Defence, in Expectation of thoſe Troubles, which he foreſaw, though he did not live to feel.———He had laid in a large Quantity of Arms and Armour, with which he intended to provide his Tenants and Dependants, who were by their Tenure obliged to attend him with Horſe and Arms, upon any Time of Danger, on his Summons.———His Intention was no more than to maintain his Allegiance, and his own Eſtate and Family, upon his own Strength as long as he could, and as his Forefathers had done before him; but the Government growing very jealous of the Proteſtants, without Diſtinction, ordered all of that Denomination to deliver in their Arms, Armour, and Ammunition, into the King's Stores by a certain Day.——— Sir *John Perceval*, either thinking the Order could never be meant to extend to ſo good a Subject as himſelf, or wilfully diſobeying that Order under this Pretence, ſtill preſerved his Arms:——— Upon which one of his Servants, debauched by thoſe we have mentioned, informed againſt him; and the Crime was of ſuch a Nature, as threatned Danger to his Head, if his Character, Intereſt, and known Principles, had not preſerved him; which was, nevertheleſs, not done without the Appearance of much Difficulty, in order to deter others more effectually from the ſame Preſumption.

BUT his Eſcape from this dangerous Affair was of little Service to himſelf; for, not long after, being appointed Foreman of the Grand Jury at the Aſſizes in the County of *Cork*, (a Mark of Reſpect which was generally paid him)—the Priſoners being infected with a contagious Diſtemper, at that Time raging in their Goal, he, together with divers other Perſons of Note, then ſitting upon the Bench with him, was ſuddenly ſeized with the noiſome Smells which perſpired from them; and ſuch was the Violence of the Diſeaſe which

he there contracted, that it would yield to no Art or Medicine, but carried him off in a few Days, at his Seat at *Burton* (whether he had been removed) upon the twenty-ninth of *April*, 1686, in the twenty-ſixth Year of his Age, having enjoyed his Eſtate five Years ſeven Months and eighteen Days.

His Body was buried in the Church of St. *Nicholas* at *Burton* aforeſaid, but the great Troubles which followed ſoon after, prevented the Erection of any Monument over him; and an Act of Parliament being obtained by *John*, now Earl of *Egmont*, his Son, in the ninth of Queen *Anne*, 1712, for removing the Site of of the ſaid Church, the new Church being finiſhed, and the old one entirely ruined, the Bodies of this Sir *John Perceval*, and of his elder Brother, Sir *Philip*, were removed in 1730, and now lie in the Vault of the Family, under the Altar there.

* In his Will, which was made in *Ireland*, upon the twenty-fourth of *January*, 1685-6, and proved the firſt of *January*——, "he mentions the Lady *Katherine*, his Wife, his Siſter, the Lady *Moore*, his Siſter "*Helena Perceval*, his Brother *John Dering*, his late Uncle *George Perceval*, and the three Sons of the ſaid "*George*, his Uncle Sir *Robert Southwell*, Knight, his "own Sons *Edward*, and *John* (now Earl of *Egmont*) "and his Daughter *Mary* (*Philip*, the youngeſt now "living, being born after his Deceaſe;) to all theſe "he leaves divers Legacies, and the Guardianſhip of "his Children to his Uncle, Sir *Robert Southwell*, "Knight.

It remains for us now to ſpeak of *Katherine* Lady *Perceval*, Wife of this Sir *John*: She was third Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering*, of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, a Family of great Antiquity and noble Extraction in thoſe Parts. It is not doubted but that it was of *Saxon* Original, and there are many Proofs which carry it up to very remote Times.——Its Alliances have, ſome of them, been very eminent, as we

* Ex Autograph, penes Com. Egmont.

we have already ſhewn in the Chapter of Alliances of this Houſe, through which they derive a Deſcent in Blood from many Sovereign Houſes in *Europe*.——— As we advance nothing in this Work which has not its poſitive Authority, we ſhall content ourſelves with deducing the Line of this Houſe as far only as it is ſet forth in the Viſitations of *Kent* in the Office of Arms. ——We ſhall begin therefore (as they do) with *Thomas Dering* of *Dengemarſh*, near *Lid*, in *Romney Marſh*, in that County, whoſe Son, *John Dering*, marrying *Chriſtian*, one of the Daughters and Coheirs of *James Hawte*, by his Wife, the Daughter and Heir of Sir *William Pluckley*, obtained the Manor of *Surrenden* about the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth, (with other conſiderable Eſtates in *Kent*) which is yet the Seat of that Family to this Day.——— *Richard Dering*, Son of the ſaid *John*, by *Agnez*, the Daughter of——— *Eton*, of the County of *Salop*, had a Son *John*, who, by his Wife,———, Daughter of——— *Barton* of *Barrenden*, in *Kent*, had a Son, *Nicholas Dering*, who married *Alice*, Daughter and Coheir of *William Battenham*, and by her had a Son *John*, whoſe Wife was *Margaret*, Daughter of *John Brent*, who became the Heireſs of her Brother, *Thomas Brent*, and alſo of her Couſin, *Robert Brent*, of *Wilſborough*.

FROM this Marriage this Family acquired a noble Deſcent; for they derive from it a certain Claim to the Blood of ſeveral Sovereign Houſes of the firſt Antiquity in *Europe*, through the different Channels of the ſeveral Branches of the *Norman* Line of *Engliſh* Kings.—— To enter into the Particulars of all thoſe Families, as that of the Imperial Houſe of *Charlemaigne*, or that of *France*, and of a Multitude of others, would be very tedious, and equally unneceſſary, as they may be traced by the Curious in the Genealogies of the Kings of *England*, and are, in ſome meaſure, deduced in the ſeventh Chapter of the firſt Book. It is ſufficient here to mention the Deſcent firſt from *Edmund Crouchback*, Earl of *Lancaſter*, Son of King *Henry* the Third.—— Secondly, from *Joan* of *Acres*, Daughter to King *Edward*

ward the Eirſt, Wife of *Gilbert de Clare*, Earl of *Glouceſter*.—Thirdly, from *Elizabeth*, another Daughter of that Prince, who married *Humphrey de Bohun*, Earl of *Hereford* and *Eſſex*. Fourthly, from *Edmund* of *Langley*, Son of King *Edward* the Third, and Duke of *York*, from whom the Princes of the Houſe of *York* deſcended alſo. And, Fifthly, from *John of Gaunt*, Son of the ſame King *Edward*, and Duke of *Lancaſter*, from whom the *Lancaſtrian* Line of the *Engliſh* Kings are deſcended, as from the united Blood of both the Families now upon the Throne of theſe Realms derive their Title.

THIS *Katherine* Lady *Perceval* was already privately engaged, as we have ſaid before, to Sir *John Perceval*, before the Death of his elder Brother, Sir *Philip*; which falling out in *September*, 1680, they were married in *February*, 1680-1, and lived together above five Years in great Harmony till the Death of her Huſband, which happened, as we have ſhewn, in *April*, 1686. After which ſhe remained near two Months in *Ireland* with her Children, ſettling her Affairs in that Kingdom; from whence ſhe embarked for *England* in *June*, 1686, leaving the Country inconſolable at her Departure; for ſhe was a Woman of great Humanity, and condeſcended to give Attention to the Wants and Neceſſities of the Common People, in ſuch a degree, as if ſhe thought ſhe had no other Duty, but to conſult their Welfare, and the Relief of their Neceſſities.

UPON the eighth of *January* following, 1686-7, the ſecond of King *James* the Second*, ſhe made her laſt Will, "leaving divers large Legacies to the Poor of "*Church-Town*, near *Cork*, and Relief of the Priſoners "in the Goal of *Cork*, who might be found to be con-"fined for leſs than the Sum of forty Shillings each.—"As likewiſe to her Mother, the Lady *Dering*, and to "her Brothers, Sir *Edward Dering*, Baronet, *Charles*, "*John*, and *Robert Dering*, and to her Siſters,—— *Dering*,

* Ex Autograph. penes Com. Egmont.

" *Dering*, Wife of——*Whorwood*. Her late Huſ-
" band's Siſter, the Lady *Moore*, her Siſter, *Jane*
" *Dering*, and her Siſter——*Dering*, Wife of——
" *Knatchbull*. Alſo her Dreſſing-Plate to her Siſter
" *Knatchbull*, and to her God-Daughters after her De-
" ceaſe.——Alſo her Brother *Daniel Dering*, 100*l.*
" Alſo to her late Huſband's Siſter, Mrs. *Helena Perce-*
" *val* fifty Pounds, together with twenty Pounds a
" Year, provided ſhe continue unmarried, to be paid
" out of the Intereſt of her Money bequeathed to her
" younger Children, ſo long as her eldeſt Son, Sir
" *Edward Perceval*, Baronet, ſhall be a Minor; then
" recommending her to his Care, who, ſhe hopes,
" will do better for her than ſhe is able.——She
" alſo bequeathed divers other Legacies to Sir *Robert*
" *Southwell*, her Brother-in-Law, to his Son, *Edward*
" *Southwell*, and to his Daughters, her Nephews and
" Nieces.——Alſo to her Couſin, *Heneage Finch*,
" (after Earl of *Aylesford*) to *Richard Mulys*, Eſq; and
" to *William Taylor*, Gentleman, twenty Pounds a
" piece.——She bequeaths all her great Family
" Pictures to her eldeſt Son, Sir *Edward Perceval*,
" and to her other Sons, *John* and *Philip*, all her
" Money, Goods, Chattels, *&c.* to go to her Siſters
" *Knatchbull*, and *Helena Perceval*.——She leaves
" Sir *Robert Southwell*, and his Son, *Edward South-*
" *well*, Executors of this her laſt Will; and in caſe
" Sir *Robert* ſhould die before the Completion of the
" Truſt, ſhe then appointed the Honourable *Heneage*
" *Finch* aforeſaid, her Couſin, and *Richard Mulys*,
" Eſquire, before named, to be jointly Executors with
" the ſaid *Edward Southwell*, Eſquire. She further-
" more deſires that Mr. *William Taylor* may be em-
" ployed in the Management of her Childrens For-
" tunes, having great Confidence and Aſſurance of
" his Fidelity and Care."

AFTER the making of this Will in *Auguſt*, 1690, ſhe married a ſecond Time to Colonel *Butler*, a Gentleman of *Ireland*, by whom ſhe had no Iſſue, for ſhe ſurvived but a ſhort Time, and, dying of a Miſcarriage

riage upon the ſecond of *February*, 1691-2, lies buried in the Church of *Chelſea*, in the County of *Middleſex**.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Bart. of that Name, and of *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering*, of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Bart.

I. Sir *EDWARD PERCEVAL*, Baronet, born the Thirtieth of *July*, 1682, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. Sir *JOHN PERCEVAL*, Baronet, who ſucceeded his Brother, and is now Earl of *Egmont*, of whom in Chapter XIII.

III. *PHILIP PERCEVAL*, Eſq; born at *King's Weſton*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, ſix Months after his Father's Deceaſe, *viz.* upon the thirteenth of *November*, 1686. He is ſtill living, and is married to *Martha*, Daughter of —— *Uſher*, Eſquire, and Widow of the late Lord Chief Baron *Donnellan*, by whom he had one Son, alſo named *Philip*, who alſo died an Infant.

I. *MARY*, a Daughter, born at *Burton*, who died an Infant in *December*, 1686.

II. *KATHERINE*, alſo born at *Burton*, who died likewiſe in her Infancy.

---

* Regiſter in Chelſea Church.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Sir EDWARD PERCEVAL, *Baronet, Lord of* Burton, Liſcarrol, Kanturk, Caſtlewarning, Oughterard, *&c.*



SIR *Edward Perceval*, Bart. eldeſt Son and Heir of Sir *John Perceval* (eighth of that Name) and of *Katherine Dering*, Lady *Perceval*, his Wife, was born at *Burton*, in the County of *Cork*, upon the thirtieth of *July*, 1682. He was Lord of *Burton*, *Liſcarrol*, *Kanturk*, *&c. &c.* *, and ſucceeded to the Eſtate of his Father in 1686, being then little more than four Years of Age.——† Two Months after, *viz.* upon the fifteenth of *June*, the King's Yatcht, named the *Henrietta*, was ordered to carry him over into *England*, where

* Family Letters. † Ibid.

where he remained all the Time of the Diſorders in *Ireland*, which followed upon the Revolution, with Sir *Robert Southwell*, his Great Uncle and Guardian.

In theſe Troubles his Eſtate, which had already ſuffered ſo immenſely in the Rebellion of 1641, in the Time of King *Charles* the Firſt, ſuffered again, by the Deſtruction of Caſtles, Woods, and Houſes, loſs of Rent and Stock, to the Value of more than *forty thouſand Pounds**. The Loſs of Rents alone were returned into the Chancery of *England* by his Guardian, Sir *Robert Southwell*, at *Twenty thouſand ſix hundred twenty eight Pounds twelve Shillings and Five-pence Half-penny.*

†In theſe Troubles, ſuch was the Violence of thoſe Times, that this young Gentleman was (notwithſtanding his tender Age, and Impoſſibility of his being able to have deſerved ſo hard a Treatment) involved in that general Act of Confiſcation, made during the Government of that Party; but there being a Clauſe in that Act, giving Leave to Minors, or Perſons innocent, by their Agents or themſelves, to make out their Claims without Prejudice from that Law. The Agents of Sir *Edward Perceval* accordingly making out his Title, he was even under that Government maintained in his Eſtate; an Inſtance the rather to be mentioned, becauſe the Violence of Party has repreſented theſe Proceedings (which were in Truth exorbitant enough) ſtill more violent than they really were.

§ He lived but a ſhort Time after, for being then nine Years old and a little more, he departed this Life, by a Diſeaſe occaſioned from a Polypus in his Heart, at *London*, upon the ninth of *November*, 1691, from whence his Body was conveyed to *Glouceſter*, thence to *Henbury*, the Burying-Place of Sir *Robert Southwell*, near *King's Weſton*, in that County.

John, his ſecond Brother, now Earl of *Egmont*, his next Heir, ſucceeded to the Title and Eſtate.

CHAP.

* Out of Sir Robert Southwell's Account of the Guardianſhip of this Family in four folio MSS.

† Ibid.

§ Ex Chart. Famil.


BRITISH MUSEUM



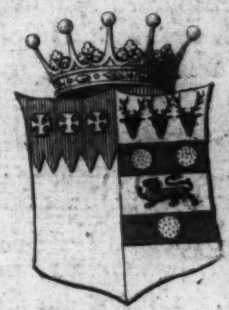
Hysing Pinx.t. P. Faber junr. Sculp.t

The R.t Hon.ble John Perceval
(y.e 9.th of that Name) Earl of Egmont
Visc.t Perceval of Kanturk, Baron
Perceval of Burton, Bar.t Perceval & Bar.t
Born July 12. 1683 now living 1744

IVERY

CHAP. XIII.

The moſt Noble and Puiſſant LORD, JOHN PERCEVAL (*ninth of that Name*) *Earl of* Egmont, *Viſcount* Perceval *of* Kanturk, *Baron* Perceval *of* Burton, *Baron* Perceval, *and Baronet, one of his Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy Council*, &c.



SIR John Perceval (ninth of that Name) now Earl of *Egmont*, ſecond Son of Sir *John Perceval*, Baronet, and of *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *Edward Dering* of *Surrenden* in *Kent*, Baronet, was born at *Burton*, in the County of *Corke*, upon the twelfth of *July*, 1683. His Father dying, as we have ſhewn before, upon the twenty-ninth of *April*, 1686. He

* The Proofs of this Chapter ariſe from the Journals of the preſent Earl of Egmont.

was ſent over into *England* not long after, and landed near *Briſtol* upon the twenty-ſeventh of *July*, the ſame Year, and his elder Brother, Sir *Edward*, dying upon the ninth of *November*, 1691, he then ſucceeded to the Title and Eſtate.

THE Lady *Perceval*, his Mother, marrying again in *Auguſt*, 1689, the ſole Guardianſhip of the Children was veſted, from that Time, by virtue of Sir *John Perceval*'s Will, in Sir *Robert Southwell*, Great Uncle to the Minors, who executed that Truſt with great Fidelity and Care.

HE was educated in that Gentleman's Houſe by Dr. *Henry Roby*, Chaplain to the late Sir *John Perceval*, till the Year 1696, when, being about thirteen Years of Age, he was placed at Mr. *Demeure*'s Academy, a Place famous for Education at that Time, where *French*, *Latin*, Geography, Muſick, Dancing, Fencing, Vaulting, Quarter-Staff, and other hardy Exerciſes, were regularly taught; and, at leiſure Hours, Mr. *Betterton*, the famous Tragedian, was employed to inſtruct him in thoſe Parts of Oratory which conſiſt of Emphaſis and Action.

IN 1698 he was removed to *Weſtminſter* School, where he ſtudied under the Direction of Doctor *Breval*, one of the Prebends of that Church.

IN *November*, 1699, he was entered at *Oxford*, in *Magdalen College*, where he applied himſelf to the Mathematicks, Logick, Morality and Hiſtory, under his Tutor, Dr. *Smallbrooke*, now Biſhop of *Litchfield and Coventry*. During his Stay there, his Behaviour was much regarded for Sobriety and Regularity, and for his not conſorting with the idle and diſſolute Part of that Society.

IN *June*, 1701, he quitted the Univerſity, and, having made the Tour of *England*, was admitted a Fellow of the Royal Society, though then but nineteen Years of Age, with great Commendations of his early Knowledge in thoſe Branches of Literature which are chiefly there encouraged.

SIR *Robert Southwell* dying upon the eleventh of *September*, 1702, his Guardianſhip fell to *Edward Southwell*,

Southwell, Eſq; one of the Clerks of the Council, and Secretary of State for *Ireland*, Son to the ſaid Sir *Robert*.

UPON the Death of King *William*, in 1703, a new Parliament being to be choſen in *Ireland*, he went over thither in 1704 with the Duke of *Ormond*, then Lord Lieutenant, (between whoſe Family and this ſtill ſubſiſted the ancient Friendſhip) and though not of Age, was, without Oppoſition, elected Knight of the Shire for the County of *Cork*.

IN the Month of *October* following, in the ſame Year, he was appointed a *Privy-Counſellor*, in which honourable Station he has been uninterruptedly continued to this Time, a Space of thirty-ſeven Years, notwithſtanding the frequent Changes and Virulence of Parties.

IN *July* 1705, having ſettled the Affairs of his Eſtate in that Kingdom, he returned to *England*. In the next Month he began the grand Tour of *Europe*, and endeavouring to make the beſt of his Way to *Rome*, narrowly eſcaped being taken Priſoner by a *French* Privateer, between *Leghorn* and *Genoa*.——This vexatious Accident was prevented by his being actually taken by a *German* Frigate, the Commander of which informed him of his Danger, and ſet him aſhore at *Lerichi*, whence he purſued his Journey by Land. There was a good deal of Danger in this Adventure, for the *Germans* fired many Shot at the Veſſel in which he was, before ſhe ſtruck.

HE continued abroad about two Years, having viſited moſt of the Courts of *Italy* and *Germany*, and Republicks of *Genoa*, *Venice*, and *Holland*.

IN *October* 1707, he returned to *England*, having loſt a vaſt Collection of Books, Statues, Paintings, and other Curioſities, which he had amaſſed at a great Expence in his Travels; they falling into the Hands of the *French*, with whom we were then at War.

IN *February* following he was ſeiſed with a violent Fever in *London*, where he lay long in exceſſive Danger,

ger, given over by all his Phyſicians, but he at length recovered.

In *May* 1708, he went over again to *Ireland*, from whence, having regulated ſome neceſſary Buſineſs, he returned in *September* 1709.

Upon the twentieth of *June*, 1710, he married *Catherine*, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker a Morley*, of *Erwarton*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Baronet; a Lady of great Beauty, and fine Qualities, ſtill living, and of a very noble Family, as we ſhall ſhew more particularly at the End of this Chapter.

JOHN, now Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, his eldeſt Son, being born in *February*, 1710-11, he went over to *Ireland* in the beginning of the *Auguſt* following, to be preſent at the Parliament held that Year, under the Duke of *Ormond*, who was appointed a ſecond Time Lord-Lieutenant of that Kingdom. He carried his Lady with him, and landed at *Dublin* the tenth of that Month.

The Man of War in which he was, coming late in the Evening into the Bay of *Dublin*, when the Tide was too far ſpent for the Ship to compleat the Voyage, Lady *Perceval* being extremely ill, notwithſtanding the Badneſs of the Weather, and much againſt the Advice of the Commander, they were put into the Pinnace, to be ſent on Shore that Night;—— but a great Darkneſs ſuddenly ariſing, the Boatmen miſtook their Courſe, and in a great Tempeſt rowed out to Sea, ſo that in the Morning they found themſelves many Leagues from the Shore, which, however, they afterwards ſafely recovered.———But there was a farther good Fortune in this Affair, for by this Accident they eſcaped a *French* Privateer, which lay concealed in the Harbour, expecting this Prey, into whoſe Hands they had inevitably fallen, but from this Error in the Seamen we have mentioned.

In *September* 1713, the Duke of *Shrewſbury* being declared Lord-Lieutenant, a new Parliament was called, upon which he was again elected Knight of the Shire for the County of *Cork*, without Oppoſition.

UPON the ſecond of *March*, 1713-14, he embarked for *England*, and arrived at *London* the fourteenth of the ſame Month, being much offended at the Meaſures taken in that Kingdom by the Faction prevailing there, and finding it impoſſible to ſtem the Torrent which was breaking in upon the Conſtitution both in Church and State.

BUT a Change ſoon happened; for upon the Death of Queen *Anne* upon the firſt of *Auguſt* following, the Nation was reſcued from all her Fears, by the Acceſſion of King *George* the Firſt, who landing at *Greenwich* on the eighteenth of *September* following, he attended in his Rank, as a Privy-Counſellor, in that Proceſſion which was made from thence to *St. James's*.

UPON the ninth of *October* next enſuing a new Commiſſion for the Privy-Council being iſſued, he was one of the few continued in it upon this great Change.

UPON the fourteenth of *March* the ſame Year, the King being deſirous to ſecure to himſelf the Attachment of Men of Eſtate, Merit, and Intereſt, upon his firſt Eſtabliſhment in this Kingdom,——and being informed that in the late Reign a Peerage had been offered to him, which he then refuſed, not caring to be concerned with the Government, as it was then conducted;——his Majeſty ſent Mr. *Addiſon*, then or ſoon after Secretary of State, to deſire him to accept the Dignity of a Baron of *Ireland*, which he (though with great Decency) declined, as inferior to that Offer formerly mentioned in the late Reign, which was that of an *Engliſh* Baron, he concluded, with the ſtrongeſt Aſſurances of his wanting no En- no Encouragement or Inducement to perſevere in an inviolable Attachment to his Majeſty, and his illuſtrious Family; deſiring his Majeſty to be pleaſed to excuſe his Acceptance of any Title of Honour, unleſs it ſhould ſuit his Pleaſure to advance him either to that of an *Engliſh* Baron, or an *Iriſh* Earl.

BUT

BUT his Majeſty, not contented with this Anſwer, ſent Mr. *Addiſon* again to him, deſiring that he would for the preſent receive the Peerage as it was then offered, promiſing that in a few Months he would advance him farther in the *Iriſh* Peerage, and that he might certainly depend upon that *Engliſh* Honour he deſired, as ſoon as the Convenience of his Affairs ſhould admit, which would not be very long.

WHEREUPON he was created Baron *Perceval*, of *Burton*, in the County of *Corke*, in *Ireland*, and Baron *Perceval*, with this Preamble to his Patent.

" The Duty of Princes elevated to the Sovereign " Dignity, is a ſacred Obligation, which not only con- " ſiſts in the Repreſſion of Vice, but alſo in the Ad- " vancement of Virtue into Poſts of Dignity and Ho- " nour, that it may ſhine with the greater Luſtre, and " operate more powerfully by Example on Mankind, " ——— Induced by theſe Conſiderations, We have " thought it incumbent on Us to confer the Title of " Baron upon our well-beloved and faithful Counſel- " lor the Right Honourable Sir *John Perceval*, Baro- " net. ——— A Perſon highly recommended to Us, " as well by the eminent Merits of his Fore-fathers, as " by his own perſonal Virtues, being undoubtedly de- " ſcended from an Houſe of the moſt remote Anti- " quity, who under the Standard of *William* Duke of " *Normandy*, Our great Anceſtor, firſt entered *Eng-* " *land*, and from thence in the beginning of the laſt " Century paſſed over into *Ireland*, where in every " ſucceeding Generation they have conſtantly and no- " bly exerted themſelves in the moſt conſpicuous Sta- " tions with conſummate Reputation, in defence of the " Rights both of the Prince and People. — From the " Hereditary Honour and Virtue of his Race, in the " faithful Execution of the firſt Offices of the State, " in a powerful Oppoſition to the factious Violence of " thoſe who laboured to ſubvert the Laws and the " Religion of theſe Kingdoms, and in a conſtant and " ſteady Conduct in the worſt of Times, during the

Diſſolution

" Diſſolution of both. This young Nobleman (keep-
" ing ever in his View the Example of his great An-
" ceſtors) did never degenerate, but has maintained
" the Glory he derived from them, with an equal
" Prudence, Integrity and Reſolution. At an Age in
" which the Laws have judged Men uſually unfit to
" be truſted with the Management of their own pri-
" vate Property, by an Example entirely unprece-
" dented before, he was admitted into the Privy-
" Council of the Kingdom; and preſerving not only
" an inviolable Duty to his Prince, but a religious Re-
" verence to the Religion of his Country, and a con-
" ſtant Application to the Parts of a worthy Member
" to the Commonwealth; he acquitted himſelf in that
" important Station, with ſo much Dignity and Judg-
" ment, ſo much Affection to us and our Family, that
" unleſs we ſhould ſubmit to the Scandal of being ex-
" ceeded by a Subject in good Actions. We find
" ourſelves obliged to beſtow, *even greater Honours*
" upon him than thoſe, which by theſe Preſents, we
" now confer. Wherefore, *&c.*"

BUT the Promiſe here mentioned, happened to be ſomething tedious in Performance, and indeed was never rigidly fulfilled, for about the latter End of the Year, 1717, an unhappy Breach being made by Accidents, not proper to be mentioned here, between the King and the then Prince of *Wales*, his Son, now King *George* the Second; all Peers and Privy Counſellors were required to make their Election of Attendance upon *either* of the Courts, but afterwards to come no more to *both*. — His Lordſhip, affectionately attached to the whole Family, found it difficult how to act on this diſagreeable Occaſion. —— Of all Evils, he moſt dreaded the Imputation of a factious or ungrateful Character, both which according to the ancient Practice of Courts, he had reaſon to expect to be thrown upon him by thoſe about the King's Perſon, if he preferred the Court of the Prince to the other.— In this Situation, he reſolved to ſhew his Reluctance to this Diſtinction, as manifeſtly as he could, by frequenting

quenting both Courts, notwithſtanding the Order before obſerved, which he did for ſome time, till at length the King taking Notice of it, ſent him a very obliging Meſſuage, inviting him to continue at his own Court; at the ſame time acquainting him, that his Reaſons were ſuch, for deſiring thoſe to abſtain from his Preſence who attended the Prince, that he could not poſſibly diſpenſe with the Rule he had made in favour of any Perſon whatſoever.

BEING now no longer able to reſiſt, his Lordſhip made his Election of the Court of the Prince of *Wales*, conſcientiouſly thinking, that the Juſtice in the Diſpute was on that Side, where he continued ever after.

FROM this Time there was little reaſon to expect the Performance of the Promiſe abovementioned. — Favours are rarely granted to thoſe who abſent themſelves from Courts. But ſuch was the Juſtice of that Prince, that ſeveral Years after, recollecting his Engagement, he thought that this Conduct of his Lordſhip, whom he knew ſtill to be faithful to him, ought to be no juſt Reaſon to abſolve him from it; ſo that in *December*, 1722, his Lordſhip, neither then expecting or making Application for it, he was advanc'd farther, to the Degree of a Viſcount of the ſame Kingdom, by the Stile of Viſcount *Perceval*, of *Kanturk*. — By which his Majeſty, to his great Honour, kept his Word inviolate, tho' the Title conferred, was not of that Degree which anſwered the Condition of his Lordſhip, in his firſt Demand. — As to the *Engliſh* Title, of which he had likewiſe been ſo ſtrongly aſſured, whether the King ſtill intended to confer it (when from the great Worth and Juſtice of his Character, there is no room to doubt) and only waited for a proper Time, or whether diverted from it by thoſe about him, who were unwilling, that a Favour of this Nature ſhould be granted, without an Obligation to themſelves, we cannot ſay, but it was ſtill deferred, his Lordſhip modeſtly declining to preſs for it, till Death abſolved his Majeſty of that Engagement.

HAVING

HAVING been deſirous to connect the Story of this Peerage together, we have been engaged a little to miſplace an Event which was of great Importance, and which happened in the Year, 1720. —— This is the famous Act of Parliament, then made in *England*, declaring the Judicature of the Peers of *Ireland* in Civil Caſes, to be of no Validity.

WE have had occaſion in this Work to obſerve before, that upon the firſt Acquiſition of *Ireland*, the Conſtitution there was modeled upon the *Engliſh* Plan, and that it was then wholly independent of the *Engliſh* Nation, ſubject to the ſame Prince; they were governed by their own Laws, to which the King aſſented, in the ſame free manner as he did to thoſe of *England**. —— *Henry* the Second, who firſt eſtabliſhed the Scepter there, as a Condition of that voluntary Submiſſion, which the *Iriſh* made upon his Attempt on that Kingdom, in a great Council of the *Iriſh*, at *Liſmore*, granted them the Laws and Liberties of *England*; and added afterwards, among other Privileges, the *Modus Tenendi Parlimenta*†, or Rule for their New Parliamentary Government, in the ſame individual Terms, and Form with that of *England*, in which Record, its ſaid, "That Cauſes of Property are to be "examined and corrected in full Parliament, and no "where elſe."

KING *John* (younger Son to the ſaid King *Henry*) who was independent Sovereign of that Iſland, in the Life-time of his elder Brother, *Richard*, King of *England*‖, upon his laſt Voyage thither, in the twelfth of his Reign, renewed his Compact, which even in ſo ſhort a Time had been violated by the *Engliſh* Adventurers to the great Diſturbance of that State, and provided as before, "That all the Laws and Cuſtoms "enjoyed in *England*, ſhould be likewiſe enjoy'd in "*Ireland*;" of which the Judicature of Parliament was one of thoſe moſt eminent.

* Mat. Paris, ad Ann. 1172.
† Lord Coke, p. 12.
‖ Mat. Paris, p. 220.

THE rapacious Views of the *Engliſh* Adventurers newly ſettled there, prompting them ſtill to farther Innovations upon the Rights of that People; theſe Diſorders proceeding from this Cauſe†, occaſioned the moſt ſolemn Confirmation of theſe Privileges, in the Time of King *Henry* the Third (Son to the ſaid King *John*) at *Briſtol*, upon the twelfth of *November*, in the tenth Year of his Reign, granted the *Magna Charta* to *Ireland*, in the ſame identical Words with that of *England*, which he confirmed eight Years after. Again by another Charter, dated at *Glouceſter*, the ſixth of *February* following, he farther confirm'd his Father's Charter, and his own, laſt mentioned; ordaining*, "That their Conſtitution ſhould be preſerved intire "upon the *Engliſh* Plan, as his Father *John* had de"creed, when he was laſt in *Ireland*; and that all "Writs and Matter of Law, ſhould have their Courſe "in *Ireland*, in like manner as they had in *England*."

IN the twelfth of the ſame Reign, by a Writ, dated at *Weſtminſter*, the eighth of *May* ‖; the ſame Prince empowered *Richard de Burgo*, then Juſtice of *Ireland*, at a certain Day and Place, to ſummon the Nobility, Clergy, and Commons of that Land, to read before them the Charter of his Father, King *John*, whereunto his Seal was appendant, whereby he had granted unto the Laws and Cuſtoms of *England*; and that he ſhould leave the ſame to be promulged thro' the whole Land of *Ireland*.

IN theſe early Times, Appeals were ſometimes made from the Court of *King's-Bench* in *Ireland*, to that of the *King's-Bench* in *England*, becauſe the King, who was the Common Judge of both Nations in that Age, was accuſtomed to ſit in Perſon in that Court; and ſometimes the Judges in *England*, were conſulted in certain difficult Points of Law, from a want of Men fully inſtructed in the Conſtitution there, during

† Vide red Book of the Exchequer, at Dublin.
* Pat. 1. H 3. m. 13. Entries.
‖ Clauſ. 12. I. 3.

during its firſt Infancy. —— But ſtill there was never any Pretence at that Time, that this was *de Jure* done, or that any Appeal then lay to any Court without the Kingdom, till at length about the Reign of *Edward* the Third, the *Engliſh* began to aim at extending their Juriſdiction, and pretended, tho' they ſupported it but very faintly, that the ancient Appeals to the Court of *King's-Bench*, in *England*, implied a Superiority in the *Engliſh* Nation over the *Iriſh*, with reſpect to this Particular, arguing *a fortiori*, that if Appeals were made to the inferior Courts in *England*, of conſequence they might be made to the ſupreme Court of all (the *Engliſh* Parliament) carefully avoiding the original Ground of theſe Appeals, which ſprung from a Motive very foreign to any Claim of Superiority. — Under theſe Pretences, it ſeems that they had actually begun to take Cognizance of ſome judicial Matters relating to the Kingdom of *Ireland*, before the twenty-ninth of that Reign §, whereupon the Commons of *Ireland* tranſmitted a ſtrong Remonſtrance to the King, ſetting forth, " That they had long endured intolera-
" ble Oppreſſion and Injuſtice from Men of Authori-
" ty in that Kingdom, who abuſing their Power, diſ-
" ſeized them of their Eſtates, and under Pretence
" that there was no Appeal to the Parliament of *Ire-*
" *land*, ſupported themſelves with Impunity in this
" Violence, reducing Multitudes to the greateſt Po-
" verty and extreme Diſtreſs, unable from the great
" Charge and Hazard in proſecuting their Rights a-
" broad, to carry their Appeals to *England*; where-
" fore they humbly beſought the King to remedy
" this crying Abuſe, and to maintain the Privileges of
" their violated Conſtitution." In conſequence of which Complaint, the King, by an Ordinance of the thirtieth of *Auguſt*, in the ſame Year, decreed, ——
" That whereas it appeared an intolerable Grievance,
" that his People of that Nation ſhould be thus op-
preſſed

§ Rot. Clauſ. m. 12, 29. Ed. 3. in Turri Londini.

" preſſed without a Remedy, and that he was bound " by the Nature of his ſupreme Office, to ſee Juſtice " done to all his Subjects; for the future Juſtice ſhould " be done to them, according to the known Cuſtoms " and Laws of both Kingdoms, and all Appeals and " Proceſſes upon Errors of Judgments in the inferior " Courts of that Realm, ſhould be made and carried " on in the Parliaments of that Kingdom only*." Again, upon the twenty-fifth of *October*, in the thirty-firſt of the ſame Reign, King *Edward* the Third, confirmed a-new all the Rights of that Nation, by his Letters Patents, dated at *Weſtminſter*, in the moſt ample manner.

If any thing were wanting to corroborate this Privilege, after all theſe different Ordinances and Charters from the Crown, it was ſupplied by the Decree of King *Richard* the Second†, upon the twenty-ſecond of *June*, in the ſeventeenth of his Reign, when *all the Liberties and Immunities of that Kingdom were again confirmed, among which the Judicature of the* Iriſh *Parliament was included*‖. Moreover, the ſame Prince, by his Letters Patents, dated at *Weſtminſter*, four Days after, renewed the Charter of King *Edward* the Third, beforementioned, and recited the ſame *verbatim*.

From this time forward till the eighth of *Henry* the Sixth, 1430, the Judicature of that Kingdom, not only continued firm, but was never attacked, nor was there any Complaint or occaſion of Complaint on this Head from thence§. But about that Time the Prior of *Lanthony*, in *Wales*, having brought an Action in the Common Pleas in *Ireland*, againſt the *Iriſh* Prior of *Mullingar*, for the Arrear of an Annuity, Judgment was given againſt the Prior of *Mullingar*, who thence brought a Writ of Error into the *King's-Bench* of *Ireland*, where the Judgment was affirmed. —— The

* Rot. Pat. 17. Richard II. m. 34. de Confirmatione.
† 17 Ric. 2d. m. 12.
‖ Rot. Pat. de eod. ann. m. 34.
§ Pryn Inſtit. 4, c. 76. p. 313.

The Prior of *Mullingar*, appealed again to the Parliament held in *Ireland*, in the fifth of *Henry* the Sixth, which Parliament reverſed both the former Judgments, whereupon the Prior of *Lanthony* removed the Cauſe into the *King's-Bench* of *England*; but that Court refuſed to be concerned with it, as having no Power over what had paſſed in the Parliament of *Ireland*; —— after which the Prior of *Lanthony*, in the eighth of *Henry* the ſixth, appealed to the Parliament of *England*, but neither would they determine upon it thereby declaring, that they had no Pretenſions to interfere in the Judicature of that Nation.

THESE Rights of Judicature, ſtood inviolate after this for near three hundred Years, in which Interval the Senſe of the *Engliſh* Lawyers themſelves, occurs frequently in the moſt poſitive manner, in favour of them particularly * in the ſecond Year of King *Richard* the Third, 1484, a Queſtion ariſing, concerning certain Bales of Wool, exported by a Merchant of *Waterford*, which the Treaſury of *Calais* had ſeized in that Port. The Judges of *England*, in their Opinions upon that Caſe, occaſionally pronounced, that *Ireland* was not to be bound by *Engliſh* Statutes, becauſe they had no Repreſentatives in the *Engliſh* Parliament and that they had a Parliament of their own, in which they made and amended their Laws and † "that they "had all manner of Courts, *&c.* with the ſame Pre- "rogatives as they had in *England*."

BUT in length of Time, by Accidents too long to be recited here, *Ireland* being waſted by bloody Wars, broken by frequent Forfeitures, and much diſtracted by Changes in Property and Religion; ſuch a general Weakneſs and Diviſion of Intereſt aroſe, that ſhe became incapable to reſiſt the Incroachments of her Neighbour. —— At the ſame Conjuncture, when other Cauſes concurred to render the ſame Neighbour more able to encroach. — For in *England*, the Publick was increaſed

* Year Book, 2 Ric. 3. fol. 11. 12.
† Ibid.

increaſed in Riches and Power to a prodigious Degree, by an advantageous Commerce, which drew in a great Part of the Treaſure of the New World, hardened their Inhabitants, inured them to Fatigues, and made them Maſters of the Sea, by which Means they were enabled, at the ſhorteſt warning, to throw into *Ireland* a Force far exceeding that which they could anciently have exerciſed againſt her. ——— This growing Power they had gradually taught themſelves to know, even to their own Surprize, by the great Armies they had maintained, and the great Taxes they had ſupported in the Civil War. — In the next Place, by their Conjunction with *Scotland*, under the ſame Prince, they were ſecured from any Diſturbances at home, which might have formerly been feared from any Commotions in the Iſland of which we ſpeak; and laſtly their Government being become more popular, and conſequently more formidable to their Princes. The Kings of *England* were leſs capable to preſerve intire their old Prerogatives; and in particular, that of the independent Sovereignty of the Crown of *Ireland*; all which concurring in the Reign of King *Charles* the Second, eaſy in his Temper, careleſs of his Subjects, and negligent of every thing but his Pleaſure; it is no wonder that the natural Ambition of Men on the *Engliſh* Side, ſhould prompt them to avail themſelves of theſe Circumſtances and Opportunities, to draw the *Iriſh* Nation to a Dependance on themſelves. *The Pride of all free States* (as we have before intimated) *producing from the ſame Principle, the Vindication of their own Privileges, and an Invaſion of the Rights of others.* —— Nor could they be much blamed for endeavouring to effect this End, every Man of common Underſtanding, being able to foreſee the glaring Ill-convenience and Danger, which muſt in time reſult from ſuch an Independancy in the Government of ſo near a Nation, under the ſame Prince. It is not therefore the *Veiw* but the *Manner* taken to bring it to bear, which may deſerve Cenſure, and which is ſo far from attaining that Union and Security, which is

ſo

ſo juſtly wiſhed, that it now evidently tends to occaſion thoſe Evils which it is deſigned to avoid.

THE Judicature of *Ireland*, being not only an eminent Mark, but a ſtrong Defence to the Independency of that Country; the Deſtruction of it was an early Point in view. — But this was not however a Work to be effected at one Blow, Pretenſions were wanting to this Deſign, it was therefore neceſſary to prepare the Minds of Men for this Meaſure by others of a more ſpacious Nature. ——— The firſt Inſtance in which they began to interfere with the Affairs of *Ireland*, was in the Year 1641, when a violent Rebellion raging in that Kingdom, from the want of a Parliament there, or its Capacity to act in that tempeſtuous Time, Humanity ſeemed to grace the firſt Attempt againſt the Privilege of that People, and pleaded a ſeeming Neceſſity to provide for their Safety by a foreign Authority. The *Engliſh* Parliament took hold of this Occaſion, and offered Security out of the future Forfeitures in *Ireland* for the Sums advanced by the Adventurers in the *Iriſh* War. —— The Breach thus made was ſoon enlarged; for after the Reſtoration, King *Charles* the Second, acting ſtill under the ſame Pretences of Neceſſity of State, they paſſed thoſe Laws (which have ſince proved ſo fatal to the Trade of both Kingdoms) againſt the Exportation of *Iriſh* Wool and Woollen Manufactures abroad, as alſo againſt that of their Cattle into *England*, for which they found Arguments ſuited to the different Tempers of moſt Men on this Side, who were blinded to the Hardſhip of this Proceeding by various Gratifications of Pride or Envy, publick or private Intereſt. — From that Time forward all Opportunities were taken, to paſs both publick and private Laws, ſome way or other relative to that Kingdom, from Precedents, tho' of a trivial Nature, and not immediately concluſive, to create a Preſcription in favour of this new Authority, and having by their ſuperior Influence with the Crown, artfully prevented the holding of any Parliaments for many Years in that Kingdom the ſame Reaſon of ſeeming Neceſſity con-

tinued to juſtify theſe Proceedings, and induced many of that Nation to concur in promoting the Ruin of their Country by perſonal Applications to the *Engliſh* Legiſlature.

THESE Meaſures inſenſibly produced the moſt fatal Effects which ſtill operate dreadfully upon both Nations, totally unhinging the Conſtitution of that Kingdom and reducing its Inhabitants under the moſt confuſed, uncertain, and contradictory Form of Government that was ever known in the World. The People, and even the Magiſtrates, never able to determine their Obedience, and unavoidably obnoxious in many Caſes to the Reſentments of *the one* Legiſlature by a legal Submiſſion to *the other*; inveterate Indignation on the one Part, continued Inſult on the other; every *Britiſh* Subject, how mean ſoever, imperiouſly aſcribing to himſelf, as a Member of a People governed by its Repreſentatives, the ſame Superiority aſſumed by the General Council of his Country, diſquieting with a licentious Boldneſs, the Greateſt of the other State, by a galling Evidence of Contempt and Arrogance in *private* Diſcourſes, and of manifeſt and outrageous Partiality in the Diſtribution of *publick* Preferments. ——— The *Engliſh* were thus brought at length, by the exerciſe of the *Power*, to be univerſally convinced, that they likewiſe enjoyed the *Right*, and the mutual Hatred, begot by the ſame Exerciſe of Power, inflamed their Paſſions too far to ſuffer them to reflect upon the Juſtice of their Claim. —— Which Paſſions ſtill nationally ſubſiſt to that Degree of Extravagance, that they can be compared with no others which infeſt the Mind of Man, but ſuch as are found in Bigots againſt thoſe who contravert the Fundamentals of their Faith.

THE Time was now thought ripe for a direct Attack upon the Houſe of Lords, and accordingly two Appeals were made in the Years 1670 and 1679, from the Chancery of *Ireland* to the *Engliſh* Lords, at a Juncture, when no poſſible Oppoſition could be made from thence, no Parliament ſitting, either before or after

after for many Years in that Kingdom; and in 1699, the ſame Encouragement ſubſiſting, for want of a Parliament there, the Lords in *England* proceeded upon an Appeal, between the Lord *Ward* (one of their own Body) and the Earl and Counteſs of *Meath*, to an Eſtate in *Ireland*, which they decided without much Ceremony in favour of the Lord *Ward*, without hearing the Merits of the Cauſe, pretending the former Decree of *Ireland* to have been paſſed *coram non Judice*, that is to ſay, before a Court who had no Title to take Cognizance of it.

A Meaſure ſo ſtrong as this, and ſupported by no other Ground or Precedent than what we have ſhewn, aſtoniſhed all Men in the other Kingdom, and made the worſe Impreſſion there, as the Matter had been determined in favour of the Lord *Ward*, a Member of the Houſe of Lords in *England*; and as the Eſtate had been confirmed to him, without any Examination into the Merits of the Caſe, yet notwithſtanding the Warmth of the Proceeding, which threaten'd very great Extremities, the Parliament of *Ireland* meeting in 1703, the Lords aſſerted their Juriſdiction with great Spirit, and maintained their former Decree diſpoſſeſſing the Lord *Ward*, and reſtoring the Eſtate conteſted for to the Earl and Counteſs of *Meath*, who remained in the Enjoyment of it, while the Houſe of Lords in *England*, conſcious of the Novelty of their Claim, no longer perſiſted to ſupport the unprecedented Judgment they had given. ——— Nor did they attempt any thing farther at that Time in vindication of their new aſſumed Authority, ſufficiently ſatisfied to have thus begun to form a Precedent, which they were determined to improve upon the firſt Occaſion that ſhould offer in their Favour.

ACCORDINGLY ſeveral Years after, the Houſe of *Hanover* being newly ſeated on the Throne, and a Change being made ſtill more advantageous to the Liberty of *England* (according to the former Remark) the Sufferings of *Ireland* encreaſed. ——— The frequent Attempts upon the Liberties of that People had

wonderfully reduced them in Eſtimation. ——— It was grown to be thought of no Importance how they were treated; and there was no Apprehenſion of their moſt national Reſentments. ——— The new King, ignorant of the different Pretenſions of his Kingdoms, naturally thought it moſt adviſeable to be directed in his Conduct by the Councils of the *Engliſh*, as being viſibly the moſt important and powerful Nation; and they took care to repreſent all Matters, with relation to *Ireland*, in ſuch a Light, that hardly common Decency was preſerved, with regard to that People; nor was there at that Time one Perſon of that Country admitted into any near Station about his Majeſty, ſo that there was no poſſibility for the Crown to be informed of the Pretenſions of that Part of its Subjects; or to receive any Idea of the Hardſhips they endured, which were conſtantly miſrepreſented, ſlighted, or ridiculed, and gradually (as it was believed) the Prince himſelf was brought to imbibe ſomewhat of the ſame Contempt for them, which thoſe about him conſtantly expreſſed.

To compleat this diſmal State, the ancient Practice of confiding the Government of *Ireland*, to the Great Men of that Country, who were by Knowledge of its Condition, and by Attachment qualified for the Direction of it, became in a manner wholly laid aſide. ——— All Places of any Credit, Profit or Truſt, were beſtowed upon *Engliſh* Men who had no Intereſt in that Kingdom, and conſequently no Mercy or Compaſſion for it, who had no Knowledge either of its Rights or Circumſtances, and were conſequently incapable to conduct it well, if they had poſſeſſed either natural Abilities or Inclination to do it, the *firſt* of which they *often*, the *latter* they almoſt *ever* wanted. The Revenue was granted away in exorbitant Penſions to the Tools of Power in *England*, to the Miniſters of Vice and Servitude, and in general to Perſons in themſelves ſo ſcandalous, that their Names were covered under thoſe of others, the only Inſtance of Decency or Modeſty obſerved in the Adminiſtration of their Affairs. —— During the Rage of theſe Abuſes, they were

were daily threatened with new Taxes; and it was repreſented, that they paid in no Proportion to the Contributions of the reſt of his Majeſty's Subjects; all which was dogmatically pronounced by thoſe, who neither knew the Extent of that Kingdom, the Number of its Inhabitants, the Balance of its Trade, the Quantum of its Species, the Amount of its Revenues, or any one Circumſtance, by which an Eſtimate of ſuch a Nature might be framed. —— When in truth at the ſame Time a terrible Diſtreſs was brought upon that Country by the Drain of its Specie into *England*, and ſuch a Debt upon the State as they were unable to diſcharge, enforcing the Neceſſity of new Taxes upon the Meeting of every Parliament, which were as conſtantly found to be exceeded by the next. ——— Neither could this diſtracted People find any Remedy to this Grievance, or ſet any Limits to this Profuſion, every Clauſe of Appropriation, being either evaded, or eluded, or affirmed to be repugnant to the pretended patrimonial Right of the Crown to the Revenues there. —Among others, provided for in this outragious manner, was an infamous Projector, who in concert with certain Court Favourites, had laid a Scheme to deprive the Nation of all its real Specie, by a baſe Copper Coin, which Scheme was urged to very great Extremity, before it was dropped, and the Projector then dedamaged by a great Penſion for his Life, out of the Revenues of that very Country he had attempted to deſtroy, as tho' it were to mock the Miſeries of the People. —— Another Profligate, the Captain of a Band of deſperate Robbers who with black Faces, and in Diſguiſe, in a formidable manner infeſted *England*, was for his Treachery to his Gang (who were by his Impeachment of them broken and diſperſed) admitted into Holy Orders, and rewarded with a great Preferment in the Church of *Ireland*. That Nation was likewiſe obliged to maintain a great Army, under pretence of defending the Proteſtants againſt the Papiſts there, whoſe Differences were at the ſame Time artfully fomented. ——— And whenever any real Danger

ger threatened, theſe Troops were withdrawn from thence to protect ſome other more favourite Dependency, nor was it thought ſufficient to deprive them of their Security, but they were even forced to pay for their Tranſportation, and to encreaſe their Pay abroad. The *Papiſts* were openly diſarmed, as Enemies to the State, and the *Proteſtants* were in effect reduced to the ſame Condition, by ſuffering the Militia to grow uſeleſs, and the Laws relating to it to determine. Regardleſs of the Security of that State, and intent to weaken all Oppoſition to their Meaſures, they conſidered not the Wounds they might themſelves receive thro' the unguarded Sides of the other Country. ——— Knowing well, that publick Contempt is publick Weakneſs, they debaſed the Peerage there by new Creations of many *Engliſh* Men of low Birth, mean Fortunes, and deſpicable Characters, they filled the Bench of Biſhops with *Engliſh* Clergy, unworthy of *any*, and often incapable of *Engliſh* Preferment. ——— They delivered up the Places of the Law to *Engliſh* Lawyers, ignorant of Law, of arbitrary Tempers, corrupt Principles, who without Reverence to the Oaths of their Offices, would enforce any Decrees, or execute any Orders that they ſhould receive from *England*.

Such were the Judges *Gilbert*, *Pocklington*, and others, who were placed in theſe Stations in the beginning of that Reign. Matters being thus prepared, the Time was come to accompliſh the Meaſure ſo long projected ——— The Lords in *England* now revived their Pretenſions to the Judicature of that Kingdom; ſeveral Appeals were made from the Lords in *Ireland* to thoſe in *England*, among the reſt, one in which *Maurice Anneſley*, and *Eſther Sherlock*, were the Parties, the Cauſe had been already determined in *Ireland*, in favour of *Eſther Sherlock*, who was thereupon poſſeſſed of the Eſtate, but the Lords in *England* ſet aſide that Judgment, and made a Decree in favour of *Anneſley*. ——— The Difficulty only remained how to enforce the Execution of it. But the Earl of *Sunderland*, a Man of great Art and determined Temper, then

then first Minister, had secured the Judges, who in defiance of the Constitution of that Kingdom, and of the Resolutions of the House of Lords, and in express Violation of their Oaths, betrayed their great Trust, and issued Orders to the Sheriffs to put the *English* Decree in Execution. The Sheriffs not daring to comply with this illegal and unprecedented Warrant, refused to obey, and were in consequence by the same Judges exorbitantly fined; whereupon the Lords in *Ireland*, taking this extravagant Proceeding into Consideration, after having debated the Matter with the greatest Solemnity came to several strong Resolutions in defence of their Rights and in Justification of the Sheriffs pronouncing the Judges betrayers of the King's Prerogative, and the undoubted ancient Priviledge of their House; after which they ordered the Judges into Custody. ——— But the *English* Minister, who had foreseen the Event; was prepared for it, and knowing that what had passed could not be justified by Precedent or Law, prepared a Bill in *England*, to declare the judicial Power of the *Irish* House of Lords of no Validity in *Ireland*.

It appears at first sight an extravagant Imagination, that the *King* of *England*, could ever have been brought to pass a Law, to break the Privilege of a Peerage, the Creature of the Crown itself; but we have shewn how ignorant he was kept with respect to that Kingdom: What is more extraordinary is, that it could ever be supposed the *Commons* of *England* should concur in such a Measure, which so manifestly tended to aggrandize the *English* Peerage, of which they are always jealous. ——— But several Circumstances prevailed upon them, and in the first place, the general Ardour of the Nation to reduce *Ireland* in every Instance to a clear and confessed Dependance on the *English* Legislature. ——— In the next place the great Influence of the Court in the House of Commons was alone sufficient to secure a Majority in any Instance to the Views of the Minister; and lastly, it was artfully insinuated, that whatever Power the Lords

in

in *England* ſhould acquire by a Declaration of the Invalidity of the Juriſdiction of the *Iriſh* Houſe of Lords, it would be but *Temporary* to them and *permanent* to themſelves; the Judicature being a Right, which they had always claimed, and had never formally yeilded or allowed to the other Houſe alone.

In Conſequence of this Management, as we have already ſaid, a Bill was prepared, which afterwards paſſed into a Law, reciting, that the *Iriſh* were diſpoſed to ſhake off their Dependance on the Crown of *England*; an Aſſertion more remarkably void of all Foundation at that Time, than in any other Period from its firſt Acquiſition to that Hour, and warranted by nothing elſe but this Concluſion, that no Nation, ſo treated, could be otherwiſe inclined. From theſe Premiſſes, they came to this Determination, that the Judicature of the Peers of *Ireland* ſhould be declared invalid.

Upon this Occaſion the Lord *Perceval* exerted himſelf, both in writing and ſpeaking in publick and private, to the utmoſt of his Power; and, in Concurrence with twenty-one Peers of *Ireland*, then in *England*, petitioned the King to refuſe his Conſent to this unparalelled Attack upon the ancient and undoubted Rights of that Nation;—"they ſet forth the an-
"cient Title of the Peers and Parliament of *Ireland*
"to this Privilege, the Attacks that had been made
"upon them in former Times, and the Confirmation
"of them from Age to Age;——— the Ill-conve-
"nience and Danger to private Property, in being
"called from the other Country, where many Cuſtoms,
"which affect the Laws, are different, and conſequently
"little underſtood in *England*;—the Hazard of the
"Loſs of private Deeds and Settlements in long Jour-
"nies and Sea Voyages at all Seaſons of the Year;
"——the Prejudices againſt *Ireland* both private and
"publick, which, raging ſo highly in the Nation, might,
"ſome time or other, infect the *Engliſh* Peerage alſo;—
"the Miniſterial Influence which might hereafter ariſe
"in that Houſe, and which, if it ſhould ariſe, muſt

"operate

" operate moſt fatally with reſpect to that Country, as " they were a Body without Controul or Check of any " kind from that People, whoſe Property they were " thus admitted to determine;—the vaſt Expence of " the Suits, and the Inability of the poorer Sort, to " contend againſt the Rich; the Source of Oppreſſion " and Injuſtice that would thence be opened;—they " ſhewed likewiſe the Injury of ſuch an Alteration, not " warranted by any Deſire of that Nation, not ſancti- " fied by any Shew of Juſtice, any Pretence of Ill- " convenience, either private or publick, ariſing from " the ancient Conſtitution;—they urged the Diminu- " tion of the King's Prerogative, already too far im- " parted to the *Engliſh* Parliament with reſpect to " them;—they modeſtly inſinuated the fatal Miſchiefs " that might enſue from the conſtant and repeated At- " tempts of late Years made upon their Liberties, and " now upon their Properties.——Laſtly, they diſco- " vered the Vanity of the Law itſelf, to attain the " Point at which the *Engliſh* aimed, which was to make " their new aſſumed Authority legal; for, unleſs it were " ſo before, nothing could give it *that Title*, or in many " Caſes, *that Effect*, but the Conſent of *Ireland*.

YET notwithſtanding theſe Endeavours, the Point was carried againſt them, the *Engliſh* being ſupported by the Circumſtances we have mentioned, and, indeed, in ſome degree, aſſiſted by that wretched Nation itſelf;——for, if ever they ſhewed moſt eminently thoſe Qualities with which they are commonly reproached, they did it upon this Occaſion.——Abſurdly conſidering this Attack as no Violation of the Conſtitution of their Country in general, the Commons afforded no Aſſiſtance to the Lords in Defence of this Privilege.———Pleaſed with the Vanity of being brought, as they imagined, by this means to a nearer Level with the Nobility, their Pride and Envy induced them to overlook the general Contempt derived upon their whole Nation, by their tame Submiſſion.———If they had reſented this Meaſure, as a National Blow upon their Liberties, if they had

exerted themſelves as all other Nations would have done upon ſuch an Occaſion, or even as they themſelves once did in the Affair of the Braſs Money, it may be well doubted whether they might not have prevented the Succeſs of this Project, ſo fatal to their Intereſt.——But the *Engliſh* Miniſters were thoroughly confirmed in their Deſign, by the abject and contemptible Behaviour of the Commons there, of whom too many, in private Companies, expreſſed the Pleaſure they took in the Abaſement of the Peers.—— This Folly and Baſeneſs, too often ſhewn on many other publick Occaſions by that People, have many complicated Cauſes.——But the original Cauſe of all the reſt is, what ſhould rather give them Title to Pity and Compaſſion, than expoſe them to Reflection or Contempt; it is neither incident to their Soil or Climate, to the Diſpoſition of their Minds, nor to the Temper of their Bodies; it is not the Growth of any particular Region, it is the eternal Product of unhappy Government. —— Nations enſlaved and oppreſſed, where-ever ſituated, will become odious in their private Characters, contemptible in their groſs Conception of Things) vicious in their Habits, arrogant in *private*, abject in *public* Life. ——— In Governments thus conducted, the Educations of Men are neglected, their Purſuits are Idleneſs and ſenſual Pleaſures, becauſe they find no Encouragement or Advancement from eminent Virtues, acquired Talents, or the Culture of the Underſtanding.——Where-ever theſe are nationally neglected, not only Ignorance, but Vice will nationally prevail, the Contempt which ſuch a Conduct, and their other Miſeries, draw down upon ſuch a People, creates *an Inſolence of Behaviour* to thoſe *beneath* them, and *a mean Submiſſion* to thoſe *above* them; *the firſt* ariſing from endeavouring to force, through Fear, what they cannot attain through Dignity;———*the other* from the continual Dread of Power, which bearing heavy on them, inſpires a Conduct practiſed at firſt, and in part, through Prudence, but rivetted at length, and univerſally, by Habit;——

Leſs

Leſs capable, by the Unimprovement of their Minds and Manners, to follow any Example of Virtue, the rude Nature of a People, under ſuch a Circumſtance, is found better able to copy the Vice and Immorality, the Luxury and the Corruption of their ſuperior State, which they generally do with a ſavage Imitation, making up, in *the Exceſs*, what they cannot attain in *the Politeneſs* of the Original. Thus the *Laity* become either void of all Religion, or devoured by Superſtition (Extremes, the Twin-offſpring of Ignorance;) while the *Clergy*, negligent of their ſpiritual Concerns, are ſtill more infected with ſpiritual Pride, and the Luſt of temporal Authority, than even in other Countries. This is the true Portrait of *Hungary*, under the Tyranny of the Houſe of *Auſtria*; of *America*, under *Spain*; of *Corſica*, under the *Genoeze*; and of all other States under an arbitrary, ſubordinate, and dependant Rule. How far it may be found that all theſe Circumſtances concur with reſpect to the Country of which we ſpeak, may beſt be anſwered by thoſe who aſcribe all the Conſequences to them, and who ought to know the moſt of a miſerable Condition; which, if it does exiſt, exiſts wholly, and is derived only from their own Conduct.——But, in part, we cannot avoid unhappily to diſcover ſomething of this malign Effect of their unequal Government in their Behaviour upon the preſent Queſtion.——They had, indeed, ſome ſpecious Pretences for this Behaviour.——Their Houſe of Lords was villified, as we have before obſerved, by an Acceſſion of Peers; ſome mean in Character; others no way eminent in Fortune in either Kingdom; and not a few who had none at all in that Country, where they had been advanced to Honour.——The Biſhops, of whom that Houſe is alſo in part compoſed, were likewiſe generally preferred from the neighbour Country, diſtinguiſhed for nothing but Partiality to the Nation from whence they came, and Servility to its Adminiſtration; to which may be added, that, by the diſagreeable State of that Country, the greateſt and the ableſt of the Peers living out of it, the ſame Biſhops,

by their Numbers, nearly ballanced the Temporal Lords who remained upon the Spot.——The major Part of theſe were kept under a certain Influence, which took them from the Direction of themſelves, and very near as many, to ſuch a degree, infected by the ill Habits of the Publick, farther aggravated by a ſort of Impunity from their Titles, that they ſtudied rather how to ſhew their Pre-eminence in the State, as Ringleaders of a low Debauchery and diſſolute Extravagance, than as Protectors of the Liberties and Properties of the Nation. A little Remnant there was of excellent Men, who did Honour even to their own Honours; but they were much too few to ſtemn the ſpiritual Power, or to reform the reſt.

THESE Circumſtances undoubtedly made it uneaſy to that Country, that the Peerage there ſhould enjoy the abſolute Deciſion of judicial Matters. And theſe were the Pretences of the puſillanimous and pitiful Conduct of the Commons upon this Occaſion; but theſe were not the real Motives of it.——In Truth, if their Condition was bad, becauſe their own Peerage wanted Men of Knowledge to ſit in Judgment, could it be ſuppoſed that a Foreign Judicature would be better acquainted with their Laws and Cuſtoms.—— If they dreaded the Decrees of their own Legiſlature, becauſe they were thought dependant on the Adminiſtration of another Country, did they do wiſely to ſubmit every thing to a Foreign Legiſlature, no leſs dependant, in the Opinion of that Time, on the ſame Authority, and naturally void of thoſe Incentives to Remorſe, which muſt, in ſome degree, be found in their domeſtic Courts. In fine, could any Man of Senſe reſign for ever the Advantages of an independant Conſtitution, in an Article of ſuch Importance, when whatever might be urged in diſcredit of their own Judicature, as to its Ignorance, Corruption, or the Non-attendance of its Members, was but a temporary Evil, which Time might remedy, and no Meaſure more likely to do it than the Continuance of this Privilege, and when, at the ſame time, whatever might be argued in favour of the Foreign Judicature

to

to which they ſubmitted, as to its Juſtice, Integrity, and Incorruption (were there nothing dubious, as to the preſent Exiſtence of thoſe Virtues, nothing ſuſpicious as to their declining State) was at beſt but temporary too?——Theſe therefore were fallacious Reaſonings, to colour the real Principle.——Many of the Commons of that Kingdom were in reality new Men, the late Deſcendants of the Subalterns, or common Soldiers of *Cromwell*'s Army, or the newer Offſpring of Clerks in Offices, who, in the former diſtracted Times, and in the looſe Government of the ſubſequent Age, had ſuddenly riſen to conſiderable Fortunes; *the one* hereditarily, embittered to theſe Diſtinctions, as Appendages of Monarchy; the other (and both) corroded by the Envy of ſuperior Families.——Thus Ignorance and Puſilanimity, Republicaniſm and Envy, operated upon the Majority of the Commons, whilſt the Diviſions *in Religion*, Popiſh, Preſbyterian, Proteſtant, and another Sect, newly ſet up a kind of Apes, who mimicked the Free-thinkers of other Countries.——*In Parties*, Commonwealth, Tory, Whig, and anarchick *in Intereſts*; ancient *Iriſh*, modern *Iriſh*, and new *Engliſh*, confounded and kept under the rational Minority; inſomuch that, as it uſually happens, an Extravagance of Diſunion produced an Union in this Inſtance, which it has for long Time done, and will probably do for Ages yet to come; that is to ſay, a general Agreement to endure ſubmiſſively the greateſt Grievances that can be laid upon them, and from which that Nation cannot, for many future Generations, expect to be relieved, but by the Sagacity of the *Engliſh*, who may probably be induced, at one time or other, for their own Security and Advantage, to comprehend that People under one common, juſt and equal Conſtitution.——But here we ſhall ſtop in this Digreſſion, which (though not wholly foreign to this Work, or to the Method which we have choſen to purſue in it, to relieve the natural Dryneſs to which all private Hiſtories are ſubject) has been carried to a greater Length, as being a Matter little under-

underſtood, and never before impartially conſidered, and which may yet have greater Conſequences than are commonly expected from it.

We ſhall therefore only add our earneſt Wiſhes, that Juſtice and good Policy may at length ſo far prevail, as, that if it be found convenient to the Intereſt of this Nation, to diſſolve the ancient Government of that Kingdom; the View may no more be followed in a Way of Violence, Prejudice, and Paſſion; but that, by a ſtrict and equal Treaty, that Nation may be brought to reſign their Privileges by their own Act, and be admitted and incorporated with the Legiſlature of this Kingdom; till when, it is obvious to every thinking Man, that every Member of that People will conſider himſelf no better than a Slave, nor the *Engliſh* better than a Race of Tyrants, whoſe Power, as it ſeems to them a cruel and a flagrant Uſurpation, will be no longer obeyed than the Proſperity of *England* ſhall enable them to enforce it.——Strange Infatuation in a People ſo generous, ſo wiſe and free! Strange Evidence, how the Luſt of Power can pervert the Judgment, and prevent the Senſe of the Dangers that have, and may again proceed from this imprudent Conduct! Strange Inſtance of the Weakneſs of human Nature, and of its Partiality to itſelf! Since we can ſo generally condemn the Folly of other Nations in the ſame Proceeding, and ſo much remark its Conſequences in the Revolutions of many other States, without reflecting one Moment upon our own Meaſures! But let us conſider how the *Dutch* became diſmembered from the once moſt potent Monarchy of the World; and let us reflect, what Expectations have been built in the Politicks of theſe preſent Times, from the very ſame Conduct in *Spain* with reſpect to the *Crioles*, or *Spaniſh* Natives in *Awerica*: To whom in Condition, Treatment, and Reſentment, no People upon Earth, but this of whom we ſpeak, can be compared.

In the ſame Year, the fatal Project of the *South-Sea* Scheme took Place, in which the Lord *Perceval* loſt

a

a very great Sum of Money.——But his former Oeconomy, and the Favour of Providence, in a very critical and great Increaſe of his Fortune afterwards, by the Expiration of thoſe long Leaſes, which the Extravagance of his Anceſtors had obliged them let at half the Value of the whole Eſtate, preſerved him from being long ſenſible of any Ill-convenience from this Calamity, and even greatly enlarged his Circumſtances under a Loſs ſufficient to have ruined many other Houſes.———By which Inſtance we may diſcover, in a remarkable manner, the Wiſdom of the Supreme Power, in the Diſpoſition even of our Misfortues to our Advantage. The Profuſion of this Family in former Times (after a Space of fifty Years) manifeſtly now appearing to be the Means of its Preſervation in the preſent: For, had the Eſtate of this Houſe ſtood at its Heighth during this Accident, there is no doubt but its Engagements had been in a high Proportion greater in that deſtructive Buſineſs, and its Loſſes conſequently more ſevere, which would have happened at a Juncture when the Means of its Supply had not exiſted.

* In *December*, 1722 (as we obſerved before) the King conferred the Dignity of a Viſcount upon this Nobleman, by the Stile of Viſcount *Perceval* of *Kanturk*, a Town of that Name belonging to this Houſe, together with an annual Fee of twenty Marks, to be paid by the Treaſurer, or Receiver General of *Ireland*, out of his Majeſty's Exchequer there.

KING *GEORGE* the Firſt dying in *July*, 1727, and a new Parliament being called, his Lordſhip was elected a Member of it for the Borough of *Harwich*, in *Eſſex*, without Oppoſition, upon the ſixteenth of *Auguſt* following; and ſome time after †, upon the Death of the Earl of *Orford*, was appointed Recorder of the ſame Borough.

ABOUT the time of his Election, an epidemical Fever then raging, his Lordſhip and his Lady, and ſeventeen of his Domeſticks, were ſeized together with it, and for many Years he laboured under frequent Attacks of the ſame Diſtemper.

DURING

* Ex Autograph. penes Com. Egmont. † June 1728.

DURING this Parliament, his Lordſhip attended the Duty of that Station with unwearied Diligence, but in a different manner from many, who, in theſe degenerated Times, have been employed in that great Truſt: He reſolved never to accept of any Employment of Profit;—he ſollicited no Preferment; he was indifferent to any Reputation, but what was the obſtinate and irreſiſtible Reſult of Virtue.—For this Reaſon, he attached himſelf to no Party, and frequently differed from all.—His Integrity was ſo well known, that when he quitted *the one*, he was not reproached with *Servility*; when he left *the other*, he was not accuſed of *Faction* or *Reſentment*.——He was ſincere in his Attachment to the Prince upon the Throne, and to his Family; he endeavoured to ſupport the Conſtitution, and the Liberties of the People.——In Buſineſs of public Regulations, and in promoting beneficial Laws for the Relief of the Poor, and for the Peace of the Society (Matters too much neglected in an Age when private Ambition is wholly occupied to work its own Advantage, by a ſole Attention to Points of Politicks, of more *eclat*, though not of greater Uſe) he was indefatigable.——This Application he followed often in an ill Condition of Health, and expoſed himſelf to the greateſt Danger of Infection, by a long and intricate Enquiry into the Abuſes of the Priſons, and Thouſands owe their preſent Exiſtence to the pious Compaſſion of this Nobleman, and of a ſmall Committee, his Companions in that Enquiry. Thus he conſumed that Period of Time, which is by the preſent Laws allotted to the Duration of one Parliament.——But then he found that neither his Strength nor the Temper of the Times could permit him to act in another as he had done in this; he therefore determined to reſign his Seat, which he deſtined for *his Son*, who was deprived of it by Miniſterial Management and Artifice.

BEING thus retired into a more private Situation, he thought it ſtill unworthy of him to remain wholly unactive, while he could be in any degree uſeful to Mankind.——Obſerving, by the Decay of a beneficial

ficial Commerce, ariſing from the Burthen of Taxes, and from the wretched Police of this Country, (never likely to be reformed,) that Multitudes, incapable of finding Buſineſs at home, might yet be ſerviceable to their Mother Country abroad, in Conjunction with a few others of a diſintereſted Spirit, ſuch as might do Honour to any State in the pureſt Times of Government, he applied to the Crown for the Government of a Tract of Country in *America*, to the Southward of *Carolina*, then uninhabited, (unleſs by *Indians*) and ſince called *Georgia:* — Which Country they propoſed to People, with a Remnant of the Unhappy of this Nation, and the oppreſſed and perſecuted Proteſtants in other Parts of *Europe*, by the Aſſiſtance of private Contributions and Parliamentary Aids.

BUT before his Lordſhip would engage in this Undertaking, he obtained a *Clauſe* in the *Charter* of this Eſtabliſhment, *That no Perſon employed in this great Truſt, ſhould ever acquire to themſelves, or to their Families, in any manner whatſoever, directly, or indirectly, any Lands or Revenues in that Province*, in order, if poſſible, to prevent the malicious Inſinuations which might be thrown upon their Endeavours, and which might divert thoſe Charities upon which they much depended in the Proſecution of this great Deſign.

THE Charter was granted upon the ninth of *June*, 1732, with the Clauſe before-mentioned, and others equally prudent; among which one was, *That no one Perſon ſhould ever poſſeſs more than five hundred Acres of Land in that Country*, which entirely cut off all Proſpect of Advantage from thoſe, whoſe private Views might have tempted them to weaken the general Intereſt of the whole, by engroſſing great Portions of the Province to themſelves; a Miſchief extremely injurious to all the other Colonies.---By this Charter his Lordſhip was appointed firſt Preſident of that Government.

A PECULIAR Fatality ſeems to have attended the Proſecution of all *Agrarian* Laws; and the Reaſon is plain, that they are rarely attempted till the Diſeaſe,

proceeding from a want of them, is ariſen to too great a Heighth to admit the Remedy.——In ancient Hiſtory, they are found often to have produced the Ruin of their Projectors; and in this of our own Time, though it has not brought down the ſame terrible Effects upon its Authors, yet the Reception it has met with, may ſufficiently evince, that its Conſequences would have been as *violent*, if the Regulation had been as *general*:——Yet, though promulged in ſo ſmall a Diſtrict, and at ſuch a Diſtance from the Seat of Government, it has afforded a melancholy Proof of the Corruption of this Nation.——This excellent Ordinance, calculated to ſo good an End, deſigned as the only Means to prevent the Diſſipation of the Inhabitants, projected with great Sagacity, to avoid the Redundancy of Negroes, a hazardous Race of Slaves, who thro' contrary Meaſures, already threaten by their vaſt Numbers the Subverſion of many other of our Colonies, invented as the only certain Method to prevent the growth of Luxury, which never fails to devour thoſe States in which Property is very unequally divided.—— This excellent Regulation raiſed a Clamour and Oppoſition to this noble Deſign, under which it has heavily laboured, and by which it has well nigh been overthrown, creating ſo much Malice to the Directors of it, that nothing but an unparalleled Reſolution to ſupport the real Intereſt of their Country, could have induced them to ſubmit to ſo great an Odium.

THIS malicious Spirit ariſing from the Diſappointment of mercenary Views was ſupported by many other Circumſtances, and farther diffuſed.—— The Envy of Mankind fell heavy upon this ſelect few, who at a great private Expence, without any Salaries, Means of Profit, or Poſſibility of Advantage, had given their conſtant Attendance, Time, and Labour, to the Publick.—This odious Principle would unwillingly admit Belief that ſo much Virtue could be found, and that no private Emolument was to be derived from it.—The general Depravity of the Times gave Strength to the Inſinuations

Inſinuations of theſe Men, and forced ſome Way upon the Publick who talk too often upon Matters of this kind without due Information.— The ſame Depravity, where it could not raiſe Suſpicion, promoted Mirth and Contempt at their Endeavours, as if diſintereſted Undertakings and Labours, unrewarded and unthankfully received, however uſeful to the Publick, were below the Care of Men of Senſe, and not to be ſupported by Men of Spirit, confining Wiſdom to Self-Intereſt and Spirit to falſe Honour and a vain Applauſe.—— The very Members of the Legiſlature itſelf (ſuch was the melancholy State of our Affairs) tho' incapable themſelves to be deceived, having annually laid before them a critical Account of all the Diſburſements of this Government; too many of them concurred in baſely ſuffering the Belief of Impoſition, and a Contempt of this Affair. ——— The two prevailing Parties into which they were divided, each endeavouring to drive the Gentlemen concerned in it to relinquiſh their Truſt. ——— The *one* deſiring the Management of it themſelves to encreaſe their Influence by new Places and Employments in that Government, which annexed to large Salaries, they might beſtow on their Adherents. The *other* ſuſpecting that the Gentlemen in the Direction of it, were too far dependant upon the miniſterial Power, tho' not from any private Intereſt from the neceſſary Support and Aſſiſtance of their Deſign.—— All this was farther aggravated by the Repreſentations of the neighbouring Colonies, jealous of their Advancement in a common Commerce, and ſome in particular piqued by certain Regulations in the Government of this which trenched as they thought upon the Juriſdiction of their own Provinces; ——— but above all this generous Deſign was moſt thwarted for ſeveral Years by the Repreſentations of the *Spaniſh* Miniſter at this Court, who ſo ſtrenuouſly inſiſted in his Maſter's Name againſt this Settlement from which he apprehended very dangerous Conſequences to his *American* Dominions, that the Adminiſtration here poſſeſſed by a fatal Timidity, or actuated by other

Motives, which future Time muſt open to us, threw many Difficulties in the way of the Conductors of this Colony, and were much ſuſpected (whether juſtly or unjuſtly we ſhall not pretend to ſay) of retarding its Succeſs that the Matter might appear of ſlight Importance, and conſequently be with leſs Reproach to them, abandoned or given up to *Spain* in ſome future Treaty of Accommodation with that Court, if the ill State of their Affairs ſhould at any time reduce them to the neceſſity of that Meaſure.

THE greater theſe Obſtacles, and the more ungrateful this Undertaking proved, the more glorious it is in this Nobleman; and thoſe few (for ſeveral had not ſufficient Reſolution) who perſevered in it.——Though it lay not in their Charge, and belonged to the Province of the Commiſſioners of Trade, and, indeed, to the Miniſters themſelves, they took upon them what the others either neglected, had not Leiſure, or were not able to perform, and knowingly refuted the fallacious Repreſentations of the *Spaniſh* Court, nobly defending the Rights of their own Country. ——— By this unthankful Office, and by a wonderful Steadineſs in their Duty, they enabled, (or, as ſome inſinuate) they forced the Miniſtry to ſupport theſe Rights, and made it appear, in ſpight of all the Endeavours uſed to deceive the Public, a Matter of ſo much national Concern, that it was no longer in their Power (if they had it in their View) to render this Colony a Sacrifice to pacific Meaſures; though their Enemies accuſe them of having already proceeded ſo far in it, as by an unparallelled Stipulation*, to have agreed with the Court we have mentioned, to erect no Fortifications for its Defence; which was, in other Words, to leave it expoſed to their Attempts, whenever they ſhould pleaſe to make themſelves Maſters of it. They deſpiſed the malicious and ignorant Miſrepreſentations of their Conduct, and of the Prudence of their Scheme, they left it to Time to *deſtroy* the *one*, and to *prove* the *other*. ——Sup-

* See the Treaty of Convention concluded with Spain.

——Supported by the ſame uncommon Generoſity which induced them firſt to take the arduous Work upon them, they bear the Burthen of it ſtill, and, as it is ſaid of *Fabius*, *Non ponebant Rumores ante Salutem*, diſdaining to ſuffer vulgar Prejudices and Clamour to ſubdue their Reſolution to effect a Barrier to the *Engliſh* Empire in *America*, upon which materially depends the Safety and Preſervation of that Country, which at preſent by its Commerce, almoſt alone, and in ſo high a Degree, ſupports the Grandeur and the Power of *Great-Bri-tain*.

WE have the longer inſiſted upon this Particular, becauſe nothing can better diſcover the Virtue of this Nobleman, than his Conduct in this Buſineſs; —— for *Characters* are better learned from *Facts* than *Panegyric*. —— And for a farther Reaſon that future Ages (if happily this Work ſhould laſt ſo long) may be informed of what we have too much Reaſon to fear they will not from any other Accounts diſcover, that there lived a Man in theſe Times, in a Station ſo eminent, and of ſo large a Fortune, who underwent ſo great a Labour, and ſubmitted to ſo much Reflection, for the public Good.

HIS Majeſty having long experienced the Fidelity and Attachment of this Lord to his Perſon and Government, and being naturally pleaſed to confer Favours upon real Merit, an Object ſeldom found within the Reach of a Prince's Eye, thought proper in the following Year, *viz.* upon the fifth of *Auguſt*, 1733, to advance him farther in the Peerage, by the Title of Earl of *Egmont*, an ancient Seat of this Family, in the County of *Corke*, in *Ireland*; and the Preamble that follows expreſſes handſomely ſome of the Inducements to this Promotion:

" OUR truſty and well-beloved Couſin and Coun-
" ſellor, *John* Lord *Perceval*, Viſcount *Perceval* of
" *Kanturk*, Baron *Perceval* of *Burton*, Baronet, and
" one of our moſt honourable Privy-Council, *&c.*
" having already added, in an earlier Time of Life,

" by his own perſonal Virtue and Merit, to the Luſtre " and Dignity of his Noble Family, our late Royal " Father, of glorious Memory, in due Conſideration " thereof, did then diſtinguiſh and reward him, by " conferring new Honours and Titles upon him.—— " But as he has ſtill continued to tread in the ſame " honourable Path, by conſulting the Advantage of " the whole Race of Men, with the ſame Zeal and " Application which others exerciſe in the Purſuit of " their own private Intereſts; as he has never ſwerved " from his Duty by the Allurement of Profit, nor " ever been drawn aſide by the Bait of Ambition; as " he has appeared rather to live for others than for " himſelf; avoiding all Diſtinction of Parties, ſolely " attached to the public Welfare, and wholly em- " ployed to promote true Piety, to relieve the Neceſ- " ſities of the moſt indigent, and to encourage the " Endeavours of the moſt induſtrious part of Man- " kind; for all which noble Qualities, numbers of " our unhappy Subjects, both in this and the new " World, have reaped abundant Benefit.——— And " laſtly, as he has ſo juſtly tempered his Love and " Affection for his Country, with an Attachment and " true Regard to his Prince. From all theſe Circum- " ſtances he may truly ſeem to deſerve ſtill farther " Honours, and therefore, that Titles may not be " wanting to ſuch apparent Worth, we have called " the ſaid *John* Lord Viſcount *Perceval* among the " Earls of our Kingdom of *Ireland*, by the Name, " Stile and Title of Earl of *Egmont*."

About the end of this Year 1733, the Marriage of the Princeſs-Royal with the Prince of *Orange* was concluded; and great Preparations being made for theſe Nuptials, it was diſcovered that the Peers of *Ireland* were intended to be left out of this Ceremonial, and to be denied the Place and Rank which they had ever held in all public Proceſſions. ——— One Exception indeed there is, in the caſe of Coronations, at which they never attended, for this Reaſon; that

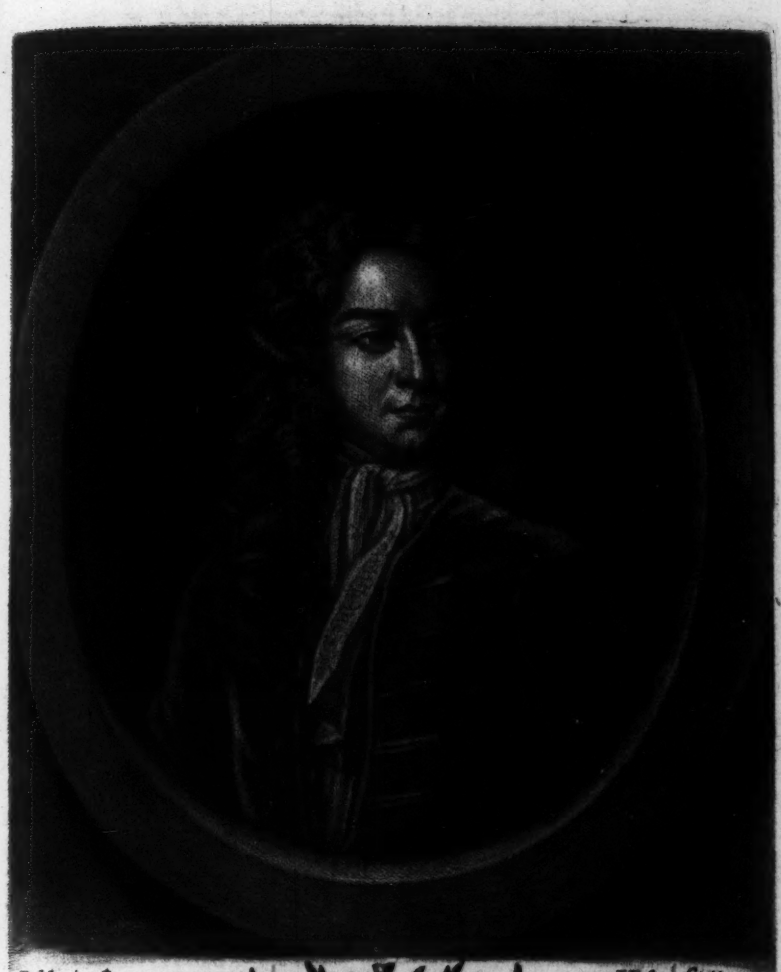
that before the Reign of *Henry* the Eighth, the Kings of *England* never bore the Title of Kings of *Ireland*, and were conſequently never crowned in that Capacity; and immediately after that Title was conferred upon that Nation, the *Iriſh* themſelves paſſed a Law, that whoever ſhould be crowned as King of *England*, ſhould be *ipſo facto* deemed alſo King of *Ireland*: ſo that the Ceremony of the Coronation of our Kings formerly was not, nor is it now, the Act of that Kingdom.

* THE King's Prerogative in creating, conferring and limiting all Honours, and in ſettling Precedency, from the Conqueſt was never doubted. ——— The Place of *Iriſh* Peers in *England* had been confirmed to them by a continued Series of Precedents, from the Reign of King *John* till the Time of which we ſpeak, including a Space of full five hundred Years.——It was ſettled in this manner, that they ſhould have Precedency in *England* next after the *Engliſh* Peers of their own Rank, and before all *Engliſh* Peers of inferior Quality. On the other hand, in *Ireland* the Rule was reverted, and the *Engliſh* Peers had the ſame Place in that Country, below the *Iriſh* in the ſame Degrees.---But about the beginning of the laſt Century, King *James* the Firſt having greatly multiplied the Peerage in general, and having brought over with him a great number of *Scotiſh* Lords, whoſe Fortunes very ill ſupported the Splendor of their Titles, in this rich and expenſive Nation, it began to appear a great Grievance to the old Nobility of *England*, thus to be out-numbered by a foreign Nobility, ſo circumſtanced as we have ſhewn, and to whom, upon the Example of *Ireland*, the ſame Preeminence was allowed as to themſelves. ——— Before this the *Iriſh* Peerage had given no Offence.——They were few, and of theſe but a ſmall Portion appeared in *England*, being taken up in the Defence of their Eſtates on that Side, till the then quiet Condition of their

* See the Queſtion of the Precedency of the Peers of Ireland in Ireland, fairly ſtated, in a Letter to an Engliſh Lord, by a Nobleman of the other Kingdom. Printed at Dublin, 1739.

their Country permitted them, without any Inconvenience, more generally to paſs their Time about the Court, and the Perſon of the Prince.——They were Men very eminent in Family, and equal in Fortune to the Nobility of any Country whatſoever, deſcended for the moſt part from the ſame individual Houſes with the *Engliſh* Nobility themſelves, whoſe younger Children had advanced their Fortunes in the other Kingdom in the *Iriſh* Wars.——Theſe Reaſons, though gradually impaired by the Extinction of the great Families in *England*, with whom they claimed Relation, and weakened by the new Creations of Nobility in both Nations under *James* the Firſt, were yet undoubtedly of Force enough to have preſerved the Peerage of *Ireland* from any Murmurs of the *Engliſh*, if they had ſtood alone.—— But the Multitude of the *Scotch* Nobility who came in with that Prince, pretending, as we before obſerved, to the ſame Diſtinction, and being ſupported in it by the King their Countryman; the *Iriſh* thus blended with the *Scotch*, could be no longer ſeparated or diſtinguiſhed from them in the Diſcontent ariſing from this Latitudinarian Extenſion of Honour.—— Nay, it naturally followed by inſenſible Degrees, that the Odium fell at laſt more heavy even upon the *Iriſh* than upon the *Scotch*.—— The latter being better ſupported by that Prince and his Deſcendants, who exerted themſelves remarkably, from a national Bias, to reſcue their own Countrymen from Contempt, by vaſt Preferments, great Alliances, and *Engliſh* Titles, the firſt and higheſt of which they conferred upon them.——Thus the Acceſſion of *Scotland* laid the Foundation of the Ruin of the *Iriſh* Peerage, which the Union of *Scotland* has well nigh perfected. And in a Courſe of Years the *Engliſh*, ſupported by their Weight in the Legiſlature, the *Scotch* by the Favour of the Crown, and the *Iriſh* only by their Eſtates, the laſt inevitably fell the loweſt in the Eſtimation of the Public; which Evil, in Proportion as it grew, was gradually ripened by the meaner Additions frequently made to that Body.

Not-



Dahl pinxt. J. Faber fecit 1744.

The Hon.ble Philip Perceval Esq.r
2.d Son of Sr. John Perceval Bar.t
[8.th of that Name]
Earl of Egmont Brother to the
Born 13.th of Nov.r 1686.

BRITISH MUSEUM

NOTWITHSTANDING this, and other political Cauſes of Odium, which partly ſprung from the bloody Rebellions in *Ireland*, in which every Family almoſt in *England* have loſt either a Brother, Son, or near Relation; and the Declenſion of Property into mean Hands in that Kingdom, by the many Forfeitures; the Kings of *England* ſteadily maintained the *Iriſh* and *Scotiſh* Nobility in this Community of Priviledge here ſpoken of, though attacked by the Houſe of Lords in *England* in 1621, the eighteenth of *James* the Firſt; in 1638, the third of *Charles* the Firſt; and in 1667, the nineteenth of *Charles* the Second.

THE Crown had ever expreſſed ſo much Reſentment at this Invaſion of the Prerogative, and the Poſſeſſion had been ſo ſtrongly confirmed, that no new Attempt was made upon either Nation, till upon Occaſion of this Ceremony, at the Marriage of the Princeſs-Royal. ——— When the *Scotch* having ſettled this Point with reſpect to themſelves, by the late Union, ——— The *Iriſh* Peerage ſtood, without any Ally, to bear the Brunt of this Attack alone.

AND now the Opportunity ſeemed fair to the *Engliſh* Peers to carry this Point; all things having concurred to reduce the *Iriſh* Peerage to the loweſt State that it ever was, or can be in, and by a Policy, never enough to be admired, there was not ſo much as one Peer of that Kingdom admitted into the Council of *England*, though it aſſumes no ſmall Power and Direction in the Affairs of that Kingdom, and is actually by an *Iriſh* Act, in ſome Meaſure admitted to be a Member of that Legiſlature *.——— Some *Engliſh* Peers, who had not well weighed the Juſtice, or Importance of the Matter, ſeized this convenient Juncture to ſettle the Ceremonial upon this Occaſion, with

* Poyning's Law, which requires their Conſent to every Iriſh Act, in Concurrence with the King's.

with an Excluſion of the Peers of *Ireland*; neither adviſing with the Heralds, nor directing themſelves by Precedents, preſuming upon their Acceſs to his Majeſty, and the Impoſſibility he was under to receive a timely Information from another Quarter.

THIS Buſineſs was carried on with ſo much Secrecy, that every thing was determined and ordered, before the Peers of *Ireland* then in *England* had any Intimation that this Diſgrace was intended to be offered to them.———But as ſoon as it was known, they aſſembled, and having, with as much Accuracy as the Shortneſs of the Time would admit, drawn up a ſhort State of their Pretenſions, they elected the Earl of *Egmont* to preſent a Petition to the King, with a Schedule of Precedents annexed, to entreat his Majeſty's Protection, and to acquaint him with their Rights *.

HIS Majeſty received this Nobleman in that gracious Manner which he had ever been accuſtomed to do upon all Occaſions, and was pleaſed to anſwer, that *He would conſider of it, and do what he could do in it.*

BUT the Preparations for this Ceremony, which were very great, and the Order of it, were too far ſettled to admit of any Change at that Time, without much Inconvenience.———Though the Juſtice of his Majeſty has ſince reſtored the Peerage of *Ireland* to their Rights, which they have enjoyed upon every ſubſequent Occaſion.

AND accordingly, at the Funeral of her late Majeſty Queen *Caroline*, on the twentieth of *November*, 1737,———his Lordſhip had his Rank as an Earl in that Proceſſion, taking Place together with the *Iriſh* Earls of *Orrery* and *Arran*, (alſo Barons of *England*) immediately after the *Engliſh* Earls, and before the *Engliſh* Viſcounts and Barons. The Lord *Coote* (likewiſe

* See a Book printed A. D. 1730, entitled, The Queſtion of the Precedency of the Peers of Ireland in England. — Where this Argument is fully handled, and the Right of the Iriſh Peers inconteſtibly proved.

wiſe) eldeſt Son to the *Iriſh* Earl of *Bellomonte*, the Lord Viſcount *Caſtlemaine*, eldeſt Son to the Earl of *Tilney*, and the Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, eldeſt Son to the Earl of *Egmont*, having Place with the eldeſt Sons of the *Engliſh* Earls, before the *Engliſh* Barons.

AND again, upon the Marriage of the Princeſs *Mary* with the Prince of *Heſſe*, *May*, 1740, he had the ſame Place upon that Occaſion, together with the *Iriſh* Earls of *Tilney* and *Clanrickard*.

THERE is no doubt but that his Lordſhip's Endeavours in this Buſineſs were extremely inſtrumental to the Preſervation of this Privilege; and that the whole Nobility of that Kingdom, both upon this and former Occaſions, were greatly indebted to him, and the more becauſe he always exerted himſelf on ſuch Occaſions, without the Leaven of private Vanity, which attends the Generality of Men. He thought that a Loſs of this Privilege would create a Contempt for the whole Body of the Peerage, both in Matters of Preferment and Alliance, very injurious to them; and he thought it conſequently his Duty, as a Member of that Body, to prevent it if he could. —— He conſidered Titles with the ſame Moderation that he exerciſed in all other Circumſtanſtances of Life; he was very little ſollicitous about them on any Condition, but he deſpiſed them when acquired by unworthy Means. ——— Of both he gave ſufficient Proof, two of thoſe conferred upon him having been beſtowed without his own Application, and the Offer of an *Engliſh* Peerage having been three times made him, and refuſed. ——— The firſt in the Reign of the late Queen, becauſe the tacit Conditions of it were repugnant to his Principles and Conſcience; the reſt as the Price of Money, which he rejected with Diſdain, and as an Inſult to the Merit of the Perſon to whom they were offered on ſuch a Footing.

THE ſame Obligation that whole Nation has to him, whoſe Intereſts he has ſteadily eſpouſed from the beginning of his Life, though leſs induced to it by

private Conſiderations, than moſt who bear any Relation to that Kingdom.

Most others of his Rank in that Country, having either their firſt Original, their Alliances, or their Intereſts wholly on that Side; might naturally exert themſelves, to maintain the Dignity of that Country, with which their Fame and Fortunes muſt wholly fall together.—Whereas this Nobleman was firmly tied by the Splendor and Antiquity of his Extraction on this Side to the *Engliſh* Intereſt, and by the Alliances of his Family, which had been (excepting in one Inſtance) ever here; as alſo by his Habits, Education, and Acquaintance, and by no inconſiderable Eſtate in this Kingdom alſo, out of which himſelf and all his Progenitors, together added, had never paſſed in the other full five and twenty Years.

The Publick, and his private Family, being both ſtill happy in his Exiſtence with them, we ſhall deſcend no farther into his Character.——The Deſcription of thoſe Virtues, which, as a Parent, as a Husband, and as a Maſter, endear him to all who depend upon him, may be better obſerved when a future Fate (which all who know him wiſh to be removed to the utmoſt Boundary of human Life) ſhall admit the Opportunity of collecting in one Sum the Worth of this excellent Man, and when Envy ſhall have no Intereſt to reſiſt the Force of an Example of Virtue, hardly paralleled in this Age.

His Lordſhip married, as we have before obſerved, upon the twentieth of *June*, 1710, *Katherine*, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker a Morley* of *Erwarton*, in the County of *Suffolk*, Baronet, ——— of that Name.

*Concerning the Original of this Noble Family, we cannot acquire any certain Information before the Reign

* See the Account of this Family in the new Edition of the Books of the Baronetage, ——— where the Authorities are diſtinctly quoted.



Gouge Pinxt.

J. Faber fecit.

The R.t Hon.ble
to John Perceval
Eldest Daughter to
S.r Philip Parker
of Erwarton in
the last of that
Marr.d 20 Jun. 1710

Catharine Wife
Earl of Egmont
S.r Philip & Sister to
a Morley-Long-
Com. Suffolk Bar.t
Family, born 1689
now Living 1744

VERY


BRITISH MUSEUM

Reign of King *Edward* the Fourth, Sir *William Parker*, who lived in that Reign, being the firſt of whom we have any poſitive Evidence.——But, without all doubt, it was eminent before; for the ſame Sir *William Parker* being then twenty-one Years old, and conſequently too young to have raiſed himſelf from a low Station by perſonal Merit to ſuch a Pretenſion) was married in 1475 to *Alice Luvel*, Daughter of *William*, Siſter, and at length Heir of *Henry Luvel*, Lord *Morley*, one of the greateſt Families of that Age; which *Henry* Lord *Morley*, her Brother (by Marriage with *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John de la Pole*, Duke of *Suffolk*) was Nephew to King *Edward* the Fourth, and to King *Richard* the Third, and Couſin German to King *Henry* the Eighth; which *Elizabeth* was ſo near the Crown, that her eldeſt Brother was declared Heir apparent to it by King *Richard* the Third.

THIS Sir *William Parker*, in the twenty-ſecond of *Edward* the Fourth, 1482, attended *Richard* Duke of *Glouceſter* to the Wars of *Scotland*; and having entered *Edinburgh* with him, was, for his Valour and Conduct in that Expedition, there Knighted by that Prince upon St. *James*'s Eve that Year.

THE ſaid Duke of *Glouceſter* having ſoon after attained the Crown, which he bore under the Title of *Richard* the Third,—this Sir *William Parker* was much in his Favour, and was made a Privy-Counſellor and Standard-Bearer to that Prince;—but upon the Acceſſion of King *Henry* the Seventh, he fell into Diſgrace, and was impriſoned for his Engagements under the Houſe of *York*; in which Condition, in all Probability, he lay during the reſt of his Life, of which he was deprived by violent Means in the ſecond of *Henry* the Eighth, 1510, as his Epitaph in the Church of *Hallingbury-Morley* in *Eſſex*, declares in theſe Words:

Epitaphium


BRITISH MUSEUM

Reign of King *Edward* the Fourth, Sir *William Parker*, who lived in that Reign, being the firſt of whom we have any poſitive Evidence.——But, without all doubt, it was eminent before; for the ſame Sir *William Parker* being then twenty-one Years old, and conſequently too young to have raiſed himſelf from a low Station by perſonal Merit to ſuch a Pretenſion) was married in 1475 to *Alice Luvel*, Daughter of *William*, Siſter, and at length Heir of *Henry Luvel*, Lord *Morley*, one of the greateſt Families of that Age; which *Henry* Lord *Morley*, her Brother (by Marriage with *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *John de la Pole*, Duke of *Suffolk*) was Nephew to King *Edward* the Fourth, and to King *Richard* the Third, and Couſin German to King *Henry* the Eighth; which *Elizabeth* was ſo near the Crown, that her eldeſt Brother was declared Heir apparent to it by King *Richard* the Third.

THIS Sir *William Parker*, in the twenty-ſecond of *Edward* the Fourth, 1482, attended *Richard* Duke of *Glouceſter* to the Wars of *Scotland*; and having entered *Edinburgh* with him, was, for his Valour and Conduct in that Expedition, there Knighted by that Prince upon St. *James*'s Eve that Year.

THE ſaid Duke of *Glouceſter* having ſoon after attained the Crown, which he bore under the Title of *Richard* the Third,—this Sir *William Parker* was much in his Favour, and was made a Privy-Counſellor and Standard-Bearer to that Prince;—but upon the Acceſſion of King *Henry* the Seventh, he fell into Diſgrace, and was impriſoned for his Engagements under the Houſe of *York*; in which Condition, in all Probability, he lay during the reſt of his Life, of which he was deprived by violent Means in the ſecond of *Henry* the Eighth, 1510, as his Epitaph in the Church of *Hallingbury-Morley* in *Eſſex*, declares in theſe Words:

Epitaphium

Epitaphium Gulielmi Parkar præclari Equitis aurati Morlei Domino.

En qui ſecura procedis Mente, parumper
Hoſpes ſiſte Gradum, verbaque pauca Lege
Hic jaceo ut cernis Gulielmus, nomine Parkar
Eques præclaris Nobilitatus Avis
Dum vixi, vixi multis precharus amicis
Vi tamen heu perii! quantum inimicitiæ
Conquerar an taceam, mecumque ut luſerit olim
Fortuna, inſtabili dum ſtetit illa Rota?
Nil querar O Hoſpes: pateant mihi limina Cæli
Accedant Votis, fac tua Vota precor.

Vixit Ann. 56 *ob. Anno* 1510 *Patri benemerenti gratiſſimus filius Henricus Parkar Morlei Dominus poſuit.*

It appears by this Inſcription that he bore the Title of Lord *Morley*, to which Barony his Wife ſucceeded, by the Death of her Brother *Henry*, who was killed at *Dixmuyd* in *Flanders*, the fourth of *Henry* the Seventh, 1489: but by Reaſon of his Confinement, he had never Summons to Parliament.

ALICE Lady *Morley* ſurviving, was married again to Sir *Edward Howard*, Admiral of *England*, and ſecond Son to the Duke of *Norfolk*, with whom ſhe lived but a ſhort Time, and had no Iſſue by him, for he was killed before *Breſt* in *Brittany*, in the fourth of *Henry* the Eighth, 1513; and ſhe herſelf dying in 1518, in the ſixtieth Year of her Age, left her Body to be buried in the Pariſh Church of *Hengham* in *Norfolk*, but it was afterwards removed by her Son to *Halingbury-Morley*, in *Eſſex*, where the Inſcription over her Monument ſtill remains, which is recited at length, together with a farther Account of her, in the ſixteenth Chapter of the fourth Book of this Work.

This Lady was one of the greateſt and nobleſt Heireſſes of that Age, for ſhe brought with her not

only the Rights of Blood and Arms of her own great Houſe of *Luvel*, and thoſe of the Heireſſes of that Family, *viz. Sydenham*, the Barons *Burnell*, the Barons *Holland* and *Zouche*; the Sovereign Counts of *Brittany*, *Roban*, *Beumes*; *Quincy* Earl of *Wincheſter*, *Bellomont* Earl of *Mellent* and *Leiceſter*; the Barons *Grentmeſnil*, *Allan* Lord of *Galloway*; the Barons *Moreville*, Conſtables of *Scotland*, *Engaine*, *David* Prince of *Scotland*, and Earl of *Huntingdon*; the *Saxon* Kings of *England*; *Waltheof* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Albred* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Kevelioke* Earl of *Cheſter*, *Lupus* Earl of *Cheſter*, *Leofric* Earl of *Mercia*, *Longeſpe* Earl of *Saliſbury*, *Roſmar* Earl of *Saliſbury*, *Riddlesford* Baron of *Bray*; the Barons *Deincourt*, *Grey* of *Rotherfield*, *Oddingſells*, *Maxtoke*, *Limeſi*, *Fitzalan* of *Bedal*, and *Haget*; the Barons *Morley*, *Marſhall*, and *Rie de la Pole* Earl of *Suffolk* (of which illuſtrious Family this Houſe is now the only Subſtitute;) but alſo the Baronies of *Morley*, and *Marſhall* of *Hengham* and *Rie*, together with the hereditary Office of the Marſhalſhip of *Ireland*, and a very great Eſtate beſide.

BUT this Family being in Diſgrace, as we have before obſerved, *Henry Parker*, Lord *Morley*, Son and Heir to the ſaid Sir *William* and *Alice*, was not admitted to all his Pretenſions; though at length, in the twenty-rſt of *Henry* the Eighth, he was reſtored to the Place of his Anceſtors, as a Baron of the twenty-eighth of *Edward* the Firſt.

IN the following Year, he was one of the Peers in Parliament who ſubſcribed that Declaration to Pope *Clement* the Seventh, whereby Intimation was given to his Holineſs, that unleſs he did comply with King *Henry*, in his Divorce from Queen *Katherine*, the farther Acknowledgment of his Supremacy would be in danger. And in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, upon a Diſpute between him and the Lord *Dacres* of *Gilleſland* for Precedency, Judgment was given in his Favour. He married *Alice*, Daughter of Sir *John St. John* of *Bletſho*, Knight, whereby he became far-

ther allied in Blood to King *Henry* the Eighth. This Lady being Great Grand-daughter to Sir *Oliver St. John*, Knight, by his Wife *Margaret*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *John Beauchamp* of *Bletſho*, Knight; which Lady *Margaret* marrying afterwards to *John Beaufort*, Duke of *Somerſet*, had by him an only Daughter, who was Mother to King *Henry* the Seventh.

But notwithſtanding this Alliance, by reaſon of the Marriage of *Jane Parker*, his Grandfather to *George* Lord *Rochford*, Brother to Queen *Anne of Bullen*, after the Ruin of that unfortunate Queen, he loſt the Favour of the King again; ſo that he could by no means obtain the Confirmation of his Office of the Marſhalſhip of *Ireland*, to which he had an indiſputable Title.

This *Henry Parker*, Lord *Morley*, died eighty Years old, in 1556, and was buried in the Church of *Hallingbury Morley* in *Eſſex*, where his Epitaph ſtill remains in the following Words:

Henricus, Auratus Eques, Morlei Dominus, veræ Nobilitatis Specimen qui ſemper in Deum optimum maximum, Parentes ac Sanguine convinctos præſtanti Pietate fuit, Marmoreum hoc Monumentum commune Sepulchrum ſuis eſſe voluit, Avi namque atque Aviæ, et Parentis utriuſq; Clariſſimæq; Fæminæ Uxoris ſuæ Oſſa, ut ſub hac Mole conderentur effecit. Quo Heroe vivente vere affirmare licet multo illuſtriorem fuiſſe Eſſexiam, erat enim in Cætu Nobilium Gemma veluti precioſiſſima, bonarum Literarum Splendore omniq; Virtutum Genere refulgens. Cujus ſuaviſſimis Manibus optabis Hoſpes Quietem placidiſſimam.

Vixit Ann. 80. *ob. An. Dom.* 1556, *Menſe Novembris, benemerenti poſuit Nepos & Hæres, Henricus Parkar, Eques Auratus, Morlei Dominus.*

Epi-


BRITISH MUSEUM



Sr. Philip Parker in Com. Suffolk Kt. Eldest Son & Heir of and Lineal Ancestor to Countess of Egmont

a Morley of Ernaran Son of Sr. Hen.y Parker K.t Hen.y Parker L.d Morley Catherine Parker now knighted by Q. Eliz.th 1578.

L.d aber fec.t 1747

Epitaph of *Alice*, Wife of the ſaid *Henry* Lord *Morley*:

En Ego Alicia, Regio Sanguine prognata, Uxor fui quondam inclyti Henrici Parkar, Equitis Aurati, Morlei Domini, per Luſtrorum fere Spacia duodecim et tandem hic requieſco.

Vix. Ann. 66. *ob. A° Dom.* 1552, *Menſe Decembri, benemerenti poſuit Gratiſſimus Maritus, Henricus Parkar, Eques Auratus, Morlei Dominus.*

HE had Iſſue Sir *Henry Parker*, his eldeſt Son, who was made a Knight of the *Bath* at the Coronation of Queen *Anne* of *Boleyn*, in the twenty-fifth of *Henry* the Eighth, but he died in his Father's Life-time; ſo that the Barony deſcended to his eldeſt Son *Henry*, by his firſt Wife, Grand-daughter of ——— *Newport*, in the County of *Hertford*, with whoſe Deſcendants the Title continued, together with the Barony of *Mounteagle*, another Honour in Fee, which they acquired by Marriage with *Elizabeth*, ſole Daughter and Heir of *William Stanley*, Lord *Mounteagle*, fifth Son of *Thomas* Earl of *Derby*) till the Reign of King *William* the Third;—but now lies in Suſpence. By which Lady he alſo had two Daughters, *Jane*, the Wife of *George* Lord *Rochford*, Son and Heir of *Thomas Bullen*, Earl of *Ormond* and *Wiltſhire*, Brother to Queen *Ann Boleyn*, as we have before obſerved, and *Margaret*, the Wife of Sir *John Shelton*, Knight.

THE ſaid Sir *Henry Parker*, by his ſecond Wife *Elizabeth*, Daughter and ſole Heir of Sir *Philip Calthrope*, of *Erwarton*, in *Suffolk*, Knight, by *Anne*, Daughter of Sir *William Boleyn*, Knight, and Aunt to Queen *Elizabeth*, had a Son, Sir *Philip Parker*, Knight, Anceſtor to the now only remaining Branch of this Houſe, who, from his Mother, acquired a very great Eſtate, together with the Rights of Blood and Arms of thoſe eminent Families of *Calthrope*, *Warren* of *Wirmgay*, *Stanhow*, *Bacon*, of *Erwarton*, *Dauvillers*, and *St. Omers*.

THIS Sir *Philip Parker*, firſt of that Name, by *Katherine*, Daughter of Sir *John Goodwin*, Knight, left a Daughter *Katherine*, married to Sir *William Cornwallis*, Anceſtor to the preſent Lord of that Name, and a Son *Calthrope*.

WHICH Sir *Calthrope Parker*, Knt. ſerved in the Parliament held in the Year 1640, as Knight of the Shire for the County of *Suffolk*. He married *Mercy*, Daughter of Sir *Stephen Soame*, Knight, by whom he left a Son, named *Philip*.

SIR *Philip Parker*, ſecond of that Name, married *Dorothy*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *Robert Gawdy* of *Claxton*, in the County of *Norfolk*, Knight, by whom he acquired a conſiderable Eſtate, together with the Rights of Blood and Arms of *Gawdy*, *Knightly*, *Pantulf*, *D'Oily*, *Golover*, *Burgh*, *Chauncy*, *Paw*, and *Bacon* of *Stewkey*.——He ſerved in the Long Parliament for the Borough of *Harwich*, in *Eſſex*, and left a Son, alſo named *Philip*.

WHICH Sir *Philip Parker*, third of that Name, was, upon the Reſtoration, *viz.* in 1661, created a Baronet, who marrying *Rebecca*, Daughter of *Walter Long* of *Whaddon*, in *Wiltſhire*, Siſter, and (at length Heir) of Sir *Walter Long*, of the ſame Place, Baronet. By this Alliance his Family acquired a very great Eſtate.

TO him ſucceeded Sir *Philip Parker*, Baronet (fourth of that Name) his eldeſt Son, who married *Mary*, the Daughter of *Samuel Fortrey* of *Byall Fenn*, in the County of *Cambridge*, Eſquire, and by her had Iſſue the late Sir *Philip Parker*, Baronet, (the laſt Male of this ancient and noble Houſe (fifth of that Name) who died upon the twentieth of *January*, 1640-1, in the fifty-eighth Year of his Age, leaving two Daughters his Coheirs, *Martha* and *Elizabeth*, now living, unmarried) and two Daughters, of which *Katherine*, the eldeſt, is now Counteſs of *Egmont*.

CHILDREN



I. Faber fecit 1742

Catherine Daughter of Winchendon in Com. Bucks Kt. Wife of Sr. Philip Parker Kt. and Half Brother of Sr. John Goodwin Brother of Sr. Henry to Lord Morley.

BRITISH MUSEUM

CHILDREN of *JOHN* Earl of *Egmont* (ninth of that Name) and of *Katherine Parker a Morley*, his Wife.

I. *JOHN*, now Lord Viſcount *PERCEVAL*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. The Lady *KATHERINE PERCEVAL*, born the eleventh of *January*, 1711-12, at *Dublin*, Sir *Francis Clark*, Baronet, Mrs. *Helena Le Grand*, Siſter of Sir *Robert Southwell*, Knight, and Mrs. *Mary Parker*, Siſter to the Counteſs of *Egmont*, were her Sureties at Baptiſm.——— Upon the fourteenth of *April*, 1733, ſhe was married to *Thomas Hanmer* of *Fenns*, in the County of *Flint*, Eſquire, Heir apparent to Sir *Thomas Hanmer*, Baronet, late Speaker of the Houſe of Commons: This worthy Gentleman dying without Iſſue, upon the firſt of *April*, 1737, her Ladyſhip is now a Widow.

III. *MARY*, born the twelfth of *May*, 1713, Lieutenant General *Steward*, and *Edward Southwell*, junior, Eſquire, Godfathers; the Lady *Effingham Howard*, and the Lady *Blany*, Godmothers.—She died an Infant,

IV. *PHILIP CLARKE PERCEVAL*, born at *London* the twenty-firſt of *June*, 1714, Sir *Francis Clark*, Baronet, *Daniel Dering*, Eſquire, and Mrs. *Walker*, his Sureties.——He died an Infant.

V. *MARY*, born at *London* the twenty-eighth of *December*, 1716, Sir *Philip Parker a Morley*, her Uncle, Mrs. *Dering*, Siſter to her Mother, and the Dutcheſs of *Grafton*, Sureties.—She died an Infant.

VI.

VI. The Lady *HELENA PERCEVAL*, born at *London* upon the fourteenth of *February*, 1717-18, *Daniel Dering*, Eſquire, her Mother's Brother-in-Law, Mrs. *Temple*, and Mrs. *Elizabeth Southwell*, were her Sureties: Her Ladyſhip is now living, and married to Sir *John Rawdon*, Baronet, of *Rawdon-Hall*, in *Yorkſhire*, and *Moira* in *Ireland*, Grandſon of Sir *John Rawdon*, by *Dorothy*, Daughter, and at length ſole Heir (by the Death of *Edward* Earl of *Conway*, her Brother) to *Edward* Viſcount *Conway*.——By virtue of which, he now claims the *Engliſh* Barony of *Conway*, created by Writ of Summons to Parliament, in the fourth of *Charles* the Firſt, *A. D.* 1628, in the Perſon of his ſaid Great-Grandfather the Viſcount *Conway*.

VII. *GEORGE PERCEVAL*, born in *London* the twenty-eighth of *January*, 1721-22, the Prince of *Wales*, now King *George* the Second, the Duke of *Grafton*, and the Dutcheſs of *Montague*, his Sureties. He died in *July* 1726.

BRITISH MUSEUM



Zink Pinx.t

J. Faber fecit 1744.

The R.t Hon.ble John 4th of that Name Son to Jn.o Earl of Egmont for y.e City & Liberties — Born 24 of

L.d Visc.t Perceval & heir apparent Memb.r of Parliam.t of Westminster Feb.y 1710/11

YVERY

CHAP. XIV.

JOHN *(tenth of that Name) Viſcount* Perceval *of* Kanturk, *only Son and Heir apparent of* John *Earl of* Egmont, *Member of Parliament in* Ireland *for the Borough of* Dingley, *and Member of the* Engliſh *Parliament for the City and Liberties of* Weſtminſter.



THE earlieſt Fruit of the Marriage of *John* Earl of *Egmont* with *Katherine*, eldeſt Daughter of Sir *Philip Parker a Morley*, Baronet, fourth of that Name was *John* (tenth of that Name) now Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, who was born in *London* upon the twenty-fourth of *February*, 1710-11. His Sureties at Baptiſm were Sir *Philip Parker*, Baronet, his Uncle, the Right Honourable *Edward Southwell*, Eſquire, his Majeſty's

Majeſty's Secretary of State for *Ireland*, and Mrs. *Rebecca Parker*, his Great Aunt.

HAVING been perfected in School Learning under Dr. *Philip Bearcroft*, Fellow of *Merton College* in *Oxford*, Preacher of the *Charter-Houſe*, and Chaplain to his Majeſty.——In the Year 1726, he went over into *France*, *Flanders*, *Holland*, *&c.* where he remained one Year.——From whence returning, he paſſed two Years more in Application to other Branches of Literature, which crown the Acquiſition of the dead Languages.——Having afterwards made the Tour of *England*, he went again abroad in 1729.——In 1730 he was, by the Earl of *Egmont*, ſent into *Ireland* to viſit his Eſtate in that Kingdom.—And a Vacancy in Parliament falling out there, during his Stay on that Side, he was elected a Burgeſs for *Dingley*, in the County of *Kerry*; and, though little more than twenty Years of Age, was, by favour of the Houſe, admitted to his Seat, where he remained that Winter, after which he returned to *England*.

IN 1734, at the General Election for the ſecond Parliament of King *George* the Second, the Earl of *Egmont*, tired with the Fatigue of that Station, reſigned his Seat for the Borough of *Harwich*, which he deſtined for his Son; and in order that he might be elected without any Oppoſition, he made a Compromiſe with the Miniſter, upon theſe Terms, that he would (for the ſecond Place) ſerve any Friend propoſed by him, and that the Miniſter, in return, ſhould ſupport his Son.——This Conjunction of Intereſts ſecured every Vote in the whole Borough.———But the Compromiſe being broken, with Circumſtances of Deceit and Treachery, too tedious and intricate to be related here, his Lordſhip was defeated in this View, in a very ſurprizing manner, after a fruitleſs and great Expence.

IN *July* 1736, he went over to *Ireland* again, where he ſtayed one Month.——As he did again in *April* 1739 for ſix Weeks.

THE neceſſary Writings and Settlements (to which were Parties *John* Earl of *Egmont*, *Catherine* Counteſs

of


BRITISH MUSEUM



Link pinx. T. Faber fecit 1744

Catharine 2d. Daughter to
James Cecil Earl of Salisbury
by Anne 2. Daug.r & Coheir to Thō.
Tufton E.l of Thanet Wife to John L.d
Visc.t Perceval (10.th of that Name)
born Aug.t 6. 1719 marr.d 15. Feb. 1736

EVERY

of *Egmont*, *John* Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, the Lady *Catherine Cecil*, the Right Honourable *Marmaduke Coghill*, Eſquire, (Chancellor of the Exchequer in *Ireland*,) *Matthew Lamb* and *Thomas Barſham*, Eſquires, *James* Earl of *Saliſbury*, (Brother to the Lady *Catherine Cecil*,) *Lewis* Earl of *Rockingham*, Sir *Francis Clerk*, Baronet, *Edward Le Grand*, Eſquire, the Right Honourable *Edward Southwell*, Eſquire, Secretary of State for *Ireland*, and Sir *Philip Parker Long*, Baronet) being ſigned and ſealed on the 12th of *February*, 1736-7, upon the fifteenth of the ſame Month, his Lordſhip married the ſaid Lady *Katherine*, ſecond Daughter of *James Cecil*, late Earl of *Salisbury*, (by the Lady *Anne Tufton*, ſecond Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, by his Wife, *Katherine*, Daughter and Coheir of *Henry Cavendiſh*, Duke of *Newcaſtle*;) a Woman in Birth inferior to none, in Fortune but to few, equal in every other Reſpect to the Beſt, and to the Faireſt of her Sex.

ABOUT the latter End of the Year 1740, the ſecond Parliament of King *George* the Second being near determined, and every Gentleman who deſired a Seat in the next, preparing to make Application to the Electors of ſome Part of the United Kingdoms,——— the Lord *Perceval* firſt ſounded the Temper of the Borough of *Harwich*, but he found it a deſperate View to attempt to be choſen there, during the uncontrolled Authority of the Miniſter, who had ſo baſely before defeated him.—This Miniſter, odious to the whole Nation, ſtill, in a wondrous manner, maintained his Power, by Arts and Management ruinous to Public Liberty, and deſtructive to the Freedom of Elections throughout the Kingdom; but in no Part more than in this Borough, where having gained an Aſcendant, by the Means who we have hinted at before, he with great Diligence perſevered to ſtrengthen and maintain it, by Places and Gratifications which he conferred upon the Voters, and by ſupplying all the Vacancies in that Corporation, by the loweſt and moſt venal of the Populace, who could be ſelected out of the whole Town. —— In this Situation of

Things, his Lordſhip thought it vain to ſtruggle with the inveterate Hatred of the Man, in a Place where he was become ſo much the Maſter, and therefore accepted the Invitation of a large Majority of the Electors of the Borough of *Haſlemere* in *Surrey*, who in a very handſome and reſpectful Letter, deſired his Lordſhip's Preſence there, previous to the future Election, aſſuring him of their Attachment and Service to that End.

His Lordſhip complied with their Requeſt, went down thither, and was declared a Candidate upon the Country Intereſt, in Oppoſition to General *Oglethorpe*, and *Peter Burrel*, Eſquire, Sub-Governor of the *South-Sea* Company, who were ſupported by the Miniſter.

As it may be curious in future Ages to know in what Condition this Nation ſtood at this Period, with reſpect to the Freedom of Election, and the Inſolence of Power, ——— it may not be improper to mention here, that as ſoon as theſe two Gentlemen had come to this Determination, —— a Man in great Office ſent a Gentleman to the Earl of *Egmont*, to adviſe his Son to deſiſt from his Pretenſions in that Borough, for that the Miniſter deſired him to underſtand, that all his Endeavours ſhould avail him nothing, for that he would open the Exchequer againſt him; and that if by this Means he could not defeat his Election, he would bring the Cauſe to the Bar of the Houſe of Commons, and would have him voted out, though he ſhould be returned by a Majority of fifty-nine out of ſixty, of which Number the Voters were then ſuppoſed to conſiſt.

This Menace wrought no Effect upon this young Nobleman, who had been too long acquainted with the Malice of the Miniſter, not to have expected the worſt Efforts of it, without this ſolemn and unneceſſary Declaration; and too long accuſtomed to the Frowns of this Miniſter, to tremble at them.———He therefore perſevered in his Intention, and continued an expenſive and powerful Oppoſition for ſome Months. — But at length, perceiving that the Exchequer was a Force not to be contended with, in a Borough habituated

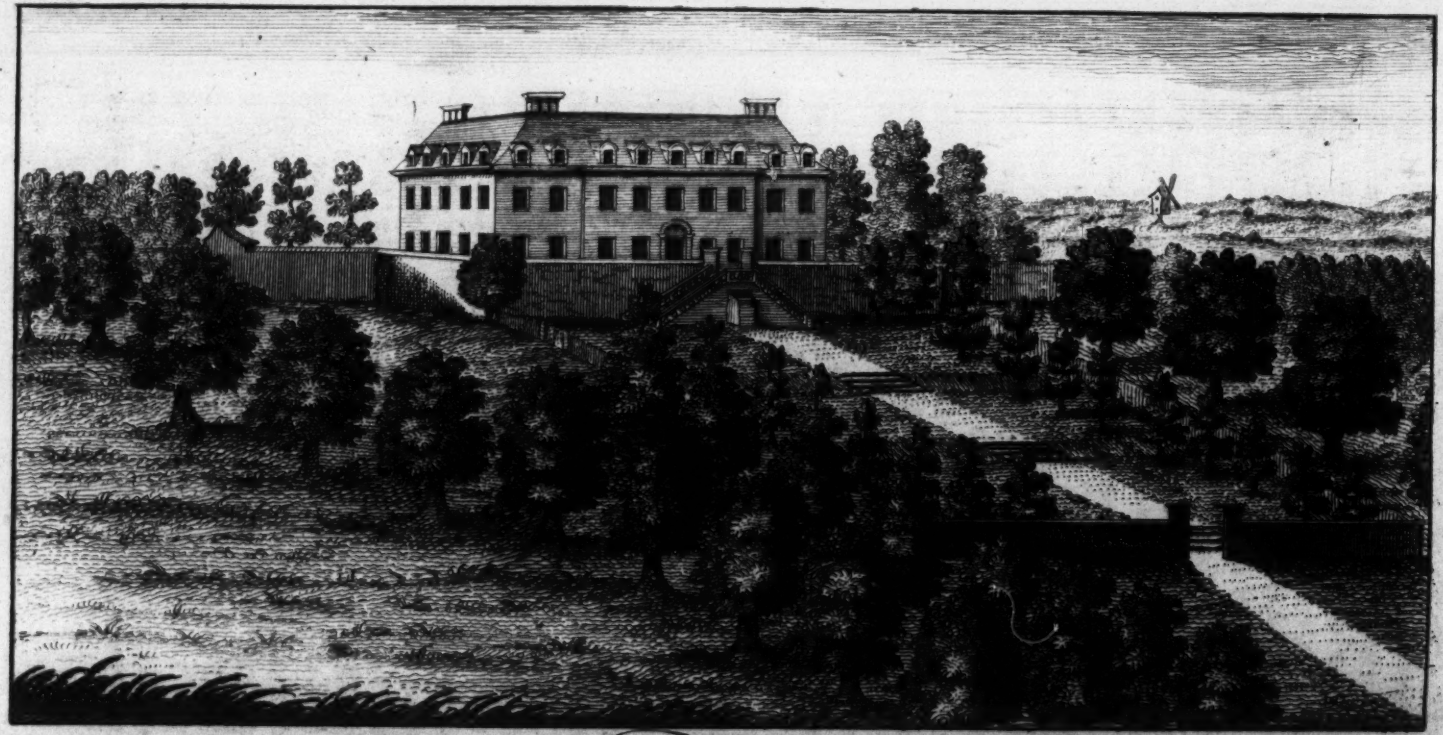
tuated to Corruption, many of his Voters deſerting, others departing from their Stipulations, and inſiſting upon different Terms, from thoſe to which they had at firſt agreed; ——— his Collegue unwilling to run any farther Riſque of Expence,——a Returning Officer choſen in the oppoſite Intereſt,—his Lordſhip finding that the whole future Charge (which muſt have been extremely great) would lie upon him ſingly, and being taken dangerouſly ill a very few Days before the Election, and rendered incapable to conduct this critical Affair in Perſon, he thought it prudent to make the beſt Retreat he could.

ONE of the firſt Elections that is made upon the iſſuing of Writs for the Choice of a new Parliament, is always that of the City of *Weſtminſter*. ——— This great City, which is a part of the Metropolis, (including the Palaces of *Whitehall* and *St. James's*) pays to the Land-Tax, at four Shillings in the Pound, 93,846 *l.* 7 *s.* 8 *d.* which is more than any County in the Kingdom, (excepting *Middleſex*, of which it is a Part) and not the Third leſs than *London*. ——— Of the other Taxes it bears a vaſt Proportion, which it can well anſwer, being the Seat of the Crown, the Legiſlature, the Courts of Juſtice, and the Reſidence of all the great Nobility and Gentry of the *Britiſh* Dominions. ——— It conſiſts of the greateſt Number of Votes in the whole Kingdom, excepting only the County of *York*; for it contains above Sixteen Thouſand Houſes, which are of ſuch a Rent as to be charged to the Church and Poor, and conſequently to entitle the Poſſeſſors to vote. It is true, that many of theſe being untenanted, inhabited by Women, or by Perſons not qualified, or able, the Number is reduced to about Nine Thouſand, who may be preſumed to vote at any conteſted Election. ——— But even this Number muſt appear at the firſt View too great to be directed by any Influence whatever. —— Yet in theſe later Times, ſuch has been the Weight of Power,—— that the Miniſter, by his Employments, by his Dependants, by the Aſſiſtance of the Church of *Weſtminſter*,

(which is attached in moſt Times to the Court) by the infinite Numbers of Officers, Eccleſiaſtical, Judicial, Civil and Military, and by the ſervile Expectations of thoſe who furniſh Neceſſaries of all kinds to the King's Palace, had ſo ſtrengthened his Intereſt in this City, that for twenty Years no Man was hardy enough to undertake an Oppoſition, and the Election always went, without Conteſt, in favour of ſome great Officer of the *Treaſury*, *Admiralty*, or *Army*, whom the Court had pleaſed to nominate. ——— This had paſſed in ſuch a manner, that it was commonly called the King's Borough, and it was even thought an Inſolence to controvert this Poſition, ſo contrary to the Principles of the *Britiſh* Conſtitution. ——— But at this Time, ſome few of the moſt rational Inhabitants, obſerving the Ferment of the People, and the univerſal Odium raiſed againſt the Miniſter, by his inſolent and deſtructive Conduct, undertook to make a Trial of the Independent Strength. ——— And without having thought of any ſecond Candidate, put Admiral *Vernon* in Nomination againſt the Miniſterial Faction. ——— This brave Man, who had done great Things during the Courſe of the preſent War, with very little Means, and to the apparent Diſſatisfaction of the Miniſter, was at that Time, moſt deſervedly, extremely popular: and Mr. *Edwin*, a Gentleman of *Wales*, of good Fortune, appearing accidentally at the Meeting held for the purpoſe of the Admiral's Nomination, was joined with him.

THIS ſudden and uncommon Oppoſition was at firſt but little apprehended by the Miniſter. ——— But the Poll (which began on *Saturday* the ſecond of *May*, 1741) proceeding, and with no great Diſparity of Numbers, he began to fear, that in the End the Election might be loſt. ——— Which his Dependents, willing to prevent, and preſuming in his Power, which had hitherto protected all thoſe, who had ſerved him in the ſame fatal Manner, arbitrarily cloſed the Poll upon the *Thurſday* following, while great Numbers were unpolled, many coming, and many actually then de-


BRITISH MUSEUM



Mount Pleasant near Tunbridge Wells in KENT
a Seat belonging to the Rt Hon.ble the Lord Viscount Perceval

demanding to be polled. —— But being apprehenſive of the Reſentment of the People at this Day's Outrage, they added another, if poſſible yet more deſperate, in its Conſequences, to the Liberty of the People; for they ſent for a Body of Regular Forces, conſiſting of fifty Men, headed by Officers, under whoſe Protection they declared the Lord *Sundon*, a Lord of the Treaſury, and Sir *Charles Wager*, firſt Commiſſioner of the Admiralty, duly elected.——This Election, carried on in every other Circumſtance likewiſe, with all the Circumſtances of Partiality, Violence, and Injuſtice, and afterwards aggravated by the illegal and partial billeting of Soldiers upon the oppoſing Party, raiſed an uncommon Ferment in the Minds of the whole City, which diffuſing itſelf through the whole Nation, greatly ſerved to ſupport the Country Intereſt, in many other Boroughs, where the Elections were not made ſo ſoon.

DURING the greater Part of the Poll the Lord *Perceval* lay very ill at his Houſe in *Weſtminſter*. —— Before the Election came on, he had many Applications from private Perſons in the City, to offer himſelf a Candidate with Admiral *Vernon*, before the other Candidate was named.———But his Health would not permit him to appear; and he was beſides very dubious of the Succeſs, and of the Expence of ſuch an Oppoſition. ——— However, growing better, he ventured out to the Election, and there appeared, though with much Hazard to himſelf, for two Days ſucceſſively, to countenance the Party of the Admiral and Mr. *Edwin*. —— Which was very gratefully received by their Friends.———His Lordſhip being the only Perſon of Rank, who perſonally appeared for them.———

AFTER this, his Lordſhip went down to his Seat at *Mount-Pleaſant*, near *Tunbridge-Wells*, where he remained till the Beginning of *June*, drinking the Waters of that Place, for the Recovery of his Health.

DURING his Stay there, the Independent Inhabitants, highly reſenting the Treatment they had received, formed a Committee of Twenty-one, which

was

Mount Pleaſant near Tunbridge Wells a Seat belonging to the Rt. Hon. the Lord Viſcount Perceval

was afterwards enlarged to Thirty-one, of the principal Inhabitants, Lawyers and Gentlemen, to proſecute the Offenders, and to prepare all Matters for an Application to Parliament, againſt their next Meeting. ——— This Committee had no ſooner formed itſelf, than a private Cabal began to lay a Plan, for bringing into Parliament a young Gentleman, whoſe Father had been of eminent Fame in Parliament, and but lately dead. Knowing that if the late flagrant Election ſhould be declared void, a Vacancy muſt inevitably happen in *Weſtminſter* for one Perſon, beſides Mr. *Edwin*, the Admiral being then choſen for three other Places.——— But this Cabal were outwitted by themſelves; for being apprehenſive of ſome other Candidate, they thought it prudent to inculcate this Poſition, that no Man ſhould be ſuffered to make Intereſt, till the Parliament ſhould have determined on the Right of the late Election. ——— This Principle ſeemed at firſt, in ſome Meaſure, to anſwer their Intention, many of the Committee agreeing to the Prudence of it, being kept in Ignorance of the intended Reſolution, in favour of the Gentleman formerly mentioned. ——— While they without Suſpicion, promoted privately the Intereſt of the Perſon with whom they were engaged, procuring Promiſes from ſeveral of the great Intereſts of the City. Which deceitful Management being at length diſcovered, juſtly incenſed the People, and utterly deſtroyed this private and clandeſtine View. —— In the mean Time, the Public began to caſt their Eyes upon the Lord *Perceval*, as a proper Perſon; and their Opinion encreaſing, the Cabal thought it high Time to ſtifle the Report. —— But they took a very imprudent Method, by inſerting in the public Papers ſome very diſreſpectful Paragraphs of News.——— Upon which his Lordſhip immediately returned to Town, to diſcover the Authors of this Inſolence, and to demand a proper Satisfaction.——The Committee, in general, at that time ignorant of the Authors of it, and ſenſible that his Lordſhip deſerved no ſuch Treatment from them, determined to make him all

the

the Satisfaction in their Power; which they did, by electing him a Member of their Body: in which Station he attended with ſo much Diligence, and was ſo extremely ſerviceable, in promoting their Cauſe, and keeping up the Spirit of the People, —— that in ſpite of all the Endeavours of the Cabal, the late Election being declared void, ——— His Lordſhip was unanimouſly nominated a Candidate for the City of *Weſtminſter*, at the greateſt Meeting of Independent Inhabitants ever known upon a like Occaſion, at the *Crown* and *Anchor* Tavern in the *Strand*, upon the twenty-fourth Day of *December*, 1741. And ſo happy he was in the good Opinion of the Public, and ſupported by ſo incredible an Attachment, that the Miniſter could not procure any Man to venture his Perſon to ſtand in oppoſition to him, though he offered to bear the whole Expence, and to make that Expence the greateſt that had been ever known in any Election in the Kingdom. ———Theſe Rumours of Oppoſition, and theſe Endeavours to raiſe one, however, continued to the laſt Day,——*viz. Thurſday* the thirty-firſt of *December*, 1741, when his Lordſhip and Mr. *Edwin* were attended by no leſs than 6000 Voters, of all Denominations, from their own Houſes to *Weſtminſter-Hall*, where the Election was made, — without any Oppoſition. ———At this Ceremony was preſent an amazing Number of People, to the amount, as it is ſaid, of 200,000, all the Windows of the Houſes being filled with Spectators, —— *Weſtminſter-Hall*, which alone contains ten thouſand,——the *Court of Requeſts*,——the two *Palace Yards*,——*King-ſtreet*, ———*Whitehall*, and all the Places adjacent, being crouded in a Degree never known before on any public Occaſion. —— Inſomuch, that it is credibly reported, that when the Returning Officer demanded of the People in the Hall, whether they deſired any other Candidate, —— the Negative was given with one common Aſſent, which communicated without Interruption, from Man to Man, to *Charing-Croſs*. ——— So that the Voice of the People never yet con-

concurred in ſo high a Degree, in the Election of any Repreſentative, from the Time that Parliaments have been a Part of the Conſtitution of this Kingdom.

In this eminent and glorious Situation of a Repreſentative of the ſecond City, and firſt Borough of this Kingdom, elected with ſuch Circumſtances of public Eſteem and Confidence, we for the preſent leave this Nobleman, exerting himſelf, to maintain the Independency of his Country, of which no Man can, or ought to have a dearer Senſe, ſince no Man ever received more Honour from it than he has done.

To adhere to that Plan which we have hitherto purſued in this Work, we ſhall cloſe this Chapter with a ſhort Account of the Deſcent of the Lady *Catherine Cecil*, Wife of the ſaid Lord Viſcount *Perceval*.

Of this Great Family the leſs is neceſſary to be ſaid in this Place, as the Accounts of it are given with thoſe of the preſent Nobility of *England*, among whom it has the Rank of the ſeventh Earl.

It will be ſufficient therefore to obſerve, that it is deſcended from Sir *Robert Cecil*, ſecond Son to that great Stateſman Sir *William Cecil*, Baron of *Burleigh*, Lord High Treaſurer, and firſt Miniſter to Queen *Elizabeth*, during the greateſt Part of her glorious Reign.——Which Sir *Robert Cecil*, being not inferior to his Father in Abilities, enjoyed the ſame Poſt under King *James* the Firſt, by whom he was dignified with the Title of Earl of *Salisbury*, upon the fourth of *May*, 1605.——By his Wife *Elizabeth*, Daughter of *William Brook*, Lord *Cobham*, he left a Son *William*, who ſucceeded to his Honours; and by *Katherine*, Daughter of *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, had a Son *Charles*, Viſcount *Cranburn*, who, dying in the Life-time of his Father, left by *Joan* his Wife, Daughter and Coheir of *James Maxwell*, Earl of *Dirleton* in *Scotland*, a Son *James*, who was Earl of *Saliſbury* after the Death of his Grandfather, who died the third of *December*, 1688.——This *James* married *Margaret*, Daugh-

Daughter of *John Manners*, Earl of *Rutland*, and, dying in 1683, was ſucceeded by his eldeſt Son, *James* Earl of *Saliſbury*, (ſecond of that Name,) who, dying in 1694, left by *Frances* his Wife, Daughter and Coheir of *Simon Bennet* of *Beechampton*, in the County of *Bucks*, Eſquire, a Son *James*, Earl of *Saliſbury*, (third of that Name,) who, on the twelfth of *February*, 1708-9, was married to the Lady *Anne Tufton*, ſecond Daughter and Coheir of *Thomas* Earl of *Thanet*, before-mentioned, by whom (dying on the ninth of *October*, 1728) he left two Sons, the eldeſt alſo named *James*, (the fourth of that Name) now Earl of *Saliſbury*, *William*, who died without Iſſue, in *May*, 1740; and three Daughters, the Lady *Anne*, the Wife of *William Strode*, Eſquire; the Lady *Katherine*, the Wife of *John* Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, of whom we here treat; and the Lady *Margaret*, as yet unmarried.

THIS Family has not only been dignified with the greateſt Employments of the Realm, and allied with the nobleſt Families of *England*, but is deſcended alſo ſeveral times from different Branches of the Royal Family, as may be ſeen particularly in the ſeventh Chapter of the firſt Book of this Work.

CHILDREN of *JOHN* Lord Viſcount *Perceval*, (tenth of that Name,) and of the Lady *Katherine Cecil*, his Wife.

I. *JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL*, eldeſt Son, born in *Pall-Mall*, *Weſtminſter*, *January* 29, 1737-8; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *CECIL-PARKER PERCEVAL*, was born upon *Friday* the nineteenth of *October*, 1739, at half an Hour after Nine in the Morning, in his Father's Houſe in *Pall-Mall*. Upon the firſt of *November* following, he was chriſtened by Dr. *Philip Bearcroft*, Chaplain to His Majeſty, and Preacher to the *Charter Houſe*. His Sureties were the Honourable *William Cecil*, Eſquire, his Mother's Brother; Sir *Philip Parker a Morley Long*, Baronet, Brother to the Counteſs of *Egmont*, his Grandmother; who was the third Sponſor.

III. *PHILIP-TUFTON PERCEVAL*, was born upon *Wedneſday* the tenth of *March*, 1741-2, at his Father's Houſe in *Weſtminſter*, between the Hours of five and ſix in the Morning; he was baptized on the *Friday* following; and is now living, *April* 28, 1742.——His Sureties at Baptiſm were *Thomas Tufton*, Earl of *Thanet*; Sir *John Rawdon*, Baronet, his Uncle; and *Margaret Tufton*, Baroneſs of *Clifford*, (Wife of the Lord *Lovel*,) his great Aunt.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

JOHN-JAMES PERCEVAL, *(the Eleventh of that Name) eldeſt Son and Heir Apparent of* John, *Lord Viſcount* Perceval.



THIS young Nobleman was born (ſomewhat more than eleven Months after his Father's Marriage) at his Father's Houſe in *Pall-Mall* in *London*, upon *Sunday* the twenty-ninth of *January*, 1737-8. —— Upon *Wedneſday* the ſixteenth of *February* following, he was chriſtened by Doctor *Secker*, Biſhop of *Oxford*, (*John* Earl of *Egmont*, his Grandfather, *James* Earl of *Saliſbury*, his Uncle, and *Anne* Counteſs of *Saliſbury*, his Grandmother, being his Sureties) receiving a double Name, from his two Godfathers before-mentioned.

HE is the twenty-ſecond in a direct Male-Line from *Robert*, Lord of *Breherval* and *Yvery*, who was the Founder

Founder of this Family in *England*, coming over with the Conqueror in 1066; and the eleventh of the Name of *John*, who have been by Primogeniture entitled to the Inheritance of this Noble Family, ſince that Period. ——— Born with this Omen of ſingular Felicity, that he is the firſt of this Houſe, for the Space of three hundred Years, who came into the World during the Life-time of his Grandfather.

And now, having proceeded as far, with regard to this Line, as the Nature of the Thing may well for the preſent bear, we ſhall only add this farther Obſervation:

Sir *William Dugdale* has remarked, in his Preface to the firſt Volume of his *Baronage*, That out of two hundred and ſeventy noble Families of which he has treated in that Work, he could find but twenty-four which then exiſted, deſcended by any collateral Branch in the Male Line from any of the ancient Barons therein mentioned.———Since that Time, which is now near ſeventy Years ago, many even of that ſmall Number are undoubtedly extinct. ——— This Circumſtance may therefore ſerve as a final Concluſion to our Demonſtration of the Eminence of this Noble Family, ſo clearly and indiſputably proved to be deſcended from one of the greateſt Houſes of the ancient Peerage.

Stop therefore here, you who may be concerned by Blood in this Deduction.—— Seriouſly, gratefully, and modeſtly reflect on this Advantage———Render Thanks to Providence, for a Favour permitted to you, and permitted to ſo very few. ——Pray for the Continuance of this Diſtinction,———and that you may uſe it well.——Know, that it is a Bleſſing, which you can never hope to ſecure, but by a ſteady Perſeverance in the Ways of Honour and unaffected Virtue.——— Upon this Foundation build your Grandeur, which we may prophetically pronounce ſhall then know no Limits

mits, and ſhall endure for ever. —— As for us, it has been our chief View in this laborious Undertaking, to raiſe and to invigorate ſuch Sentiments as theſe, in you and your Poſterity. If therefore, by a future Vanity in any of your Race, this Work ſhould be perverted from its intended Benefit to the Public and to you, we have done our Duty, and we hold ourſelves not bound to anſwer for the ſad Abuſe.

Poſteris an aliqua cura noſtri neſcio. —— Nos certè meremur ut ſit aliqua. Non dico ingenio; id enim ſuperbum: ſed ſtudio, ſed labore, ſed reverentiâ poſterum.

Plin. Epiſt.

The End of the SIXTH BOOK.

A

Genealogical Hiſtory

OF THE

HOUSE of *YVERY*;

In its Different BRANCHES of

YVERY, LUVEL, PERCEVAL, *and* GOURNAY.

BOOK VII.

CONTAINING

The Deſcents of the Barons of *Harpetrè-Gournay*, alſo Barons of *Guienne*.



FUERUNT.

TABLE to Book VII. Containing the Genealo of the H
Branch of the ouſe of 2

ASCELINUS GOUELLUS DE PERCEVAL, Earl of Yory Normandy, =I
and Baron of *Kary* in *England*.

JOHN, ſurnamed *de Harpetre*, Lord of Fe and *Harpetre*

WILLIAM, Son of n de Harpetre.

JOHN DE H ETRE.=

JOHN DE HARPETRE, *ob. ſ. p.*

WILLIAM, Son of *John de Harpetre*, and Br of *John*,=M
ob. 16 Hen. III.

2 PAGANUS, Son of *William*.

1 THOMAS, Son of *William*.=EVA, Daughter n ir of *Robert de*
ſurnamed *d* ſt. See Book

ROBERT, ſurnamed *de Gournay*, ſup. 9 Hen. III. ob. en. III. a Ba

JOHN DE GOURNAY, *ob. ſ. p.* ANSELM DE GOURNAY, *ob.* 14 . a Baron.=S

OLIVA, Daughter of *Henry Luvel*, Baron of *Kary*.=JOHN DE GOURNAY, Baron, *ob.* 19 *Ed.* I. THOMAS DE and *Weſtbu* NAY, Lord o by Gift of his

ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY, Daughter and Heir, Wife of *John ap Adam*.=

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, on account of the Murde cheaded=Jo II.

THOMAS AP ADAM, married *Joan*, Dr of Sir *John Inge* and *Alice Baſſet*—both died, *ſ. p.*

1 THOMAS DE GOURNAY, ob. inter 8 & 13 Edw. III.=

2 JOHN DE GOURNAY, de Knolle, ob. ſ. p.

3 GEORGE DE GOURNAY, ob. ſ. p.

4 NÆUS DE GO p. A. D. 1 —(1.) *Alici* ick, Relict of Philippa, Siſter rds *Caſtle*.

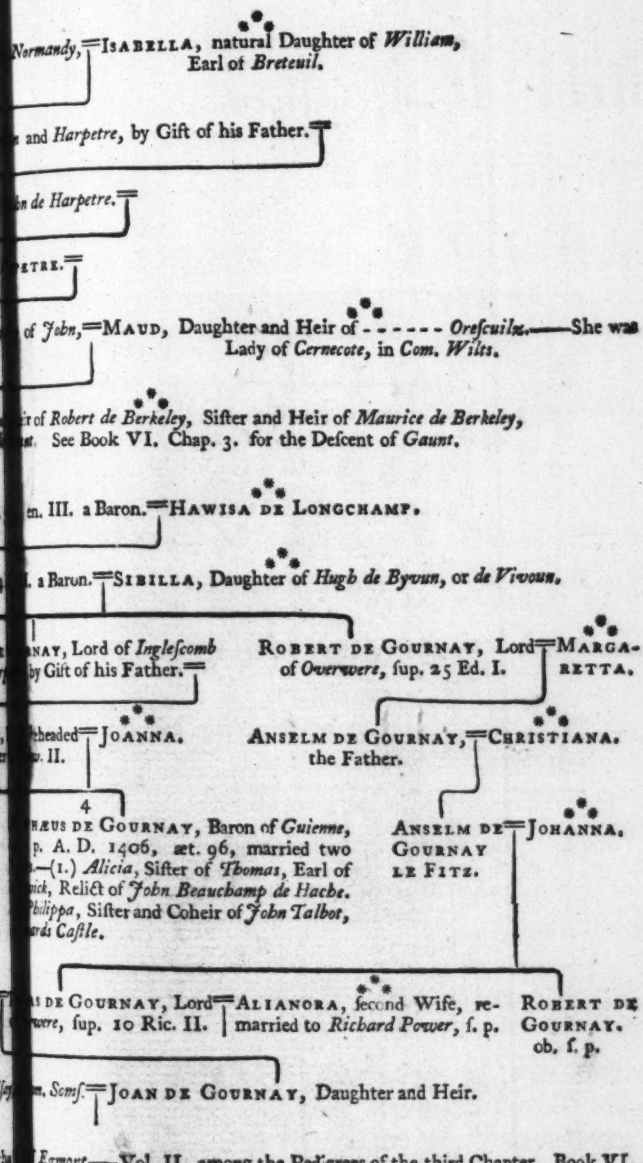
THOMAS DE GOURNAY, ætat. annor. 21.—13 Edw. III. ob. ſ. p.

ELIZA, Daughter and Heir of *Richard de Counteville*, Lord of *Arwarton*. S DE GOURN were, ſup. 1

GEORGE DE LA MORE, or *Bithemore*, Lord of *Nailſe* m. *Semſ.*=Jo

See this Deſcent continued through *de la More* to the Egmont—

of the Houſe of *Harpetre-Gournay*, a younger
ouſe of *Yvery*.



Egmont—Vol. II. among the Pedigrees of the third Chapter, Book VI.

A

Genealogical Hiſtory

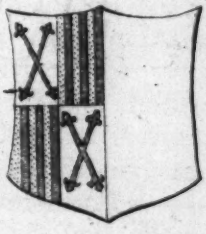
OF THE

HOUSE of YVERY, &c.

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

JOHN DE YVERY, *or* DE PERCEVAL, *Baron of* Harpetrè, *Lord of* Farringdon, &c.



THE Accounts of this Great Family of *Gournay*, having hitherto been as erroneous as any of the whole Baronage, we ſhall deduce this Family with particular Care, verifying the Alterations neceſſary to be made in the De-

ſcent thereof, with the ſtrongeſt Authority of Record. ——— And to this the Inducement is the greater, as it is derived in the Male Line from a younger Branch of the Houſe of *Yvery*, which is the principal Object of this Work. A Diſcovery which has eſcaped the Notice of all the Genealogiſts who have hitherto written concerning this Family.

BUT we are regularly, firſt, to enter ſomewhat into the Accounts of that Family of *Gournay*, which firſt aſſumed that Surname, and from which it was adopted into that Line of the Houſe of *Yvery*; which is neceſſary, not only out of Reſpect to ſo great a Name, but to clear the Courſe of the Deſcent with the greater Perſpicuity.

* THE firſt of this eminent Houſe that we have yet recovered, was that *Hugh de Gorniaco*, or *Gornay*, with whom Sir *William Dugdale* begins.—— Who in that notable Fight which happened between the Forces of *William* Duke of *Normandy* (afterwatds King of *England*, by the Name of *William* the Conqueror) and thoſe of *Henry* then King of *France*, in that Part called *Gallia Belgica*, lying between the Rivers *Rhene* and *Sene*, where the *French* were totally routed, Mention is made of the Valour of *Hugh de Gournay*; which *Hugh*, after the Duke was advanced to the Throne of this Realm, was a Witneſs to his Foundation of the Abbey of *St. Stephen* at *Caen*, and gave to the Monks of *Bec*, the Tythes of his Provoſtſhip, and Portion in *Eſtocke* in that Dukedom. Moreover, by the Conſent of *Girard* and *Hugh*, his Sons, he founded the Abbey of *Goiſſa-Fontane* near *Alney*.——— Furthermore, at the Time of the General Survey, he poſſeſſed thoſe Lordſhips, lying in *Eſſex*, within this Realm, *viz. Liſtune*, *Earley*, and *Forham*; and afterwards became a Monk of the Abbey of *Bee*.

† AT what Time he died we cannot exactly affirm, but certain it is, that by *Baſil*, the Daughter of *Giraldus*

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gournay.
† Ibid.

dus Flatellus, and Widow of *Ralf de Wacey*, he left *Girald de Gournay*, his Son and Heir.

* WHICH *Girald* being a Perſon of great Power, in 1089 (the ſecond of *William Rufus*) ſtoutly adhered to King *William Rufus*, againſt *Robert Curthoſe*, Duke of *Normandy* (his elder Brother) giving up his Caſtle of *Gurnay*, and other ſtrong Holds, into his Hands, and endeavouring to reduce all the adjacent Places to his Obedience. Howbeit, after this, *viz.* in *Anno* 1096, Duke *Robert*, for ten thouſand Marks of Silver, delivering up *Normandy* unto *Rufus*, and thereupon travelling into the Holy Land; this *Girald* with *Edith* his Wife, Siſter to *William* Earl *Warren*, and many other eminent Perſons accompanied him; but in this Journey he died, his Wife ſurviving him, who afterwards married *Dru de Monceaux*.

† To whom ſucceeded *Hugh* his Son and Heir; which *Hugh*, notwithſtanding the great Favours he received from King *Henry* the Firſt, who took Care of his Education, as of his own Son, diſciplining him in military Exerciſes, reſtoring him to his Father's Honour, which *Dru de Monceaux* (his Mother's Huſband) had poſſeſſed, and advancing him among his chief Nobles. In *Anno* 1184, (the thirtieth of *Henry* the Firſt) he joined with *Stephen* Earl of *Albemarle*, and divers others, againſt that King, and endeavouring to advance *William*, Son of *Robert Curthoſe*, Duke of *Normandy*, to the Throne of this Realm, manned his Caſtle of *Gurnay*, with other Places of Strength, againſt him: moreover, he ſurprized the Caſtle of *Pleſſy*, and committed it to the Cuſtody of *Hugh de Talebot*, his Nephew; and in *Anno* 1137, (the ſecond of King *Stephen*) when divers of the great Men in *Normandy*, inſtigated by the *French* and *Flemings*, deſerted King *Stephen*, whereupon the King marched to *Liſeur*, purpoſing to beſiege *Geffry* of *Anjou* at *Argentoile*, or ſome other Place, there happening ſuch a Mutiny in his Army, as

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gournay.
† Ibid

that divers forſook him, he followed ſome of them to *Pont-Audomare*, and there took this *Hugh de Gournay*, with ſeveral other ſtout young Men, whom partly by good Words, and partly by Threats, he endeavoured to reconcile; but failing therein, he concluded a Truce with the Enemy for two Years. Howbeit ſometime afterwards, *viz.* in 1151, (the ſixteenth of King *Stephen*) favouring the Party of King *Stephen*, againſt *Henry* Duke of *Normandy*, he admitted the Duke's Enemies into his Caſtle of *Gurnay*. Furthermore, in *Anno* 1173, (the nineteenth of *Henry* the Second) upon that Rebellion of young *Henry* againſt the King his Father, he, as alſo *Hugh* his Son, (with eighty of their Soldiers,) were taken Priſoners by young *Henry*, who burned that Caſtle in *Normandy*, which he then held. ——— * Laſtly, having married the Siſter of *Ralf de Perrone*, Earl of *Vermandois*, he died in the thirty-firſt of *Henry* the Second, as it ſeems, for then did *Hugh de Gournay* his Son give a hundred Pounds for his Relief.

† WHICH laſt mentioned *Hugh*, in the third of *Richard* the Firſt, was at the Siege of *Acon*, in the Holy Land; where, upon the taking thereof, an equal Partition being made on the Part of King *Richard* and the King of *France*, *Dru de Marlow*, with an hundred Soldiers, took Charge of that half Part which belonged to the King of *France*, — and this *Hugh de Gournay* of that other Half, appertaining to King *Richard*.

§ IN the fourth of King *John*, *Robert de Vipont* received Commands to deliver unto him all the Priſoners which were taken in the Wars of *France*, except thoſe which *Martin Algies* took.

‖ IN *Anno* 1203, (the fifth of King *John*) this *Hugh*, obſerving that King *John* devoted himſelf wholly to Lux-

---

* See Miſcellanea B. 2 in Officio Armor. Lond. by Glover, Somerſet; from whence are taken all the Corrections and Additions, by which this Account of the firſt Family of Gournay differs from Dugdale.

† Dugdale's Baronage.

§ Ibid. ‡ Ibid.

Luxury, whereby the King of *France* got much Advantage for Recovery of *Normandy*, he gave up the Caſtle of *Montford* to the *French*, whereupon many others forſook him, ſo that *Roan* was ſoon after loſt.

*In the twelfth of the ſame Reign, this *Hugh* paid a Fine to the King, of ſeven hundred Marks for the Manor of *Wendover*, in the County of *Bucks*, and that he might not be diſſeiſed thereof, but by Judgment of the King's Courts. ——— And in the fifteenth of the ſame Reign, obtained the Honour of *Wherwelton*, in *Com. Ebor.* by the Gift of that King. Moreover, the ſame Year he attended the King into *Poictou*; and in the ſixteenth of the ſame Reign, was made Sheriff of the Counties of *Buckingham* and *Bedford*: in which Year, diſcerning himſelf infirm, he procured the King to take the Homage of *Girard* his Son and Heir, but not to diſpoſſeſs himſelf of his Lands during his own Life.———Shortly after which, he took part with the rebellious Barons, as it ſeems, for in the eighteenth of the ſame Reign, the King diſpoſed of his Manor of *Wendover* to *William de Fednes* (*i. e. Fienes*;) and in the ſecond of *Henry* the Third, *William de Cantilupe* obtained all his Lands in *Lincolnſhire*, which were then in the Hands of *Hugh de Gurney*, his Son. But in the ſixth of *Henry* the Third he died, for then did the King direct his Precept to reſtore unto *Hugh* his Son, whom he had by his Wife *Lucy*, the † Widow of *Robert de Berkeley*, (*Girard* being dead as it ſeems) all the Lands of his Inheritance then in his Cuſtody. The like Command had the Sheriff of *Norfolk*, for all his Lands in that County.

‡ WHICH *Hugh*, the Son of *Hugh* and *Lucy* beforementioned, highly incurring the King's Diſpleaſure, for being in that Tournament at *Blith* in the County of *Nottingham*, in the ſeventh of *Henry* the Third, con-

---

* Dugdale's Baronage.

† This Marriage appears miſplaced in Sir William Dugdale, and is corrected by Glover's MSS. and a Compariſon of Dates.

‡ Dugdale's Baronage.

contrary to his Prohibition, the Sheriffs of *Warwick*, *Leiceſter*, and *Glouceſter*, had Commands to ſeize all his Lands in thoſe Counties.———Nor was this all, for in the ſame Year he boldly preſumed to hunt with Hound and Horn for the Space of three Days, in the King's Chace at *Briſtol*, without Leave, and contrary to the Command of the Forreſters; whereupon the Conſtable of the Caſtle of *Briſtol* was required to ſeize all his Lands, Goods and Chattles within his Liberty. ———But after this, we have not ſeen any more of him, than that he married *Julian*, the Siſter of *Reginald*, Count of *Bologne*, who deceaſed before him, by whom he had a Daughter *Julian*; and dying the twenty-ſecond of *Henry* the Third, left *Maud*, his cond Wife, ſurviving, then with Child: whereupon *William de Cantelupe* gave five hundred Marks Fine for the Wardſhip of *Julian*, his Daughter and Heir, and Cuſtody of her Lands, and alſo of the Child unborn, wherewith his Widow *Maud* did then travail: which *Julian* became the Wife of *William Bardulf*.

*Before we continue the Story of this great Houſe, it will not be improper to mention that Family of the ſame Name in *Norfolk*, and doubtleſs of the ſame Stock, of which was *Matthew de Gournay*, in the Time of *Henry* the Firſt; which *Matthew* had two Sons, *Thomas*, and *William*; which *William* had a Son named *John de Gournay*, who in the third of King *Edward* the Firſt had a Suit with the Prior of *Lewes*, for the Right of Preſentation to the Church of *Harpeli*, in the ſame County of *Norfolk*; whereupon a Trial by Battle was appointed, and the ſaid *John de Gournay* and the Prior came armed into the Field, where the Prior yielded full Seizin of the ſaid Advowſon, to the ſaid *John de Gournay*, for himſelf and his Succeſſors for ever.———But of this Line there is nothing farther known.

We

* Placit. de Banco, Norfolk, 3 Edw. I. de Eccleſia de Harpeli.

* We ſhould next come to ſpeak of *Robert de Gournay*, the Father of *Hathewiſa de Gournay*, by whom the Manor of *Barewe*, *Gournay*, and *Clivewere*, came to the Houſe of *Gournay*, of whom we ſhall come preſently to ſpeak.——— And alſo on whoſe Account the Name of *Gournay* came to be taken up by that Family.———But it has been as yet impoſſible, with that Perſpicuity we could wiſh to join thoſe Links by which this Line was connected to the firſt Branch, of which we have already ſpoken, or to give an abſolute Proof of the Deſcent from that Lady.

WE ſhall now enter upon our Diſcourſe, with reſpect to that Houſe of *Gournay* which, after the Failure of the former, were Barons of mighty Eminence, and vaſt Poſſeſſions, who from the Change that happened in their Surname, have hitherto been ſo far miſtaken, that their Origine has been wholly confounded, and that even the beſt Genealogiſts have been guilty of no leſs an Error in the Deſcent, than in the Creation of two Families out of this one, and of two Baronies, out of that which in Truth was one; † Sir *William Dugdale* himſelf having been led to believe that the Barons of *Harpetré* and *Gournay* were diſtinct, which, by the Authorities we ſhall hereafter offer, are proved to be the ſame.———And even *Camden* himſelf has fallen into this Miſtake.

THIS Houſe ſeems indiſputably deſcended from *John*, a younger Son of *Aſcelin Gouel de Percheval*, Earl of *Yvery* in *Normandy*, the common Anceſtor of *Yvery*, *Luvel*, and *Perceval*; for, ſo early as the Year 1138, the Son of that *John* was poſſeſſed of *Harpetré*, in the County of *Somerſet*, (which was the Eſtate of the ſaid ‡ *Aſcelin*, who was living in the Year 1119,) and having

* See Madox Formulare Anglic.
† Compare Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gournay & Harpetree.
‡ Orderic. Vital. alſo Doomſday-Book, Somſ.

* having a Caſtle there, took part with *William Gouel de Perceval*, ſurnamed *Luvel*, who was Son to the ſaid *Aſcelin*, againſt King *Stephen*, as we ſhall ſhew in the next Chapter. ——— *Ferenton*, likewiſe another Part of the Eſtate of the ſaid *Aſcelin*, appears very ſoon afterwards to be the Inheritance of this Line; and *Weſt-Harpetré* was likewiſe held by them, of the Barons *Luvel* of *Kary*; which is a farther Confirmation of this Deſcent, for it was the general Cuſtom of the early Ages to grant the Appenages, or Proviſions of the younger Children, by Charter, to hold of the Eſtate of the elder, who was conſtantly left, by that Tenure the capital Lord of the Fee.

THERE is no doubt, therefore, to be made, by thoſe who are acquainted with the Cuſtoms of this Antiquity, and the Force of theſe Circumſtances we have mentioned, that among the numerous Iſſue of *Aſcelin Gouel de Percheval*, and *Iſabella de Breteuil*, his Wife, this *John*, the Founder of the Houſe of *Harpetré-Gournay*, was one; and that he received from his Father, during his Life, the Lordſhip of *Arpetree* and *Ferenton*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

WHETHER it was himſelf, or his Son, we cannot ſay, that built the Caſtle there, but *Harpetre* became the Seat of this Line, and from thence they received the firſt Name by which they are known in Hiſtory, though they did not keep it long, changing it for that of *Gournay*, as we ſhall ſhew hereafter.

ISSUE of *JOHN DE YVERY*, ſurnamed *de Harpetree*, or *Arpetree*, the firſt of that Name.

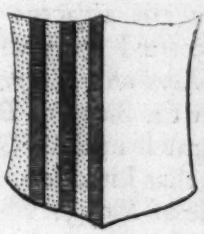
WILLIAM DE HARPETREE, Lord of *Harpetree*; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

* Geſta Regis Stephani, fol. 942.

CHAP. II.

WILLIAM DE HARPETRE, *Baron of* Harpetre.



THIS *William*, (the Son of *John*) and Grandſon of *Aſcelin de Perceval*, Earl of *Yvery*, had already ſucceeded to his Father's Eſtate in *A. D.* 1138 *; for upon the Rebellion of the Barons againſt King *Stephen* in that Year, *William de Mohun*, Lord of *Dunſter*, and *William Gouel de Perceval*, ſurnamed *Luvel*, together with *Ralf Luvel* †, his Son, ſurnamed *Simelt*, and others of the Nobility of that Age, having fortified and manned their Caſtles, as we have ſhewn in the third Chapter of the ſecond Book of this Work, this *William* §, ſtiled by the Name of *William*, the Son of *John*, fortified

* Orderic. Vital. Hiſt. Eccleſiaſt. Norman. fol. 917. A. D. 1138.

† Chronic. Norman. inter Normann. Scriptores, fol. 977, A. D. 1139.

§ Geſta Regis Stephani inter Normann. Scriptores, per du Cheſne, fol. 942.

fortified his Caſtle of *Harpetre*, and, in Conjunction with his Uncle, the ſaid *William Gouel de Perceval*, (who had put his Caſtle of *Karith* or *Kari* in the ſame Condition of Defence) ſtrenuouſly oppoſed that Prince, being firmly attached by the ſtrongeſt Ties of Friendſhip, to the Count * *Henry Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, afterwards King of *England*, by the Name of *Henry* the Second, to whom they had plighted their Faith, and bound themſelves by Oath, and entered into ſolemn Engagements †, that whenever he ſhould attempt the Royal Dignity, they would take up Arms in his Favour.—— ‡ Nor were they falſe to their Promiſes, for upon the Commencement of that Quarrel, they engaged on that Side, and ſo ravaged the adjacent Country, the Plunder of which they carried away with them to the two adjacent Caſtles of *Kari* and *Harpetre*, that the King, who had undertaken the Siege of *Briſtol*, found it difficult to maintain himſelf in thoſe Quarters; and therefore, deſiſting from that Intention, he turned his Force firſt againſt the Caſtle of *Kary* §, which having battered with incredible Fury for a long time, and the Garriſon being reduced to great Neceſſity for want of Proviſion ‖, and finding alſo that neither the Earl of *Anjou* came from abroad to their Aſſiſtance, nor their Allies from *Briſtol* could force their way to their Relief, the Place was at length ſurrendered upon honourable Terms of Peace and Alliance. ⁂ But the Caſtle of *Harpetre* fared worſe, for the King having converted the Siege into a Blockade, as apprehending it a Work of too much Labour and Expence, and reſolving to attack the Place in another Form, drew off the greateſt Part of his Forces, committing that Service to the Troops then in Garriſon at *Bath*, as lying at no great Diſtance from it. —— Not long after which, with a vaſt Army marching near this Caſtle in his Way to *Briſtol*, which he again pretended to beſiege, the Garriſon made a Sally to attack the Rear; but the King obſerving by their

* Geſta Reg's Stephani, ut ſupra.
† Ibid. ‡ Ibid. § Ibid. ‖ Ibid. ⁂ Ibid.

their Numbers, that the Place was left with a very ſmall Guard, advanced with the utmoſt Haſte at the Head of his Cavalry, and arriving there before the Garriſon could make their Retreat, he applied Fire to the Gates, and Scaling Ladders to the Walls; and thus, in a very ſhort time, took the Place by Aſſault, and left a Body of his own Troops in it.

THE Name of *William* being common, both as to this *William*, and to another of the ſame Family, who lived not long after, we are not poſitively ſure as to our Application of the Records in which they are mentioned; but it is a Circumſtance which can create no material Difference in the Deſcent, and we have Reaſon from the early Date to believe, that it was this the firſt *William de Harpetree*, who, in the Twelfth of * King *Henry* the Second, *A. D.* 1166, upon the Aid levied for marrying the King's Daughter, certified by the Name of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, that he held thirteen Knights Fees and one half, and the fourth Part of one Knight's Fee, in the following Words:

" † I *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, hold " of the Honour, which was of *Batteton*, in capite of " the King, thirteen Knights Fees and one half, and " the fourth Part of one Knight's Fee, that is to " ſay,

" *Richard*, the Son of *Alice Flaming*, ſeven Knights " Fees;——*William*, the Son of *Hugh*, two Knights " Fees one half and a fourth Part;——*Robert de Mor-* " *ſel*, two Knights Fees. ——— Two Parts of one " Knight's Fee, which I had in Demeſne, I gave in " Marriage with my Daughter to *Roger Balun* [*Bacun*] " —and to *William*, the Son of *Stephen*, a third Part; " —and I am to do Service for one half of a Fee.

* Liber Rub. Scaccarii.
† Ibid.

" I gave alſo to *Robert de Ferenton* half of one " Knight's Fee;—and I hold at *Harpetree* of the Fee " of *Mountacute*, of the late Earl *Moreton*, one " Knight's Fee, by the ſame Service, which other " Barons pay who hold of the ſame Honour.

" I hold *Reddon* alſo of the King, which is one " Knight's Fee.——The Service of which is with- " held from me by *Richard de Reddon*, who ſays, that " he owes me no Service of the Fee of the Earl of " *Moreton*".

*NEXT after this follows the Certificate of *William*, the Son of *John*, which conſiſted of ſeven Fees of the Honour of *Moreton*——which we mention here as a Matter deſerving farther Enquiry, being uncertain ourſelves who this *William*, the Son of *John*, might be, hardly believing him to be the ſame Perſon with the laſt, to whom, however, we preſume that he was nearly related.

ISSUE of *WILLIAM*, Son of *John de Harpetree*.

JOHN DE HARPETREE, Baron of *Harpetree*; of whom in the next Chapter.

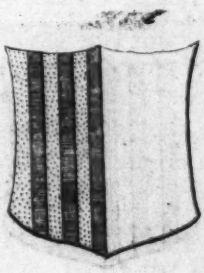
---

* Liber Rub. Scaccarii.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

JOHN DE HARPETREE,
Baron of Harpetree.



ALL that we have to ſay of this Perſon is, that he continued this Line, for his Son being called *William* *, the Son of *John*, aſcertains his Deſcent and Exiſtence, and fixes his Place in this Family; but we have no other Authorities that relate to him.

CHILDREN of *JOHN DE HARPETREE*, Baron of *Harpetree*, ſecond of that Name.

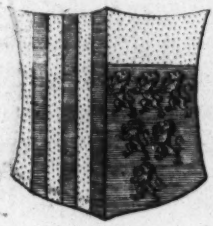
I. †*WILLIAM DE HARPETREE*, Baron of *Harpetree*, eldeſt Son and Heir; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. §*JOHN DE HARPETREE*, Brother of *William* the Grandfather of *Robert de Gournay*.

* Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. m. 3. † Ibid. § Ibid.

CHAP. IV.

WILLIAM DE HARPETREE, *Baron of* Harpetree.



THIS *William* *, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, (and not *William*, the Son of *William*, as Sir *William Dugdale* recites) in the Twenty-ſecond of *Henry* the Second †, paid a Fine of an hundred Pounds for treſpaſſing in the King's Foreſts of *Dorſetſhire*; and in the Sixth of *Richard* the Firſt, gave an hundred Marks to make his Peace with that King, ſo that he might repoſſeſs his Lands lying in the Counties of *Dorſet*, *Somerſet*, *Glouceſter*, and *Devon* ‡; and in the next enſuing Year he paid fifty Marks for the Lordſhip of *Barewe* [*Berwick*] which was of the Inheritance of his Son's Wife, being part of the Lands of *Robert Fitzharding*, (that is to ſay, as appears from comparing

* Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. ut ſupra.
† Vide Dugdale, ſub tit. Harpetree.
‡ Ibid.

comparing the Records) the Manor of *Barewe*, which belonged to *Hawiſa de Gournay*, which deſcended by Inheritance to *Eva*, (Siſter of *Morris*, ſurnamed *De Gant*,) Grand-daughter and Heir of the ſaid *Robert Fitzharding*, and Wife of *Thomas de Harpetree*, Son of the ſaid *William*; for farther Satisfaction in which, the Reader is deſired to look back upon the Deſcent of *Gant*.

† In the Eighth of *Henry* the Third, this *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, gave a Fine of two hundred and eighty Marks for the Wardſhip of the Heir of *William de Carrio*; and in the * Year next enſuing, by a Fine levied in Hilary Term (*Thomas* his Son being then deceaſed, as it ſhould ſeem) he the ſaid *William*, the Son of *John* being Plaintiff, and *Robert* (then ſurnamed *De Gournay*) his Grandſon Deforciant, acknowledged the Manor of *Ferrenton*, in the County of *Somerſet*, and all the Lands and Tenements which he held as of his own Inheritance, or of that of *Maud* his Wife, to be the Right of the ſaid *Robert*, as Son of *Thomas*, eldeſt Son of the ſaid *William* and *Maud*, to which *Thomas*, and *Eva* his Wife (*Robert*'s Mother) and to the Heirs of their joint Bodies, the ſaid *William* had formerly granted the ſaid Lands; and thereupon the ſaid *Robert de Gournay* regrants to his ſaid Grandfather *William*, all the Premiſſes for Term of his Life, and alſo Lands to the Value of fifteen Pounds *per Annum*, Parcel thereof to him and his Heirs in Fee, the Reverſion of the reſt of the Premiſſes to the ſaid *Robert* and his Heirs in Fee.

§ BY the ſame Fine alſo *Pagan*, the Son of the ſaid *William* (*de Harpetree*) and Brother to *Thomas*, Father of the ſaid *Robert de Gournay*, releaſes and quits Claim as to his Right to any of the Lands of the ſaid *William* and *Maud* (his Grandfather and Grandmother) either in *England*, *Ireland*, or *Normandy*; and thereupon

† Dugdale, ut ſupra.
† Fin. diverſ. Comitat. levat. 9 Hen. III. Hill. no. 36.
§ Ibid.

upon, in Conſideration thereof, the ſaid *William* and *Robert* grant Lands to the Value of twenty Pounds *per Annum*, Parcel of the Premiſſes in *Edmondeſham*, *Studdon*, and *Stures*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, and in *Sandford*, in the County of *Somerſet*; and the Homages and Services of *Michael de Baggenore*, and his Heirs in *Baggenore* and *Colemere*, and of *Hugh de Cumbe*, and his Heirs in *Cumbe*, and of *Walter de Loddresford*, and his Heirs in *Loddresford*, to be held by the ſaid *Pagan* and his Heirs, after the Death of the ſaid *William* his Father of the ſaid *Robert* and his Heirs, by the Service of three Knights Fees.

Of this *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetree*, there is little farther neceſſary to be ſaid, but that he married † *Maud Oreſcuilz*, a *Norman* Lady, who was a Coheireſs with *Alice Oreſcuilz*, her Siſter, and made Partition of her Inheritance by Fine in the Tenth of *Richard* the Firſt; whereupon the ſaid *William* obtained half a Knight's Fee, with its Appurtenances, in *Cernecote* in *England*, reſerving ſtill to *Maud* her Pretenſions as the eldeſt Coheir.

This *William* died in the Sixteenth of the Reign of King *Henry* the Third, when *Robert*, ſurnamed *De Gournay*, his Grandſon, did his Homage*, and paid his Relief for half of one Knight's Fee, which the ſaid *William*, there called the Brother of the ſaid *John de Harpetree*, held in capite of the Crown in *Harpetree*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

CHIL-

† Fine levied at Wincheſter, A° Ricardi I. 10mo.

* Note, That this Record of Homage being miſtaken by Sir William Dugdale, has been the Occaſion of his creating two Baronies of one.—See both under the Head of Gournay and Harpetre in his Baronage, how he has falſified this Record of Homage, of which we have examined the Original in the Tower of London.—Rot. Fin. 16 Hen. III. m. 3.

CHILDREN of *WILLIAM DE HARPETREE*, ſecond of that Name, and of *Maud Oreſcuilz*, his Wife.

I. § *THOMAS*, the eldeſt Son of *William*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. * *Pagan*, upon whom was ſettled, by the Fine above-mentioned, of the ninth of *Henry* the Third, by Conſent of his Father *William*, and Nephew *Robert de Gournay*, three Knights Fees in *Edmondeſham*, *Studdon*, and *Stures*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, and in *Sandford*, in the County of *Somerſet*, with the Homages and Services of *Michael de Bagganore*, in *Bagganore* and *Colemere*, and of *Hugh de Cumbe*, in *Cumbe*, and of *Walter de Loddresford*, in *Loddresford*, to be held after the Death of *William* his Father, of his Nephew, *Robert de Gournay*, by the Service of three Knights Fees.

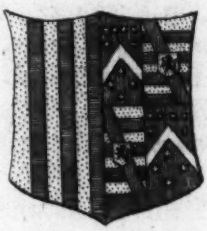
OF the Iſſue of this Man we can give no certain Account.

III. *WILLIAM*, a younger Son of *William de Harpetree*. It appears by Record, that in the Third of *John* he paid a Fine of five Marks to the King, for Leave to make Inquiſition, whether *Walter*, the Son of *Thomas* (which *Walter* was Nephew to the ſaid *William*) had ten Pounds of annual Rents in *Weſt-Harpetree* and *Porteſhead*, which he had given to him by his Deed, becauſe that the Condition of the ſaid Deed (confirmed in the King's Grant) was, that as on the one hand, if the Gift did not amount to ſo much, the ſaid *William* was to make it good, ſo on the other hand, the ſaid *Walter* was obliged to return the Overplus if ſuch there ſhould be found to be.

§ See Fine diverſ. Comitat 9 Hen. III. ut ſupra.
* Ibid.

CHAP. V.

THOMAS, *the Son of* William de Harpetré, *Lord of* Harpetré.



THE firſt Notice we find of *Thomas*, the eldeſt Son of *William de Harpetre*, and of *Maud Oreſcuilz*, his Wife, is in the Book of *Bermondſey* *, in which he is ſaid to have been a Witneſs, in Conjunction with *Eva*, called *de Gournay*, his Wife, Siſter to *Maurice de Gaunt*, and with *Robert*, his Son and Heir, by his ſaid Wife *Eva*, to the Grant which *Hawiſa de Gournay* then made, in Conjunction with *Roger de Baalun* (her laſt Huſband) and *Roger de Baalun*, the Son of the ſaid *Hawiſa* and *Roger*, of the Church of *Ingleſcombe*, to the Monks of that Place. —The Date of this Act (which he alſo confirmed) is ſeemingly aſcertained to the Year 1112, by the *Monaſticon Anglicanum*, but could not have been ſo ancient,

* Ex Libro de Bermondſey, fol. 184.

cient, becauſe *William*, the Father of this *Thomas*, was living above an hundred and thirteen Years after that pretended Date, *viz.* in the Ninth of *Henry* the Third, 1225; but others place it in the beginning of the Reign of King *John*, which appears to be the Truth.

*NOT long after this, as it is preſumed, the ſaid *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, is charged by the Crown for ſixty Marks due for his Lands in *Ingleſcombe* aforeſaid, which he had from *Hawiſa de Gournay*.

†IN the ſame Record, by the Name of *Thomas*, the Son of *William de Harpetre*, he is charged an hundred Marks for a Licence of Accord with *Simon*, the Son of *John le Monk*, againſt the ſaid *Thomas* and his Father *William*.

§AND in the ſame Year, being then a Baron, he was alſo charged ten Marks for five Knights Fees which he held of the Honour of *Glouceſter*.

WHEN he died is not certainly to be diſcovered, but it is evident enough that he was not alive in the Ninth of *Henry* the Third, when the Fine above-mentioned was levied between his Father *William* and his Son *Robert de Gournay*.

HIS Wife, as we have already ſhewn by the Records cited here, and in the Account of the Family of *Gant*, was *Eva*, Siſter and Heir of *Maurice* (ſurnamed *de Gant*) and Daughter of *Robert*, Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, by *Alice*, the Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Gant* of *Folkingham*, Brother, and at length Heir of *Gilbert de Gaunt*, Earl of *Lincoln*; which *Eva* was Heir of the Great Houſes of *Fitzharding* and *Gournay*, *Gant* and *Paganel*, which fully appears from the Deduction of thoſe Families in the third Chapter of the ſixth Book of this Work, where we have ſhewn how the Rights of all theſe Houſes together, with thoſe of the ſecond Houſe of *Gournay*, and that of *de la More*, centered at length in that of *Perceval*, now Earls of *Egmont*.

* Rot. Pip. Dorſ. Somſ. nova Oblata, 3 Johan.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

ISSUE of *THOMAS DE HARPETRE*, and of *Eva*, ſurnamed *de Gournay*, Siſter and Heir of *Maurice*, ſurnamed *de Gant*, Daughter of *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*.

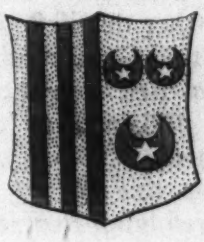
* *ROBERT*, ſurnamed *de Gournay*, the eldeſt Son and Heir of *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*, of whom in the next Chapter.

---

* See Fine Hill. 9 Hen. III. diverſ. Comitat. nº. 36. ut ſupra.

CHAP. VI.

ROBERT DE HARPETRE, *who firſt aſſumed the Name of* Gournay, *a Great Baron, Lord of* Harpetré, Ingleſcombe, Overwere, *&c.*



THIS *Robert*, the Son of *Thomas*, the Son of *William*, the Son of *John de Harpetre*, was the firſt of this Line and Family who aſſumed the Name of *Gournay*, after which it continued with all his Deſcendants.

THE wanton Courſe of Surnames in the elder Ages, is remarkably diſcovered in this Family; for being originally ſprung, (as it appears to us demonſtrably) from the Houſe of *Yvery*, they quitted that Appellation for another, derived from the principal Lordſhip of *Arpetree*, which became their Portion; and again,

a third time changed it for the Name of *Gournay*, as we have here obſerved. The ſame capricious Habit is diſcovered in the Female Side of this Houſe; for *Eva*, the Mother of this *Robert de Gournay*, being a Daughter of *Robert*, the Son of *Robert*, the Son of *Harding*, Anceſtor to the Houſe of *Berkely*, ought, according to modern Cuſtom, to have borne the Name of *Berkely*, which neither *ſhe* nor her *Brother Maurice* did,—*he* being ſtiled (from his Mother) who was Daughter and Heir of *Robert de Gant*, Baron of *Folkingham*, by the Name of *Gant*, in reſpect to that Princely Houſe; and *ſhe*, (in regard to * *Hawiſa de Gournay*, her Grandmother, (as we preſume) the Wife of *Robert*, the Son of *Harding*, whoſe Heir ſhe was, and from whom ſhe derived the Lordſhip of *Barewe*, which is ſaid by Record to have been part of the Lands of *Robert Fitzharding*) aſſuming the Name of *Gournay*, a Family of great Eminence, as appears from ancient Hiſtory and Record, which is farther manifeſted by the Practice of the ſaid *Hawiſa* (the Grandmother of this *Eva*) who, though twice married into the Great Houſes of *Berkely* and *Baalun*, diſdained to quit her Maiden Name for either of them.

How it came that this *Robert de Harpetre*, of whom we here treat, reſolving to quit his paternal Appellation, was determined in his Choice in the Name of *Gournay*, rather than of *Gaunt*, to which he was equally intitled, is a Matter of Curioſity not eaſily ſatisfied at ſo great a Diſtance of Time.—— Though we preſume the Reaſon to have been, that the ſaid *Hawiſa de Gournay* being deceaſed before his Uncle *Maurice de Gant*, he had firſt aſſumed her Surname, which he did not afterwards think fit to change again. —But it is certain, that he had already made his Election in

* We have already obſerved, that we are not exactly informed by Record, how the Deſcent accrued from Hawiſa de Gournay, to this Line here ſpoken of; but this Deſcent, from her to Eva, ſeems highly probable, by the paſſing of the Inheritance of the Lordſhip of Barewe.

in favour of that of *Gournay* before the Ninth of *Henry* the Third, as appears by a ‡ Record which we have already quoted; * and that under that Name, after the Death of *Maurice de Berkely*, or *de Gant*, his Uncle, whoſe Heir the Record affirms he was, he had Livery of the Manor of *Paclet*, part of the Poſſeſſions of the ſaid *Maurice*, which he had claimed by *Andrew Lutterel* not long before; ‖ ſo likewiſe of all his Lands in the County of *Glouceſter*, excepting the Manors of *Beverſtan*, *Weſton*, *Radwick*, *Oure*, and *Albrington*, and made his ſolemn Proteſtation in the King's Preſence, that he did not lay any Claim to the three Hundreds of *Berminſter*, *Harecliff*, and *Portbury*, acknowledging, that the ſaid *Maurice*, his Uncle, had no Title in them but for Term of Life; ſo that after his Deceaſe, they were to come to *Thomas de Berkely*, and his Heirs; and in the Sixteenth of *Henry* the Third, had Liberty to pay the Remainder of the hundred Pounds due for his Relief, being ſeventy-five Pounds, by twenty-five Pounds each half Year; in which Year alſo he performed his Homage for one Knight's Fee in the County of *Somerſet* §, deſcended to him by the Death of *William*, his Grandfather, Son of *John*, and Brother of another *John de Harpetree*.

ABOUT which Time he had Licence to pay ſeventy-five, the Remainder of the one hundred Pounds, due for the Relief of his Barony, being twenty-five Pounds each half Year.

IN the ſame Reign, but the Time is uncertain, the ſaid *Robert de Gournay* obtained a Fair and Market, and other Franchiſes †, in his Manor of *Were*, in the County of *Somerſet*; which Manors were granted firſt by *William the Conqeror* to *Walter de Doway*, and came afterwards to *William Painell*, and by his Daughter and

‡ Fin. diverſ. Comitat. Hill 9 Hen. III. 1.°. 36.
* Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. m. 8.
‖ Rot. Fin. 15 Hen. III. Memb. 9. & Claſ. 15 Hen. III. m. 21.
§ Rot. Fin. 16. Hen. III. m. 3.
† Placit. coram Juſtic. Itinerant. 8 Ed. I. Rot. 65. Rex.

and Heir to *Robert de Gant*, and by his Daughter and Heir to *Robert*, the Son of *Robert Fitzharding*, by *Eva*, his Daughter (the Siſter of *Maurice*, ſurnamed *de Gant*) to him the ſaid *Robert de Gournay*, her Son and Heir.———This Manor, originally one, was afterwards divided into two Parts, under the Names of *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, which though they make together but one Town, *Overwere* lies in the Hundred of *Bempſton*, and *Netherwere* in that of *Wynterſtock*; of which, together with *Baggeworth*, it makes together one Tything.

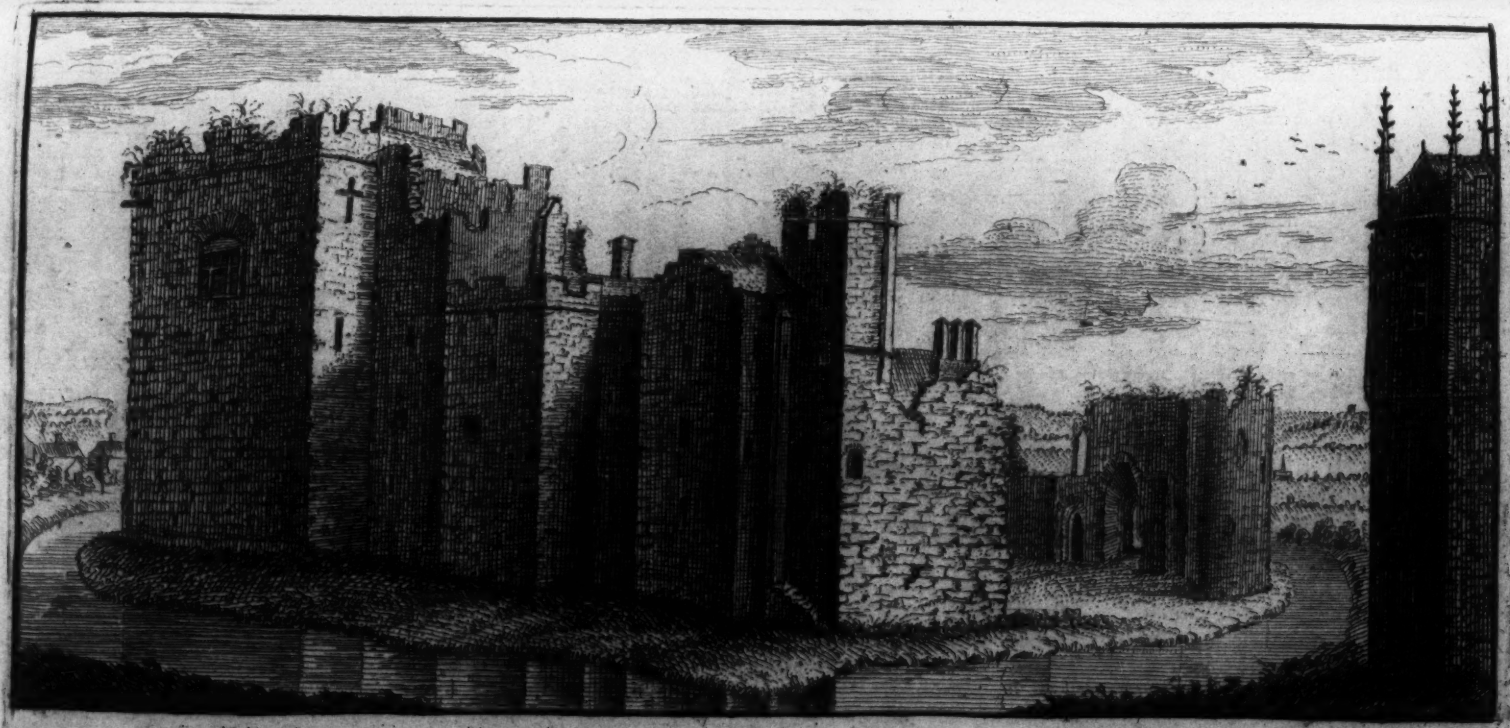
FURTHERMORE *, in the twenty-ſixth of *Henry* the Third, this *Robert* gave twenty Pounds to the King, to be excuſed from attending him at that Time into *Gaſcoigne*; and in the forty-firſt of the ſame Reign he had Summons to be at *Briſtol* in the Octaves of *St. Peter ad Vincula*, well fitted with Horſe and Arms, to march with him into *Wales*. Alſo in the forty-ſecond of the ſame Reign to be at *Cheſter* upon the Feaſt-Day of the Nativity of St. *John Baptiſt* for the like Purpoſe; and in the forty-ſeventh of the ſame Reign to be at *Hereford* ſhortly after the Feaſt of the *Epiphany*, accordingly fitted with Horſe and Arms, to reſtrain the Hoſtilities of the *Welſh*.

† AND having founded the Hoſpital of *Gant* (alias *Billeſwicke*) near *Briſtol*, for the Health of his own Soul, and for the Soul of *Maurice de Gant*, his Uncle, departed this Life in the fifty-third of *Henry* the Third, being then ſeized of the Manor of *Cernecote*, in the County of *Wilts*; as alſo of the Manors of *Harpetre*, *Barewe*, and *Ingleſcombe*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, with divers Fees in the Counties of *Somerſet*, *Dorſet*, and *Wilts*, to the ſame Manors belonging, amounting in all to twenty-two Knights Fees and an half; and likewiſe of the Manors of *Beverſtan*, *Weſton*, *Halberton*, *Radewicke*, *Owre*, and *Pureton*, all in the County of *Glouceſter*.

CHIL-

* Dugdale's Baronage, ſub tit. Gournay.

§ Eſcaet. poſt Mort. Roberti de Gournay, 53 Hen. III. n. 22.



Beverstan Castle in the County of Gloucester, the Antient Seat of the Barons of Gournay.



CHILDREN of *ROBERT DE GOURNAY*, and of *Hawiſa de Longchamp*, who was his Wife, as appears by the *Clauſ. Rot.* 53 *Hen.* III. *m.* 5.

I. * *ANSELM*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. † *JOHN DE GOURNAY*, who had the Lordſhip of *Were*, i. e. *Overwere* and *Netherwere*, for his Portion; for it appears § that this *John de Gournay*, in the Fourth of *Edward* the Firſt, being then Lord of *Were*, had Aſſize of Bread, together with the Benefit of Waifs and Eſtrays, and other Liberties therein, but he died ſoon after without Iſſue; for in the Eighth of the ſame Reign, his Brother *Anſelm* had Poſſeſſion of that Inheritance.

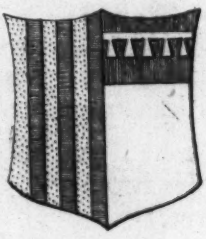
* Eſch. poſt mort. Roberti de Gournay, 53 Hen. III. n°. 23.

† Vide Inquiſit. in Bagâ de Ragman, An. 4 Edw. I. Somſ. rot. 12. dorſo m. de Bloeden.

§ Ibid.

CHAP. VII.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY, *Lord of* Eaſt-Harpetree, Weſt-Harpetree, &c.



ANSELM, Son and Heir of *Robert de Gournay*, having done his * Homage for his Father's Eſtate ſoon after his Deceaſe, was returned by the Jury of † *Wynſterſtock* Hundred (his younger Brother being then dead) to hold of the King *in Capite*, the Manor of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, by the Half of one Knight's Fee, on which depended the Manor of *Weſt-Harpetree*, as will appear hereafter.

‡ AT which Time alſo, the Hundred of *Heretborne* preſented, that the Manor of *Crofton*, which then belonged to the ſaid *Anſelm*, was formerly forfeited to the King, by the Rebellion of *Henry de Sancto-Hillario*, a *Norman*; that the ſaid Manor was worth 15 *l. per ann.* and

* Fines 53 Hen. III. m. 7.
† Inquiſit. in Bagâ de Ragman, 4 Edw. I. Somſ. rot. 12.
‡ Ibid. rot. 13.

and that the King gave it to *Hugh de Byvun*, or *Vivoun*, and that *Hugh de Vivoun* gave it in Marriage to the ſaid *Anſelm*, with his Daughter, to be held of him and his Heirs.

BETWEEN which Year and the ſeventh of *Edward* the Firſt, it appears, (though the Record is not now to be found) that he gave that Part of the Manor of *Were*, now called *Overwere*, to his * younger Son *Robert de Gournay*, in whom, and in his Poſterity, it is found ever after to have been. ——— For in the ſaid ſeventh of *Edward* the Firſt, being then in the *Scotiſh* Wars, he the ſaid *Anſelm de Gournay* obtained of that Prince a Grant, that himſelf, and all his Burghers of *Netherwere*, (by which it ſhould ſeem that he was no longer poſſeſſed of the other Part of the ſaid Manors) ſhould be free from Payment of any Cuſtoms throughout the whole Realm of *England*; as alſo, that they ſhould enjoy all Privileges granted to *Maurice de Gant*, his Anceſtor.

† THE next Year after, *viz.* the eighth of *Edward* the Firſt, a *Quo Warranto* was brought againſt the ſaid *Anſelm de Gournay*, for the Franchiſes uſed by him in his Manors of *Were*, *Crofton*, *Ingleſcombe*, *Ferenton*, and *Arpetree*, in which he pleads the Charter of *Henry* the Third to his Father, *Robert de Gournay*, before-mentioned.

‡ AND now, finding his Health decay, and himſelf drawing near to his End, he thought it time to provide for his youngeſt Son, as yet unprovided for; and accordingly, upon the *Sunday* after the Feaſt of the Tranſlation of St. *Thomas* the Martyr, in the thirteenth of the ſame Reign, he granted by Deed the Manor of *Ferenton*, to him and the Heirs of his Body, to be held for ever, by the annual Service of a Roſe, to be paid upon the Feaſt of the Nativity of Saint

* Vide Miſcellan. B. 2. by Glover, Somerſet. in Officio Armor. Londini.

† Placita coram Juſtic. Itinerant. 8 Edw. I. Rot. 65. Rex.

‡ Eſch. poſt mort. Thomæ de Gournay, 13 Edw. III. n° 37.

John the Baptiſt. And again, in the Year following he granted the Manor of *Ingleſcombe* to the ſaid *Thomas* his Son, under the Service of twelve Croſs-Bow Shot.

* In which Year he died, being then ſeized of the Manor of *Beverſtan*, *Awerton*, *Weſton*, and *Oure*, in the County of *Glouceſter*; leaving his Wife *Sibilla*, the Daughter of *Hugh Vivoun*, jointured in the Manor of *Ailburton*, *Oure*, and *King's-Weſton*, [*Weſton.*]——— Of *Robert* and *John* we ſhall in their Places come to ſpeak.

CHILDREN of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, and of *Sibilla de Vivoun*, his Wife.

I. *JOHN DE GOURNAY*, of whom in the next Chapter.

II. *ROBERT DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*; of whom, and his Iſſue, in Chapter the fourteenth.

III. *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*, &c. of whom, and his Deſcendants, in Chapter the tenth.

---

* Dugdale, ſub tit. Gournay.

CHAP. VIII.

JOHN DE GOURNAY, *Baron of* Harpetrè, *Lord of* Farringdon, *&c.*



JOHN DE GOURNAY*, Son and Heir of the ſaid *Anſelm*, being twenty-ſix Years of Age at the Death of his Father, did his Fealty the enſuing Year, *viz.* the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, and had Livery of all the Lands of his Inheritance.

† BUT we find that long before his Father's Death, *viz.* ſix Years, in the ninth of *Edward* the Firſt, having then wedded *Oliva*, the Daughter of *Henry Luvel*, Baron of *Kari*, he and his Lady impleaded *Hugh* Lord *Luvel*, Son and Heir of the ſaid *Henry*, for the Sum of one hundred Marks, which the ſaid *Henry* Lord *Luvel* had bound himſelf, upon the *Sunday* after the Feaſt of Saint *Philip* and *Jacob*, in the ſecond Year of the ſaid King, to pay, for the Marriage-Portion of the ſaid

* Dugdale, ſub tit. Gournay. Rot. Fin. 15 Edw. I. m. 7.
† Placit de Banco, 9 Edw. I.

ſaid *Oliva*, within the Space of the two next enſuing Years, out of his Manor of *Kari*, which Sum being then unpaid, the ſaid *Hugh* Lord *Luvel* engaged to ſatisfy the Debt in one Year, by four equal Payments of twenty-five Marks each, the firſt Payment to begin upon the Feaſt of the Nativity of our bleſſed Lord, in the ninth of *Edward* the Firſt.

* It appears farther, that in the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, the Year after he came to his Eſtate, this *John*, there by the Name of *John* the Son and Heir of *Anſelm de Gournay*, confirmed to the Abbot of *St. Peter's*, *Glouceſter*, and his Succeſſors, certain Lands and Rents in *Beverſtan*, to the Value of five Shillings a-year, and the Advowſon of the Church of *Beverſtan*, which had been given to the ſaid Church in Frank-Almoign by his Father *Anſelm*, which ſaid Premiſes being holden of the King *in Capite*, *Anſelm* had procured the King's Licence to alienate in Mortmain, which Licence is enrolled *in Placita coram Juſticiar. Itinerant. in Glouceſt.* the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, *Rot.* 29. *dorſo Satiam.*

† It appears farther, that this *John de Gournay* ſome Time before his Death deviſed to *Robert de Gournay*, of *Overwere*, (his Brother) and to *Margaret* his Wife, for the Term of both their Lives, a Rent of ſeventy-two Shillings, and its Appurtenances, in *Netherwere*. ——‖ But he did not very long ſurvive, for he died in the fifteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, in the thirty-firſt Year of his Age; leaving *Oliva*, Daughter of *Henry* Lord *Luvel* of *Kari*, before-mentioned, ſeiſed in Jointure of the Manors of *Eaſt-Harpetree* and *Barewe-Gournay*, and the Caſtle of *Arpetree*, in the County of *Somerſet*, two Parts of the Manor of *Radwiche* and *Northwiche*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, and the Manor

* Placit. coram Juſtic. Itinerant. 15 Edw. I. Rot. 29. dorſo, Saham.

† Miſcellan. B. 2. by Glover, Somerſet, in the Office of Arms at London.

‖ Ibid.

nor of *Eaſt-Hamptonet*, in *Suſſex*, in Jointure, which ſhe held till her Death *, which happened five Years after that of her Huſband, *viz.* in the twenty-fourth of the ſame Reign.

ISSUE of Sir *JOHN DE GOURNAY*, Baron of *Gournay*, and of *Oliva*, Daughter of *Henry* Lord *Luvel* of *Kari*, his Wife.

1. ‖ *ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY*, ſole Daughter and Heir; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

* Eſch. 24 Edw. I. n° 28.
‖ Ibid.

CHAP. IX.

ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY, *ſole Heireſs of* John de Gournay, *and Wife of* John Ap-Adam, *a Baron.*



ELIZABETH DE GOURNAY‖, the Daughter and ſole Heir of *John de Gournay*, Baron of *Gournay*, and of *Oliva Luvel*, his Wife, though but ſixteen Years old at her Father's Death, was then married to *John Ap-Adam*; who doing his Fealty, had Livery of all the Lands of her Inheritance.

*WHICH *Elizabeth*, in the twenty-fourth of *Edward* the Firſt, upon the Death of *Oliva* her Mother, became alſo Heir to thoſe Lands which ſhe held in Jointure, and is ſaid in the Record to be then twenty-one Years old.

BUT

* Eſch. 25 Edw. I. n° 28, ut ſupra.
‖ Ibid.

BUT her Iſſue at length wholly failed; and that great Inheritance was profuſely ſquandered away, as may be ſeen in the Account of the Barons of *Ap-Adam*, in Sir *William Dugdale*, to which the Reader is referred.

BEFORE we carry our Enquiries farther into theſe Branches of this Family, which ſprung from *Robert* and *Thomas de Gournay*, younger Sons of *Anſelm*, and Brothers of *John de Gournay*, laſt mentioned, it is proper to take Notice of another Houſe of this Name, which, without due Care, may be confounded with the Iſſue of the reſt, though not, as we can find, connected to them by any fair Authority.

* THE firſt of this Line that we have met with, was *Hugh de Gournay*, who has been placed by Conjecture (but without any reaſonable Grounds) as ſecond Son to *Thomas de Gournay*, the younger Son of *Anſelm* before-mentioned, which Opinion we the rather reject, as it does not appear that he inherited any Portion of that Eſtate which belonged to that Line of *Ingleſcombe*, of which the ſaid *Thomas* was then the Chief. And though it is found, not long after, that the Iſſue of the ſaid *Hugh de Gournay* became poſſeſſed of *Arpetree*, which was Part of the Eſtate of the eldeſt Branch of this Houſe, yet as that could not have come to him by Deſcent, if he were the ſecond Son of *Ingleſcombe*, ſo does it plainly appear, that he obtained it by another Title, *viz.* that of Gift, or Purchaſe, from the Heirs of the elder Branch, as we ſhall preſently come to ſhew.

† THAT this *Hugh de Gournay* was living in the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Firſt, and had then Lands in *Eaſt-Harpetree*, which he held, with others there, is plain from a Pleading in that Year, in anſwer to a Suit

* Collections of the Family of Gournay from Record, by the late Mr. William Whiſton, of the Tally Court,

† Ibid.

Suit commenced againſt the ſaid *Hugh*, and his Partners, for having reſcued certain Cattle impounded by Servants of *John de Ap-Adam*, (then Lord of the Fee, in Right of *Elizabeth* his Wife, Daughter and Heir of *John de Gournay*, (already treated of) which Cattle had done Damage at *Eaſt-Harpetree*, on the Lands of the ſaid *Ap-Adam*.

*WHICH *Hugh de Gournay* being dead, in the fourth of *Edward* the Third, his Wife *Joan* then ſurviving. ——It appears that the Manor of *Alynceſtre*, in the County of *Warwick*, and the Reverſion of a Plowland. twenty-two Acres of Meadow, and ſix in *Radewyke*, in the County of *Glouceſter*, after the Deceaſe of the ſaid *Joan*, and of *Hugh* the Son of the ſaid *Joan*, were limited by Fine to *Reginald de Botreaux*, and *Iſabel* his Wife (who were Plaintiffs, and Maſter *Walter de Botreaux*, Deforciant in the ſame) and to the Heirs Male of their Joint-Bodies. —— Remainder to the Heirs of *Reginald* in Fee.

‖*THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, the eldeſt Son of *Hugh de Gournay* the elder, before-mentioned, ſucceeded his Father. —— § To which *Thomas de Gournay*, and his Heirs for ever, in the ſame Year, *viz.* in the fourth of *Edward* the Third, *Thomas Ap-Adam*, Son of *Elizabeth*, the Heireſs of the eldeſt Branch of this Houſe of *Gournay*, (as we have obſerved before) making miſerable Havock of his great Inheritance, ſold the Manors of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, *Doneheved*, and *Netherwere*, in the County of *Somerſet*, and a Rent of Ten Pounds in *Welewe*, in the County of *Hants*.

BY Means of which Sale, it appears not long after, that the Houſe of *Eaſt-Harpetre* likewiſe held their Eſtates of the Deſcendants of this Family of *Gournay*, although either not related to them, or iſſued from ſome remote

---

* Collections of the Family of Gournay from Record, by the late Mr. William Whiſton of the Tally-Court.

‖ Ibid.

§ Fin. diverſ. Comitat. 4 Edw. III. n° 53.

remote or younger Branch.—*Anſelm de Gournay*, their ſuppoſed Anceſtor, having reſerved a Dependence in thoſe Eſtates, when he granted them to his younger Children, upon the Eſtate of his eldeſt Iſſue, according to the Mode of thoſe Times; which Eſtates paſſing in this Manner by Sale from that Iſſue, brought about this Subordination in the Tenure upon the *Gournays*, of which we here ſpeak, and has formerly cauſed great Error in the Account of this Family; becauſe it has appeared to thoſe uninformed of this Tranſaction, that the *Gournays* of this Houſe muſt have been the Iſſue of the elder Line.

HAVING ſufficiently cleared up the Cauſe of this Miſtake, we ſhall proceed to the Death of this *Thomas de Gournay* of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, laſt mentioned, * who died ſeiſed, in Conjunction with *Joan* his Wife, of the Manor and Caſtle of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, and the Borough of *Netherwere*, upon the Feaſt of St. *Magdalen*, in the ſeventeenth of *Edward* the Third, leaving *John de Gournay* his Son and Heir, then ten Years old, and upwards: which Age of the ſaid *John* ſerves to clear the different Families of *Eaſt-Harpetree* from each other; which, from the Similitude of their Names, and their being cotemporary, would otherwiſe have been impoſſible to have been diſtinguiſhed.

§ OF this *John de Gournay*, of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, we find nothing memorable till the thirty-third of *Edward* the Third, when he ſold the Manor of *Netherwere*, with its Privileges and Appurtenances, to *John Devereux*.

‡ IT appears in ſome old Pedigrees, which were reckoned of good Authority, that this *John* died without Iſſue; and that *Joan de Gournay*, his Siſter, was Heir, who afterwards became the Wife of *Walter Caldecot*, whoſe Daughter and Heir, *Alice*, married to *Philip*

* Eſch. in the Tower of London.
§ Fin. 33 Ed. III.
‡ Camden Ruſſet Folio of Pedigrees, penes Comitem de Egmont.

Hampton, from whoſe Great-Grand-daughter and Heireſs, *Lucia*, who took to Huſband *Thomas*, the ſecond Son of Sir *Richard*, Son of Sir *John Newton*, the Manor of *Harpetree*, in the County of *Somerſet*, came into that Family: which we the rather believe, becauſe both the *Hamptons* and the *Newtons* appear to have been poſſeſſed thereof. —— But not having ſeen Authorities ſufficient fully to deduce or verify that Deſcent, we ſhall purſue it no farther.

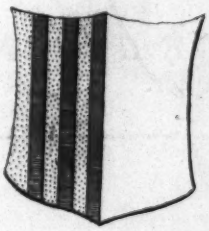
HAVING thus cleared up thoſe Difficulties which have hitherto occurred in the Account of this Great Family, we now return to treat of the remaining Branches of it.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *Lord of* Ingleſcombe, Farringdon, *and* Weſt-Harpetree, *the Firſt of that Name, youngeſt Son of* Anſelm de Gournay, *and* Sibilla de Vivoun, *his Wife.*

Look back to Chap. VII. *of this Book.*



THE elder Branch of this Family of *Gournay* being entirely extinct, we come next to *Thomas de Gournay*, and *Robert*, younger Brothers of *John de Gournay*, laſt mentioned: but which of theſe was the eldeſt is not determined yet, by any poſitive Authority; only that we have ſeen a Record, wherein *Anſelm*, the Father of theſe three Sons, grants certain Lands to *Thomas*, by theſe Words, * *Filio ſuo Juniori*, which

* Eſch. 13 Edw. III. n°. 37.

which is generally underſtood to imply, where there are more than two Children, the youngeſt of all.

Be that as it will, the Iſſue of the ſaid *Thomas* failing, not many Deſcents after, for the Convenience of this Diſcourſe, we ſhall treat in the firſt place of him.

Of this *Thomas*, the youngeſt Son of *Anſelm de Gournay*, by *Sibilla de Vivoun* his Wife, we have already had Occaſion to ſay, that not long before his Father's Death, he received from him the Manor of *Faranton*, alias *Ferenton*, or *Farringdon*, in the thirteenth of King *Edward* the Firſt, and thoſe of *Ingleſcombe* and *Weſt-Harpetre*, in the following Year.

As to the Tenures, of which Eſtates we have already ſpoken enough; all that we have to ſay farther of him is, that he was in the Wars of *Scotland* in the twenty-eighth of *Edward* the Firſt.

ISSUE of *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*.

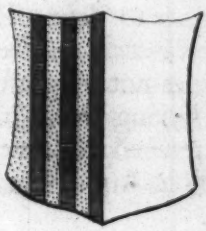
‡*THOMAS DE GOURNAY*; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

‡ Eſch. ut ſupra.

CHAP. XI.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, (*the Second of that Name*) *Lord of* Ingleſcombe, Farringdon, *and* Weſt-Harpetré.



THIS Sir *Thomas de Gournay**, together with Sir *John Maltravers*, and *William de Ogle*, having Cuſtody of the unhappy Prince King *Edward* the Second, after he had been depoſed by the Contrivances of that wicked Woman *Iſabella* of *France*, his Queen, and of *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, her Paramour, firſt carrying the ſaid Prince from *Kenelworth* to *Corſa*, and afterwards to *Berkeley-Caſtle*, at the ſaid Queen and *Mortimer*'s Deſire; and by their Command, ſignified to them by *Adam Orleton*, Biſhop of *Hereford*, one of the wicked Miniſters of that Time, did there

* Eſch. ut ſupra.

there (as it is ſaid) barbarouſly put him to a cruel Death, covering his Face that he might not be heard, and then thruſting a Pipe of Horn up his Body, thro' which they run a red-hot Iron, and burnt his Bowels.

‡ THREE Years after this inhuman Act, the Government of Affairs continuing in the ſame Hands, *viz.* in thoſe of Queen *Iſabella*, and *Mortimer*, who acted all Things in the young King's Name, and the ſaid *Thomas* being therefore for a Time unqueſtioned for it, the Manor of *Knolle*, near *Briſtol*, except a Meſſuage and Ploughland, after the Death of *William Randolph*, were limited to *William Owyle*, to the ſaid *Thomas*, the Son of *Thomas de Gournay*, and *Joan* his Wife, for Life; Remainder to *John*, Son of the ſaid *Thomas*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *George*, Brother of the ſaid *John*, and the Heirs of his Body; Remainder to *Matthew*, Brother to *John*; Remainder to the right Heirs of the ſaid *Thomas*, in Fee.

* BUT the Times not long after changing, and *Edward* the Third having freed himſelf from the Subjection of his wretched Mother, now ſet himſelf to puniſh the miſerable Authors and Inſtruments of his Father's Murder.

† WHEREUPON this Sir *Thomas Gournay* fled into foreign Parts; notwithſtanding which, at a Parliament holden the fourteenth of that Reign, he, though abſent, was, together with divers other great Men, adjudged by the Lords and Peers, the King aſſenting, a Traytor, to be drawn and hanged, as inſtrumental to that great Crime, and large Promiſes of Reward were offered for the apprehending of him.

§ NOT long after which, being ſeiſed at *Burges* in *Spain*, and by Order of the King of *Caſtile* carried to *Bayonne*, he was commanded by King *Edward* the Third, to be brought over thence to *England*.——

But

‡ Fin. Som. Trin. n° 3. Edw. III. n° 28.
* From the Hiſtories of England.
† Ibid. § Ibid.

But by certain ſecret Practices, not yet cleared up, his Execution was privately performed at Sea. ——— His Head being ſtricken off on board the Ship before his Arrival here. ——— So that ſome thought that he ſuffered Puniſhment for a Crime, with which he was not ſo much concerned as others, who were permitted to eſcape.

* AND whether it were through ſome Proof of this ſort, which afterwards came out, or whether encouraged by the Illegality of a Sentence, pronounced and executed againſt a Man unheard in his own Defence, we cannot tell, but certain it is, that four Years after, *viz.* in the eighth of *Edward* the Third, *Joan*, the Widow of this unhappy Perſon, preſented her Petition to the King and his Council in Parliament, praying to be endowed in his Manors of *Ingleſcombe*, *Farenton*, and *Weſt-Harpetree*, which did belong to her late Huſband, and were at that time in the King's Hands, (no doubt on account of the aforeſaid Treaſons) upon which it was ordered in Parliament, that the ſaid Petition ſhould be ſent into the Court of King's-Bench, and that they ſhould hear her Allegations, and do her Juſtice therein.

† IN purſuance whereof, the ſame Petition was accordingly ſent by Writ, bearing *Teſte* at *York*, the fifth of *March*, *Anno R. R. Edw.* III. 8°. and thereupon the ſaid *Joan* came and pleaded, " that *Anſelm de* " *Gournay*, Grandfather of the preſent *Thomas de* " *Gournay*, (her late Huſband) was lawfully ſeiſed in " Demeſne and in Fee, of the Manors aforeſaid; and " that being ſo ſeiſed, he had given the ſame to one " *Thomas de Gournay*, his youngeſt Son, (*Filio ſuo* " *juniori*) to be held by him the ſaid *Thomas*, and by " the Heirs of his Body, on Condition nevertheleſs, " that if the ſaid *Thomas* ſhould die without any Heir " of

* From the Hiſtories of England.

† Placit. coram Rege, Paſch. 8 Edw. III. Rot. 130.

" of his Body, lawfully begotten, that the ſaid Manor " ſhould revert to the ſaid *Anſelm de Gournay*, and his " Heirs. ——— Which *Thomas*, Son of *Anſelm*, died " ſeiſed thereof in Form aforeſaid.———After whoſe " Death, *Thomas* before-mentioned, the late Huſband " of the ſaid *Joan*, entered upon the Premiſes, as Son " and Heir of *Thomas* the Son of *Anſelm*; and that " under the Force of the ſaid Grant, he held the ſame, " until the ſaid Manors came into the Hands of the " King; and prays that Juſtice may be done, accord- " ing to the Prayer of her Petition."

UPON which Plea, a *Certiorari* was awarded to the Treaſurer and Chamberlains of the Court, to ſearch if any Inſtrument or Record could be found, whereby the ſaid *Thomas* and *Joan de Gournay* had relinquiſhed their Right therein to the King, who thereupon, in *Michaelmas* Term following, made Return, that after having ſearched the Records in their Cuſtody, they did not find that the ſaid *Thomas* and his Wife *Joan* had ever at any Time, or in any Manner, to any Perſon, releaſed, or quitted Claim to the ſaid Manors; whereupon the Court demanded of *Thomas de Thorpe*, the ſaid *Joan*'s Attorney, whether he could offer any thing ſpecial as to the Form of the ſaid Grant, who replied that he was not as then prepared in that Point, ſo that ſeveral Days were ſet over for her, or her Attorney, to produce the Original Grant, and no Judgment was then given in the Cauſe.

NOTWITHSTANDING which, it is evident enough, that not long after the Proof required was produced, for the ſaid Lands remained in the Poſſeſſion of this Houſe for a long Time after.

CHIL-

CHILDREN of *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*, the ſecond of that Name, and of *Joan* his Wife.

I. *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, the third of that Name, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. **JOHN DE GOURNAY*, the ſecond Son as appears from a Fine levied in *Trinity*-Term, in the third of *Edward* the Third, *Rot.* 28. whereby the Manor of *Knolle* was ſettled upon him, and his Iſſue, with Remainder to his Brothers *George* and *Matthew* ſucceſſively.

§ THIS *John de Gournay*, in the twenty-ſixth of *Edward* the Third, being then a Knight, and by reaſon of that Manor of *Knolle*, near *Briſtol*, in the County of *Somerſet*, (which he enjoyed under that Fine of the third of *Edward* the Third, before-mentioned) ſurnamed of that Place, making Application to the King for Leave to grant a Piece of Land, eighteen Feet in length, and as many in breadth, in which there lay a certain Fountain, called *Raven's-Well*, together with the Appurtenances thereof, in *Knolle*, and in the Suburbs of *Briſtol*, to the Prior and Brother, and Brother-Hermits of the Order of *St. Auguſtine* in that City, an Inquiſition of the Nature of a

* Fin. Som. Trin. 3 Edw. III. nº 28.

By comparing this Fine with the Eſcheat An. 17 Edw. III. nº 25. it is evident that the Fine relates to the Ingleſcombe Branch, and the Eſcheat to that of Eaſt-Harpetrèe; for John, who is found in that Eſcheat Son and Heir of Thomas de Gournay of Eaſt Harpetree, and ten Years old, could not have been born till ſome Years after the Fine above-mentioned was levied. ——— This Obſervation is neceſſary, to prevent confounding the two Branches, which is very eaſy to be done, each Family having at that Time for their Head a Thomas, each Thomas a Wife named Joan, and each Family a Son named John.

§ Inquiſit. ad quod damnum, Eſch. 26 Edw. III. nº 25.

Writ *Ad quod Dampnum* was awarded thereupon, and the Jury returned, that the Premiſes were held of the Lord *Berkeley*, by the Service of the thirtieth Part of one Knight's Fee, and that they were worth ten Pence *per annum*.

But what came afterwards of this Man, or how the ſaid Manor of *Knolle* departed from this Family, we cannot tell: but that he, and his ſecond Brother *George*, were dead, and that their Rights devolved in ſome Years after upon their youngeſt Brother *Matthew*, is proved by Record.

III. * *GEORGE DE GOURNAY*, mentioned in the Fine of the third of *Edward* the Third, above-mentioned. He died without Iſſue, as appears by the Courſe of the Succeſſion which his younger Brother obtained.

IV. ‖ *MATTHEW DE GOURNAY*, who became a Knight of moſt conſummate Skill and Reputation; and having dedicated himſelf early to the Uſe of Arms, was preſent in all the famous Engagements of the Age in which he lived, being recorded upon his Monument, at *Stoke under Hambden*, in the County of *Somerſet*, where he lies buried **, to have ſerved in the Battles and Engagements of *Benamazin*, *Sluice*, *Creſſy*, *Ingenny*, *Poictiers*, of *Nazaron* in *Spain*, and in the Siege of *Algezira*, againſt the *Saracens*.

† In Conſideration of ſome of theſe Services, no doubt, it was, that being taken again into the Favour of King *Edward*, his Father before obſerved, he obtained a Licence from the Crown, in the thirtieth of that Reign for Sir *Nickolas Poyntz*

---

* Fin. Somſ. 3 Edw. III. ut ſupra.

‖ Ibid.

** Leland's Itinerary, and Camden.

† Pat. 30 Edw. III. p. 1. m. 7. & A. 32 Edw III p. 2. m. 10. Somerſ.

Poyntz to grant the Manor of *Cory-Malet*, to him and to his Heirs.

§ IN the fiftieth of the ſame Reign (upon the *Monday* next after the Feaſt of St. *George*) being unfortunately taken Priſoner in the Wars of *France*, with divers other Knights of great Renown, he joined in a Petition with Sir *Matthew Redman*, Sir *Thomas Fogg*, Sir *John Harpden*, Sir *Gregory Seas*, Sir *Geoffry Weſkeſley*, Sir *Robert Twyford*, Sir *John Bourchier*, and divers other Knights and Eſquires, to the Parliament then ſitting at *Weſtminſter*, praying the King to ranſom them, they being unable to anſwer the Conditions impoſed upon them by the *French* on that Account.

‡ IN the ſeventh of *Richard* the Second, *Alice de Beauchamp*, his firſt Wife, (Relict of Sir *John Beauchamp de Hache*) and Siſter of *Thomas Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, then dying without Iſſue, the ſaid Earl of *Warwick* is found to be her next Heir.

IN the thirteenth of the ſame Reign, upon the twenty-ſeventh of *May*, he was one of thoſe great Men who attended the King in the Great Chamber of the Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, upon that famous Trial for Arms between *Scroop* and *Groſvenor*, which we have ſpoken of at large in the Preface to this Work.

* HE married to his ſecond Wife *Philippa*, Siſter and Coheir of *John*, Lord *Talbot*, of *Richard's-Caſtle*, (who afterwards became the Wife of Sir *John Tiptoft*, Knight,) and being then far advanced in Years, and without Iſſue, (for what Reaſon does not appear) in the fifth of *Henry* the Fourth, 1404, in *Michaelmas* Term, he, in Conjunction with the ſaid *Philippa*, levied a Fine, and conveyed to divers Perſons, in Truſt, his Manor

§ Parl. apud Weſt. 50 Edw. III. die Lunæ poſt feſt. S. Georgii.
‡ Miſcellanea B. 2. in Officio Armor. by Glover, Somerſet.
* Fin. diverſ. Comitat. 5 Hen. IV. Mich. n° 66.

Manor and Advowſon of *Sheperton*, in the County of *Middleſex*, a Moiety of the Manor, and the whole Advowſon of *Sifferſon*, in the County of *Devon*, and the Manor of *Stoke under Hamden*, *Cory-Malett*, *Ingleſcombe*, *Weliveton*, *Telisford*, *Lanerton*, *Harpetree*, *Weſt-Harpetree*, *Farenton*, *Stratton*, *Uppe*, *Foſſe*, *Milton*, *Fauconberge*, *Ryme*, *Langlow*, and *Heynyns*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Shepton-Mallet*, in the County of *Somerſet*, and the Advowſon of *Cori-Mallet*, *Teſtiford*, *Stratton*, *Uppe*, *Foſſe*, and *Shipton-Mallet*, and of the Free-Chaple of *Stoke under Hampden*, and the Advowſons of *Ryme* and *Kingſton-Magne*, in the County of *Dorſet*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Sellinges* in *Kent*, a Moiety of the Manor of *Magor*, in the Lordſhip of *Chepſtow*, in *Wales*, of ——— in the County of *Glouceſter*, and the Manor of *Maydencote*, in the County of *Bucks*.

§ The Uſes of which Fine was not long after fully declared to be to himſelf and his Wife, for their Lives, and to the King after their Deceaſe. —— For in the ſame Year, *viz.* the fifth of King *Henry* the Fourth, the ſaid King granted the Reverſion of all the Lands of the ſaid *Matthew de Gournay*, which he then held for Life, under the Grants of the King, his Anceſtors, or Predeceſſors, after the Deceaſe of the ſaid Sir *Matthew* to *Joan* his Queen in Jointure.———† And after his Deceaſe, *viz.* in the eighth of the ſame Reign, the Manors of *Milton* and *Fawcombergue*, in the County of *Somerſet*, together with *Ingleſcombe*, and ſeveral other Manors, afore-mentioned, were granted in Dower by the King to the ſaid *Philippa*, the Widow of the ſaid *Matthew* *; whereupon, in that or the following Year, ſhe married again to Sir *John Tiptoft*, Knight.

This

§ Pat. 5 Hen. IV. p. 2. m. 7.
† Clauſ. An. 8 Hen. IV. m. 29.
* Pat. An. 9 Hen. IV. p. 1. m. 3.

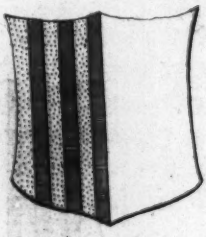
THIS *Matthew de Gournay* ‡, who is recorded to have been a Baron of *Guienne* in *France*, having thus defeated the remaining Branch of his Family, *viz.* the Iſue of *Robert de Gournay* of *Overwere*, of this his great Inheritance, to whom, by Virtue of the Entail of old *Anſelm*, it had otherwiſe reverted, died without Iſſue at the Age of Ninety-ſix, in the ſixth Year of King *Henry* the Fourth, 1405, being the laſt of the *Gournays* of the Line of *Ingleſcombe*.

‡ Miſcell. B. 2. in Offic. Armor. Lond.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *the third of that Name, Lord of* Ingleſcombe, Farrington, *and* Weſt-Harpetré.



*THOMAS DE GOURNAY**, the eldeſt Son, and third of that Name, ſucceeded to thoſe Manors of *Ingleſcombe*, *Farenton*, and *Weſt-Harpetree*, by Virtue of the Settlement before-mentioned; but long he did not enjoy the ſame §, for it is ſufficiently clear, that he died between the ſame eighth and thirteenth Years of *Edward* the Third.

ISSUE of *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*, the third of that Name, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*.

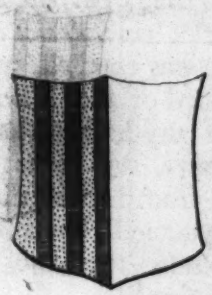
THOMAS DE GOURNAY†, the fourth of that Name, Lord of *Ingleſcombe*; of whom in the next Chapter.

* Inquiſit capt. apud Wel'es, in Com. Somſ. die Lunæ prox. ante feſti S. Hillarii, An. 13 Edw. III. § Ibid. † Ibid.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *the fourth of that Name, Lord of* Ingleſcombe, Farringdon, *and* Weſt-Harpetré.



IN the thirteenth of *Edward* the Third *, upon a Suit commenced, as it appears, by *Thomas de Gournay*, the third of this Line, in order to eſtabliſh his Right to the ſaid Lands, an Inquiſition was taken before *Richard Luvel*, at *Wells* in the County of *Somerſet*, upon the *Monday* next after the Feaſt of Saint *Hillary*, for the Lands of which *Thomas de Gournay*, the Father of this laſt *Thomas* had died ſeiſed.

† IN which Inquiſition are at large ſet forth the reſpective Grants of *Anſelm de Gournay* to *Thomas Gournay*,

* Inquiſit. ut ſupra.
† Ibid.

nay, his youngeſt Son, of thoſe Manors of *Ingleſcombe*, *Farenton*, and *Weſt-Harpetree*, before-mentioned, of which having already ſpoken ſufficiently before, we ſhall only add here, that the two firſt of the ſaid Manors were then held of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Eaſt-Harpetree*, (of whoſe Branch we have formerly diſcourſed at large,) and that of *Weſt-Harpetree* of *Richard* Lord *Luvel*, (of *Caſtle-Kari*, as we preſume;) the ſaid *Thomas de Gournay* the fourth being then almoſt twenty-one Years of Age, *viz.* on the Octave of the Purification of the Virgin *Mary* next enſuing.

§ How long the ſaid *Thomas* afterwards ſurvived, we cannot tell, but this we know, that he, or Iſſue from him, out-lived the twenty-ſixth of that Reign, 1353. —— His eldeſt Uncle, *John de Gournay*, upon whom the ſaid Eſtate was entailed, as we have ſeen, not being then poſſeſſed of this Inheritance, but that he and all his Iſſue, if any he had, as alſo of his two Uncles *John* and *George*, did ſome Years after entirely fail, is fully proved from hence, that *Matthew de Gournay*, his third and youngeſt Uncle, became ſeiſed thereof.

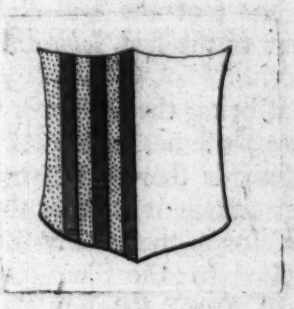
And here ended the Line of the *Gournays* of the Branch of *Ingleſcombe*.

---

§ See the Records before quoted, which fully verify this.

CHAP. XIV.

ROBERT DE GOURNAY, *Lord of* Overwere, *Son of* Anſelm de Gournay, *and* Sibilla de Vivoans, *or* Vivoun, *his Wife.*



HAVING now finiſhed our Account of all the former Branches of the Houſe of *Gournay*, we come next to *Robert de Gournay* *, Lord of *Overwere*, ſecond Son of *Anſelm de Gournay*, and *Sibilla*, the Daughter of *Hugh de Vivoun*, whoſe Iſſue were the laſt that ſurvived of this great Family, and from whom alone, as we can find with Certainty, remain any Deſcendants at this Day.

§ WHICH *Robert de Gournay*, as we have formerly obſerved, received of his Father *Anſelm* that great

* Miſcellanea B. 2. in Officio Armor. by Glover, Somerſet.
§ Ibid.

Manor of *Overwere*, near *Axebridge*, in the County of *Somerſet*.

* WHICH *Robert* likewiſe, ſome time between the fourteenth and nineteenth of *Edward* the Firſt, received from his elder Brother *John de Gournay*, a Rent of ſeventy-two Shillings out of the Manor of *Netherwere*, thereto adjoining, for the Lives of him the ſaid *Robert*, and *Margaret* his Wife, and the Survivor of them.

† WHICH *John de Gournay* being then dead, *Oliva* his Widow, the next Year, *viz.* in the twentieth of the ſaid Reign, conteſted the Right of the ſaid *Robert* and *Margaret* thereto; who thereupon ſet forth their Title, which they derived under the Grant before obſerved, and vouched Sir *John Ap-Adam* and *Elizabeth de Gournay*, the Niece of the ſaid *Robert*, to warrant the ſame, as Heirs to the ſaid *John de Gournay* his Brother, the Grantor.

§ WHICH Suit being then ſet over to the following Term, was, as we preſume, in Conteſt for ſome Years after, but the Records thereto relating, we have not ſeen. ——— Yet certain it is, that the ſaid *Oliva* did recover the ſame, for in the twenty-fifth of that Reign a Precept was iſſued to the Sheriff of *Somerſetſhire*, from the Court of *King's-Bench* in the *Trinity* Term, to put *Elizabeth de Gournay* and *John Ap-Adam*, as Heirs to the ſaid *Oliva*, then deceaſed, in Poſſeſſion of the ſaid *Rent* in *Netherwere*. ——— In which Precept it appears, that upon the Recovery of the ſaid Right againſt *Robert de Gournay* and *Margaret* his Wife, the ſaid *Robert* and *Margaret*, to elude the Force of that Judgment, had artfully paſſed the Premiſſes to *William de Marcia*, then Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*, in ſuch ſort, that when the Sheriff came to execute

* Placit. coram Juſticiar. de Banco, Somerſ. Mich. 20 & 21 Edw. I. rot. 178.

† Ibid.

§ Placit. coram Juſtic. de Banco, Somſ. Hill. 22 Edw. I & Mich. Rot. 181. dorſo. ——— Alſo, Placit. coram Juſtic. de Banco, Trin. 25 Edw. I. rot. 88. Somſ.

ecute the former Order of the Court, to give Seiſin to the Heirs of the ſaid *Oliva*, he could not perform the ſame, the ſaid Biſhop then appearing to be ſeiſed thereof. ——— Whereupon the ſaid Sheriff making that Return to the Court, he was ordered to appear upon the Premiſſes in the Preſence of good and lawful Witneſſes, there to cite the ſaid *Robert* and *Margaret*, and the ſaid Biſhop; which he accordingly did. In conſequence whereof, the ſaid Biſhop, and the ſaid *John Ap-Adam*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, did appear, but *Robert* and *Margaret* did not obey the Summons. And the Biſhop having nothing to ſay, why Judgment ſhould not be given as before, the Execution thereof was enjoined a-new.

* THAT the like colluſive Management was alſo practiſed with reſpect to the ſaid Manor of *Overwere*, between the ſaid *Robert de Gournay*, and the ſaid *William de Marchia*, Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*; is evident enough; for the ſaid Biſhop dying five Years after, in the thirty-firſt of *Edward* the Firſt, it appears in the Inquiſition taken at *Overwere*, in the County of *Somerſet*, after his Death, that the ſaid *Robert de Gournay* had made over to him, the Biſhop, the Manor of *Overwere*, to be held (according to the firſt Grant) by the Service of half of one Knight's Fee, of the capital Lords of the Fee, *viz.* of *John Ap-Adam*, in Right of *Elizabeth* his Wife, the Daughter of *John de Gournay*, by the annual Payment of ſix barbed Arrows, in lieu of all other Service: and that thereupon the ſaid Biſhop before his Death, *viz.* upon the *Saturday* after *Aſcenſion-Day* the ſame Year, the thirtieth of *Edward* the Firſt, had by his Letters-Patent appointed *Richard de Bradenie* to receive the Seiſin thereof, from *John de Hampton*, his Attorney, which *Richard de Bradenie*, by his Attorney, the Rector of *Brem*, did accordingly accept the ſame the ſame Day, and took an Oath of Fealty of ſome of the Tenants, and received a Penny from

* Eſch poſt mort. Willielmi de Marchia, Epiſc. Bathon. & Wellen. 30 Edw. I. n° 34.

from the Cuſtomary Tenants (or Copyholders) by way of their Acknowledgment, whereupon *John de Arderne*, as Bailiff of *John Ap-Adam*, came with the ſaid Attorneys, and took Seiſin of the ſaid Manor in his Maſter's Name, (only as Capital Lord of the Fee) but did not diſturb the ſaid *Anthony Bradenie*'s Attorney from taking the ſaid Fealty and Acknowledgment, as aforeſaid, and departed, with *John de Hampton*, the Biſhop's Attorney, from the Premiſſes. —— That thus the ſaid *Anthony Bradenie* continued in Seiſin thereof till the *Monday* following, when the Men of *John Ap-Adam* came, and expelled the Attorney of the ſaid *Anthony de Bradenie* from the Premiſſes, and the ſaid Attorney levied *Hue* thereupon. That notwithſtanding this, the ſaid Lord *John Ap-Adam* continued in this Seiſin till *Tueſday* following, when the Sub-Eſcheator came, and took the ſaid Manor into the King's Hands.

YET whatever Pretenſions might have been formed with reſpect to their Inheritance on the one hand, or what Art ſoever uſed to maintain it on the other, certain it is that it was maintained by this Family, and remained for Ages after to their Deſcendants, both of the Line of *Gournay*, *Delamore*, and *Perceval*.

How long after this the ſaid *Robert de Gournay* lived, is not exactly known, but he left a Son, his Heir.

ISSUE of *ROBERT DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*, and of *Margaret* his Wife.

* *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, the ſecond of that Name, Lord of *Overwere*; of whom in the next Chapter.

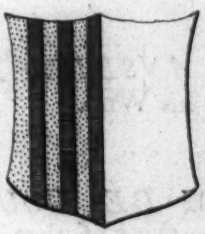
---

* Fin. Mich. 8 Edw. II. Glouc.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY *le Pere, the ſecond of that Name, Lord of* Overwere.



ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, the ſecond of that Name †, Son of *Robert de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, and of *Margaret* his Wife, was, in the ſeventh of *Edward* the Second §, limited one Meſſuage, one Plough-land, and a Rent of two Shillings in *Kyng's-Weſton*, to *William de Edyham* or *Odiham*, for Life, with Remainder to himſelf, and to his Heirs in Fee.

AND again, in the next Year the ſaid *Anſelm* the Son of *Robert de Gournay*, defended his Right to four Meſſuages and a Shop in the Suburbs of *Briſtol*, without the *Newgate*, againſt *John de la Robe* and *Alice* his Wife;

* Fin. 8 Edw. II. Glouc. ut ſupra.

† From the Book of the Abbey of Glaſtonbury, in the Hands of the Viſcount Weymouth, at Longlete.

§ Fin. Glouc. Paſch. Edw. II.

Wife; which Premiſſes are limited by the ſame Fine to the ſaid *John* and *Alice*, and to the Heirs which *John* ſhould beget upon the Body of *Alice*, with Remainder to the Heirs of *John* in Fee.

‖ In the eleventh of the ſame Reign, in *Hillary* Term, this *Anſelm*, and *Chriſtina* his Wife, then poſſeſſed of the Manor of *Overwere*, entered into certain Covenants with *John de Riche* of *Wedmore*, concerning the ſaid Manor.

§ In the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Third, this *Anſelm de Gournay*, by the Name of *Anſelm de Gournay le Pere*, was Witneſs to a Deed of *John de Beauchamp* of *Hacche*, confirming a former Deed of *Margaret* his Mother.

ISSUE of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, and *Chriſtina* his Wife.

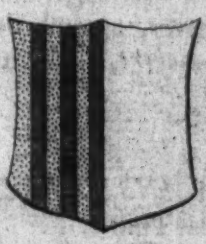
I. * *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, Lord of *Overwere*, the third of that Name; of whom in the next Chapter.

---

* Placit. coram Juſtic. de Banco, Hill. 11 Edw. II. rot. 48. Somſ.
§ From the Book of Glaſtonbury before-mentioned.
‖ Ibid.

CHAP. XVI.

ANSELM DE GOURNAY *le Fils, the third of that Name, Lord of Overwere.*



ANSELM DE GOURNAY†, the third of that Name, ſucceeded *Anſelm* the ſecond, his Father, ſometime after the twenty-fifth of *Edward* the Third.

* WHICH *Anſelm de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere* in the twenty-ſecond of *Edward* the Third, obtained a Releaſe from *Richard de Hampton*, Lord of *Netherbaggeworth*, for him and his Heirs for ever, in the County of *Somerſet*, of all that Right of Claim which he pretended to have in certain Lands within the ſaid

† From the Book of Glaſtonbury before-mentioned.

* From a Title-Deed in the Poſſeſſion of John Strachey, of Sutton-Court, in the County of Somerſet, Eſquire, in Febr. 1738-9.

ſaid Manor of *Overwere*, called *Somerford* and *Cottus*, which Deed was perfected and ſigned at *Netherwere*, upon *Tueſday* next before the Feaſt of the Apoſtles St. *Philip* and *Jacob*, in the Year above-mentioned.

* THREE Years after, in the twenty-fifth of that Reign, the ſaid *Anſelm*, together with *Joan* his Wife, conveyed from themſelves and their Heirs for ever, one Meſſuage, one Plough-land, and eighty Acres of Meadow, in *King's-Weſton*, to *Henry Attemore*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, and to the Heirs of *Henry*, in Fee.

† AFTER this, the thirty-ſecond of *Edward* the Third, *Iſabel*, the Wife of *Thomas Atte-Hulle*, recovered in an Aſſize, a Meſſuage, and certain Lands and Meadows in *Overwere*, againſt this *Anſelm*, and *Robert* his Son, which *Robert*, died without Iſſue not long after.

CHILDREN of *ANSELM DE GOURNAY*, the third of that Name.

I. § *THOMAS DE GOURNAY*; of whom in the next Chapter.

II. ‖ *ROBERT*, who is mentioned above.

---

* Fin. Somſ. Trin. A° 25 Edw. III. Glouc.
† Placit. coram Rege, Paſch. 32 Edw. III. rot. 55. dorſo, Somſ.
§ Miſcellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor.
‖ Placit. ut ſupra.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

THOMAS DE GOURNAY, *Lord of* Overwere, *the laſt Male of the Houſe of* Gournay.



ANSELM*, the third of that Name, being dead in the forty-fifth of *Edward*, § *Thomas de Gournay* was then found to be his Son and Heir, and Lord of *Overwere*; at which Time he ſigned as a Witneſs to a Deed between *William Proute* and *Richard Chamberton*, concerning Lands in that Pariſh, upon the *Sunday* after the Feaſt of the Apoſtles St. *Peter* and *Paul*.

* Ex Autograph. penes Johannem Strachey, de Sutton Court in Com. Somerſ.

§ Miſcellan. B. 2. in Officio Armor.

WHICH *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, upon the twelfth of *February*, in the ſixth Year of King *Richard* the Second *, obtained a Releaſe of certain Debts due by him the ſaid *Thomas* to *Thomas Daniel*, of *Briſtol*.

NOT long after, *viz.* in the tenth of *Richard* the Second, in Conjunction with *Alianore*, his ſecond Wife, by his Deed dated at *Overwere*, upon the *Friday* after the Feaſt of St. *Michael* the Archangel †, by the Stile of *Thomas de Gournay*, Lord of *Overwere*, and in Preſence of *George Bythemore* (his Son-in-law) and others, confirmed to *William Proute*, and *Julian* his Wife, for their Lives, certain Lands in his Lordſhip of *Overwere*, adjoining to a Place called *Weſtkotreve*, and to the North of the Eſtate of the ſaid *George Bythemore*,

§ BUT he did not long ſurvive; for in the fourteenth of the ſame Reign he was then dead, and *Alianore* his Widow, who had the Manor of *Overwere*, alias *Upwere*, for her Jointure, was at that Time become the Wife of *Richard Power*; but by that Lady it does not appear that he had any Iſſue.

‖ HIS firſt Wife was *Elizabeth*, the Daughter and ſole Heir of *Richard de Counteville*, or *Caumville*, a Branch of that Noble Family who were anciently Barons of great Eminence in this Kingdom. The Deſcent of that Lady having been treated of at large in it the third Chapter of the Sixth Book of this Work, is here ſufficient to ſay, that ſhe brought with her, together with the Rights of her Family, the Manors of *Alwarton* and *Battilburgh*, and other great Eſtates, in the County of *Somerſet*, which deſcended to her only Daughter, *Joan de Gournay*, who became thus ſole Heireſs both to her Mother and to her Father.

WHICH

* Ex Autograph. penes Johannem Strachey, de Sutton-Court, in Com. Somerſ.

† Penes eundem.

§ Fin. Somſ. A° 14 Ric. II.

‖ Placit. coram Juſtic. de Banco, Term. Mich. A° 3 Hen. VII. rot. 423.

*WHICH *Joan de Gournay*, who was the laſt either Male or Female of this Family, carried a great Eſtate, as well as the ſole Rights of that Moſt Ancient, Noble, and Opulent Houſe, by her Marriage with *George De la More*, or *Bythemore*, into that Family, (of whoſe Deſcent we have already treated at large, in the third Chapter of the Sixth Book) from whence again, by the ſole Heireſs of that Houſe, that Eſtate of Honour and Blood was at length transferred to *David Perceval*, Anceſtor to *John* Lord *Perceval*, Earl of *Egmont* now the ſole Repreſentative of the Houſe of *Gournay*.

* See the Deſcent of the Houſe of Delamore, or Bythemore, Book VI. Chap. III.

Prudens futuri temporis Exitum
Caliginoſâ Nocte premit Deus.

HOR. Lib. 3. Ode 29.

The E N D *of the* SEVENTH BOOK, *and of the* SECOND VOLUME.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM